The Bruce;

or,

The Book of the most excellent and noble prince

Robert de Broyss, King of Scots.
BERLIN:  ASHER & CO., 5, UNTER DEN LINDEN.
NEW YORK:  C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA:  J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.
The Bruce;
or,
The Book of the most excellent and noble prince,
Robert de Brus, King of Scots:
compiled by
Master John Barbour,
Archdeacon of Aberdeen,
A.D. 1375.

EDITED FROM MS. G. 23 IN THE LIBRARY OF ST JOHN'S COLLEGE,
CAMBRIDGE, WRITTEN A.D. 1487; COLLATED WITH THE MS. IN THE
ADVOCATE'S LIBRARY AT EDINBURGH, WRITTEN A.D. 1489,
AND WITH HART'S EDITION, PRINTED A.D. 1616;
WITH A
PREFACE, NOTES, AND GLOSSARIAL INDEX,
BY THE
REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.

BOOKS XI—XX, NOTES, AND GLOSSARY.

LONDON:
PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.
1874, 1877.
[BOOK XI.]

And quhen this cunnand thus wes maid, Schir philip in-to Ingland raid, And tald the king all haill this tale, How he [a] tuelf moneth all hale Had, as vritin [wes] in thair tale, Till reskew strewilling with battale. And quhen he herd schir philip say, That scottis men had set a né day To fecht, and at sic space he had Till purvay hym, he ves rycht glad, And said, “it wes gret succuddry That set tha’mé apon sic folye ; For he thocht to be, or that day, So pursvait and in sic aray, That thair suld na strinth him vith-stand.”

And quhen the lordis of Ingland Herd at this day wes set planly, Thai Iugit It to gret foly, And thocht till haff all thair liking, Sir Philip goes to England, and tells the king.

4 he has a whole year allowed for the rescue of Stirling castle. 

[Fol. 37. E.]

8

King Edward is very glad, and thinks the Scotch are very proud and foolish.

12 The English lords rejoice likewise. 

16

[Fol. 82. C.]

H has the Rubric—How Sir Edward withouten sturne, Vndertooke the battell of Bannock-burne.

1. cunnand] conmand.
2. in-to] in-till.
3. this] his. haiill this] the haill

H.

4. [a E] had C ; but see next line.
5. as] as it. [wes E] was H ; war C.
6. Till] To EH.
8. aé] A.

BRUCE.
SIR EDWARD BRUCE GOES TO HIS BROTHER. [BOOK XI.

Giff men abaid thame in fechting.
Bot oft falȝéis the fulys thought;
And wiȝ menis etling cunis nocht
Till sic end as thai weyn always.
A litill stane oft, as men sayis,
May ger weltir aȝe mekill wane.
Na manis mycht may stand agaȝe
The grace of god, that all thing steris;
He wat quhat-to all thing efferis,
And disponis at his liking,
Eftir his ordinanȝ, all thyng.

The vynnyng of streyvilling be schir Eduard the bruce,
thow the battale ves set our ȝer and day betuix
hym and schir philip the mowbra.

Wise men's intentions sometime fall.
Nothing may resist God, who controls all things.

When Sir Edward has made the treaty, he goes to tell his brother the king.
The king says it was a foolish deed;

for the king of England possesses all England, Ireland, Wales, and Aquitaine,  

22. wiss—etting] ȝiȝt wyssmenys
ay E; yet wise men H.
23. Till[ ] To EH. sic] that H.
as] that H. 
25. aue] A.
28. to] till. efferis] afferis E; afferis H.
33. or] or to CH; but E omits to.
strewilling] strewillyne E; Striuiling

Q when schir Eduard, as I say, 
Had gevyn sa outrageounȝ a day
To ȝeild or reskew streyvilling,
Richt soyne he went on-to the king,
And tald quhat tretis he had maid,
And quhat day he thame gevyn had.
The king said, quhen he herd the day,
"That wes vnwisly done, perfay,
I herd neuir quhar so lang varnyng
Wes gevyn to so mychtie aȝe kyng
As is the kyng of England.
For he has now in-tiU his hand
Ingland, Irland, and Walyȝ alsa,  

[And] Akatane ȝet, with all thasa

H.
31. soyne—king] to the king he went him syny E; to the King then went he syny H.
39. I] Ik.
40. aue] A.
42. his] E om.
44. [And] so in EH; but C places and after ȝet. Akuatane] Aquitaynȝe E; Aquitayne H.
That duellis vndir his senjory, 
And of Scotland a gret party. 
And of tresour so stuffit is he, 
That he may vageowris haf plente. 
And we ar qwheyn agane so fele; 
God may richt weill our wersis deill, 
Bot we ar set in Iuperly 
To tyne or wyn than hastily."
Schir Eduard said, "sa god me reid, 
Thouch. he and all that he may leid (um, 
we sail fecht, all war thai ma."
Quhen the king herd his brothir swa 
Spek to the battale so hardly, 
He prysit hym in his hert gretly, 
And said, "brothir, sen swa is gane 
At this thing thus is vndirtae, 
Schap we vs tharfor manfully, 
And all that lufis vs tendirly 
And the fredome of this cuntre, 
Purvay [thaim] at that tym to be 
Bowne with all mycht that euir [thai] may; 
Swa that gif our fayis assay 
To reskew strewillyng throu battale, 
That we of purpoO ger thame faill."

Till this all thai assentit ar, 
And bad thair men all mak thaim 3are 
For to be boune agane that day

45. 46. E transposes these lines. 
45. That] EH om. 
46. a gret] zeit a E; a great H. 
48. vageowris] wageouris E; wageours H. 
49. qwheyn] quhoyne E; few H. 
60. Ar] That EH. 
61. manfully] manely E; manly H

and a part of Scotland.
48. "We are set," said he, "in great jeopardy."
52. Edward replies that the Scotch can fight all the English power.
56. Bruce says they must at any rate try and fight it out. 
[Fol. 82b. C.]
60. All assent to this, and make all preparations.
64. [thaim E] them H; vs C. 
65. all] all the. with—euir] on their best wise, that H. [thai E] they H; we C. 
66. that gift] giff that E; gif H. 
69. Rubric in H—The sembling of the English Oist, That with great power came and boast. 
Till] To. all thai] thai all, H has—On this wise all assentit were.
THE ENGLISH MAKE GREAT PREPARATIONS.

On the best wis that euir thai may.
Than all that worthy war to ficht,
Of scotland, set all haill thair mycht
Till purvay thame agane that day;
Wapnys and armowris purvayit thai,
And all that efferis for fichting.
And of yngland the mycht ykyng
Purvait hym on so gret array,
That certis neuir I herd 3eit say
That ynglis men mair [aparaile]
Maid than thai did than for battale.
And quhen the tym wes cuminum ner,
He assemblit all his power;
And but his awne cheuelry,
That wes so gret It wes ferly,
He had of mony a fer cuntre
With hym gud men of gret bounte.
Of franf ane worthy cheuelry
He had in-till his Cumpany;
The Erll of hennaut als wes thar,
And wyth him men that worthy var
Of gascon and of alman3e ;
Of duche als and of bretan3he
He had wicht men and weill farrand
Armyt clenyly at fut and hand.

*Of yngland hale the cheuelry
*He had thair gaderit so clenyly,

72—75. H omits these lines.
75. Till] To.
77. efferis for] afferis to E; affered to H.
79. on] in EH.
80. neuir—3eit] hard I neuir E; I heard neuer H.
81. [aparaile E] apparell H; repareale C.
82. than for] for E; for that H.
83. And] For EH.
87. a fer] a farre H; ser E.
89. ane] and H; E om.
91. hennaut] henaud E; Henault H.
94. duche—and] off the worthyst.
bretan3he] bretangny.
96. at] bath E; baith H. fut] head H.
97*, 98*. Apparently omitted accidentally in P; found in EJH. Hale] to E; als H.
That he left nane mycht vapnys velde,
Or worthy war to ficht in felda.
Of walio als wyth hym had he,
And of yrlande ane gret men3e;
Of pouty, aquytañe, and bayon
He had full mony of gret renouni.
*And of Scotland he had zeit then
*A gret men3e of worthy men.
*Quhen all thir sammyyn assemblit war,
*He had of fechtaris with hym thar
Ane hundreth thousand men and ma.
And fourty thousand war of tha
Armyt on hors, bath hede ande hand;
And zeit of thai war thre thousand,
Wyth helit horfo in-till playn male,
Till mak the front of the battale.
And fifty thousand of archerys
He had, forouten the hoblerys;
With men on fut and small rangale,
That 3emyt harnaf and vittale.
He had so fele It wes ferly.
Of cartis als that 3eid thame by
So feill, that, but all thai that bar
Harnaf, and als that chargit war
Of pal3eonys and veschall vith-all,
also a large
host from Wales,
Fol. 37 b. E.
Ireland, Poitou,
Aquitaine, and
Bayonne.
When all were
assembled, there
were 100,000;
Fol. 83. C.
besides 10,000
horsemen well
armed, amongst
whom were 2000
with horses
covered with
armour;
also 50,000
archers,
and men of foot
and army-
followers.
There were also
many carts,
carrying armour,
tents,
97. he—nane] nane left that E;
nane were left H.
98. worthy] mycht.
100. ane] A.
101. pouty] poityne E; Poytow
H.
102. full] EH om.
103*-106*. Not in E; but found
in H. And] H om. all—sammyyn]
altogidder H.
104. tha] so in EH; written thai
in C.
106. zeit—that] off thai 3eit.
107. helit] barded H. in-till—
male] in plate and mailzie E; in plait
and maillyie H.
108. Till] To EH.
110. the] EH om. hoblerys] hobe-
leris E; hobillers H.
111. With—on] And men of. and
—rangale] left blank in E.
112. zemyt] keeped H.
114. that] so in H; thar E. thame]
him H.
115. Sa feill, that by them that
chargde were H (one line for 115,
116; H om. 119.)
117. Of] With. H has—With
Pauillious, and that vessell bare.
THE ENGLISH COME TO BERWICK.

[Book XI.

furniture, wine, wax, food, &c.

And apparrall of chalmyr and hall,
And vyne and vax, schot and vittale,
Four scor wes chargit with fewale.
Thai war so fele quhar at thai raid,
And thar battalis war ek so braid,
And so gret rowme held thar charre,
That men that mekill host mycht se
Our-tak the landis so largely.

All these took up a great deal of room.

There might be seen worthy men, and armed
knights, and sturdy steeds,
and helmets, and shields, and spears, enough to conquer the world.

and

Men mycht se than, that had beyn by,
Mony añe worthy mañ and vycht,
And mony añe gayly armyt knycht,
And mony añe sturdy sterand steid
Arayit in-till so ryche weil,
And mony helmys and hawbyrschownys,
*Scheldis and speris with pennownys,
And so mony a cumly knycht,
At semyt weill that in-to ficht
Thai suld vencuñ the world all hale.
Quhy suld I mak to lang my tale?
Till berwik ar thai cumyn Ilkañe,
And sum thar-in thar Innys has tañe,
And sum lugit without the townys

They come to Berwick.

118. chalmyr] chamyr E; chamber H.
119. H omits.
120. Four] viii E; Foure H. wes]
were H; E om. fewale] Fewall H;
pulaile E.
121. at] that E.
122. ek] EH om.
123. rowme] rout H. thar charre] thair char E; they there H (which destroys the rime).
124. C has—that men that mycht that mekill host se; H has—that men that meekle Ost might see there; E as in the text, but with Than for That.

After l. 124 E wrongly inserts—
Nerby quha sa wald be, which is l.
126 in disguise; P. omits it.
125. Ouertak] Ouertooke H. so]

EH om. Cf. l. 146.
127. ane] A.
128. gayly—knycht] armur gayly dycht EH.
130. Arayit] Arrayed ay H. so]
EH om.
131. And] EH om. hawbyrschownys] Haberiownys E; Haberiones H.
132* P. omits, probably by accident. with] and.
133. cumly] cumbly.
134. semyt]sem.
134. vencuñ] vanquish H.
135. mak to lang] so in E; make too lang H; but C has—to long mak.
137. thar—has] has lunys EH.
In tentis and in palseownys.

And quhen the kyng his host has seyne
So gret, so gud men, and so cleyne,
He wes richt Ioyfull in his thought,
And weill presumyf thar wes nocht
In varld a kyng mycht him withstand;
Hym thought all wonyn till his hand.
And largly emang his men
The landis of scotland delt he then.
Of othir meanis landis large wes he;
And thai that war of his menʒe
Mannausit the scotts men haley
With gret vordis; bot, nocht-for-thi,
Or thai cum all to thair entent,
Howis in haill clath sall be rent!
The kyng, throu consall of his meŋ, His folk he delt in battalis ten.
In íliaŋe war weil ten thousand,
That thought thai stalwardly suld stand
In the battale and stoutly ficht,
And leif nocht for thair fayis mycht.
He set ledaris till Ilk battale,
Knawyn war of gud gouernale.
And till renownyt Erllis twa,
Of glowcister and [herfurd] var thai,
He gaf the vangard in ledyng,

140. H has the Rubric — How Englishmen manassed at will The Scots, and delt their lands till.
141. so gud] and sa gud E; sa good H. and so and sa H; E om. so.
143. presumyf] supposyt that EH.
146. emang] amang.
147. landis] land.
148. landis] lands H; thing E. large] full large C; but EH om. full.
150. halely] hely E; haillely H.
153. Howis] Holles H.
154. H has the Rubric — In ten battells the Englishmen Were delt, and taught to Chiftanes then.

He has the Rubric — How Englishmen manassed at will The Scots, and delt their lands till.

He divides the army into ten companies, each 10,000 strong.

160. Over each division he appoints a leader.

The Earls of Gloucester and Hereford lead the van.
With mony men at thar bydding,  
Ordanit in-till full gret aray.  
Thai war so cheuelruif, that thai  
Trowit, gif thai com to the ficht,  
Thair suld no strynth with-stand thar mycht.  

And the kyng, quhen his menȝe wer  
Deuisit in-to battalis ser,  
His awne battale ordanit he,  
And quha suld at his bridill be.  
Schir gyllys de argente he set  
Vpon aȝe half, his renȝe to get,  
And of vallançh schir amery  
On othir half, that wes worthy;  
For in thair souerañe gret bownte  
Atour the layff asyit he.  
And quhen the kyng apon this vifò  
Had ordanit, as I heir deuii,  
His battalis and his sterîng,  
Arly he raiß in aȝe mornyng,  
And fra berwik he tuk the vay.  
Bath hyllis and valayis helit thai,  
And the Battalis that war so braid,  
Departit, our the feldis raid.  
The sonȝe wes brycht and schynand cler,  
And Armys, that new burnyst wer,  
So blenknyt with the sonyns beyême,  
That all the feldes ves in aȝe leyême

He departs from Berwick.  

His host covers the country.  

The whole field gleams with armour.  

[Ped. 84. C.]
Vith baneris richt freschly flawmand,
And pensalis to the vynd vaffand.
So fele thai var of ser qwyntiO,
That it war gret slight to deuiO.
For suld I tell all thar effer,
Thair countynans and thar maner,
Though I couthe, I suld cummerryt be.
The king, with all that gret men3he,
Till Edinburgh he raid on rycht.
Thai war all out to [fele] to ficht
With few folk of aie sympill land;
[Bot] quhar god helpis, quhat may withstand?

THE kyng robert, quhen he herd say
That yngl3 men, in sic aray
And in-to sa gret quantite,
Com in his land, in hy gert he
His men be summond generaly;
And thai com all full villfully
To the torwod, quhar at the kyng
Had ordanit to mak thar meting.
Schir Eduard the bruce, that wes vorthy,
Com with a full gret Cumpany
Of gud men armyt weill and dicht,
Hardy and forsy for the ficht.
Valtir, steward of scotland, syne,
That than wes bot aie berdlaO hyne,

192. [freschly] EH om. [freschly] fylesly H; farly E. [flawmand] so E; flambisghand H.
193. [vaffand] wawand.
194. [qwyntiss] quentiss E; Countreyes H.
196. [effe] And EH. effer. affer.
197. [countynans] contenance E; countynans (sic) C.
198. [cummerryt] combryt.
200. on] him. he—on] are they commen H.
201. [fele E] feill H; fale C.
202. [unc] A.
203. [Bot EH] ; For C.
204. Rubric in H—How in this time assembled then, To King Robert hes certaine men.
210. at] that.
212. that wes] the EH.
214. and dicht] and dight H; at rycht E.
215. the] to EH.
Com with a rout of nobill men,
That all be contynans mycht ken.

And the gud lord dowglas alswa
Brocht with him men, I vndir-ta,
That weill war oysit in fichting ;
Thai sall the lef haf abasyng,

Giff men betyl in thrang to be ;
And avantage sall tytar se
For till stonay thar fayis mycht,
Than men that oysis nocht to ficht.

The Erll of murreff, with his men
Arrayit weill, com alsua then
In-to gud cowyne for to ficht,
In gret will to maynteyne thar rycht ;
Vith othir mony gud barouine,
And knychtis of full gret renoune,
Com with thair men full stalwardly.
Quhen thai assemblit worthely,
Of fechtand men I trow thai ware
Thretty thousand, and sum deill mare,
Foroutyn cariage ande pouerale,
That 3emyt harnafi and wittale.

Our all the host than 3eid the kyng,
And beheld [to] thair contynyng,
And saw thame of full fair effer ;

219. all—ken] men mye#t be contynence ken E ; men be countenance might them ken H. contynans] written contyrnans C.
221. ] Ik.
222. oysit] wsit E ; vsde H.
225. And avantage] And thar avantage C ; Awantage thai E ; And ane avantage H. tytar] sooner H.
226. till] to EH ; stonay E] astein H ; miswritten stonayit C.
227. oysis] wsis E ; vses H.
228. murreff] Murray H.
231. In gret will] And gret will E ;

232. Owtakyn thair mony barownys E ; Outtaken mony other Baroun H.
233. of full] that of. renoune] renowne is.
235. thai] thai war. worthely] halely E ; were haily H.
238. pouerale] purall H ; pettaill E.
241. [to EH] be C. contynyng] contenyng E ; conteening H ; contyrnyng C.
242. effer]affer.
Of hardy contynans thai wer,
Be liklynes the mast [cowart]
Semyt till do richt weill his part.
The kyng has seyn all thair hawyng,
That knew hym weill in-to sic thing,
And saw thame all comonly
Of sekyr contynans and hardy,
Forouten effray or abaysyng.
In his hert had he gret liking,
And thocht that men of sa gret will,
Gif thai vald set thair mycht thair-till,
Suld be full hard till vyn, perfay.
Ay as he met thama in the way,
He welcymmyt thame with gladsum fair,
Spekand gud vordis heir and thair.
And thai, that thar lord so mekly
[Saw welcum] thame and so myldly,
Joyfull thai war, and thocht at thai
Micht weill put thame in-till assay
Of hard fechting in stalwart stour,
For till maynteym weill his honour.

THE worthy kyng, quhen he has seyn
His host assemblit all bedeyn,
And saw thame wilfull to fulfill
His liking, with gud hert and will;

243. contynans] miswritten contyr-
naus C; so also in l. 249.
244. [cowart EH] coward C.
245. [till—weill] full weill to do E;
to doe full weill H.
248. comonly] commonnaaly E;
commonly H.
249. sekyr] sic. and] and sa.
250. Forouten] For owt E; With-
out H.
253. mycht] will.
254. till] to EH.
244. He marks their stout appearance,
248. 252 and thinks his men will be hard to conquer.
256. He speaks good words to them.
260. They are of good courage.
264. When he thus sees them all assembled,

258. mekly] blythly H.
259. [Saw welcum E] So welcum-
myt C; Sa welcome H. myldly]
handy E, namely H.
260. [at] that.
261. Micht—intill] Aucht weill to
put thaim till E; Aught well to put
them in H.
262. in] or E; and H.
263. till] to EH. weill] E om.
264. H has the Rubric—The part-
ing of the Scots men, That in foure
battells delt were then.
And to maynteym weill thair franchi$,
He wes reiosit on mony wi$;
And callit all his consell preue,
And said thame, "lordingis, now ye se
That yngli$ men with mekill mycht
Ha$ all disponit thame for the ficht,
For thai 30$n castell wald reskew.
Tharfor is gud we ordane now
How we may let thame of purpo$,
And swa to thame the wayis clo$,
That thai pa$ nocht but gret lettyng.
We haf heir with vs at byddyng
Weill thretty thousand men and ma.
Mak we four battalis of all thai,
And ordane vs on sic maner,
That, quhen our fayis cummy$ neir,
We till the new park hald our vay;
For thair behu$ is thaim [pas, perfay,]
Bot gif that thi beneth vs ga,
And our the marra$ pas; and swa
We sall be at advantage thair.
For me think that richt speidfull war
To gang on fut to this fechting,
Armyt bot in-to licht armyng.
For schupe we vs on hors to ficht,
Syn that our fais ar mar of mycht,
And betti$r horsit than ar we,
We suld in-to gret perell be.
And gif we ficht on fut, perfay,
At advantage we sall be ay;
For in the park emang the treis
The hors men awais cummerit beis,
And the sykis alswa thair doune
Sall put thame to confusioune."

All thai consentit to that saw,
And than, in-till a"n litill throw,
Thair four battalis ordanit thai;
And to the Erll thomas, perfay,
He gaf the vaward in leding;
For in his nobill gounryng
And in his hye cheuelry
Thai had assouerans, trast trewly!
And, for to maynteynam his baner,
Lordis that of gret vorschip wer
War assignit with thair menzë,
In-till his battale for till be.
The tothir battale wes gevin to lede
Till hym that douchty wes of dede,
And prisit of gret cheuelry,
That wes schir eduard the worthy;
I trow he sall manteyme him swa,
That [how] sa euir the gamyn ga,
His fayis to plenzę sall mater haf.
And syne the thrid battale he gaf
To valtar steward for to leid,
And till dowglaO douchty of deid.
Thai war cosyngis in neir degre,
Tharfor till hym betaucht wes he,
For he wes young; and, nocht-for-thi,

309. cummerit beis] E om.
300. sykis] Syke H. thair] there
H; that ar thar E.
302. to] till.
309. Thai assoweryt rycht soueranly
E; They had affiance souerainely H.

313. till] to EH.
316. gret] hey.
318. him] so CH; it E.
319. [how EH] C om.
321. he] thai.
322. To] Till.
323. till] to EH.
326. and] but.
KING ROBERT COMMANDS THE REARGUARD.  

[BOOK XI.]

The fourth division the king commands in person, having the men of Carrick, Argyle, Cantire, and the Isles.

He commands the rearguard, with the vanguard in front of him, the other divisions being on either side.

The battles of Bannokburne, Strykyne & Vonyng be gud kyng Robert the Bruce.

Thus King Robert

The king thus, that wes vicht and við  
And richt worthy at all deið,

I trow he sall sa manfully
Do his dewour, and virk so weill,
That hym sall neyd no mair þeymseill.
The ferd battale the nobill kyng
Tuk till hym-self in gouernyng,
And had in-till his Cumpany
The men of carryk all halely,
And of argile and of kentyre,
And of the ylis, quhar-off wes syre
Anguʃ of ylis and but, all tha.
He of the playne-land had alsua
Of Armyt men aœ mekill rout;
His battale stalward wes and stout.
He said, the rerward he vald ma,
And evyn forrouth hym suld ga
The vaward, and on athir hand
The tothir battalis suld be gangand
Behynd, on syde a litell space;
And the kyng, that behynd thaim was,
[Suld] se quhar thair war mast mystir,
And relief thaim with his baneir.

327. manfully] manlily.
329. þeymseill] þeymseill. H has—
That men sall of his deedes tell.
331. hym-self in] his awne.
333. all] EH om.
336. ylis] He E; the Ies H. but]
Boot H. tha] so in E; written thai
C. all tha] alswa H.
337. And of the plaine lands he had ma H.
338. aœ] A. mekill] Noble H.
341. forrouth] for E; before H.
342. vaward] vaward E; Vangard H; misswritten vawand C.
344. Behynd] so H; Besid E.
346. [Suld E] Sould H; To C.
347. And] And to C; EH om. to.
thaim] them H; thar E.
Rubric from C; H has—How King Robert gart pottes make, And couer them well, I undertake,
349. worthy—all] awise at E; attentiue at H.
And hardy als atour all thing,
Ordanit his men for the fechting.
And on the morn, on Settirday,
The king herd his discurrouiris say
That ynglis men with mekill mycht
Had lyin at Edinburgh that nycht.
Thanfor, forouten mair delay,
He to the new [park] held his way
With all that in his leding war,
And in the park thame herbryst thar.
And in aune playne feld, by the way,
Quhar he thought neid behufit avay.
The yngliò men, gif that thai vald
Throw the park to the castell hald,
He gert men mony pottis ma
Of a fut bried round, and all thae
Var deip vp till aue manis kne,
Swa thik, that thai mycht liknyt be
Till aue vax-cayme that beis mais.
All that nycht travaland he vas,
Swa that, or day wes, he had maid
Thai pottis, and thame helit had
With stikìs and with gyrò al greyne,
Swa that thai mycht nocht veill be seyne.
On [sunday than] in the mornyng,
Weill soyn eitir the sonne-Eising,
Thai herd the meò full reuerently,
And mony shraf thamae deuotly,

350, 351. So in H. E omits 1. 350, but after 1. 351 inserts—In gud aray in alkin thing.
355. that] all.
356. forouten] with-owtyne.
357. [park E] Parke H; werk C.
361. away] away E; haue way H.
366, 368. ane] A; so also in 1. 360.
369, 370. H omits, changing mais
368. and as close together as cells in a honeycomb.
372. These pits were covered over with [Fol. 86. C.] grass.
376. On Sunday morning the Scotch bear mass and are shriven.

352. On Saturday morning he hears that the English are at Edinburgh.
356. He sets off to the New Park.
360. In the way thither he causes many small pits to be dug, knee-deep,
That thought till de in that melle, 380
Or than to mak thar cuntre fre.

To god for thair richt prayit thai. 388
Thair dynit naife of thame that day,
[Bot, for] the vigill of sanct Iohñe,
Thai fastit bred and vattir ilköne.

The king, quhen that the með ves doñe, 384
Went for to se the pottys soyñe,
And at his liking saw thaim maid.
On athir syde the vay, weill braid,
It wes pottit, as I haf tald.

When all are

fasted on bread and water, as it was St John's Eve (June 23).

Gif that thair fais on horð will hald
Furth in that vay, I trow thai fall
Nocht weill eschew foroutyn fall.

When all are

assembled, he
gives notice

Throu-out the host syne gert he cry
That all suld arme thame hastely,
And busk thame on thar best maner.

And quhen thai all esemblit wer,
He gert aray thame for the fich,
And syne our all gert cry on hicht,
That quhat sa euir man that fand
His hert nocht sekir for till stand

To wyn all or de with honour,
For to manteyme that stalward stour,
That he be tyme suld tak his way,
And nane suld duell with him bot thai
That wald stand with him to the end,
And tak the vre that god vald send.

Than all ansuerd with a cry,

378. *till de*] to dey.
381. *dynit*] deity (!] E.
382. [Bot for EH] For it C.
*Also C inserts wes before of.*
383. *bred—rattir*] water and breid.
385. *for*] furth.
387. *the vay*] rycht.
388. *pottit*] potted H; pittyt E.
7] Ik.
389. *will*] wald.

392. *syne*] than.
395. *all*] E om.
397. *our—cry*] gert cry our all.
398. *quhat—man*] quha sa euir ho
war EH.
399. *till*] to.
402. *tak*] hald.
403. *nane*] E om.
405. *vre*] grace H.
And with a voce said generaly,
That naie for dout of ded sulde fail,
Quhill discumfit war the battale.

Q
When the gud king had herd his men
Sa hardly him ansuer then,
Sayand, that nouthir ded no dreid
Till sic discomfort sulde thame lieid,
That thai sulde eschew the fechting,
In hert he had gret reiosyng.
For him thought men of sic cowyne,
So gude so hardly and so fyñce,
Suld weill in battall hald thair richt
Agane men of full mekill mycht.
Syne all the small folk and pounerale
He send with harnase and vittaill
In-till the park, weill fer him fra,
And fra the battall gert thame ga;
And as he bad, thai went thair way;
Twenty thousand weill nei var thai.
Thair vay thai held till ane vale.
The kyng left, with ane eleñe men3he;
The quhethir thai war thretty thousand.
I trow thai stalwardly sall stand,
And do thair denour as thai aw!
Thai stude than rangit all on raw,
Reddy for till byde Battale,
Gif ony folk wald thame assale.

They reply that they will not fail him.
The king rejoices greatly.
He thought that such men would hold their own.
He sends the non-combatants to the park.
There were 20,000 of them.
The king had 30,000 with him.
The king bids them all be ready, for his foes were at Falkirk.

He tells the Earl of Murray to guard the way beside the kirk.

His brother, with Walter Stewart and Lord Douglas, is to be ready to help.

Douglas and Sir Robert Keith go to reconnoitre.

434. Rubric in H—How the King bade the Erle Mvrray, To keepe beside the Kirke the way.

435. into] in.

436—439. That Englishmen with meekle might Had lyen at the Falkirk that night. And syne to him the way all straight Held, with their men of meekle might H.

437. [syne E] Com.

440. nevo] newo E ; Nevoy H. said] bad E ; had H.

441. murreff] Murray H.

442. till] to EH.


444. that] E om.

449. the gud] the good H ; alsua E. With] And EH. dowglass] off douglas.


455. of keth] of Keith H ; the keyth E. wes] than was E.

456. of fee] of fe E ; in fee H.

457. com] comming for H.

458. and—raid] withouten bade H
And soyn the gret host haf thai seyñe
Quhar scheldis schynand war so scheyñe,
And basnetis weill burnyst bricht,
That gaf agane the some gret licht.
Thai saw so [fele] browdyn bauronis,
Standartis, pennownys apon speris,
And so feill knychtis apon stedis,
All flawamand in-to thair wedis,
And so fele battalis and so braid,
That tuk so gret rowme as thai raid,
That the mast host and the stoutest
Of [crystyndome], and ek the best,
Suld be abasit for till Se
Thair fais in-to sic quantite,
And swa [arayit] for to ficht.
Quheu the discurrowris has had sicht
Of thair fais, as I herd say,
Toward the king thai tuk the vay,
And tald him, in gret preuate.
The multitude and the bewte
Of thair fais that commè so braid,
And of the gret mycht at thai had.
And the king bad thame thai suld ma
Na contynans that it war swa;
Bot bad thame in-to commouné say,

[460. Catchword in C—Quhar schel-
dis schynand war so scheyñe.
462. basnetis weill] bassynetis E;
Basnets H (which reads sa bright).
464. [fele E] mony CH; see 1, 468.
465. Standartis] Standaris and E;
Standers and H. pennownys] Pen-
salls H. apon] vpon H; and E.
467. flawamand] flawmand E;
flawming H. into] in EH. wedis]
Ioly wedes H.
470. stoutest E] misswritten stout-
ast C; best H.
471. [crystyndome E] Christen-
dome H; cassidoune (sic) C. ek—
best] the grettest E; the lykliest H.
472. till] to.
474. [arayit E] armyt CH.
475. the] thair EH. has] H om.
476. herfd] 3ow.
477. the] thar.
478. in gret] in-till E; into H.
481. at] that.
482. And] Than. thai] so E; at
thai C; that they H (which omits
thame). ma] so in EH; written may
C.
483. contynans] written contyrnans
C.
484. bad] lat.

They see so many
banners, stand-
ards, pennons,
and richly-dressed
knight,
that the stoutest
men might have
been afraid.

They return to
King Robert, and
tell him of the
multitude of his
foes.

He tells them to
report otherwise.
That thai com in-till euill aray,
And confort his men on that við.
For oftsið of ane vord may rið
Discomfort and tynsall with-all;
And throu a vord, als weill may fall,
Confort may rið and hardiment,
That gerris men cum to thair entent.
And on the sammyn wið it did her;
Thair comfort and thair hardy cher
Confortit thame so gretumly,
That of thar host the lest hardy,
Be countynans, vald formast be
For till begin the gret melle.

Upon this við the nobill king
Gaf all his men recomforting
Throu hardy countynans and cher,
That he maid on sa gud maner.
Thame thought that na myscheif mycht be
So gret [with-thi] thair mycht hym se
Befor thame, that suld swa engreiff,
That na hys vorschip suld thame releif.
His vorschip thame confortit swa,
And contenans that he can ma,
That the mast coward wes hardy.
On athir half, full stallwardly,

485. euill] ill H.
487. oftsið] oft times H. of ane]
throw a.
491. That—to] May ger men do E;
To gar men come to H.
495. That] follow host in E.
496. countynans] written countynans C.
497. till] to EH.
498. Rubric in H—How with a hundreth the Erle Myrray To aught hundreth battell gau.
503. [with-thi E] with thy H; with I that (sic) C. mycht hym] him mycht.
504. that—engreiff] sua that thaim suld greve E; that sould sa engreeue H.
505. na] ne. That na] Bot H.
506. thame confortit] comfort thaim.
509. stallwardly] sturdely.
The ynglij men, in sic aray, 512
As 3e haf herd me forouth say,
Com with thair battalis approchand,
The Banerys to the vynd vaffand.
And quhen thai cummen war so neir,
That bot twa myle betuix thaim wer,
Thai cheesit ane gud cunpany 516
Of men that wicht var and hardy,
On fair course ris armyt at rycht;
Thre banrents of full mekill mycht 520
War capitanys of all that rout;
The lord clyffurd that wes so stout
Wes of thame all souerane ledeir,
Aucht hundreth Armyt, I trow, thai weir.
Thai war all 3ong men and Ioly, 524
And 3arnand till do cheuelry.
The best of all the host war
[Off] contenans and of Aray.
Thai war the farast cunpany 528
That men mycht fynd of sa mony.
To the castell thai thought to fair,
For, gif thai mycht weill cum thair,
Thai thought it suld reskewit be. 532
Furth on thair way held this menȝhe,
And toward strewilling tuk the way.
The new park all eschewit thai,
For thai wist weill the king wes thair; 536
Beneth the park [sa] can thai fair,

513. *vynd vaffand* wynd wawand.
516. *ane gud* a Ioly E ; a Ioly H.
517. Of wight men armed Iolely H.
519. *Thre banrentis* Four lordys E ; And great Lords H. *full* EH om.
520. *all* E om.
521. *lord* syr the. *so* E om.
522. *all E* all the C. ledeir] leder.
525. *And* EH om. *till* to E ; for to H.
526. *The* EH om. *all* ywill (!).
527. [Off EH] Be C.
531. *mycht weill* weill mycht.
534. *tuk the*] held thair.
537. *Beneth* And beneth C ; And newth E ; And beneath H. *Yet And is not wanted. park sa* Parke sa H ; new park E ; park C. *can* gan.
A ROSE FALLS FROM RANDOLPH'S CHAPLET.  [BOOK XI.

Quhill neuth the kirk, in-till a rout.
The Earl Thomas, that was so stout,
Quhen he saw thame swa tak the playne,
In gret hye went he thame agane
With v hundreth, forouten ma,
Anoyit in his hert and wa,
That thai so fer war passit by.  

For the king had said hym roydly,
That ane rose of his chaplet
Wes faldyn ; for, quhar he wes set
To kep the way, thai men war past.
Tharfor he hastit hym so fast

That cumyn in schort tyne wes he
To the playn feld with his men3he.
For he thought that he suld amend
That he trespassit had, or [than end].

And quhen the yngliis men him saw
Cum on, forouten dreid or aw,
And tak sa hardly the playne,
In hy thai sped thame, him agane,
And strak with spuris the stedis stith,
That bare thame evyn hard and swith.

And quhen the Earl saw that men3he
Cum so stoutly, till his said he,
"Beis nocht abasit for thair schor,
Bot setis speris 30w befor,
And bak to bak set all your rout,
And all the speris poyntis out ;
Swagat defend vs best may we,
Enveronyt with thame gif we be."

538.  *Quhill neuth*] Weill newth E ;
540.  *swa tak*] sa ta.
542.  *v]* so E ; ane H.
545.  *roydly]* rudly E ; rudely H.
546.  *ane*] A.
547.  *faldyn*] fallyn E ; fallen H.
549.  *Tharfor*] And tharfor.
553.  *[than end EII] thai wend C.
555.  *dread*] dyn.
559.  *hard*] and hard H.
561.  *his*] his men H.
562.  *Beis] Be EII.  schor*] so E ;
shore H.
And as he bad thame, thai haf doûe;
And the tothir com alsoynê.
Befor thame all thair com prikand
A knyght, hardy of hert and hand;
He wes a weill gret lord at haûe,
Schir Wilîame dencort wes his naîme.
He prekit on thame so hardly,
And thai him met so sturdy,
That he and horf war born all doune,
And slayne richt thair for-out ransouîne.
With ynglis men gretly wes he
Menyt that day, and his bountee.
The layffe com on thame sturdy;
Bot nane of thame so hardly
Ruschit emang thame as did he,
Bot with fer mair maturite.
Thai assemblit all in aûe rout,
And Enveronyt thame all about,
Assal3eand thame on [ilka] syde;
And thai with speris vound/s vyde
Gaf to the hors that com thame neîr ;
And thai that rydand on thame weîr,
That doune war born, lossit the lyvis.
And mony speris, dartî's, & knyvis,
And vapnys, apon seîr maneîr,
Kest emang thame that fechtand weîr,
That thame defendit so vittandly,
Sir William Dancourt precedes the English host.
He is slain at once.
The rest come on more slowly.
They surround the band of Scottish knights,
and throw darts and knives amongst them.

[568. thai haf] sa hauie they H.
[569. com] come on E; came on H.
[570. thair] E om.
[572. He wes] And E; And was
H.
[574. He] And EH. on] at H. so]
E om.
[576. war] were H; wes E. all] E
om. born all] baith borne H.
[580. thame] rycht E; full H.
[582. emang] amang EH.
[584. aue] A.
[586. [ilka E] ilke C. And to the enemies in that tyde H.
[587. And thai] Raue H (for Gaue ;
cf. 1. 588).
[590. lossit] losyt E; losted H.
[591. mony] mony with C; othyr E; als H.
[592. vapnys apon] wapynys on.
[593. emang] amang.
[594. vittandly] wittily E; worthely H.
That their fayis had great ferly.
For sum vald schut out of thar rout, 596
And of thame that assal3et about
Stryk stedis, and ber doune men.
The ynghis men so royldy then
Kest emang thame swerdís and mas, 600
That [inwith] thame aine montane waf
Of vapynys that war varpit thair.
The Eill and his thus fechtand war
At gret myscheiff, as I jow say ;
For quhenar be full fer war thai
Than thair fayis, [and all] about
Enveronyt war, [quhar] mony a rout
War rouncet, and full dyspitfully
Thair fays [deñanit] thaim rycht stratly.
On athir half thai war so stad,
For the [rycht] gret heit that thai had,
Of fechting and of sonnys het,
That all [thair] flesche of swat wes wete.
And sic aine stew rai9 owth thame then
Of aynding, bath of hors and men,
And of powdir, and sic myrknês
In-till the ayr abovyn thame wes,
That it was woundir for till Se;
Thai war in gret perplexite.
Bot with gret travale, nocht-for-thi,
Thai thame defendit manfully,
And set bath will [and strenth] and mycht
Till rusche thair fais in that ficht,
That than demanit thame angerly.
Bot gif god help thame hastily,
Thai thall thar fill haf of fechtyng!

How gud Iames of douglas askit at king robert the
bruce leiff to gangs to supplie Erll thomas randall.

Bot ouhen the nobill renownyt kyng,
With othir lordis that war hym by,
Saw how the Erll abaundonly
Tuk the playn feld, Iames of douglas
Com to the kyng richt quhar he was,
And said, "A schir! Sanct mary!
The Erll of murreff oppynly
Takis playne feld with his menzhe!
He is in perell bot giff he be
Soyne helpit, for his fayis ar ma
Than he, and horsit weil alsua.
And, vith 30ur leif, I will me speid
To help him, for that he has neid;
All enveronyt vith fayis is he."
The king said, "sa our lord me se,
A fut till hym thou sall nocht ga.
Giff he weill dois, let hym weil ta.

The Scotche are determined to conquer.

When it is seen that Earl Thomas takes the open field.

Douglas asks permission to help him.

The king forbids Douglas to do so.
Qubethir him happin to vin or lof,
I will nocht for him brek purpoß."
"Certis," he said, "I will no vifô
Se that his fayis hym supprifô,
Quhen that I may set help thar-till.
With your leiff, sëkirly I will
Help hym, or de in-to the payne."
"Do than, and speid the soyn agane,"
The king said: and he held his vay.
Gif he may cum in tyme, perfay,
I trow he sail hym help so weill,
That of his fayis sum sail feill!

644. him] so H; him euir C; euir him E.  
646. he said] said James E; said he H.  
649. leiff] leve.  
650. de] die H.  
652. vay] way.  
654. he—hym] that he sail H.  
655. of] all EH. sum sail] sail It EH.
Now douglas furth his way he tais,
And in that self tyme fell, throu caf,
That the kyng of England, quhen he
Wes cunnyn with his gret men3he
Neir to the place, as I said air,
Quhar scottis men arayit war,
He gert arest all his battale,
At othir als to tak console,
Quhethi3 thai vald herbery thame that nycht,
Or than, but mair, ga to the ficht.
The vaward, that vist no kyn thing
Of this aрест na thair duelling,
Raid to the park all straucht thar vay,
Foront styntyng, in gude aray.
And quhen the kyng wist at thai weir
In haill battale cummand so neir,
His battale gert he weill aray.
He raid apon a"c g[r]ay palfray
Litill and Ioly, arayande
His battall, with a"n ax in hande;

_Rubrio in H—How the King slew
Sir Henrie Bowm, With his handaxe,
and strake him down._
1. _way he_ wayis. _he tais_ tane
hes H.
5. _air_ ar.
8. _At_ And. _als_ alsna.
9. _herbery thame_ herbry thaim E; harbric them H; thame herbery C.

Douglas sets forward.

4

The king of England halts his main army;

8

but his vanguard rides on.

12

When king Robert perceives they are so near,
he arrays his men, riding on a gray palfray, axe in hand.

16

No

20

11. _rist—kyn_ wist na.
12. _this_ his H. _thair_ his EH.
14. _Forout_ For-owtyn E; But H. _in_ into H.
18. _ane gray_ ane gay C; a litill E. _H has—Himselfe rade on a gray Palfray.
19. _Litill_ Laucht E; Proper H.
He wears a leathern hat, with a crown set on it.

Sir Henry de Bohun rides in advance of the English army.

He knows king Robert by his crown.

He rides fiercely at the king.

And on his basnet hye he bar
Ane hat off qwyrbolle ay-quhar,
And thar-vpon, in-to taknyng,
Añe hye croune, that he wes añe kyng.
And glowcister and herfurð wer,
With thair battalis, approchand ner;
Befor thame all thar com rydand,
With helme on hed and sper in hand,
Schir henry of bowme the worthy,
That wes añe gud knycht and hardy,
And to the Erll of herfurð cosyne,
Armyt in armys gude and fyne;
Com on a steid, a merk-schot neir
Befor all othir that thair wer,
And knew the king, for that he saw
Hym swa araynge his men on raw,
And be the croun that wes set
Abovin his hed on the basnet;
And toward him he went in hy.
And quhen the kyng so apertly
Saw hym cum forrouth all his feris,
In hy till hym his hors he steris;
And quhen schir henry saw the kyng
Cum on for-outen abaysyng,
Till him he raid in full gret hy.
He thought that he suld weill lichly
Vyn hym, and haf hym at his will,
Sen he hym saw horsit so III.
Than sprent thai samyn in-till a lyng;
Schir Henry myssit the nobill kyng;
And he, that in his st erapis stude,
With ax that wes bath hard and gude
With so gret mayn roucht hym añe dynt,
That nouthir hat no helme mycht stynt
The hevy dusche that he him gaf,
That he the hed till harnyf claf.
The hand-ax-schaft ruschit in twa,
And he doune till the erd can ga
All flatlyngis, for hym falȝeit mycht;
This wes the first strak of the ficht,
That wes performyst doughtely.
And quhen the kyngis men so stoutly
Saw him, richt at the first metyng,
For-outen dout or abaysing,
[Have] slayn añe knycht swa at añe strak,
Sic hardyment than can thai tak,
That thai com on richt hardly.
Quhen ynglis men saw thame stoutly
Cum on, thai had gret abaysyng;
And specialy, for that the kyng
So smerty that gud knycht had slayn;
Than thai with-drew thaim euir-ilkañe,
And durst nocht than abyde to ficht,
So dred thai than the kyngis mycht.
And quhen the kyngis men thame saw
Swa in haiil battale thame withdraw,
The Scotch pursuè.

BUUCE LAMENTS HIS BROKEN AXE.

[BOOK XII.

The Scotch pursuè.

BUUCE LAMENTS HIS BROKEN AXE.

Most of the English escape.

A gret schot till thame can thai mak,
And thai in hy tuk all the bak,
And thai, that followit thame, has slaynè
Sum of thame that thai haf our-tane.
Bot thai war few, forsuth to say; 80
Thar hors fete had ner all avay!
But how sa quheyn deit thair,
Reboytit fellely thai war,
And raid thair gat with weill mair schamo,
Be full fer, than thai com fra hame.

When the King returns his lords blame him,

Q when at the king reparit wes,
That gert his men leif all the chaf; 88
The lordis of his Cumpany
Blamyt [him], as thai durst, gretly,
That he hym put in auenture
To mete so stith a knycht and sture 92
In sic poyn as he than wes seyn;
For thai said, "weill it mycht haf beyne
Canò of thair tynsale euirilkañè."
The kyng, thame ansuer maid he nañè,
Bot menyt his hand-ax-schaft, that swa
Wes with ane strak brokyn in twa.
The Erll thomas wes ëit fechtand
With fayis apon athyr hand,
And slew of thame ëne quantite,
Bot wery war his men and he;
The quhethir with vapnys sturdely
Thai thame defendit manfully.

77. schot] schowt E; shout H.
78. tuk] gaue H.
82. ner] them H; E om.
83. quheyn] quhoyne. Except some part that died there H.
84. fellely] foulily E; filthily H.
85. gat] way H.
87. at] that EH.
88. leif all] all leve.

[book XII.

90. [him EH] C om.
92. stith] starke H.
96. thame—he] answer has maid thaim E; answer hes made right H.
97. that] E om.
98. ane] the E; that H.
101. slew] E om. ane] A.
104. manfully] manilely.
Quhill that the lord dowglaȝ com neir,  
That sped hyme apon gret maneir.  
The yngliȝ men that war fechtand,
Quhen thai the douglas saw at hand,
Thai vayndist and maid aȝ opinyg.
Schir Iames dowglaȝ, be thair relyng,
Knew at thai war discumfit neir,
Than bad he thame that vith him weir 
Stand still, and preiȝ no forthirmar;
“For thai that ȝondir fechtand ar,”
He said, “ar of sa gret bounte,
That thair fayis [weill] soyn [sall] be
Discumfit throu thair awn mycht,
Though no man help thaim for to ficht.
For cum we now in-to fechting,
Quhen thai ar at discumfyting,
Men suld say we thame ruschit had,
And swa suld thai, that cauȝ [has] mad
With gret travaill and hard fechting,
Leiȝ aȝe part of thair lovyng.
And it war syn to leiȝ his prif,
That of sa soueraȝe bounte is,
That he throu playn & hard fechting
Has heir eschewit unlikly thing;
He sall haf that he wonyn hase.”
The Erll, with thame that fechtand was,
Quhen he his fayis saw brawll swa,
Randolph presses the English hard, till at last they flee.

Many were slain.

Earl Thomas and his men

Of all his company he lost but one yeoman.

Earl Thomas, that had hym helpit swa, And his men als that war very, Hynt of thair basnetis in-till hy Till avent thame, for thai var hat; Thai war all helit in-to swat. Thame semyt men forsuth, I hicht, That had fayndit thair fayis in ficht, And swa thai did full douchtely. Thai fand of all thair Cumpany That thar wes bot aane zeman slayn, Than lovit thai god and war full fayn, And blith [that] thai eschapat swa. Toward the king than can thai ga, And till him soyne weill cumin ar He askit thame of thair weill-fair,
And gladsum cher to thame he maid,
For thai so weill than born thame had.
Than all ran in-to gret dantee
The Erll of murreff for till se;
For his hye vorschip and valour
All 3arnit till do him honour.
So fast thai ran till se hym thair,
That neir all sammyn assemblit war.
And quhen the gud king can thaim so
Befor him swa assemblit be,
Blith and glad that thair fayis war
Sa reboytit, as said wes ar,
A litill quhill he held him still,
[Syne] on this wif he said thame till.

"L
ordyngis," he said, "we aucht to luf
Almychtig god that sittis abuf,
That sendis vs so fair begynnyng.
It is a\n gret disconfortyng
Till our fais, that on this vi\n Sa soyn reboytit has beyn twi\n For quhen thai of thair host sall heir,
And knaw suthly on quhat maneir
Thair awaward, that wes so stout,
And syne 3on othir Ioly rout—
That I trow of the best men war

157. he] E om.
158. than] EH om. born thame]
159. ran] so H; pressyt E. dantee
daynte.
161, 162. H omits. valour] gret
163. till] to EH.
164. all sammyn] hand all H.
war] ar.
165. Rabutyg apon sic maner E;
Rebuted vpon that maner H.
166. See note to l. 154.
167. [Syne EH] And C. thame
till] them till H; his will E.
168. Hubrie in H—How that the
King comforted his men, That twyse
their faes rebuted had then. he—to
we aucht to love and E; we ought to
loife, and H.
169. ane] A.
170. reboyt-it—beyn] has benn
rabutyg EH.
171. avaward] waward E; Vang
172. King Robert,
finding them
thus assembled,
addresses them
as follows:—
"We ought to
praise God for
this fair
beginning.
173. When the main
army of the
English come to
hear of the
repulse of their
vanguard,
That thai mycht get emang thame thar—
War reboytit so suddandly,
I trow, and knawis it all cleirly,
That mony aue hert sall vaverand be
That semyt ere of gret bounte.
And fra the hert be discumfite,
The body is nocht vorth a myt.
Thar-for I trow that gud ending
Sall follow till our begynnynig.
The quhethir I say nocht this 3ow till,
For that 3e suld follow my will
To ficht, for in 3ow sall all be;
For gif 3e think spedfull that we
Fecht, we sall ficht; and gif 3e will
We leif, 3our liking to fulfill,
I sall consent on alkyn wiò
Till do richt as 3he will deuifò;
Tharfor sais on 3our will planly."
Than vith aue voce all can thai cry—
"Gud king, forouten mair delay,
To-morn, als soyn as 3e se day,
Ordane 3ow haill for the battale,
For dout of ded we sall nocht fale;
Na nañe payn sall refusit be
Till we haue maid our cuntre fire."

183. reboytit] rabutyt. suddandly]
sodanly.
184. all] miswritten sall in E.
185. aue] A. vaverand] waver-
and E; wauring H.
190. follow] folow E; miswritten fallo C.
191. The] And.
192. follow] folow E; fallow C;
fulfill H.
194. 3e think] 3ow thinkis.
195. ficht] E om.
196. leif] leve.
198. Till] To E.H.
199. on] so H; off E.
200. Thau] Then H; And E. ane
voce] a woce E; a voyce H. all] so
H; than E.
201. Gnd] And the (wrongly) E.
205. nae] na.
\[Q\] when the king herd thaim so manly
Speq to the sicht and hartely,
*Saying, that noughter life nor dead
*To sik discouorm soould them lead
*That they soould eschew the feughting,
*In heart he had great reioycing;
In hert gret gladship can he ta,
And said, “lordyngis, sen 3e will sa,
Schapis tharfor in the mornyng
Swa that we, be the soone-rysing,
Haf herd mes, and be buskit weill,
Ilk man [in]-till his awne yscheill,
Without the paljownys arayit,
In battale with baneris displayit.
And luk 3he na vay brek aray;
And, as 3e luf me, I 3ow pray,
That ilk man for his awne honour
Purva gud baneour.
And Quentin it cummys to the sicht,
Ilk man set his hert and mycht
To stynt our fays mekill prydl.
On horD thai sall arayit Ryd,
And cum on 3ow in weill gret hy;
Meit thame with speris hardely,
And wreik on thame the mekill III
That thai and tharis has done vs till,

207. *herd thaim* heard them H; had hard E. manly] manily.
208. Thai spak to fechting, and sa hardely E; Speake to the thing, and
sa hastily H.
209*—212*. From H; not in EC.
209. So in E. And to him great
gladship can ta H.
211. *Schapis*] Schaip we ws EH.
213. be] E om.
214. *intill* so E; till C; in H.
yscheill] eschell E; batell H.
215. *paljownys*] Pauillons H.

208. When the king
hears their bold
speech,

212* he rejoices
greatly, and
says:—

"To-morrow, by
sunrise, let mass
be over and let
every man be
armed, each in
his own company.

216 Provide good
banner-bearers.

220 When the
English horse
attack you,
meet them boldly
with your spears,
and avenge all
your wrongs.

224 When the
English horse
attack you,
meet them boldly
with your spears,
and avenge all
your wrongs.
232. We ought to be bold.

We have three advantages.
1. We have the right on our side.

2. They have brought so much wealth with them, that their spoils will enrich us all.

3. We fight for our wives and children, and for freedom.

And ar in will 3eit for till do,
Gif thai haf mycht till cum thur-to.
And, certis, me think weill that we,
For-out abasyng, aucht till be
Worthy and of gret wassalage;
For we haue thre gret advantage,
The first is, that we haf the richt;
And for the richt ilk man suld licht.
The tothir is, thai ar cumyn heir,
For lypnyng in thair gret power,
To seik vs in our awne land,
And [has] brought her, richt till our hand,
Riche6 in-to so gret plentee,
That the pouerest of 3ow sall be
Bath rych and mycht6 thar-with-all,
Gif that we wyn, as weill may fall.
The thrird is, [that] we for our lyvis
And for our childer and our vifis,
And for the fredome of our land,
[Ar stren3eit] in battale for to stand,
And thai for thair mycht anerly,
And for thai leit of ws lichtly,
And for thai wald distroy vs all,
Mais thame to ficht; bot zet ma fall
That thai sall rew thar barganyng.

I warn you that,

And, certis, I warne 3ow of a thing,
To happyn thame (as god forbeid !)

229. till] to; and in 11. 230, 232.
231. we] 3e.
233. wassalage] vassalage H; wassalage E.
234. arantage] auantage H; auantage E.
236. ilk—suld] ay god will EH.
237. thai—heir] that they com-
men are here H; that thai cуммyn
ar E.
238. lypnyng] lipning H; lypnyng E. in] off.
240. [has E] hes H; haue C.
241. plentee] plentie H; quantite
E.
245. [that EH] for C; see l. 235.
246. our vifis] for our wywis.
247. the] our EH. of] and for E;
and H.
248. [Ar stren3eit E] Are strenyied
H; Stoutly C. in] so H; in-to E.
250. leit] lat E; set H. lichtly
heychty.
255. To] Gif H; That E.
Till fynd fantif in-till our deid,
Swa that thai wyn vs oppynly,
Thai sall haf of vs no mercy.
And sen we know thar fellouñe will,
Me think it suld accorde till skill
To set stoutnes agáne felony,
And mak swagat añe Iuperly.
Quharfor I 3ow requeir and pray,
That, with all mycht that enir 3e may,
3he prefó 3ow at the begynnyng,
But cowardí0 or abaysyn,
To meit thame that first sail assemmyll
So stoutly that the henmast trymmyll.
And menys on 3our gret manheid,
3our vorschip and 3our doughty deid,
And of the Ioy that 3he abyd,
Gif that vs fallis, as weill may tyd,
[Hap] to vencuf the gret battale.
In-till 3our handís, for-outen faill,
3e ber honour, prísó, and richeó,
Fredoñe, welth, and gret blithneó,
Gif 3e conteyn 3ow manfully ;
And the [contrar] all haleyly
Sall [fall], gif 3he let cowardí0
And vikkidneó 3our hertís supprís.

256. That deyt on roid for mankyn
heïd E ; For to preuaile into this
steed H.
257. Swa] E om. 258. haf—vs] off vs haf EH.
265, 266. H transposes. 266. 3he] That 3e.
267. that—sull] that sall first H ;
at thar fyrst E.
268. menys on] menys of E ; thinke
vpon H.
256 if they find us cowards and
defeat us, they
will shew us no mercy.
260 We must set our
boldness against
their cruelty.
264 Be sure then to
meet them
boldly at first.
268 Think of the
fame and joy,
if we happen to
conquer.
272 You will win
honour, riches,
freedom, and
blitheness.
280 3our hertís] your heart H ;
3ow E.
You might have continued in thralldom;

[ Fol. 92 b. C.] but because you yearned for freedom, you are here with me.

Remember my brother Nigel’s fate.

Though our foes have might, yet they are in the wrong.

Let no man seize the spoil till the field is wholly ours.

3he mycht haf lift in-to thrildone;
Bot, for 3e 3armit till haf fredome,
3he ar assemblit heir with me;
Tharfor is neidfull that 3he be
Worthy and wicht, but abaysyng.
I warne 3ow weill 3eit of a thing,
That mair myscheif may fall vs naife
Than in thair handis to be tane;
For thai suld slay vs, I wat weill,
Richt as thai did my brothir Neill.
Bot quhen I meyn of 3hour stoutnes,
And on the mony gret proweß
That 3he haue done so worthely,
I trast, and trowis sekirly,
Till haue playne victor in this ficht.
For thouch our fais haue mekill mycht,
Thai haf the vrang and succudry;
And covatif [of] senßhory
Amovif thame for-outen mor.
Na vs thar driend thame bot befor;
For strynth of this place, as 3he se,
Sall let vs enveronyt to be.
And I pray 3how als specialy,
Both mor and leß, all comonly,
That naie of 3ow for gredynes
Haf E till tak of thair Richeß,
Na presoners 3eit for till ta,
Quhill 3he se thame enmaryt swa,

292. on] off.
294. trowis] trowes it H.
297. succudry] so E; succowdry H.
298. [of E] and C. senßhory] senßowry. And couets wrangous Senßyeory H.
299. 300. H omits. thar] so EPI; misprinted char J.

284. 288. 292. 296. 300. 304. 308. 302. to] for to C; but E om for.
304. all] EH om. comonly] comonaly E; commonly H.
306. E] eye H; ey E. till] to EH.
307. 3eit] E om.; H puts yet after Nor (for Na). till] to EH.
308. enmaryt] contraryit E; arrayed H.
That the field plainly ours be.
And than, at your liking, may so
Tak all the Riches that thar is.
Gif 3he will wyrk apon this warf,
3he sall haf victor sekrily.
I wat nocht quhat mar say sall I;
3he wat weill all quhat honour is,
Conteyn 3ow tharfor on sic warf,
That 3our honour ay savyt be.
And I hecht heir, in my lawte,
Gif ony deis in this battaill,
His air, but ward, relecif, or taill,
On the first day his land sall weild,
All be he neuir so 3houng of eild.
Now [makis] 3ow reddy till the ficht,
God help vs, that is mast of mycht!
I red armyt all nycht 3he be,
Purvait in battale, sa that we
To meit our fais [ay] be boune."
Than ansuerd thay all with a sowne,
"As 3he deuif, sa sall be done!"
Than till thar Innys went thay soyne,
And ordanit thame for the fichting;
Syne assemblit in the evynnyng,
And swa gat all the nycht baid thay
Till on the morn that it wes day.

Q

when the clyffurd, as I sayd air,
And all his rowt reboytit war,

309. That] And that H. feld] so E; field H; feldis C. planly ours E.
ours plainly H; anerly 3owris E.
315. 3he—all] Bot all wate 3e E; But yee wate all H.
316. 3ow] you H; E om. tharfor] than E; that H. wise] awiss E; a wise H.
318. I hecht] Ik hycht. my] so H; E om.

320. His land freely but Taxe or Tailye H.
321. his land] his aires H; E om.
323. [makis] makys E; mak C; make H. till the] for to E; for the H.
325. 3he] we H; that we E.
327. ay be E] all be H; be reddy C.
329. sa] all EH.
336. reboyt] rebyt EH.

Then you may all take what you like best.
You know what honour is; then preserve it.
If any die in this battle, his heirs
shall have immediate possession
without fines.

[Top. 93. C.]

Remain armed all night."

They all assent.
They retire, and make all preparations.
And that gret vaward alsua
Wes distreñzit the bak till ta,
And thai haf tald their reboytng,
Thai of the waward, how the king
Slew at a strak sa apertry
The best kyndyt of their cheulcry ;
And how all hail the kyngis battail
Schupe thame richt stoutly till assaill,
And Schir Eduard the brufo alsua,
Quhen thai all hail the bak can ta ;
And how thai lessit off their men,
And cliffurd had tald alsua then
How thomas randall tuk the playne
With few folk, and how he has slaye
Schir vilgæme danecourt the worthy ;
And how the Erll faucht manfully,
That, as aên hyrcheoune, all his rout
Gert set out speris all about ;
And how at thai war put agane,
And part of their gud men wes slañe,
The yngliç men sic abaying
Tuk, and sic dreid of that tithing,
That in v hundreth placis and ma
Men mycht thame samynyn se rown and ga,
Sayand, “our lordis, for thar mycht,
Will all-gat ficht agane the richt ;
Bot quha sa varrayis vrangwisly,
Thai faynd god all too gretumly,
And thai may happen to mysfall;
And sa may tyd that her we sall."
And quhen thir lordis had persaving
Of the discomford, and the rownyng
That thai held samyn twa and twa,
Throu-out the hoost soyne [gert] thai ga
Herrodis for till mak ane crye,
That nane discomford suld it be;
For in punzeis is oft hapnyne
Quhill for to vyne, and quhill to tyne;
And that, in-to the gret Battale,
That apon na maner may fale;
Bot, gif the Scottis flee avay,
Sall all amendit be, perfay.
Tharfor thai monyst thame to be
Of gret vorschip and of Bounte,
And stithly in the Battale stand,
And tak a-mendis at thair hand.
Thai may weill [monyss] as thai will,
And thai may als hecht till fuill
With stalwart strakis thair byddgingis all;
Bot nocht-for-thi, I trow thai sall
In-till thair hertis dredande be.
The king, with his consell preve,
Has tañe to rede that he vald nocht

364. faynd] fend E; offend H.
365. thai] thaim.
366. thir] thair.
367. the] that H; E om. (in both places).
368. soyne] sone E; then H. [gert E] can CH.
some H. ane] a.
370. nane] to nane C; but EH om. to. it] E om.
371. punzeis] punze E; jeopardies
372. hapnyne] happyne E; happen-
373. nyne H. 374. away] thair way EH.
375. monyst] monest E; monisht
376. of (2)] great H.
377. stithly] stoutly EH.
378. hand] so E; awne hand C; owne hand H.
379. moniys E] monish H; monast C.
381. strakis] hart EH. byddingis] bidding EH.

When their lords perceived this,
they sent heralds to proclaim that
there was no cause for fear;
it would be different in the
great battle.
Thus they encouraged them.
Encourage their men as they may, I ween
they will still be afraid in their hearts!
The English rest all night down in the Carse of Stirling.

Because the Carse was full of pools, they bridged these with boards and pieces of thatch.

The people from the castle brought them doors and windows, and thus all the pools were bridged over.

At daybreak, the Scotch hear mass, take a sup, and array themselves.

The scottis men, quhen it wes day,
Thair með deuotly herd thai say,
Syne tuk a sop, and maid thame 3ar.
And quhen [thai] all assemblit war,
And in thair battalis all purvait,

Fecht [or] the morñe, bot he var socht.
Thair thai herbrít thâme that nycht
Douñe in the kerf, and gert all dicht,
And mak reddy ther apparele
Agañe the morñe for the Battale.
For in the kerf pollis ther war,
Howsis and thak thai brak, and bar
To mak bryggis quhar thai mycht pað.
And sum sais ȝeit, the folk that wes
In the castell, quhen nycht can fall,
For at thai knew thair myscheiff all,
Thai went furth neir all at thai war,
And durys and vyndowis with thaim bar,
Swa that thai had befor [the] day
Briggit the pollis, swa that thai
War passit our euir-ilkañe,
*And the [hard] feld on horf has tane,
*All reddy for till gif battale,
Arayit in-to thair apparale.

The battale of Bannokburne.

At daybreak, Bruce makes knights. [BOOK XII.

The scottis men, quhen it wes day,
Thair með deuotly herd thai say,
Syne tuk a sop, and maid thame 3ar.
And quhen [thai] all assemblit war,
And in thair battalis all purvait,
With thair braid baneries all displayit, 412
Thai maid knyghtis, as it offeris
To men that oysis thai mysteris.
The kynge maid vaeter stewart knyght, 416
And James of douglas, that ves vicht,
And othir als of gret Bounte
He maid, ilkane in thair degre.
Quhen this wes done, that I zoun say, 420
Thai went all furth in gud aray,
And tuk the playne full apertly,
Mony wicht man, gud and hardy,
That wer fulfillit of gret bounte.
In-till thair rowtis men mycht se 424
The yngli6 men, in othir party,
That richt as angelis schane brichtly,
War nocht arayit on sic maner;
For all thair Battalis sammyn wer 428
In a [schiltrum]; bot quhethir It wes
Throu the gret stratnes of the plafo,
That thai war rad till byd fichting,
Or that it wes for abaysing,
I wat nocht; bot in a [schiltrum]
It Semyt thai war, all and some,
Outane the vaward anerly,
That with ane richt gret cumpany
Be thame-selvin arayit war,
And till the battale maid thame 3ar.
That folk our-tuk ane mekill feld

414. oysis] wsys E; vses H.
421. full] field H.
422. wicht—gud] wight man good
H; gud and wicht E.
424. thair] thai.
436. richt] E om.
429. [schiltrum] schiltrum E (but see l. 433); shiltrum H; childrome
C. wes] was.
431. rad till] in to E; in, to H.
433. [schiltrum E] shiltrum H;

Knights are made.
The king knights Walter Stewart
and James of Douglas.
They set themselves in array.
The Englishmen on the other side
though shining like angels, were
not so arrayed,
but crowded together in a
troop,
all except the
vanguard.

They covered a
large space,
where might be seen shining shields and bright banners.

When the king of England sees the Scots take the field on foot, he exclaims, "What! will you Scots fight?"

Sir Ingraham Umphraville replies that it is truly marvellous, but he can tell how to defeat them easily.

"If we retire behind our tents,

On breid, quhar mony [a schynand] scheld,
And mony a burnyst bright Armour,
And mony man of gret valour,
And mony a baner, bright & scheyne,
Micht in that gret [schiltrum] be semyne.
And quhen the kyng of yngland
Saw scottis men sa tak on hand
To tak the hard feild so planly,
And apen fut, he had ferly,
And said, "quhat? will you scottis ficht?"
"3aa, sekirly, schir," than said a knycht,
Schir Ingerame umphrevell hat he,
And said, "forsuth, schir, now I se
All the mast ferlifull sycyt
That euir I saw, quhen for to ficht
The scottis men has tane on hand
Agane the gret mycht of yngland,
In plane hard feild to gif battale.
Bot and 3he will [trow] my console,
3he sall discomfit thame lichtly.
3he sall withdraw [hyne] suddanly,
With battalis, baneris, and penownys,
Qhill that we pa6 our pal3eownys;
And 3e sall se als soyne at thai,
Magre their lordis, sall brek aray,
And scale thame, our harne6 to ta.

440. [a schynand E] a shining H;
schenand C.
442. man] so H; a man E.
443. baner bright] brycht baner.
444. [schiltrum E] shiltrum H;
childrome C. E transposes li. 443
and 444.
446. Saw] so H; Swa E. so]
saw E.
447. To tak] so H; Takand E.
hard] plaine H. planly] opynly EH.
450. schir than] E om.
451. umphrevel] the wmfrawill E;
the Wmfraille H.

440. 452. schir now] now schyr.
453. All] It is E; Bot dread H.
ferlifull] marveilous H.
454. quhen for] so E; wheene for H; for quhen C.
456. gret] haill H; E om.
458. [trow EH] throu C.
460. 3he—withdraw] Withdrawys
3ow E; Ye sall withdraw H. [hyne EH] C om.
461. baneris and] Baners and H; and with E.
463. als—at] alsone that.
And quhen we se thame scalit swa,  
Prik we than on thame hardly,  
And we sall haf thame weill lichtly.  
For than sall nane be knyt to ficht,  
That may withstand our mekill mycht.”

“I will nocht,” said the king, “perfay,  
Do sa; for ther sall no man say  
That I suld eschewe the battale,  
Na withdraw me for sic rangale.”

Quhen this wes said that er said I,  
The scottis men full deuotly  
Knelyt [all] doune, till god to pray,  
And a schort prayer thair maid thai  
Till god, till help thame in that ficht.

And quhen the ynglif king had sicht  
Of thame kneland, he said in hy—  
"3on folk knelis till ask mercy.”

Schir yngerame said, “3e say suth now;  
Thai ask mercy, bot nocht at 3ow.  
For thair trespaO to god thai cry.  
I tell 3ow a thing sekirly.  
That 3on men will wyn all or de,  
For dout of ded thar sall nañe fle.”

"Now be it swa,” than said the kyng,  
“We sall it se but delaying.”

He gert trwmp vp to the assemble;  
On athir syd than men mycht se

470. our] so H; 3our E.  
473. suld] sould H; sall E.  
475. Rubric in H—The meeting of  
the great battalyle, Where Scots de-  
defend, and English failye.  
476. full deuotly] comounaly E;  
right reuerently H; all full deuotly  
C.  
477. Knelyt all EH] Thai knelit  
C. till] to EH.  
479. Till] To EH; twice.  
482. knelis till] kneels to H;  
knel to E.
Full mony wicht men and worthy,  
All reddy till do cheuelry.

Thus are both sides arrayed.

The English vanguard attacks  
Sir Edward Bruce’s company.

The encounter is fierce, and many are slain.

The wounded horses rush and reel.

Spears and axes are plied.

493. *Full mony*] Mony A. *men*] man EH.  
494. *All*] EH om. *till*] to EH.  
497. *awaward*] so CE; Vangard H.  
498. *Till*] To EH.  
503. [*that EH*] C om. *the*] thair  
EH.  
506. *thar*] that EH.  
508. *Mony*] And mony EH. *gud*] *man*} Knight H. *doune*] E om.  
509. *ane hardyment*] hardy men and E; a hardy met H (*where* hardy men and hardy met *are* both corruptions of *hardiment*).  
510. *full*] for.  
513. [*roydly*] rudlye E; rudely H; sturdy C; *but see xi. 545.  

THUS war thai bouned on athir syde;  
And ynglið men, with mekill prid,  
That var in-till thar awaward,  
Till the battall that schir eduard  
Gouernyt and led, held straucht thair vay.  
The horð with spuris hardnyt thai,  
And prikit apon thame sturdely;  
And thair met thame richt hardely,  
Swa [that], at the assemble thair,  
Sic a frusching of speris wair  
That fer avay men mycht it her.

At thar metyng, for-outen wer,  
Wer stedis stekit mony añe,  
Mony gud man borne dome and slaune,  
And mony añe hardyment doubtely  
Wes thair eschewit full hardely.  
Thair dang on othir with vapnys ser;  
Sum of the horð, that stekit wer,  
Ruschtit and relit richt [roydly].  
Bot the remanant, nocht-for-thi,  
That mycht cum to the assembling,  
For that lat maid rycht no stynting,  
But assemblit full hardely.  
And thair met thaim full sturdely  
With speris that war scharp to scher,  
And axis that weill grundyn wer,
Quhar-with wes roucht full mony rout.  
The ficht wes thair so fell and stout, 
That mony worthy men and wicht, 
Throu forf, wes fellit in that ficht, 
That had no mycht to ryf agane. 
The scottis men fast can thame payne 
Thair fais mekill mycht to ruf. 
I trow thair sail no payne refu, 
In na perell, quhill thair fais be 
Set in-till herd proplexite.

And quhen the erll of murref sa 
Thair avaward [saw] stoutly ta 
The vay to schir Eduard [all] straucht, 
That met thame with full mekill maucht, 
He held his way with his baner 
Till the gret rout, quhar sammyn wer 
The nyne battales that wes so braid, 
That so feill baneris with thame had, 
And of men sa gret quantite, 
That it war wonder for to se. 
The gud erll thiddir tuk the way 
With his battale in gud aray, 
And assemblit so hardely, 
Quhill men mycht her, that had beyn by, 
A gret frusche of the speres that brast. 
For thair fais assalȝeit fast.

521. *full mony*] mony a EH.  
522. *ficht*] fight H; fechting E. 
523. *worthy men*] a worthi man 
524. *many brave men are slain.*  
525. *no*] na EH.  
526. *russ*] frusch E; frush H. 
527. *in-till*] in weill E; well H. 
531. *Rubric in H—The Erle of Mvrray with his batailie, Came on stoutly but ony fallyie.*  
532. *avaward*] waward E; Vanguard H.  
533. *saw*] saw sa E; so C. 
534. *many brave men are slain.*  
535. *assalȝeit*] assailied H; assemblit E.
FIERCE ENCOUNTERS, AND GREAT LOSS OF LIFE. [BOOK XII.

The earl's company is furiously attacked, but resists manfully.

That on stedis, with mekill prid,
Com prikand as thai wald [our] ryd
The Erll and all his Cunpany.

Bot thai met thame so sturdely,
That mony of thame till erd thai bar.

And mony a steid wes stekit thar,
And mony gud man fellit vndir feit,
That had no power to rif o 3eit.

Doughty deeds are performed.

Ther men mycht se ahe hard battale,
And sum defend and sum assale,
And mony a riall rymmyll ryde
Be roucht thair [apon] athir syde,
Qhill throu the byrmeis brist the blud,
That till the erd doune stremand 3ud.

The Earl of Murray and his men gain ground, though their foes are ten for one.

So stoutly thame contenit then,
That thai wan plaé ay mair & mair
On thair fais, the quhethir thai war
Ay ten for ahe, or ma, perfay ;
Swa that it semyt weill that thai
War tynt emang so gret men3c,
As thai war plungit in the se.

And quhen the yngli6 men has seyne
The Erll and all his men be-deyne
Fecht sa stoutly, but effraying,
Richt as thai had [nane] abaysing,
Thai pressit thame with all thar mycht,
And thai, with speris and suerdís brycht,

[And] axis that rycht scharply schar,

548. [our E] ouer H ; on C.
552. And] For.
553. mony] fell H.
554. power] hap. zeit] wp 3ete.
555. men mycht] mycht men. aue]

A.
557. riall—ryde] reale romble rid

E; rumble great and red H.
558. [apon E] on CH

548. the] E om. 3ud] 3hude. That on the erd in streames yood H.
560. the] E om.
564. the] E om.
565. ma] may.
566. emang] amang. gret] fell H.
571. Fecht] Feght H ; Faucht E.
572. [nane EH] no C.
575. [And EH] With C.
In-myd the visage met thaine thar.
Thar men mycht se ane stalwart stour,
And mony men of greit valour
With spers, macyf, and with knyvis,
And othir vynys vissill thair lyvis,
Swa that mony fell doune all ded;
The Gyrf wox with the blude all red.
The Erll, that wicht wes and worthy,
And his men faucht so manfully,
That, quha sa had seyne thaim that day,
I trow foresuth, that thai suld say,
That thai suld do thair devour wele,
Swa that thair fayis suld it feill.

577. men mycht] mycht men. ane]
579. with] E om.
580. vissill] wysylyt E; wissell H.
582. gyrss wox] greys woux.
584. manfully] manlyly.
586. thae] he H.
587. suld—devour] their devour

Spears, maces, and knives are fast plied;
the grass is red with blood.
The Earl of Murray and his men do their duty well.
When Walter Stewart and Douglas see the Earl of Murray attack the enemy so boldly, they go to his aid.

The enemy receive their attack firmly.

The Scotch behave most gallantly.

When that thir twa first batell's wer Assemblit, as I said 3ow er, The steward, valter that than wes, And the gud lord als of douglefi; In a batell quhen that thai saw The Erll, forouten dreid or aw, Assemblerl with his cumpayny On all the folk so sturdely, For till help him thai held thar vay With thar batell in gud aray, And assemblerl so hardely Besyd the erll a litill by, Thair fai deld thair cummyng weill; For with wagonys stalwart of steill Thai dang on thame with all thar mycht. Thair fai resauit thame weill, I hycht, With swerdis, speris, and with macyf.

The batell thair so felloune was, And sua richt grell spilling of blud, That on the erd the fluë it stud. The Scottis men so weill thame bar,

And sua gret slauchtir maid thai thar,
And fra so feill the livis revit,
That all the feild wes bludy levit.
That tym thir thre Battalis wer
All syde be syde fechtand weill neir.
Thar mycht man her richt mony dynt
And vapnys apon armour stynt,
And se tummyll knyechts and stedis,
With mony rich and ryoll wes
Defoult roydlly vnder feit.
Sum held on loft, sum tynt the suet.
A long quhill thus fechtand thai wer,
That men no noyis na cry mycht her;
Men herd nocht ellis bot granys & dyntis,
That slew fire, as men dois on flyntis;
Sa faucht thai ilka ëgirly
That thai maid nouthir noyis no cry,
Bot dang on othir at thar mycht,
With vapnys that war burnyst brycht.
The Arrowis als so thik thai flaw,
That thai mycht [say] weill, at thain saw,
That thai ane hydwisï schour can ma;
For quhar thai fell, I wendirta,
Thai left eftir thame taknyng
That sall neid, as I trow, lechyng
The ynglið archeris schot so fast,
That, mycht thar schot haf had last,

24. *wes bludy*] bludy wes.
25. *thir*] thar.
27. *richt*] EH om. *mony* mony
a H.
28. *armour*] armuris.
30. *With*] And. *ryoll*] reale E;
Royall H.
31. *roydlly*] fouly EH.
34. *na*] na EH. *na—her*] nor cry
might heare H; mycht her thar E.
35. *ellis*] E om.
36. *dois*] slayis. *That—dois*] They

24. The three companies are fighting side by side.
28. The battle lasts long.
32. They fight so eagerly that they raise no cries.
40. The arrows fly fast, making a hideous shower.
44. Had the English archers continued shooting,
It had beyne hard to scottis men.
[Bot] king robert, that weill can ken
That the archeri war perelous,
And thar schot hard and rucht grevouf,
Ordanit forrout the assemble
His marschall with a gret menȝe,
Fiff hundreth armyt weill in steill,
That on licht horfõ war [horsyt] weill,
For to prik emang the archeri,
And sua assaile thàne with speris
That thai no laser [haf] to schute.
This marschall that I of mwt,
That schir robert of keth wes cald,
As I befor haß to swow tald,
Quhen that he saw the battalís swa
Assemmyll and to-giddir ga,
And saw the archeri schut stoutly,
With all thame of his cumpany
In hy apôn thame can he ryde,
And our-tuk thàne at a syde,
And ruschit emang thàin so roydly,
Strikand thàne sua dispitfully,
And in sic fusiounè berand douûe
And slayand thàne without ransouûe,
That thai thame scalit euirîlkaûe;
And fra that tyme furth ther wes naûe
That assemblit sic schot till ma.
Quhen scottis archeri saw at swa

hereof H. mwt EH.

61. keth] keyth E; Keith H.

62. I] Ik. hass] her has E; haue H. to] E om.

63. that] E om.

70. Strikand] Stryk- ing H. dispitfully] dispitously EH.

71. berand] dushing them H.

72. without] for-owtyn.

75. sic] thicke H; E om. till] to.

76. at] that thai E; it was H.
Thai war rebutit, thai wox hardy,
With all thar mycht schot egirly
Emang the horf-men that thar raid,
And voundis vyde to thame thai maid,
And slew of thame a wele gret dele;
Thai bar thame hardely and weill.
For fra thair fais archeris were
Scalit, as I haue said 3how ere,
That ma than thai war be gret thing,
Swa that thai dreb nocht thar schuting,
Thai wox so hardy that thame thought
Thai suld set all thair fais at noucht.

But the Scottish archers shoot
still, and annoy
the English horsemen.

Now that the
English archers
are dispersed, the
Scotch wax bold
and despise their
enemies.

The marshal
rides thus
amongst the
English archers,

without being
attacked at all.

He disperses
them so that
some retire,
and some flee.

But the English-
men in the rear,
before kept back
by their own
men, now
advance.

The marschall and his Cumpany
Wes 3eit, as to 3ow ere said I,
Amang the archeris, quhar thai maid
With speris rowme quhar at thai raid,
And slew all that thai mycht ourta.
And thai weil lightly mycht do swa,
For thai had nocht a strak to stynt,
Na for to hald agane a dynt;
And agane armyt men to ficht
May nakit men haff litill mycht.
Thai scalit thame on sic maner,
That sum to thar gret battelis wer
Withdrawin thaim in full gret hy,
And sum war fled all vtrely.
Bot the folk that behynd thame was,
That for thair awne folk had no space
3eit than to cum to the assemblyng,

78. With] And with E. schot]
thai schot full C; but EH omit thai
and full.
79. Emang] Amang EH.
81. vecle] full.
84. haue said] said till E; said to
H. ere] here C: ar E; aire H; see E.
1. 90; also 1. 2 above.
In agane smertly can thai dyng.
The archeris that thai met fleand,
That than war maid so recryand,
That thair hertis war tynt clerly,
I trow thai sall nocht scath gretly
The scottis men with schot that day.

And the gud king robert, that ay
Was fillit of full gret bounte,
Saw how that his battellis thre
So hardely assemblit thar,
That so well in the ficht thame bar,
And sa fast on thair fais can dyng
That him thought nane had abaying,
And how the archeris war scalit then;
He was all blith, and till his men
He said, "lordingis, now luk that 3he
Worthy and of gud covyne be
At this assemble, and hardy;
And assemmyll so sturdely
That no thing may befor 3ow stand.
Our men so freschly ar fechtand,
That thair fais has cumrait swa
That, be thair [presit], I vndirta,
A litill fastar, 3he sall se
That thair discumfit soyn sall be.
[*Now ga we on them sa hardely,
*And ding on them sa doughtely,
*That they may feele, at our comming,
*That we them hate in meekle thing:
*For great cause they haue vs made,
*That occupied our land[i]s brade,

109. *cleirly*] clenly.
110. *seath* skaiith H ; schout E.
116. *That*] And E.H.
122. *covyn* cowyn E ; comfort
H.
126. *freschly* fiercely H. *ar*] pre-
127. *cumrait* cumbred H ; gratnyt
E.
128. [*presit*] presyt E ; precased
H ; previt C. *I* lk.
131*—144*. From H ; not in EC.
BOOK XIII.]  THE SCOTCH FIGHT LIKE MADMEN.  311

*And put all to subiectioun:
*Your goods[is] made all theirs commoun:
*Our kyn and friend[is], for their awne,
*Despitteously hanged and drawne:
*And wald destroy vs gif they might.
*Bot, I trow, God, through his foresight,
*This day hes granted vs his grace
*To wrek vs on them in this place.”

Quhen this wes said, thai held thar way,
And on a syde assemblit thai
So stoutly, that at thar cummyng
Thair fais wer ruschit a gret thing.
Ther men mycht se men fresli ficht,
And men that worthy war and wycht
Do mony worthy wassalage;
Thai faucht as thai war in a rage.
For quhen the scottis ynkirly
Saw thair fais sa sturdyly
Stand in-to battale thame agane,
With all thar mycht and all thar mayne
Thai layd on, as men out of wit;
For quhar thai with full strak mycht hit,
Thair mycht no armyng stynt thar strak;
Thai to-fruschit thame thai mycht our-tak,
And with axis sic duschis gaff
That thai helmys and hedis claff.
And thair fais richt hardly
Met thame, and dang on douchtely.
With wapnys that war stith of steill.
Thar wes the battell strikyn weill;

138*. goodis] goods H ; goods they
A.
132. a syde] one side H ; one feld
E.
frescly] felly E ; fiercely H.
139. ynkirly] archery EH (surely
a mistake ; see II. 147, 208).

140* But God has this
day granted u
revenge.”

144* His men take
fresh courage ;

131 and fight as if in
a rage.

136 They lay on
blows like
madmen,

144 They lay on
blows like
madmen,

148 cleaving helms
and heads with
their axes.

152 There was the
battle well
stricken.

144. For] And EH.
145. armyn] armur EH.
146. to-fruschit] to-fruchyt E
frushed H. thame] that E ; all H.
150. on] on thaim. douchtely]
doggedly (!) H.
152. strikyn] strckyt. strikyn
weill] right cruell H.
There is such a
din of blows,
such breaking of
spears,
such groans,
cries, and shouts,
that it is hideous
to hear.

So gret dynynge ther wes of dyntis
As wapyns apone armor styntis,
And of speris so gret bristing,
With sic thraying and sic thristing,
Sic gyryng, granyng, and so gret
A noyis, as thai can othir bet,
And cryit enseynes on euerilk syd,
Gifand takand woundis wyd,
That it wes hydwiss for till her
All four the battelis, wicht that wer,
Fechtand in-till a front haly.

Ah! how
gallantly
Sir Edward Bruce
and his men
bear themselves!

At last the
English vanguard
gives way,
and retreat to
the main army.

Many feats of
arms are done.

So gret noyse,
That thar awaward ruscht was,
And, magre thairis, left the plafo
And to thar gret rowt to warrand
Thai went, that than had apone hand
So gret no, that thai war effralt,
For scottis men thame hard assait,
That than war in aine [schiltron] all.
Quha hapnit in that ficht to fall,
I trow agane he suld nocht rif.

153. *dynynge* ding H; dyn E.
156. *With* And EH. *thrawynge*
thrang EH.
159. *And cryit* Crying H; And
E. *enervilk* ilka E; ilk H.
161. *till* to EH.
162. *four the* thair iij E; the
foure H. *wich* with EH.
163. *in-till* in EH. *haly* hallyly.
164. *Almychty* A mychtie E: O
mightie H. *full* how EH.
165. *bryss* bruce.

156. *in-to* in E; *but* into H.
159. *areward* wawerd E; Van-
gard H.
161. *to* till.
162. *than* then H; tane E.
163. *not* anoy E; noyse H.
164. *men* that E; men that H.
165. *than* they H. *ane* A. *schil-
trum* E] shiltron H; childrome C.
166. *in* in-to. *jicht* preasse H.
179. *Hardyment* Hardimentis EH.
And mony that wicht war and hardy
Doune under feit lyand all dede,
Quhar all the feild of blud wes red.
Armoris and quyntis that thai bare
With blud wes swa defowlit thar,
That thai mycht nocht descrivit be.
A! mycht my! quha than mycht se
The steward Walter and his rout
And the gud dowglas that wes stout
Fechtand in-to the stalward stour,
He suld say that till all honour
Thai war worthy, that in that ficht
Sa fast presit thair fais mycht,
That thai thame ruscit quhar thai 3eid.
Thair mycht men se mony a steid
Fleand on stray, that [lord] had naic.
A! lord! quha than gud tent had taic
To the gud erll off murreff,
And his, that swa gret rowtis gaf,
And faucht so fast in that battale,
Tholand sic Payne and sic travale,
That thai and thairis maid sic debat,
That quhar thai com, thai maid thain gat!
Than mycht men heir ensenseis cry,
And scottis men cry hardely,
"On thame! On thame! On thame! thai faill!"
With that so hard thai can assaill,
And slew all that thai mycht our-ta,
And the scottis archeris alsua

180 Many bold men lie dead underfoot.
184 Armorial devices are so defiled with blood that they cannot be made out.
188 Stewart and Douglas are worthy of all honour.
192 Steeds are seen fleeing away, without riders.
196 The Earl of Murray and his men make their way everywhere.
204 The Scotch cry—"On them! they fail!"
208
While the battle is thus proceeding, [Book XIII.

The Scotch archers shoot fast at the English, and much annoy them.


The Scotch redouble their efforts to break the English ranks.

Schot emang thame so sturdely,
Ingrevand thame so gretumly,
That quhat for thame that with thame faucht,
And swa gret rowtis to thame raucht,
And presit thame full egirly,
And quhat for arrowes that belly
Mony gret voundis can thame ma,
And slew fast of their horfs alsua,
That thai vayndist a litell we;
Thai dred so grety thame till de
That thair covyn was war than eir.
For thai that with thame fechtand weir
Set hardyment, [and] strynth, and will,
With hart and corage als thar-till,
And all thair mayne and all thar mycht,
[To] put thame fouly to the flycht.

How the themen men and the pouer men maid of scethis the maner of baneris, in supple of king robert the bruce & his folkis.

In this tyme that I tell of her,
That the battall on this maner
Wes strikin, quhar on athir party
Thai war fechtand richt manfully,

209. **emang**] amang E. **sturdely**
delinerly.
210. **Ingrevand**] Engrewand E; Engreening H.
213. **Catchword in C**—And quhat for arrowes that belly.
215. **ma**] so EH; may C.
217. **rayundist**] wandyst E; recooled H.
219. **was**] woxt H. **war—eir**] wer and wer.
220. **with—fechtand**] fechtand with thaim EH.
221. [and EH] C om.
222. **With**] And EH.
224. [To EH] And C. **fouly**] fully EH. **the**] E om.
225. Rubric from C; H has—How Scottish Swayne of sheetes made The Baners, and in battell rade.
226. **That the**] At that E; That thir H.
227. **quhar**] where H; E om. party] side H; see next note.
228. Two lines in H—Fechting they were full ernestly, They might have scene who had bene by. **richt manfully**] enforcely E.
3hemen, swanys, and poveraill,
That in the parc to 3heyme vittale
War left; quhen thai wist, but lesing,
That thair lordis with fell fichtyng
On thair fais assemblit war,
Ane of them-selwyne that wes thar
Capitane of thame all thai maid;
And schetis that war sum-deill braid
Thai festnyt in steid of baneris
Apon lang tres and on speris,
And said that thai wald se the ficht,
And help thar lordis at thar mycht.
[Quhen her-till] all [assentit] war,
[And in] a rowt [assemblit] ar,
xv thousand th li war and ma.
And than in gret by thai can ga
With thair baneris all in a rout,
As thai had men beyn stith and stout.
Thai com with all that assemble
Richt quhill thar mycht the battale se.
Than all at anys thai gaf ane cry—
"Apon thame! on thame hardly!"
And thar-with-all cumand ar thai.
Bot thai war zeit weill fer away,
And ynglifs men, that ruschit war
Throu forfo of ficht, as I said air,

229. 3hemen] 3omen and E; Yeomen and H; miswritten 3heman C. poverail] pitail E; Pedaill H.
230. to 3heyme] to keepe H; zemyt E.
234. wes] was H; war E.
235. festnyt E] miswritten fesnyt C; made H.
241. [Quhen her-till E] When hereto H; Quhar till C. [assentit] assentyt E; assented H; assemblit C.
242. [And in] In EH; In-till C;
THE ENGLISH ARE THROWN INTO A PANIC. [BOOK XIII.

[Fol. 99 b. C.] Quhen thai saw cum with sic a cry
Toward thame sic ane cumpany,
That thai thoucht weill als mony war
As at war fechand with thame thar,
whom they had not before seen,
And thai befor had thame nocht seyne,
Than, wit the weill, withouten weyne,
Thai war abasit so gretunly,
That the best and the mast hardy
That wes in-till the oost that day
Wald, with thar mensk, haue beyn avay. 260

[Fol. 44 b. E.] Than with thame of his cumpany
His fais presit so fast, that thai
War than in-till [sa] gret effray,
That thai left place ay mar & mar.
For all the scottis men that war thar,
Quhen thai saw thame eschew the ficht,
Dang on thame swa with all thar mycht,
That thai scalit in tropellis ser,
And till discumfitur war ner ;
And sum of thame fled all planly.

Some few English stand firm.

Bot thai that wicht war and hardy,
That schame letit till ta the ficht,
At gret myschef mantemyt the ficht,
And stibthly in the stour can stand.

When the king of England sees
Saw his men fle in syndry place,

255. cum] cummand.
257. thai] thaim.
258. at war] that wes.
259. thame nocht] nocht thaim

EH.
263. wes] war. the] thair E; that
266. neir] ner at.
menz C. can hely] he can fast H.
269. presit] he pressyt EH. thai] day.
270. than] E om. [sa EH] full C.
272. war thar] thar war.
274. swa] E om.
275. scalit] scalyt thaim. tropellis] troplys E; trowples H.
And [saw] his fais rout, that was 284
Worthy so wicht and so hardy,
That all his folk [war] halely
Swa stonayit, that thai had no mycht
[To] stynt thair fais in the ficht,
He was abasit so gretumly,
That he and all his cumpany,
v hundreth armyt weil at rycht,
In-till a frusche all tuk the flycht,
And till the castell held ther way. 292
And zeit, as I herd sum men say,
That of wallanch schir Amer
Quhen he the feld saw vencust ner,
By the ren3e led away the king,
Agane his will, fra the fichting.
And quhen schir gelis de argente
Saw the king thus and his men3e
Schape thame to fle so spedely,
He com Richt to the kyng in hy,
And said, "schir, sen that it is swa
That 3e thusgat 3our gat will ga,
Haffis gud day! for agane will I;
3heit fle4d I neair sekirly,
And I cheif heir to byde and de
Than till lif heir and schamfully fle."
300

His brydill than but mair abaid
He turnyt, and agane he raids,
And on schir eduard the brysis rout

284. [saw EH] C om.
286. [war E] were H; so C.
288. [To EH] And C.
290. all] E om.
293. till] to EH.
294. as I] haiff Ik.
295. wallanche] walence.
297. ren3e] renye.
299. gelis] gylis E; Geiles H.
302. com] sped H.
303. that] E om.
305. Haflis] Hawys E; Haue H.
307. heir] her E; rather H.
308. till—schamfully] for to lyve schamly and E; for to lieue and shamefully H.
309. than] E om.
311, 312 follow 313, 314 in H.
313, 314 brysis] bruyss E; Bruces H.

300K
XIII.
SIR AYMER DE VALENCE LEADS AWAY KING EDWARD. 317

And [saw] his fais rout, that was
Worthy so wicht and so hardy,
That all his folk [war] halely
Swa stonayit, that thai had no mycht
[To] stynt thair fais in the ficht,
He was abasit so gretumly,
That he and all his cumpany,
v hundreth armyt weil at rycht,
In-till a frusche all tuk the flycht,
And till the castell held ther way.
And zeit, as I herd sum men say,
That of wallanch schir Amer
Quhen he the feld saw vencust ner,
By the ren3e led away the king,
Agane his will, fra the fichting.
And quhen schir gelis de argente
Saw the king thus and his men3e
Schape thame to fle so spedely,
He com Richt to the kyng in hy,
And said, "schir, sen that it is swa
That 3e thusgat 3our gat will ga,
Haffis gud day! for agane will I;
3heit fle4d I neair sekirly,
And I cheif heir to byde and de
Than till lif heir and schamfully fle."
Death of the brave de Argentine. [Book XIII.

attacks Sir Edward Bruce’s host.

So many set on him at once, that he is soon overthrown and slain.

He was the third best knight of his day.

He fought thrice against the Saracens.

After the king’s flight, all flee too.

Many flee to the river Forth, and are drowned.

Bannockburn is so full of corpses,

[That] was so sturdy and so stout,
As dreid of na[kyn] thing had he,
He prikit, cryand “argente!”
And thai with speris swa him met,
And swa feill speris on hym set,
That he and horf war chargit swa
That bath doune to the erd can ga;
And in that place than slayne wes he.
Of his ded wes [rych]t gret pite;
He was the thou best knyght, perfay,
That men wist liffand in his day;
He did mony a fair Iourne.

On sarisenis thre derengeis did he;
And [in-till] ilk derenge of thai
He vencust sarisenis twa;
His gret worship tuk thar ending.

And fra schir amer with the king
Wes fled, wes nane that durst abyde,
Bot fled, scalit on ilka syde.
And thair fais thame presit fast,
Thai war, to say suth, all agast,
And fled swa richt effrayitly

That of thame a full gret party
Fled to the wattr of forth; and thar
The mast part of thame drownit [war].

And bannokburn, betuix the braif,
Of horf and men so chargit waf,

312. [That EH] He C.
313. [kyn E] kin H; C om.
314. argente] the argente.
315. speris] misprinted spuris J.
with—swa] right sturdy H.
319. than] thar E; there H.
CH om.
321. best knyght] so EH; knyght best C.
324. derengeis] derengeys E; derenyies H; miswritten derengeis C. did] faucht E; made H.
325. [in-till E] into H; of C.
326. vencust] wencussyt E; vanquisht H.
332. all] swa.
333. swa] sa fast.
336. [war E] were H; ar C.
That upon drownit horf and men
Men mycht pa\textsuperscript{a} dry atour it then.
[And] laddis, swany\textsuperscript{s}, and rangall,
Quhen thai saw vencust the battall,
Ran emang thame and swa can sla
Thai folk, that no defens mycht ma,
That it war pite for to se.
I herd neuir quhar, in na cuntre,
Folk at swa gret myschef war stad;
On a syde thai thair fairs had,
That slew thame doune without mercy,
And thai had on the tothir party
Bannokburne, that sa cummysrun was
Of slyk, and depnes for till pas,
That thair mycht na\textsuperscript{a} atour it ryde.
Thame worthit, magre thair\textsuperscript{\textit{i}s}, abyde;
Swa that sum slayne, sum drownit war;
Micht nane eschap that euthir com thar.
The quhethir mony gat away,
[That ellis-\textit{whar} fled], as I herd say.
The kyng, with thame he with him had,
In a rout till the castell raid,
And wald haue beyn tharin, for thai
Wist nocht quhat gat to get away.
Bot philip the mowbray said him till
"The castell, schir, is at 3\textit{hour} will;
Bot, cum 3he in it, 3he sall se
That 3he sall soyne assegit be.
And thar sall na\textsuperscript{a} of all yngland

340.  atour\textsuperscript{\textit{o}}] owt our E; out ouer H.  
341.  [And EH] C om.
343.  emang\textsuperscript{\textit{a}} amang. can\textsuperscript{\textit{a}} gan.
344.  Tha\textsuperscript{\textit{a}}] Tha H; As E.
345.  \textit{at}] E om.
346.  \textit{J}] Ik.
348.  a\textsuperscript{\textit{a}}] ane EH.
349.  without\textsuperscript{\textit{a}}] for-owtyn.
351.  cummysrun\textsuperscript{\textit{a}}] cummysrun.
352.  Of\textsuperscript{\textit{a}}] For EH, \textit{till}] to.

348.  On one side are their foes,

344.  The English are in great distress.

352.  Some are slain, some drowned;

356.  none escape,

360.  except those who fled in some other direction.

Sir Philip Mowbray advises the king of England not to attempt to stop in Stirling.

[Fol. 45, E.]
To mak 30w rescour∫ tak on hand.
And but rescours may no castele
Be haldin lang: 3he wat this wele;
Tharfor confort 30w, and relye
Your men about 30w richt straitlye,
And haldis about the park the way.
Knyt 30w als sadly as 3he may,
For I trow that nane sall haf mycht
That chassis, with so feill to ficht."

And as he consalit, thai haue done;
So the king and Benetli the castell
Avent thai soyfie,
his men ride by the Round Table
Eiclit by the rownde tabill thair way.
And syne the park [enveronyt] thai,
And toward lithkew held in hy.
Bot, I trow, thai sall hastely
Be convoyit with folk, that thai,
I trow, mycht suffer weill away!
For schir James, lord of douglaf,
Com till his kyng and askit the cha∫,
And he gaf him leif but abaid.
Bot all to few of horf∫ he hade;
He had nocht in his rowt sexty,
The quhethir he sped him hastily
The way eftir the kyng to ta.
Now let him on his wayis ga,
And eftir this we sall weill tell
Quhat till hym in his cha∫ byfell.

Douglas, with only 60 men, chases the English.

371. Tharfor∫ And tharfor C ; but EH om. And, confort 30w∫ so EH;
30w confort C.
372. straitlye∫ starkly.
373. the (2)] 3our EH.
374. Knyt∫ sadly∫ Rycht als sadly E ; Als sadly knit H.
377, as—consalit∫ his consaill.
378. Beneth∫ And be-newth E ; And beneth H.
379. thair way∫ away.
380. syne the∫ the new H. [enveronyt∫ enveround E ; cnuironde

H; enveremyt C.

381. lithkew∫ lythkow E ; Linlithgow H.
383. convoyit∫ convouyed H ; convoyit E. folk∫ sic folk.
386. till his∫ to the EH.
387. leif∫ lieue H ; it E.
394. till—his∫ him in-till the chace. Rubric from C; H has—
How the Erle of Harfurd in Bothwel
was Tane ouer the walles, fled fra the chace.
How gud douglass chassit the king of Inglande eftir the battallis of bannokburne.

When the gret battell on this vi6
Wes discumf, as I deuif;
Quhar xxx thousand thar wes ded,
Or drownit in-to that ilk sted;
And sum war in-to handis tanë,
And othir sum thair gat wes gaine,
The erl of herfurd fra the melle
Departit, with a gret menzhe,
And straucht to bothwell tuk the vay,
That than at yngli6 meznys fay
Wes, and haldin as place of wer.
Schir Walter gilbertstoune wes ther Capitane, and [it] had in ward.
The Erl of herfurde thiddirward
Held, and wes tañe in our the wall,
And fyfty of his men with-all,
And sett in houf syndrely
Swa that thai had thar no mastry.
The laif went toward yngleand;
Bot of that rout, I tak on hand,
The thre parteis war tañe or slayñe,
The laiff with gret payñe hayñe ar gaine.
Schir mori6 alsua de berclay
Fra the gret battell held his vay
With a gret rout of wali6 men;
Quhar-euir thai zeid, men mycht tham ken:
For thai weill neir all nakid war,

396. [it EH] C om.
397. [it EH] C om.
398. [it EH] C om.
399. [it EH] C om.
400. [it EH] C om.
401. [it EH] C om.
402. [it EH] C om.
403. [it EH] C om.
404. [it EH] C om.
405. [it EH] C om.
406. [it EH] C om.

Sir Maurice de Barclay got away,
[Fol. 101 b. C.]
with some Welshmen,
Sir Walter Gilbertston commanded there.
Hereford and fifty men are taken in over the wall.
The earl of Hereford made his way to Bothwell, which then belonged to the English.
The earl of Hereford made his way to Bothwell, which then belonged to the English.
Sir Walter Gilbertston commanded there.
Hereford and fifty men are taken in over the wall.

In this great battle, 30,000 English were slain or drowned.
Some of the English escape to Stirling. [Book XIII.

who were nearly naked.

Many of them are taken.

Numbers flee to Stirling,

so that the crags are covered with them.

King Robert kept his men close to him; and so King Edward got away.

After the battle,

the Scotch began the plunder.

Or lynyng clothis had, but mair.

Thai held thair wayis in full gret hy;

Bot mony of thair cumpny,

Or thai till yngland com, war tañe,

And mony als of thame war slâñe.

Thai fled als othir wais ser,

Bot to the castell that wes ner

Of strevilling fled [sic] a menȝhe,

That it wes wonder for to se;

For the craggis all helit war

About the castell, heir and thar,

Of thame that, for strinth of that sted,

Thiddirward till warrande fled.

And for thai war [sa] feill that thair

Flede vnder the castell war,

The king robert, that wes vitty,

Held ay his gude men neir him by,

For dreed that riȝ agane suld thai.

This wes the cauȝ, forsuth to say,

Quhar-throu the king of yngland

Eschapit haȝe in-to his land.

when at the feld so cleyn wes maid

Of yngliȝ men, that nane abad,

The scottis men soyne tuk [in] hand

Of thairȝs all that euȝr thai fand,

*As siluȝr, gold, clathis, and armying,

*With [vessell] and all other thing

*That euȝr thai mycht lay on thar hand ;

*So gret a richeȝ thair thai fand,

429. strevilling] strewilline E;

430. wes] was H; war E.

434. till] to EH.

435. [sic EH] C om.

438. ay] so H; in E.

439. that—agane] so EH; agane

that ris C.

442. in-to] in-till.

443. at] that EH.

445. [in EH] on C.

446. Sa great riches there they

fand H (which is repeated, with a

inserted, four lines lower).

447*—450*. Not in E; but found

in H. As siluȝr] Siluer and H.

With vessell] And vessell H; With

bestiall (!) C.
That mony man wes mychty maid
Of the riches that thai thar had.
Quhen this wes done that ere said I,
The king send a gret cumpany
Wp to the crag, thame till assale
That war fled fra the gret battale;
And thai thame 3ald, for-out debat,
And in hand has thame tane, fut-hat,
Syne to the kyng thai went thar way.
Thai dispandit haly that day
In spoulėing and riches taking,
Fra end wes maid of the fechting.
And quhen thai nakit spul3eit war
That war slayne in the battale thar,
It wes forsuth a gret ferly
till se sammyn so feill dede ly.
Sevin hundreth paris of spuris rede
War tane of knychtis that war dede.
The erll of glowcister ded was thar,
That men callit schir gilbert of clar;
And schir gelis de argente alsua,
And payne typtot, and othir ma,
That thair namys nocht tell can I.
And apen scottis mennis party
[Thar wes] slayne worthy knychtis twa;
Wil3ame Wepownt wes ane of tha,
And schir Walter the roф aне othir,
That schir eduard the kyngis brothir
Lufit, and held in sic daunte

447. Many were made rich ever after.
449. her say EH.
453. for-out] for-owtyn.
454. thame tane] tane thaim.
457. In riches, and in spraith taking H.
463. Twa EH; Two A. paris] payr EH.
465. ded was] so EH; was ded C.
WHY DAVID, EARL OF ATHOL, WAS BANISHED. [BOOK XIII.

Sir Edward Bruce greatly mourned for Ross,

That as him-self hym luft he. 476
And quhen he wist that he wes dede,
He wes so wa and will of rede,
That he said, makand full euill cher,
That him [war] levar that Iournye wer
Wndone, than he swa ded had beñe.
Outaken him, men has nocht seyn
Quhar he for ony man maid menyng;
For the cauf wes of this lufing
That he his sistir paramouris
Luftit, and held all at [reboursis]
His [awyne] wif, dame Esobell.
And tharfor swa gret distans fell
Betwix him and the erll davy
Of adell, brother to this lady,
That he, apon sanct Iohannis nycht,
Quhen [bath] the kyngis war bouñe to ficht,
In cambuskynmeth the kyngis vittale
He tuk, and sadly gert assale
Schir Wilȝame of herth, and him slew,
And with hym ma men than enew.
Quharfor syne in-till Ingland
He was banyst, and all his land
Was sesit, and forfalt to the kyng,
That did tharof syne his likyng.

Q when the feld, as I said air,
Wes dispulȝeit and left all bair,

480. [war E] wald C. war levar] had rather H.
481. For] And EH. this] hys EH.
482. [reboursis E] rabouss C. all — reboursis] at great retoures H.
483. [awyne E] awne C. Esobell]
484. [war E] wald C. [awne C. Esobell]
485. [bath E] both H; C om.
486. 493. cambuskynmeth] so H; camyskynnell E.
494. He] H om. sadly] hardly H.
495. herth] Airth H; keth E.
496. ma men] men ma.
497. Quharfor] Tharfor EH.
498. and] as EH. forfalt] forfeit E; forfeite H.
499. 501. Qwhen] And when H. said] tauld ȝow E; tauld H.
BOOK XIII. SIR GILBERT DE CLARE IS HONOURABLY BURIED. 325

The king and all his Company
Joyfull and blyth war and mery
Of the grace that thame fallyn was,
Towards thar Innys thair wayis tais
Till rest thame; for thai wery war.
Bot for the erll Gilbert of clar,
That slayne wes in the battale-place,
The kyng somdceil anoyit was,
For till hym neir syb wes he.
Than till a kirk he gert hym be
Brocht, and walkit all that nycht.

And on the morn, quhen day wes licht,
The kyng raiß, as his wille wes.
Than till ane ynglif knycht, throu cafß,
Hapnyt, that he 3eid waverand,
Swa that na man laid on hym hand,
And in a busk hyd his armyng,
And waytit, quhill he saw the kyng
In the mornyng cum furth airly;
Till him than is he went in hy.
Schir mermadak betwng he hecht,
He rakit till the kyng all richt,
And halsit hym apon his kne.
“Welcome, schir mermadak,” said he,
“Till quhat man art thou presoner?”
“To nane,” he said; “bot till 3ow her
I 3eld me, at yur will to be.”
“And I resaiff the, schir,” saide he;
Than gert he trete hym curtasly.

504. Joysull—war] Glade, and joysull was H; Blyth and Joysull glaid E.
508. clar] claire H.
511. neiir] neir wele.
515. wille] wille or willis CE (printed willis J; wills P); vse H.
516. till] to H; E om.

The king and his men, joyful and merry, return to rest themselves.

508 The king mourned for Sir Gilbert de Clare, his kinsman, and had him buried with honour.

516 By chance an English knight, who had escaped unhurt, seeing the king, yielded himself to him.

His name was Sir Marmaduke Betoun.

The king received him courteously,
and sent him home to England.

[fol. 103. C.]

Sir Philip Mowbray delivers up Stirling castle to Bruce.

We now tell how Douglas chased the English.

Now will we of the lord douglas Tell, how he followit the chas. 548

He had quheyne in his company,

Bot he sped him in full gret hy,

And as he by the torwode fur,

[Sa met he, rydand on] the mwr

Schir lowrens of abyrnethy,

That with four scor in cumpany

Com for till help the ynglið men,

For he wes ynglið man 3eit then.

Bot quhen that he herd how it wes,

He left the ynglið menny peð,

And till the lord douglas richt thar
For till be leill and trew he swar;
And than thai bath followit the chaist.
And or the kyng of ynglant waif
Passit lythkew, thai com so neiur,
With all the folk that with thame wer,
That weill emang thame schut thai mycht.
Bot thai thought thame our few to ficht
With the gret rowt that thai had thar,
For v hundreth men armyt thai war.
To-giddir sarraly raid thai,
And held thame apon brydill ay.
Thai war gouernit full wittely,
For it semyt ay thai war redy
For till defend thame at thar mycht,
Gif thai assal3it war in ficht.
And the lord douglas and his men
Thought thai wald nocht purpoif then
For to ficht with thame all planly,
He convoyit thame so narrowly,
That of the henmast ay tuk he.
Micht nane behynd his fallowis be
Nocht a stane cast, [bot] he in hy
Wes ded, or tane delyuerly,
That [nane] rescours wald till hym ma,
All-thouch he luft hym neuir swa.
On this w1ß thame convoyit he,

559. till] to EH.
560. till] to EH.
563. lythkew] lythkow E; Linlithgow H.
565. emang] amang EH. schut]
shoot H; swyth E.
566. our] to E; too H.
567, 568. Transposed in H. men]
EH om.
573. till] to EH.
575. lord] lord of.
560. Ere king Edwar passes Linlithgow, Douglas comes up with him.
564. The English band is one of 500 men.

576. [Fol. 103 b. C.]
Douglas dare not attack them,

579. [bot H] na E; than C.
583. [nane E] na C.
584. luftit lywyt E; corr. to luwyt J.
585. wiss thame] maner EH. he] them he H.
Quhill at the kyng and his men; he
Till Wynchburgh all cummyne ar.
Than lichtit thai, all that war thar,
Till bayt thar horf that war wery;
Than douglas and his cumpny
Baytit alsua besyde thame neir.
Thai war so feill, withouten weir,
And in armys so cleny dicht,
And swa arayit ay to ficht,
And he so quheyne and but gadering,
That he wald nocht [in] playne fichting
Assail [thaim,] bot ay [raid] thame by,
Waytand his poynt ay ythandly.
A litill quhile thai baitit thar,
And syne lap on and furth thai fair;
And he wes alwais by thame neir.
He leit thame nocht haf sic laseir
As anys wattir for to ma;
[And] gif that ony stad war swa,
That behynd war left ony space,
Sesit all soyne in hand he waft.
Thai convoit thame apon this wiß,
Quhill that the king and his rout is
Cummyn to the castell of dunbar,
Quhar he and sum of his men war
Resaut richt weill; for ȝeit than
The Erll patrik wes ynglis man,
That gert with met and drink alsua

586. at] that EH.
587. Wynchburgh] wenchburg E; Wincheburgh H.
588. thai] E om. war thar] there were H; thai war E.
589. Till] To EH.
590. Than] And EH.
594. ay] for EH.
595. quheyne] quhoyne E; wheene
H. gadering] so H; supleyng E.
596. [in EH] to C.
597. [thaim EH] C om. [raid E] rade H; ryde C.
598. poynd] time H.
601. he] E om.
603. ma] so EH; may C.
605. behynd war] he behind. That —left] And behind left was H.
606. all soyne] alsone.
607. apon—wiss] on sic awiss E.
610. men] menye.
Refresche thate weill, and syne gert ta
A bate, and send the kyng by se
Till balmeburgh in his awne cuntre.
Thair hord thar left thai all on stray,
Bot sesit wele soyne, I trow, war thai!
The laiff, that levit war without,
Adressit thame in-till ane rout,
And till berwik helde straucht the vay
In rout; bot, and we suth sall say,
Thail levit of thair rout party,
Or thail come thair; bot nocht-for-thi
Thail come till Berwik weill; and thar
In-till the toune resauit war;
Ellis at myscheiff had thai beyne.
[And quhen] the lord douglas has seyne
That he had lesit thar his payne,
Toward the king he went agaûne.

THE kyng eschapit on this wiô;
Lo! quhat falding in fortoune is,
That quhile apon a man will smyle,
And prik him syne ane othir quhile!
In na tyme stabilly can sche stande.
This mychty kyng of england
Scho had set on her quheill on hicht,
Quhen, with so ferlifull a mycht.

616. balmeburch] bawmbergh E; 617. at] at gret EH.
Bamburgh H.
618. sesit—trow] leesed als soone
in hand H. wele—trow] I trow weill
sone.
619. levit war] lewytt thar.
620. ane] a.
621. the] thair EH.
622. sall] E om. In—we] In a
rout, and I the H.
623. They leaned of their men
partly H; Stad thai war full narowly
E.
625. till] to. weill] soone H.
626. In-till] In-to EH.

620. The rest of the
English push on
to Berwick,
which they enter.

624 Douglas gives up
the chase.

628 Lo! what are the
changes of
fortune!

632 Fortune had set
the king of
England on such
a height,
Of men of armys and archeris,
And of fute men and hobleris,
He com rydand out of his land,
As I befor has borne on hand.
And on a nycht syne and a day
Scho set hym in so hard assay,
That he with sevintene in a bat
Wes fayne for to hald hame his gat!

Bot of this ilk quhelis turnyng
Kyng robert suld mak no murnyng;
For his syde, throu the quhele on hicht,
Wencust thar fais, wes mekill of mycht.

For twa contraris, the may wit wele,
Set agane othir on a quhele;
Quhen añe is hye, the tothir is law,
And gif it fall that fortoune thraw
The quheill about, it that on hicht
Was ere, [on force] it most doune lyc rh;
And it, that wondir lawch wer ere,
Mon lowp on loft in the contre.

So fure it of thir kyngis two;
Quhen that king Robert stad wes so,
That in his gret myscheiff wes he,
The tothir wes in his maieste.

And quhen the kyng eduardis mycht
Wes lawit, kyng Robert lap on hicht
And now sic fortoune fell hym till,

So a wheel turns, when one side is high, the other is low.

As a wheel turns, when one side is high, the other is low.
That he wes hye and at his will.
At strevilling wes he zeit lyand;
And the gret lordis that he fand
Ded in the felde, he gert berye
In haly placis honorabilly.

And the laiff syne that ded war thar
In-to gret pittes erdit war.
The castell and the towrys syne
Richt to the grund doune gert he myne,
And syne to bothwell send has he
Schir Eduard with a gret menze.
For thar wes fra thine send him worde
That the riche Erll of herfurde,
And othir mychtys als, wes thar.
Soyne tretit he with schir valtar,
That erle, [and] castell, and the laiff,
In-to schir eduardis hand he gaf.
And to the king the erll send he,
That gert him richt weill 3emyt be,
Quhill at the last thai tretit swa,
That he till yngland hame suld ga
Without paying of ransoune, fre,
And that for hym suld changit be
Bischop robert, that blynd wes maid,
With the queuey that thai takin had
In presoune, as befor said I,
And [hyr] doucchtir daib ne mariory.
The Erll wes changit for thir thre;
And quhen thai cumyn hyne war fre,

Bruce remains at Stirling.

He destroys the castle.

He sends Sir Edward to Bothwell.

Sir Walter Gilbertston delivers up the Earl of Hereford to Sir Edward Bruce.

Sir Walter Gilbertston delivers up the Earl of Hereford to Sir Edward Bruce.

Hereford is exchanged for the blind bishop Robert, the Scottish queen, and her daughter Margery.

660. In-to] In E.
661. strevilling] strewillyne E; Streuiling H.
664. places] place.
666. to] till; and in 1. 677.
676. In-to] In E.
678. 3emyt] kepted H.
681. Without] so H; Withouten C; For-owtyn E.
684. With] And EH. takin] takyn E; taken H; miswritten taking C.
686. [hyr] her H; his C.
688. hame war] war hame all EH.
The kyngis doughter, that wes fair,
And wes als his apperand air,
With Walter steward can he wed;
And thai weill soyme gat of that bed.
Añe knaiff child, throu our Lordis grace,
That eftir his gude eld-fadir was
Callit robert, and syne wes king,
And had the land in gouernyng
Eftir his worthy Eyme, davy,
That regnyt twa 3er and fourty;
And in tyne of the compyling
Of this buk, this robert wes kyng,
And of his kynrik passit was
v 3eir; and wes the 3er of grace
Añe thousand thre hundreth and sevinty
Añd v, and of his elde sixty.
And that wes eftir that the gud king,
Robert, wes brocht till his ending,
Sex and fourty vyntir, but mar.
God grant that thai, that cummyne ar
Of his ofspring, maynteyme the land,
And hald the folk weill to warrand,
And mayntene richt and ek laute,
As weill as in his tyne did he!

Kyne robert now wes weill at hycht,
For ilk day than grew mair his mycht.
His men war rich, and his cuntre

689. kyngis] king lys E; Kings H.
690. his] E om.
691. can] gan. Sidenote in E (scarcely legible)—water steward mariss
kings Robert dowehir.
E: man H.
694. eld-fadir] auld father H.
698. twa] nyne H.
699. this (2)] this last H.
700. this (2)] this last H.
703. E has—I thowsand iiic sevnty.
707. Sex] so H; v E.
711. ek] E om.
712. Hubrie in H—How King
Robert rade in England, And brunt
vp all Northumberland.
714. mair] E om.
715. war] woux E; woxt H.
Aboundanit weill of corrie and fee,
And of alkynd othir richeś;
Myrth, solaś, and ek blithnes
Wes in the land all comony,
For ilk man blith wes and Ioly.
The king, eftir the gret Iournee,
Throu consell of his folk preve,
In seir townys gert cry on hicht,
That quha sa clamyt to haf richt
To hald in scotland land or fe,
That in that twelf moneth suld he
Cum and clayme it, and tharfor do
To the king that pertenyt thar-to.
And gif thai come nocht in that or,
Than suld thai wit, withouten weir,
That herd thar-eftir naı̀e suld be.
The king, that wes of gret bonte
And besynes, quhen this wes done,
Añe hoost gert summond eftir sone,
And went syne soyne in-till Ingland,
And our-raid all northumbirland,
And brynt honō and tuk the pray,
And syne went haı̈me agane thar vay.
I let it shortly pass [for-]by;
For thair wes done na cheuelry
Prowit, that [is] till spek of heir.

717. alkynd] alkyne, richness] ryches E; spelt richess C.
718. Myrth] And myrth H, solas] and solace E; solace H, ek] all H; E om. C transposes solass and blithness; but see l. 720, where blith refers to the last sb.
722. consell—folk] rede off his consaill E; reede and counsell of his H.
720. The king proclaims that all who claim to hold land or property
must claim it and do homage within a twelve-month.
721. [Fol. 105 b. C.] After this, Bruce makes a raid into Northumberland.
723. seir] sundrie H.
724. to] till.
725. that twelf] thai xij.
726. herd] hard EH.
727. syne soyne] thann E; pr. thaim J; then H.
728. hous] written for housis C; howssis E; townes H, the] thair EH.
729. [for E] fer C; far H.
The king makes raids into England.

The king went oft on this maner
In yngland, for till riche his men,
That in riche\(\letter{s}\) aboundanit then.

743. \textit{til} to EH.
744. \textit{aboundanit} haboundyt E; abounded H.
How the erll of carrik passit in Irlan to vyn it, and with him erll thomas randal & schir philip the mowbray, schir Iohne stewart, schir Iohne sowlis, & ramsay of ouchtirhous.

Sir Edward, earl of Carrick, who was stouter than a leopard,

thought Scotland too small for himself and his brother.

He therefore treats with the Irishmen, who offer to elect him king,

if he will drive out the English.

Sir Edward, earl of Carrick, who was stouter than a leopard,
Sir Edward gathers an army, and embarks at Ayr, in the month of May, 1315.

He takes with him Earl Thomas [Fol. 47. E.]
Rudolph, Sir Philip Mowbray, [Fol. 106. C.]
Sir John de Soulis, Sir John Steward, Ramsay of Ouchtirhouse,
and Sir Fergus of Ardrossan.

They arrive safely,

and send their ships home.

They are but 6000 in all, to attack all Ireland.

In-till his hert had gret liking;
And with the consent of the king,
Gaderit hym men of gret bounte,
And at air syne schippit he, 20
In-till the next moneth of maij;
Till Irland held he straucht his way.

He had thair in his Cumpayn
The Eurl thomas that wes worthy, 24
And gud schir philip the mowbray,
That sekir wes in herd assay;
Schir Iohn the sowlis, a gude knycht;
And schir Iohn Steward, that wes wicht; 28
The ramsay als of ouchtirhouf,
That wes richt wicht and chenclrouf;
And schir fergus de ardrossané,
And othir knychtis mony aye.

In vaveryng [fyrth] arivit thai
Saufly, but bargane or assay,
And send thair schippis home ilkae.
A gret thing haue thai vndertaene,
That with [sa] quheyne as thai war thar,
That wes sex thousand men but mar,
Schupe for to warray all Irland,
Quhar thai sall se mony thousand
Cum armyt on thaime for to ficht.

Bot though thai quheyne var, thai var wicht,
And, for-outen dreid or effray, 
In twa battelis thai tuk the way 
Toward cragferagus, it to se. 
Bot the lordis of that cuntre, 
Mavndwell, byset, and logane, 
Thar men assemblit cuiriliau; 
De sawagio wes alsua thair. 
And, quhen thai all assemblit war, 
Thai war well neir tuenty thousand. 
Quhen thai wist that in-till thar land 
Sic a men3he arivit war, 
With all the folk that thai had thar, 
Thai went toward thame in gret hy. 
And fra schir eduard wist suthly 
That neir till him cuman and war thai, 
Hi3 men he gert richt weill aray. 
The vaward had the erll thomas, 
And in the rerward schir eduard was. 
Thar fais approchit to the fichting, 
And thai met thame but abaysing. 
Thar mycht men se a gret melle; 
For erll thomas and his men3he 
Dang on thair fais sa douchtely, 
That in short tym men mycht se ly 
Ane hundreth that all bludy war.

43. *for-outen*] for-owt E; without H. 
44. *that*] E om. 
45. *to*] for to C; but EH omit for. 
47. *Maundweill*] Mandweill E; 
Maundewile H. *byset*] besat E; Bis-set H. 
48. *assemblit*] they sembled H. 
49. *De sawagiss*] The sawagis E; 
The Sauages H. *wes* war. *wes*— 
thair] als was with them there H. 
50. *all*] E om. 
52. *Quhen*] When that H. *in-till*] m H. 
53. *gret*] H om. 

**BRUCE.**

44 They come to Carrickfergus. 
Mandevill and others oppose them, 

to the number of 20,000. 

52 The Irish advance to the attack. 

56 Edward Bruce prepares for defence. 

60 A battle ensues. 

64 Earl Thomas and his men 
[fol. 106b, c.] soon slay 100.
The wounded horses rear and kick.

For hobynis, that war stekit thar,
Rerit and flang, and gret rowne maid,
And kest thame that apon thame raid.

And schir Eduardis Cumpany
Assemblit syne so hardely,
That thai thar fais ruschit all.

Quha hapnyt in that ficht to fall,
It was perell of his Risying.
The scottis men in that fechting
Swa apertly and weille thame bar,
That thair fais swa ruschit war,
That thair haly the flicht has tane.

In that battale wes tane or slaie
All hale the flour of wllister.
The Erll of murreff gret priof had ther;
For his [richt] worthy cheueldry
Confortit all his Cumpany.

That wes a full fair begynnynge;
For, newlyngis at thair ariwyng,
In playne ficht thai discomfit thar
Thar fais, that ay fowr for ane war.

Syne to cragfergu5 ar thai gane,
And in the toune has Innys taie.
The castell wele wes stufit then
Of-new with wittale and with men;

Thar-till thai set aé sege in hy.
Mony ysche full aperty

69. Rerit[ ] Relyt E; Reilled H.
71. And—Eduardis[ ] Sir Edward
and his H.
72. sync[ ] then H. so] sa.
73. ruschit[ ] there rushed H.
75. perell] great perill H.
78. thair—ruschit[ ] all their faes
rushed H.
79. That[ ] And H.
81. flour[ flour, wllister] wlsyster
E; Wollistar H.

For hobynis, that war stekit thar,
Rerit and flang, and gret rowne maid,
And kest thame that apon thame raid.

And schir Eduardis Cumpany
Assemblit syne so hardely,
That thai thar fais ruschit all.

Quha hapnyt in that ficht to fall,
It was perell of his Risying.
The scottis men in that fechting
Swa apertly and weille thame bar,
That thair fais swa ruschit war,
That thair haly the flicht has tane.

In that battale wes tane or slaie
All hale the flour of wllister.
The Erll of murreff gret priof had ther;
For his [richt] worthy cheueldry
Confortit all his Cumpany.

That wes a full fair begynnynge;
For, newlyngis at thair ariwyng,
In playne ficht thai discomfit thar
Thar fais, that ay fowr for ane war.

Syne to cragfergu5 ar thai gane,
And in the toune has Innys taie.
The castell wele wes stufit then
Of-new with wittale and with men;

Thar-till thai set aé sege in hy.
Mony ysche full aperty

69. Rerit[ ] Relyt E; Reilled H.
71. And—Eduardis[ ] Sir Edward
and his H.
72. sync[ ] then H. so] sa.
73. ruschit[ ] there rushed H.
75. perell] great perill H.
78. thair—ruschit[ ] all their faes
rushed H.
79. That[ ] And H.
81. flour[ flour, wllister] wlsyster
E; Wollistar H.

For hobynis, that war stekit thar,
Rerit and flang, and gret rowne maid,
And kest thame that apon thame raid.

And schir Eduardis Cumpany
Assemblit syne so hardely,
That thai thar fais ruschit all.

Quha hapnyt in that ficht to fall,
It was perell of his Risying.
The scottis men in that fechting
Swa apertly and weille thame bar,
That thair fas swa ruschit war,
That thair haly the flicht has tane.

In that battale wes tane or slaie
All hale the flour of wllister.
The Erll of murreff gret priof had ther;
For his [richt] worthy cheueldry
Confortit all his Cumpany.

That wes a full fair begynnynge;
For, newlyngis at thair ariwyng,
In playne ficht thai discomfit thar
Thar fais, that ay fowr for ane war.

Syne to cragfergu5 ar thai gane,
And in the toune has Innys taie.
The castell wele wes stufit then
Of-new with wittale and with men;

Thar-till thai set aé sege in hy.
Mony ysche full aperty

69. Rerit[ ] Relyt E; Reilled H.
71. And—Eduardis[ ] Sir Edward
and his H.
72. sync[ ] then H. so] sa.
73. ruschit[ ] there rushed H.
75. perell] great perill H.
78. thair—ruschit[ ] all their faes
rushed H.
79. That[ ] And H.
81. flour[ flour, wllister] wlsyster
E; Wollistar H.

For hobynis, that war stekit thar,
Rerit and flang, and gret rowne maid,
And kest thame that apon thame raid.

And schir Eduardis Cumpany
Assemblit syne so hardely,
That thai thar fais ruschit all.

Quha hapnyt in that ficht to fall,
It was perell of his Risying.
The scottis men in that fechting
Swa apertly and weille thame bar,
That thair fas swa ruschit war,
That thair haly the flicht has tane.

In that battale wes tane or slaie
All hale the flour of wllister.
The Erll of murreff gret priof had ther;
For his [richt] worthy cheueldry
Confortit all his Cumpany.

That wes a full fair begynnynge;
For, newlyngis at thair ariwyng,
In playne ficht thai discomfit thar
Thar fais, that ay fowr for ane war.

Syne to cragfergu5 ar thai gane,
And in the toune has Innys taie.
The castell wele wes stufit then
Of-new with wittale and with men;

Thar-till thai set aé sege in hy.
Mony ysche full aperty

69. Rerit[ ] Relyt E; Reilled H.
71. And—Eduardis[ ] Sir Edward
and his H.
72. sync[ ] then H. so] sa.
73. ruschit[ ] there rushed H.
75. perell] great perill H.
78. thair—ruschit[ ] all their faes
rushed H.
79. That[ ] And H.
81. flour[ flour, wllister] wlsyster
E; Wollistar H.

For hobynis, that war stekit thar,
Rerit and flang, and gret rowne maid,
And kest thame that apon thame raid.

And schir Eduardis Cumpany
Assemblit syne so hardely,
That thai thar fais ruschit all.

Quha hapnyt in that ficht to fall,
It was perell of his Risying.
The scottis men in that fechting
Swa apertly and weille thame bar,
That thair fas swa ruschit war,
That thair haly the flicht has tane.

In that battale wes tane or slaie
All hale the flour of wllister.
The Erll of murreff gret priof had ther;
For his [richt] worthy cheueldry
Confortit all his Cumpany.

That wes a full fair begynnynge;
For, newlyngis at thair ariwyng,
In playne ficht thai discomfit thar
Thar fais, that ay fowr for ane war.

Syne to cragfergu5 ar thai gane,
And in the toune has Innys taie.
The castell wele wes stufit then
Of-new with wittale and with men;

Thar-till thai set aé sege in hy.
Mony ysche full aperty
Wes maid, quhill thar the sege lay,
Quhill trewis at the last tuk thai.
Quhen that the folk of wllister
Till his peð haly cummyn wer,
For schir eduard wald tak on hand
Till ryde forthirmar in the land,
Thair come till hym and maid fewte
Sum of the kyngis of that Cuntre
Weill ten or tuelf, as I herd say;
Bot thai held hym schort quhile thar fay.

For twa of thame, ane makfulchiane,
And ane othir, hat makmartane,
With-set ane place in-till his way,
Quhar him behuift neyd away,
With twa thousand of men with speris,
And als mony of thair archeris;
And all the cattale of the land
War drawin thidder to warrand.
Men callis that place endwillane;
In all Irland strater is none.
For schir edward that kepitt [thai];
[Thai] thought he suld nocht thar away;
Bot he his viage soyne has tae,
And straucht toward the plað is gañe.

95. sege] sege it C; but E omits it.
96. A truce is made.
97. wllister] hulsyster E; Wollistar H.
98. For] Then H; E om.
99. Then H; E om.
100. Till] To. forthirmar] farther-
101, 102. Transposed in EH. Sum].
103. I] Ik.
104. For thy] perfay H (wrong-
105. makfulchiane] makgullane E;
106. makmartane] makartane E;
107. With-set—place] With-set a
108. behuift] behowyt. neyd away;
109. ned away E; of need to ga H.
110. With-set] a place E; Umbeset him H.
111. drawin thidder] driuen bidder
112. Enduellane
113. endwillane] Innermallane E;
114. Transposed in EII. Sum].
115. [Thai E] thay H; ay C. H
116. For-thy Sir Edward there kept
117. soyne] some E; straight H.
118. straucht] euen H. plass]

Macarthan H.
The earl of Murray forces his way through.  
The earl of Murray forces his way through.

[Fol. 47 b. E.]
The Scotch chase the Irish host,
The Scotch chase the Irish host,

and come to Kilsagart.
and come to Kilsagart.

Sir Richard Clare,
Sir Richard Clare,

the Earls of Desmond and Kildare,
the Earls of Desmond and Kildare,

The Scotch come to Kilsagart.  
The Scotch come to Kilsagart.  

119. murreff] Murray H.  
120. ay first] first ay E. H has — That first put him to all assayes.  
121. Lichtit] He lighted H.  
122. plase] place H; pass E.  
123. Thir; ersische] ersch E; Irish H.  
124. That in the place enbushed were H. thame] him.  
125. richt sturdely] full stoutly H.  
128. fele thar] full mony H.  
130. fusione] fusone E; abundance H. thar] the E. 
132. owk] wouk E; Oulk H; weeke A.

133. kilsagart] kilsagart E; Kylsagart H.  
134. thar] there H; E om.  
135. dundaw] dundalk E; Don- dalk H. ane] an H; E om.  
139. Irland] Irland wel C; but EH omit ves. luf-tenand] luftenend C.  
140. [Was off] E Was to H; Maid be C.  
141. desmonde] desmond. als E om. 
143. bremayne] breman E; Bryane eke H. with the] and the H; and E. wardoune] wodoune E; Wardane H.
Thir war lordis of gret renoune.  
The butler alsua their wefi,  
And schir mori[le fyss] thomas;  
Thir with their men ar cummyyn [thar],  
A richt gret hoste forsuth thai war.  
And quhen schir eduard wist suthly  
That thar wes sic aune cheuclry,  
His host in hy he gert aray,  
And thiddirward [he tuk the way;  
And neir the toune he tuk herbery.  
Bot for he wist all w提示y  
That in the toune wes mony men,  
His battalis he arrayit then,  
And stude arayit in battale  
To kep thame, gif thai vald assale.  
And quhen that schir richard of clare,  
And othir lordis that war thare,  
Wist at the scottis men so neir  
With thar battellis than cummyyne weir,  
Thai tuk to consell at that nycht,  
For it was layt, thai wald nocht sicht;  
Bot on the morne in the mornyg,  
Weill soyn eftir the sone-rysing,  
Thai suld yshe furth, all that war thair;  
Therfor that nycht thai did no mair,  
Bot herbreyt thame on athir party.  
That nycht the scottis Cumpany  
War wachit richt weil, all at richt;  

144. Thir] That EH.  
145. [thar E] there H; ar C.  
146. [le fyss E] le fitz H; besy or vesy C.  
147. Thir] Thai E; That H.  
[quhen] E om. suthly surely H.  
150. fie] swilk. aue] a H; E om.  
152. he] E om.  
153. he tuk] tuk his E; tooke his H.  
154. all w提示y] all witterly E;  
155. war E; were H.  
156. [thar E] war thare.  
159. Rubric in H—The battell of Dondalk in Ireland, That Sir Edward tooke with his hand.  
160. w提示 thare] that war.  
161. at] that.  
162. than] EH om.  
163. at that] that that  
166. war thair] thar war E; there were H.
Next morning, the Scotch await the attack.

And on the morn, quhen day ves licht,
In twa battellis thai thame arayit;
Thai stude with banceris all displayit,
For the battell all reddy boune.
And thai that war within the toune,
Quhen soine wes rysyn schynand clere,
Send furth of thame that with him were
Fifty, till se the contenyng
Of scottis men and thar cummyng.
And thai raid furth and saw thaim soyne,
Syne come agane, forouten hoyne.
And quhen thai sammyn lichtit war,
Thai tald thair lordis that wes thar,
That scottis men semyt to be
Worthy, and of full gret bounte;
"Bot thai ar nocht, withouten wer,
Half-deill añe dyner till vs here!"
The lordis [had] of this tithyng

[Fol. 108. C.]

The English and Irish advance.

[Great joy, and gret] reconfortyng;
And gert men throu the cite cry,
That all suld arne thame hastely.
Quhen thai war armyt and purvayit,
And for to ficht all hail arayit,
Than went thai furth in gude aray;
Soyn with thair fayis assemblit thai,
[That] kepit thame richt hardly.
The stour begouth thair cruelly;
For athir [part] set all thair mycht
Till rusche thair fayis in the ficht;

178. him] them H; in E.
179. till] to.
182. forouten hoyne] with-outyn hone EH.
184. wes] wer.
185. semyt] so E; miswritten semy C.
186. full] right H; E om.
188. aue] a EH.
189. [had EH] herd C. 190. [Gret—gret E] Great joy, and great H; And had gret Ioy, and C.
194. to] the EH.
196. Sone] Sone E; Syne H.
197. [That EH] And C.
198. begouth] so CE; began H.
199. [part E] party H]; parteis C.
200. Till] To EH.
And with all mycht on other dang.
The stalward stour lestit weill lang,
That men mycht [noch] persaue, no se,
Quha mast at thar abovin mycht be.
204
For fra soyn eftir the soine-rysyng,
Qhill eftir mydmoraine, the fichting
Lestit, in-till sic ane dout;
[Bot] than schir eduard, that wes stout,
With all thame of his Cumpany,
Schot [apon] thame so sturdely,
That thai mycht thole no mar the ficht.
All in a frusche thai tuk the flicht;
208
And thai followit full egerly.
In-to the toune all comonly
They enterit [bath] Intermelle.
Thair mycht men felloune slauchtr se;
For the richt nobil Erll thomas,
That with his rout followit the chas,
Maid sic a slauchtr in the toune,
And swa felloune occasioune,
That the rewis all bludy war
Of slayne men that war liand thar.
The lordis war gottin all avay
And quhen the toune, as I sow say,
Wes throu gret forbi se fochtng taine,
And all thair fayis fled or slane,
Thai herbryit thame all in the toune,
Quhar of vittale was sic fusioune,
And swa gret aboundanS of vyne,
That the gud erll had gret dowtyne

201. mycht] paine H.
203. [noch] E; not H; Com. no
na e; nor H.
204. at—mycht] that thar abowe
suld E; there at abone soulid H.
207. sic ane] silk a H; swilk a
E.
208. [Bot E] But H; That C.
210. [apon E] vpon H; on C.

204. The battle is
doubtful from
sunrise to noon.
208. At last the Scotch
prevail.
212. Both hosts enter
the town.
216. Thomas Murray
slays many in the
town.
220. The streets are all
bloody.
224. [Fol. 48. E.] The
town is taken.
228. The Scotch find
plenty to eat and
drink.
THE SCOTCH STAY THREE DAYS IN DUNDALK. [BOOK XIV.

[Fol. 108 b. C.] That of their men suld dronken be, And mak in droukynne6 sum melle. 232
Tharfor he maid of vyne lucre Till ilk man, that he payit suld be; And thai had all yneuch, perfay.
That nycht ryght weil at eif war thai, And richt blith of the gret honour That thame befell for thair valour.

They stay 3 days in Dundalk; then ride southwards,

Eftir this ficht thai soiornyt thai In-to dundawk, thre dais & mar; 240
Syne tuk thai southward's thar way. The Erll thomas wes forrouth ay, And as thai raid throu the cuntry, Thai mycht apon the hillis se Sa mony men, it wes ferly.
And quhen the erll wald sturdy Dresf him to thame with his baner, Thai wald fle, all that enir thai wer, 248
Swa that in ficht nocht ane abaid.
And thai southward's thair wais raid, Till they come to a forest they called Kilross.
[Quhill] till a gret forest come thai; Kilro6 it hat, as I herd say; 252
And thai tuk all thair herbry thair.
Sir Richard of Clare raises 5 squadrons,

In all this tyme richard of clare, That wes the kyngis luftenand, Of all the Barnage of Irland 256
A gret hoost he assemblit had;

233. wyne EH. lucre H. lever E; Lewerie H.
239. Rubric in H.—The third battell in Ireland, That good Sir Edward tooke on hand.
240. dundawk] dundalk E; Don-
dalk H, 6] or H; but E.
241. thar] on thar C; but EH omit on.
242. Erle Thomas rade before them ay H.
249. ficht] fight H; sycht E.
250. southwardis] southwart E; foorth on H.
251. [Quhill] While H; Quhar C.
252. Kilross] Kylrose E; Kylros H.
256, all—Barnoge] so H; the barnagis E.
Thai war v battellis, gret and braid,
That soucht schir Eduard and his men;
Weill neir him war thai *cummyn* then.

He gat soyne vittyng that thai weir
Cumand on him, and war so neir.
His men adressit he thame agañe,
And gert thame stoutly tak the plane;
And syne the erll thar come to se,
And schir philip the mowbra send he,
And schir Iohñe steward went alsua;
Furth till discouir, thair way [thai] ta.

Thai saw the host cum soyne at hand;
Thai war, to *gef^* fifty thousand.
Haym to schir Eduard raid thai then,
And said weill, thai war mony men.
He said agañe, “the ma thai be,
The mair honour allout haue we,
Gif that we beir ws manfully.
We are set heir In Iuperdy,
Till vyn honour, or for till de;
We ar fra hayme to fer to fle;
Tharfor let ilk man worthy be.
3oñe ar gadervings of the Cuntre,
And thai sall fle, I trow, lichtly
And men assail [thaim] manfully.”
All said thai than, “thai weill suld do.”

261. *vittyng*] witting H; wittring E.
262. In haill battell comming neere H.
263. *adressit he*] addressed he H; he dressyt E.
264. *ta*] ta.
265. *thar* thaim E. *thar come*]
came them H.
266. *send*] so CE; sent H.
268. *till*] to EH. *thair*] ther E;
the H. *thai ta*] they ta H; to ta C;
ta thai E.
269. *cum soyne*] sone cum E; neere come H.
271. *to*] till.
272. 50,000.
275. *manfully*] manlyly.
277. *Till*] To. *vyn*] wyn EH. *till*] to.
278. *fra*—*fer*] to fer fra hame E; too far fra hame H.
280. *or*] so E; ar but C; are but H; which clogs the line. *gadervings* gadryngis E; gaddered H. *the*] this EH.
282. *thaim E*] them H; C om. *manfully*] manlyly.
283. *thai than*] than that.
The 10,000 Scotch attack their enemies.
With that approchand neir thame to
The Battellis come, reddy to ficht.
And thai met thame with mekill mycht,
That war ten thousand worthy men.
The scottis all on fut war then,
And thai on stedis trappit weil,
Sum helyt [all] in Irne and steill.
Bot scottis men, at thair metyng,
With speris perssit thar armynng,
And stekit horf, and men doune bar.
Ane felloune fechting wes [than] thair ;
I can nocht tell thair strakis all,
Na quha in ficht gert othir fall ;
Bot in schort tymē, I vndirta,
Thai of Irland war cummyrrit swa
That thai durst nane abyde no mar,
Bot fled scalit, all that thai war,
And levit in the battell-stede
Weill mony of thar gud men ded.

The Irish flee in disorder.
Of wapnys, armynng, and ded men
The feld wes haly strewit then.
That gret hoost roydly ruschit wes ;
Bot schir eduard leit no man chafl ;
Bot with presoners that thai had tañe
Thai till the wod agañe ar gañe,
Quarh that thair harnefl levit wer.
That nycht thai maid thame mery cher,
And lovit god fast of his grace.
This gud knycht, that so worthy was,

[Fol. 109b. C.]
Till Iudas, machabeus that hich,

290. [all EH] thame C.
H. [than E] then H ; thar C.
297. I] 1k.
298. cummyrrit] cumbred H ; contraryit E.
299. nane] than E ; them H.
300. that—war] here and there H.
303. and] and of E.
305. roydly] rudly E ; rudely H.
310. thame mery] so H ; thair men gud E.
312. This] The EH.
313. that hicht] mycht E ; might H.
Micht liknyt weill be in that ficht.
Na multitud he forsuk of men,
Quhill he hade ane aganis tcn.

Thus, as I said, richard of clare
And his greth hoost rebutit war.
Bot he about him, nocht-for-thi,
Wes gaderand men ay ythandly,
For he thought zeit to cowir his cast.
It angerit him richt ferly fast,
That twi3 in-to battell was he
Discumfit with ane few men3he.
And scottis men, that in the forest
War ryddin, for till tak thair rest,
All thai twa nychtis thair thai lay,
And maid thame myrth, solace, and play.
Toward odymsy syne thai rayde,
Ane ersche kyng, that ayth had mayd
Till schir Eduarde of fewte;
For forrouth that him prayit he
To se his land, and na vittale,
[Na nocht] that mycht him help, sold fale.
Schir Eduard trowit in his hicht,
And with his rout raid thiddir richt.
A greth revar he gert hym pa3;
And in a richt fair place, that was

314. Be lyknyt weill that in-to fycht
EH; (miserwritten in-to that fycht
E).
315. Na—he] Forsuk na multitud
EH.
317. Rubric in H—How an Irish
king, false and froward, Leete out a
Loch vpon Sir Edward.
320. ythandly] ythenly E; ithandly
H.
321. cowir] recouer H.
323. in-to] in-till.
324. ane] A.
325. in] to EH.
326. till tak] to mak.
329. odymsy] ydymsy E; Endrossy
H.
330. crishe] irsche E; Irish H.
331. Till] To EH, of] of his
H.
332. forrouth that] before that time
H.
334. [Na nocht E] Nor not H;
Com. him] thaim. that—him] that
they might helpe H. fale] nocht fale
C; but EH om. nocht here.
337. revar] rywer E; Riuer H.
O'Dynsy makes the Scotch cross a river, and encamp in a low place.

He removes all the cattle in the neighbourhood.

He then lets out a loch, in order to flood their camp.

[fol. 110. C.]

The Scotch are soon all afloat.

O'Dynsy gave them nothing to eat, but they had plenty of water to drink.

Lawch by a brym, he gert thame ta Thair herbry, and said, he vald ga
To ger men vittale to thame bring.

He held his vay but mair duelling;
For till betraille thame wes his thought.

In sic a place he has thame brought,
Quhar of Iourneis weill twa & mair
All the cattell withdrawin war;
Swa that thae in that land mycht get
No thing that worth war for to et.

With hungyr he thought thame to Feblið, Syne bring on thame thair enmyð.

This fals tratour his men had maid, A litell owth quhar [he] herbryit hade
Schir eduard and the scottis men, The yshe of a louch to den;

And leit it out in-to the nycht. The vattir than with sic a mycht
On schir Edwardis men come doune, That thae in perell war till droune;

For, or thar wist, on flot war thae. With mekill payne thae gat away,

And held thar livis, [as] god gaf grað; Bot of thair harneð tynt ther was.

He maid thame na gude fest, perfay, He maid thame na gude fest, perfay,

And nocht-for-thi yneuch had thae. For thouch thame falit of the met,

In gret distreñ thair war thai stad. I warne 3ow weil, thai war weil wet.

339. Lawch] Leigh H. brym] bourne E; Burne H.
343. [til] to E H.
344. a[ne] A.
345. Quhar—tw[a] Quhar of twa Iournais wele E; Wherefra twa journyes weill H.
351. tratour his] traytouris E; Traitours H.
352. owth] South H; E om. [he E H] thai C.
354. yshe] ischow E; Ishe H. den] so E; dem H.
361. livis] lyff. [as E H] and C.
365. thame falit] they wanted H.
For gret defalt of mete thai had; 368  
For thai betuix thai riveris tway 372  
War set, and mycht paß nañe of thai.  
The bane, that is añe Arme of se,  
That with horf may nocht passit be,  
Wes betuix thame and willister.  
Thai had beyn in grett perell ther,  
Ne war añe scummar of the se,  
Thomas of dwn hattyn weß he,  
Herd that the host so stratly than  
Wes stad, and [salyt] up the ban,  
Qhull he com weill neir quhar thai lay.  
Thai knew him weill, and blith war thai.  
Than, with four schippes that he had tane,  
He set thame our the ban ilkane.  
And quhen thai come in biggit land,  
Wittale and mete yneuch thai fand;  
And in a wode thame herburyt thai.  
None of the land wist quhar thai lay;  
Thai esyt thame, and maid gud cher.  
In-till that tyme, besyde thame ner,  
With a gret host, richarde of clar,  
And othir gret of Irlande, war  
Herburyt in-till a forest syde.  
And ilke day thai gert men ryde  
To bring wittalis, on ser manerîs,  
Till thame fra the toune of Coignerîs,  
That weill ten gret myle wes thaim fra.  
Ilk day, as thai wald cum and ga,  

368. defalt] defaut.  
369. For] And EH. thai (2)  
great H; E om.  
371. of the EH.  
373. willister] Wlstar H; hulsyst- 
er E.  
375. Ne war] Were not H. are]  
a H; E om. scummar] scummer H;  
scummar E.  
376. dwe] downe E; Dun H.  

372. A river is between them and Ulster.  
376 One Thomas of Down sails towards them,  
and, with 4 ships, carries them over the river.  
380 None of the Irish know where the Scotch are.  
384 The Irish host send out foragers to a town called Conyers.  
392
MURRAY TAKES SOME PRISONERS.

[Book XIV.

[Fol. 110 b. C.] Thai come the scottis host so ner, That bot twa myle betuix thaim wer. And quhen erll thomas had persaving Of thair come and thair gaderyng, 400

He gat him a gud Cumpany, Thre hundreth on horb wish and hardy. Thar wes schir philip the mowbray, And schir Iohny stewart als, perfay, 404

With schir alane stewart alsua, Schir gilbert boyde and other ma. Thai raid till meit the vittelleris, That with ther wittale fra coigneris 408

Com, haldand to the host the way. So suddanly on thame schot thai, That thai war sa abaysit all, That thai leit all thair vapnys fall, 412

And mercy pitwysly can cry. And thai tuk thame in thair mercy, And has thame up so [clenly] tane, That of thame all eschapit nae. 416

The Erll of thame [gat wittering] That of thair host, in the evynnyng, Wald cum out, at the wooddis syde, And aganis thair wittale ryde. 420

He thoucht than on a luperdy ; And gert his men3he halely Dicht thame in the presoners aray;

397. the] the E ; printed to the J. 408. coigneris] Cogners H ; see l. 399. Rubric in H — How Sir 394.
Thomas of Randell, Wan fra the 413. pitwysly] petously. can] gan. 415. [clenly E] cleeneely H ; clerely
Irishmen their vittell. erll] the erle. C.

H; cummyug E. gaderyng] ganging 419. Some wald come out of the
EH. Wood side H.

405. With] And EH. 422. men3he] men all H.
The Irish are deceived, and advance without suspicion.

And quliill the nycht wes neir, thai baid,
And sum of thair mekill host has seyne
Thair come, and wende weill thai had beyne
Thair vittcelouris; tharfor thai raid
Agane thame scalit, for thai hade
Na dreid that thai thair fayis wer;
And thame hungerit alsua weill sair.
Tharfor thai come abundonly;
And, quhen thai neir war, in gret hy
The Erll, and all that with him war,
Ruscht on thame with wapnys bar,
And thair ensenzeis hye can cry;
And thai, that saw so sudandly
Thair fayis dyng on thaine, wes rad,
That thai no hert till help thame had;
Bot [to] thar host the vay can ta;
And thai chasit, and feill can sla,
That all the feldis strowit war;
Ma than agne thowsand ded wes thar.
Richt to thar hoost thai can thame chass,
And syne agane thair wayis tais.

O

N this wiss wes the wittal tañe,
And of the erysche men mouny slane.

The Erll syne, with his Cumpany,
Presoners and wittalis halely
Haß brocht till Schir Eduard als swith;

424. *pennonwys*] Prisoners (*sic*) H.
428. *weill*] E om. 430. *scalit*] safely H.
432. And als they hungred very
saire H.
437. *hye can*] hey gan.
438. *And*] Than, *so*] sua.
439. *wes*] were H; wad sa (*sic*) E.
441. [*to EH*] C om. *host* ost E;
Wood H. *the*] that EH. *can*] gan

The Irish are frightened, [Fol. 111. C.] and flie;

The Earl of Murray presents
his prisoners to Edward Bruce.
The Irish determine to go to Conyers, and do so.

The Irish send out scouts, but they are taken.

Murray gets information from a prisoner, who says,

And he wes of thair cummyng blith. 452
That nycht thai maid thame merye cher;
Richt all than at thair eif thai wer.
Thai war all wachit sekyrly,
And thair fais, on the tothir party, 456
Quhen thai herd how thar men wa slane,
And how thar wittal all wes tane,
Thai tuk to consell at thai wald
Thair wayis toward coigneris hald,
And herbry in the cite ta.

And in gret hye thai haue done swa;
And raid on nycht to the cite.
Thai fand thair wittale of gret plente,
And maid thame merely gud cher;
For all trast in the toune thai wer.
Apon the morn thai [send] to spy,
Quhar scottis men had tane herbery.
Bot thai war met with all, and tane,
And brocht richt till the hoost agane.
The Erll of Murreff richt mekly
Sperit at aue of [thar] Cumpany,
Quhar thar host wes, and quhat thai thought
Till do; and said him, "giff he moucht
Fynd that till hym the suth said he,
He suld gang hame but ransoune fre."

"Forsuth," he said, "I sall 3how say.

454. *Richt—than*] For rycht all E; For they even H.
455. *all wachit* ay walkyt E; all watched ay H.
457. *wass*] war E; were H.
458. *all* als EH.
459. *to* their H. *at* that EH.
460. *coigneris* Cogniers H.
462. *in* than in.
463. *ou* be E; by H.
464. *wittale of* of wictal E; vit-
taille H.
465. *merely gud*] ryeht mery E; merie and good H.
Thai thynk, the morn, quhen it is day,
To seik 3ow with all thair men3he,
Giff thai may get wit quhar 3he be.
Thai haf gert throu the cuntre cry,
[On] payne of lif full felonly,
That all the men of [this] Cuntre
This nycht in-to the Cite be.
And trewly thai sall be so feill,
That 3e sall no wif6 with thame deill."
"De pardew," said he, "weill may be!"
To schir Eduard with that jeid he.
And tald hym wtrely this taill.
Than [haf thai tane] for consell hail,
That thai [wald] ryde to the cite
That ilk nycht, swa that thai mycht be
Betuix the toune, with all thar rout,
And thame that war the toune without.
As thai deuisit, swa haue thai done ;
Befor the toune thai come alsoyne,
And but half deill a myle of way
Fra the cite thar rest tuk thai.
And quhen the day wes dawin licht,
Fifty on hobynis, that war wicht,
Com till a litill hill, that wes
Bot fra the toune a litill spafl,
And saw schir Eduardis herbery ;
And of the sicht had gret ferly,
That sa quheyn durst on ony wif0

478. the] to.
482. [On H] Off E ; Vndir C.
483. [this EH] his C.
484. [This] To E ; The H. nyehj
morne (wrongly) H.
487. Rubrie in H—How Thomas
Randell chased hame, The Scurreours
that fra Cogners came.
489. wtrely] utterly H.
490. [haf E] hane H ; as C. [thai
tane EH] thai com C.
491. [wald E] will CH.
492. ilk] same H. myehj] may H.
493. the toune] so H ; to cum E.
494. swa] so H ; E om. hane thai]
thafl.
497. half deill] halfindall.
498. cite] toun H. thair] a E.
499. dawin] dawyn E ; dawning H.
505. quheyn] quhone E ; wheene H.

The Scotch
resolve to encamp
near the town.

500 Fifty Irish scouts
perceive the
Scotch,
and wonder at
their boldness
Undertak sa hye Empriç,
As for till Cum sa hardely
Apon all the [gret] cheuelry
Of yrland, for till byle battle;
And swa it wes, forouten sale;
For agane thame war gaderit thair
With the wardane, Richard of clar,
The butler, with [the] Erllis twa,
[Of] Desmwnd and [kildar] war thá,
Browman, wardwn, and syr waryn,
And schir pascalle, [a] florentyn,
That wes ane knycht of lumbardy,
And wes full of gret cheuelry.
The mawndwil's [war] thar alsun,
Besatis, loganys, and othir ma;
Sawagi als; and 3eit wes ane,
Hat schir nycholl of kyllvanane.
And with thir lordis so feill wes then,
That, for ane of the scottis men,
I trow that thai war fiff or ma.
Quhen thair discurrowris sey涅 ha० swa
The scottis host, thai went in hy,
And tald thair lordis all opynly,
How thai till thame war Cummand ner;

since they had against thair
Richard of Clare,
Desmond, Butler,
and so many others.

506. Undertak] Durst undertake H.
507. till] to EH.
508. [gret] great H; CE om.; it
seems required. Cf. 1. 518.
509. till] to EH.
510. forouten] with-owtyn.
513. butler] Butlers H. with] and
EH. [the H] CE om.
514. [Of H] Off E; C om. Des-
mund] Desmownd E; Delmound H;
Dosmwnd C. [kildar EH] gildar C.
war thá] alswa H.
515. Browman] Brynrame E; Brun-
hané H. wardwn] wedoune EH.
syr] so CH; fyE. See l. 143.
516. pascalle] paschall E; Plas-
tayne H. [a H] of CE.
517. ane] A.
518. gret] E om.
519. The] And H. mawndwilis
mawndweillis E; Maundewell H.
[war E] was CH.
520. Besatís] Bissatris H. loganys
Loganes H. See l. 47
521. Sawagis] The Sausages H.
522. Hat] That heght H. nyeholl
Michell H. kylkenane] kylkenane
E; Kycleiane H.
523. ma EH] may C.
526. discurrowris] Discurreurs H.
hass] hes H; had E.
528. all] EH om.
529. till] to EH. Cummand] com-
mis H; cummyn E.
To seik thame fer wes na myster.
And quhen the Erll thomais had seyne
That thai men at the hill had boynie,
He tuk with him a gude menȝhe,
On hord aȝe hundreth thai mycht be,
And till the hill thai tuk the way.
In a slak thame enbuschit thai;
And, in schort tyme, fra the Cite
Thai saw cum rydand a menȝhe,
For till discowir, to the hill.
Than war thai blith, and held thame still
Quhill thai war cumȝyn to thame ner;
Than in a frusche, all that thar wer,
Thai schot apon thame hardly.
And thai, that saw so suddandly
Thai folk cum on, abaysit war;
And nocht-for-thi, sum of thame thar
Abaid stoutly, to mak debat;
And othir sum ar fled thar gat.
And in-to weill schort tyme [war] thai,
That maid [arest], cumrayd swa,
That thai fled haley thair gat;
And thai thame chassit richt to the jate,
And a greit part of thame hafȝ slaȝe,
And syne went till thar host agane.

No need to seek the Scotch.
Murray and 100 horsemen lie in ambush.
They keep quiet and at last surprise some of the Irish.
who partly flee, and partly resist;
but even those who resist take to flight at last.

534. hundreth] hunder.
538. rydand] so E; rydande C.
539. discowir] discouer H; discur E.
541. cumȝyn E] commen H; mis-written cummyne C.
543. frusche] rush H. thar] thai E; they H.
THE MEN IN THE TOWN MAKE A SALLY. [BOOK XV.

When those within the town see their men slain, they make a sally.

And quhen schir philip the mowbray Saw thame ysche in sa gud aray, Till schir eduard the bryf went he, And said, "schir, it is gude that we Schape for sum slicht, that may availl Till help ws in this gret battail. Our men ar quheyn, bot thai haf will Till do mair than thai may fullfill. Thatfor I rede, our caryage, Forouten ony man or page, By thame-selwyne arayit be;


And thai sall seyme fer ma than we.
Set we befor thame our baneris;
3on folk that cummyrs out of Coigneris,
Quhen thai our baneris thair may se,
Sall trow trestly that thair ar we,
And thidder in gret hy [sall] ryde.
Cum we than on thame at a syde,
And we sall be at avantage;
For, fra thai in our Caryage
Be enterit, thai sall cummyrit be;
[And] than with all our mycht may we
Lay on, and do all that we may."
And as he ordanit, done haf thai.
And thai that com out of Coigneris
Adressit thame to the Baneris;
And smat with spures the horis in hy,
Ruschand emang thame sodanly.
The Barell-feris that war thar
Cumrayd thame fast that rydand war.
And than the Erll, with his battale,
Com on, and sadly can assale.
And Schir Eduard, a litill by,
Assembilit swa richte hardely,
That mony fey fell vnder feit;
The felde wox soyné of blud all weit.
With so gret felony thar thai faucht,
And sic rowtis till othir raucht
With stok, with stane, and with retrete,

"Let us set up our banners before the baggage," 24
28 whilst we lay wait for them."

His plan is adopted.
36 The assailants at-attack Sir Edward's baggage.

The Scotch issue from their am-bush.

A fierce battle ensues.

And rushed H. emang] amang H;
E om. sodanly] all sodanly C; but
EH om. all.
39. feris] ferraris E; ferrars H.
40. Cumrayd] Cumbryt E; Cumberd H.
42. can] gan.
44. swa—hardely] with his com-
pany H.
45. fey] a fey EH.
49, 50. H omit. can] gan.
As athir part can othir bet,
[That] it wes hydwifo for to se
How thai mantemyt that gret melle
52
So knychtlik apon athir syde,
Giffand and takand voundis vyde,
That pryme wes passit, or men mycht se
Quha mast [at] thair abovin mycht be.
56
Bot soyne estir that pryme wes past,
The scottis men dang on so fast,
And schot on thame at abandoune,
As ilk man war A campiouin,
50
That all thar fayis tuk the flight;
Wes nane of thame that wes so wicht,
That euir durst abyde his fere;
Bot ilkane fled thair wayis sere.
54
Till the toune fled the mast party.
The Erll thomas sa ynkirly,
And his rout, chassit with swerdís bar,
That all emang thame mellit war,
[And] all to-gidder come in the toune.
58
Than wes the slaughter so fellounie,
That all the rewys ran of blude.
Thame that thai gat, to dede all 3ude,
Swa that [than thar] weill neir wes ded
Als feill as in the battell-sted.
The fijwaryne wes taken thar;

51. [That EH] Than C.
52. How] E om.
53. So—apon] Sa keenely they
faught on H.
54. voundis vyde] rowtis roid E ;
routes red H.
56. [at E] that C. Quha—thair
What part soonerst H. abovin] abone
H : abow E.
60. campiouin E] Campeoune C ;
Scorpioun (!) H.
63. euir] ewyr.
64. ilkane] ilk man EH.
65. Till] To EH.
66. The] And. ynkirly] egrely E ;
egery H.
68. emang] amang.
69. [And H] Bot C ; That E.
71. rewys] ruys E ; reves H.
72. all] he H. 3ude] 3hud E ;
yoode H.
73. [than thar E] thair wer C.
74. Als feill] Well neere H.
75. fijwaryne] syve warine or fyve
warine E ; Swaryne H.
Bot so rad wes Richard of clar, 76 Sir Richard of Clare escapes.
That he held to the sowth cuntre.
All that moneth I trow that he
Sall haf no gret will for to ficht.
Schir Iohnie steward, ane nobill knycht, 80 Sir John Stewart is severely wounded.
Wes voundit throu the body thair
With a sper that richt scharply schair.
To the mont-peleris went he syne,
And lay thair lang in-to helyne, 84
And at the last helit wes he.
Schir Eduard than, with his menye,
Tuk in the toune thair herbery.
That nycht thai blith war and Ioly 88
For the victory that thai had thar.
And on the morn, forouten mar,
Schir Eduard gert men gang and se
All the vitalis of that Cite. 92
And thai fand sic fusionne thar-in
Of corn [and] flour [and] wax and vyne,
That thai had of It gret ferly ;
And schir Eduard gert halely
[To] cragferguss [it] cartit be. 96
Syne thidder went his men and he,
And helde the sege full stalwardly
Quhill palmesonday wes passit by.
[Than] qhill the tysday in pask-owk,
On athir half thai trowis tuk ;

76. so] swa. rad] feared H. wes] wes schir C; but EH omit schir.
77. held] so CH; fled E.
79. gret] gud.
80. ane] A.
82. richt] E om.
83. To the] Bot to E; But to H.
84. in-to] in-till. helyne] Leeching H.
89. victory] victour.
92. vitalis] victaill E; vittaile H.
93. fusionne] foysoun.
94. [and EH] C om. (twice).
97. [To H] In-to C; In-till E. [it H] CE om. cartit] caryt E; caried H.
101. [Than E] Then H; And C.
102. half] side H. trovis] trewys E; trewes H.
Mandeville hopes to surprise the Scotch.

But on Easter Eve 15 ships arrive from Dublin, with 4000 recruits to guard the castle, and Sir Thomas Mandeville at their head.

So that thai mycht that haly tyd
In pennance and in prayer byd.

Bot apon paske evin all richt
To the castell, in-till the nycht,
Fra devilling come schippis xv,
Chargit with armyt men bedeyne;

Four thousand, trow I weill, thai war:
In the castell thai enterit thair.
The mawndwell, ald schir thomas,
Capitane of that menche he was.
In the castell all preualy
Thai enterit, for that thai gert spy
That mony of schir eduard's men
War scalit in the cuntre then.

Tharfor thai thocht in the mornynge
Till ysche, but langer delaying,
And till suppris thame suddanely;
For thai thocht thai suld trastly [ly],
For the trewis that taken war.

Bot I trow falsat euirmar
Sall haue vnfair and euill ending.
Schir Eduard wist of this na thing,
For of tresoune had he na thought.
Bot for the trewis he left nouch
Wachis till set to the Castele;

105. *paske evin*] the pasche ewyn E; Pasch-Euen H. *all* EH om.
106. *in-till*] in-to EH.
107. *devilling*] dewilyne E; Devilling H. *come*] come thair; *but* EH om. thair. *xv*] fifteen H.
108. *armyt*] armour and H. *bedeyne*] bedene E; bedeene H.
109. *Four*] Three H.
110. *thair*] ar.
111. *mawndwell*] Maundwell H; mawndweill E. *ald*] ald or als C; auld E; alswa and H.
112. *he*] EH om.
113. *In—all*] In the Castell full H; In-till the castell E.
114. *that—gert*] that had gret (*sic*) E; they gart H.
115. *till*] to EH.
116. *thaI*] that C; *but* EH om. that. *[ly] H* CE om.; *but it is necessary.*
117. *falsat*] falsat EH.
118. *hauce*] E om. *vnfair*] mischiefe H.
119. *trewis*] trewes H; trow E. *left*] lewt E; letted H.
120. *Wachis—set*] To set wachis EH.
Ilk nycht he gert men wach it wele.
And neyll flemyng wachit that nycht
With sexty men worthy and wicht.
And als soyn as the day wox cleir,
Thai that within the castell weir
Had armyt thame, and made thame boūne,
And syne the bryg avaled doūne,
And yschit in-till gret plente.
And quhen neyll flemyng can thaim se,
He send ān̄ till the kyng in hy,
Syne said to thame that war hym by,
"Now sall men se, I vndirtak,
Quha dar de for his lordis sak!
Now beir 30w weill, for sekirly
With all thir men̄e fecht will I.
In-till bargāe thame hald sall we,
Qhill that our mastir armyt be."
And with that vorde assemblit thai;
Thai war [to] few all out, perfay,
With sic a gret rout for to ficht.
Bot nocht-for-thi, with al thar mycht,
Thai dang on thame so hardely,
That [all] thair fayis had gret ferly,
That thai war all of sic manheid
That thai no dreid had of thar dede.
Bot thar fell fayis sa can assaill,
That thar mycht no worship availl,

128. men — it] wake it full H. reach] walk E; wake H.
129. neȳll] nele. 131. wox] wes E; was H.
134. syne] so CH; sone E. the—
avaled] thar brig awalit E; the draw-
brig they let H. 136. neȳll] nele. can thaim] thaim can C; gan thaim E; can them H.
137. till] to EH. 138. Syne] so CH; And E.
139. I] Ik.

128. That night Neil Fleming, with 60 men, kept watch;
132. and next morning sees an army in motion,
136. and prepares to check their advance.
140. He and his men fight with great courage,
144. He and his men fight with great courage,
148. but are all slain.
That thai ne war slayn euirilkane
So cleyn, that thar eschapit nane.

How the kyng of Irland callit eduard com apon the scottis men.

And the man that went till the kyng
For till warn hym of thair ysching,
Warnit him in-till full gret hy.
Schir Eduard, that wes comonly
Callit the kyng of Irland,
Quhen that he herd sic hy on hand,
In full gret hast he gat his ger.
Tuelf wicht men in his chalmer wer
That Armyt thaume in full gret hy.
Syne with his baneris hardly
[The] myddis of the toune he tais,
With that neir cummand war his fais,
That had delt all thar men in thre.
The mawndwell, with a gret menze,
Richt throu the toune his vay held doune;
The layff on athir syde the toune
Held to meit thame that fleand war;
Thai thoucht that all that thai fand thar
Suld de but ransoune euirilkaue,
Bot othir wayis the gle is gaue;
For schir eduard, with his Baner,
And his men that I tald of ere,

155. That] Than E; Bot H. ne] EH om., slayn slane wp E; slaine vp H.
156. hy] haste H; thing E.
157. Rubric fr. C. till] to EH.
158. till] to EH.
159. in-till] in EH.
160. that wes] wes E; was then H.
161. of] of all H.
162. Quhen that] And quhen E;
And when H. herd] hard E; had H.
163. richt men] with him H.
164. chalmer] chawmer E; Chamber H.
165. baneris] baner EH.
166. [The EH] In C.
168. his vay] the way EH.
169. layff] lave EH.
170. de] dey E; die H.
171. men] twelue E; twelue H.
172. that—tald] I tauld 3ow.
On all that rout so hardly
Assemblit, that it wes ferly.
For gib harpar befor him 3eid,
That wes the doughtyest of deid
That than wes liffand of his stat,
And with ane ax maid him [sic] gat,
That he the first fellit to the grounde;
And eftir, in a litill stounde,
The mawndwell by his armyng
He knew, and rought him sic a swyng
That he till erd 3eid hastily.
Schir Eduard, that wes neir hym by,
Reversit hym, and with a knyff
Richt in that place him reft the liff.
With that of Ardrossaé ferguñ,
That wes ane knycht rycht curageous,
Assemblit with sexty and ma.
Thai pressit than thair fayis swa,
That thai, that saw thair lord slayñé,
Tynt hert, and wald haue beyn agañe.
And ay, as scottis men mycht be
Armyt, thai come to the melle;
And dang apon thai fayis swa,
That thai all hale the bak can ta,
And thai thame chassit to the 3at;
Ther wes hard ficht and gret debat.
Thar slew schir Eduard with his hand
A knycht, that of all Irland

180 Gib Harper slays a foe with an axe;
[Fol. 114 b. C.]
181 harpar] Harper H.
182 of] in.
183 liffand] leuand. than—stat] might be found of his estate H.
184 [sic E] sik H; C om.
185 the (2)] E om.
186 eftir] syné H; off thre (wrongly) E. in] into H.
187 by] be.
189 3eid] past H.
190 him reft] reft him. him—
191 he reft his H.
192 3eid] 3eid H.
193 ferguss] Sir Fergus H.
194 ane] A. ane—rycht] a wight
195 sexty] sextie men H.
196 derggnss'] Sir Fergus H.
198 beyn] bene E; bene H.
200 More Scotchmen come up,
and at last the enemy gives way.
201 ther H.
202 hale] E om. all hale H.
203 thame] tha men H.
204 hard] great H. gret] hard H.
Sir Edward slays Mandeville, as I said; and pursues his foes so hard, that none escape.

Wes callit best, and of mast bounte, [To] surname mawndwell [hecht] he, His proper name I can nocht say. Bot his folk till so hard assay War set, that thai of the dwengeounë Durst oppyn no sat, na bryg let doune. And schir Edward, I tak on hand, Sought thame, that fled thar to varend, So felly, that of all, perfay, That yschit apon hym that day, Eschapit of thaim neur ane, That thai ne war outhir tañe or slañe. For to the ficht maknakill then Come with twa hundreth of gude sper-men, And slow all that thai mycht to vyn. This ilk maknakill, with a gyn, Wan of thair schippes four or fiff; And halely reft the men thair liff. Quhen end wes maid of this fechting, 3eit than wes liffand neill flemyng. Schir Edward went him for to se [About him slayne lay his menȝe, All in A lump, on athyr hand; And he, redy to dey, throwand. Schir Edward had of him pite,]

One Maknakill captures 4 or 5 ships.

[208. To EH] Of C. mawndwell] Maundweill E; Maundewile H. [hecht] hecht H (better spelt hecht); had E; callit ves C.


And him full gretly menyt he,
And regratit his gret manhede,
And his worschip with doughty dede.
Sic mayn he maid, thai had ferly;
For he wes nocht custumabilly
Wount for till meyne ony thing,
Na wald nocht heir men mak menyng.
He stude thar by quhill he wes ded,
And syne had him till haly sted,
And him with worschip gert he be
Erdit, with gret solempnite.

How king Robert passit throu the tarbatis,
and wan the Iles.

On this wiʃ yschit the mawndwele;
Bot sekirly falsat and gyle
Sall eu'r haue ane cuill ending,
As weill wes seyn by this ysching.
In tyme of trewis yschit thai,
And in sic tyme as on paske day,
Quhen god rais for to sauf manksyne
Fra vem of ald adammis syñe.
Tharfor sic gret myschans thame fell,
That ilkane, as 3e herd me tell,
War slane vp, or than takyn [thar].
And thai that in the castell war

234. with] and. And—with] His
worship and his H.
235. mayn] mane H. thai had] men had gret.
237. till] to EH. meyne] meyne
men E; mene H.
239. quhill] while H; till E.
240. till haly] to hallowed H.
241. him—he] syne with worship
gart him H.
Rubric from C. H has—How King
Robert wan the Iles to hand, And
gart his shippes saile on dry land.
243. the mawndwele] maundwill E;
Mandewile H.
244. falsat] falsat. H has—Bot
wit ye well that fraud and guile.
245. cuir] all wayis E; alwayes
H.
246. ves] was H; is E. by] be.
250. Fra EH] Fra the C. vem]
wem E; weme H.
251. sic] sa EH.
253. than] els H; E om. [thar E]
there H; war C (but see next line).
War set in-till sic fray that hour, 256
For thai couth se quhar na succour
Suld cum to relife thame, that thai
[Shortly] swa tretit, and on a day
The castell till him 3alde thai fre
Till sauf thame thair liffis; & he
Held thame full weill [all] his cunnand.
The castell tuk he in his hand,
And wittalit it weill, and has set
A gud wardane, it for to get;
And a quhile thair than restit he.
Of him no mair now spek will we,
Bot till king robert will we gang,
That we haf [left] vnspekyn of lang.
Quhen he convojt had to the se
His brothir Eduard and his men3he,
*With his schippes he maid him 3ar,
*In-till the Ilis for till fare.
272*
*Walter steward with hym tuk he,
*His mawch, and with him gret men3he;
And othir men of gret nobillay.
Till the tarbard thai held thar way
In galayis, ordanit for their fair:
Bot thame worthit draw thar schippes thar.

255. in-till—hour] in sik a fray
that hour H; in-till sa gret E (the
rest of the line being blank).
256. For] That H. quhar na] na
where H.
257. reliefe thame] relieve them H;
relyeff E. that] so H; and E. thai
day H.
258. [Shortly] Com. Tretit, & till
a schort day E; That shortly then
tretitd they H.
259. thai] E om. To yeeld the
Castell to him free H.
260. thair liffis] lyff and lym. To
sane their liues, and certes he H.
261. [all H] CE om.
263. it] E om. has] in it H.
264. get] so CH; kept (wrongly) E.
265. thair than] tharin. a—than]
there a whyle H.
267. till] to EH.
268. [left EH] C om.
269. convoit had] had convoit
E; had convoyed H.
270. and] with H.
271*-274*. Not in E; but found
in CH.
274*. mawch] Maich H.
271. nobllay] noblay EH.
272. Till] To EH. the tarbard]
the Tarbarts H; tarbart E. held]
tooke H.
274. draw—schippes] their ships
draw H.
And a myle wes betuix the seis,  
And that wes lownyt all with treis.  
The kyng his schippis thar gert draw,  
And for the vynd can stoutly blaw  
Apon thar bak, as thai vald ga,  
He gert men rapis and mastis ta,  
And set thame in the schippis hye,  
And salys to the toppis te,  
And gert men gang thar-by drawand.  
The vynd thame helpit, that wes blawand,  
Swa that, in-till a litill spaft,  
Thar flot all weill our-drawyn waf.  
And quhen thai that in the Ilis war  
Herd tell how the [gud] kyng had thar  
Gert schippis with the salys ga  
Out-our betuix the tarbartis twa,  
Thai war abasit all vtrely.  
For thai wist throu ald prophesy  
That he that suld ger schippis swa  
Betuix the seis [with] salis ga  
Sald vyn the Ilis swa till hand,  
That nane with strynth suld him withstand.  
Tharfor thai come all to the kyng;  
Wes nane that withstude his biddyng;  
Outaken Iohnë of lorñe alone.  
Bot weill soyne eftir he wes tañe,
JOHN OF LORN IS CAST INTO PRISON. [BOOK XV.

All submit, and John of Lorn is taken, And presentit wes to the kyng.

and put in prison, first at Dumbarton, afterwards at Lochleven.

The king this Iohn of lorn ha[ ] ta[ ] e, And send soyne him till dumber[ ] e[ ],

[Fol. 116. C.]

The king takes his pleasure.

The battale betuix the lord dowglass and the lord nevell of yngland.

Quar he wes lang tym[e] in festnyng; Thair-in, I trow, he maid endyng.

The king, quhen all the Iles war Brocht till his liking, le[ ] and mar,

Still all that sesoune thar duelt he At hunting, and gammyne, and gle.

Sir James of Douglas is in the forest.

Sir James of Douglas is iu in the forest.

At Berwick, at that time, was one Edmond de Calion, a Gascon.

301. presentit] presented H; presented E. 

302. E. vesc] rycht E; right H.

303. to] till.

304. ded—distroyit] destroyed and dead H.

305. EH put The king after lorn.

306. send] so CE; sent H. soyne 

—till] hym furth to EH.

307. thair] for H. till] to EH.

308. And] Syne H; Syn E. syne] 

309. lang tym[e] quhill. 

310. EH put Thair-in after he maid.


314. and—and] gamyn. and at E; and at game, and H. Rubric from C. 

315. Quhen] Quhill. on] apon E; vpon H. 

316. Dantit] Dawntyt E; Had daunted H.

319. worthely] doughtely H.

320. woonand] duelland.

321. Edmond] Edmond EH. de calion] de callow E; of Calhow H.

322. H has—He was a Knight of great Renoun.
And in-till gascone, his cuntre, 324
Lord of gret sen3eroy wes he. 328
He had than berwik in keping, 332
And maid aue preue gadderling, 332
And gat him a gret Cumpany 332
Of wicht men armyt Iolely, 332
And the nethir end of tevyaill 332
He prayit doyne till him all hail, 332
And of the mer8 aue gret party; 332
Syne toward berwik went in hy. 332
Schir adam of gordonne, that than 332
Wes becummyne a scottis man, 332
Saw thame swa drif avay thar fe, 332
And wend thai had beyn quheyn, for he 336
*Saw bot the fleand scaill, perfay, 337*
*And thame that sesyt in the pray. 337*
*Than till schir Iames of douglaf* 340*
*In-to gret hye the way he tais, 340*
*And tald how ynglis men thair pray 338
*Had tane, and syne went thar way 338
*Toward berwik with all thar fee, 345*
*And said, thai quheyn war; and gif he 345*
Wald speid him, he suld weill lichtly 337
Wyn thame, and reskew [all] the ky. 338
*Schir Iames rycht soyne gaf his assent 345*

Douglas pursues the English in haste.

The English drive the cows on in front, and protect the rear.

Douglas finds the English host is double his own.

* Till follow thane, and furth is went
  * Bot with the men that he had thair,
  * And met hym by the gat but mair.
  * Thai followit thane in full gret hy,
  * And com weill neir thame hastely;
  * For, or thai mycht thame fully se,
  * Thai come weill neir thair menye.
  * And than bath the forreours and the scaill
  * In-till a childrome knyt all haill,
  * And wes a richt fair Cumpany.

* Before thane gert thai drif the ky
  With knavis and swanys, that na mycht
  Had for till stand in feild to ficht.
  The laiffe behynd thame maid a scaill.
  The dowglass saw thair purpois haill,
  And saw thame of sa gud cowynye,
  And at thai war sa mony syne,
  That ay for aine of his war twa.

"Lordingis," he said, "sen it is swa
That we haff chassit on sic maner,
That we now cunnyn ar so ner
That we may nocht eschewe the ficht
Bot gif we fowly tak the ficht,

346*. Till] To H.
347*, 348*. In C only.
350*. come] came H.
352*. come] came H.
353*. And] Bot H. the forreours] forray H. (N.B. The line would scan better by omitting And.)
354*. In-till—knyt] Were knit into a sop H.
355*—340. H transposes the lines, and has—
But Knaues and Swaines that had
na might,
For to stand into field to fight,
Before them gart they drive the
Ky,
They were a right faire company.

339. knavis] knawis.
340. till] to. to] &.
341. laiffe—thame] have behynd thaim E; H has—And all togidder in a staill. maid thai maid C; but EH omit that. scaill] may be read either scaill or staill; Jamieson prints stale; Hart has staill. But see l. 353*, where H has scaill.
342. purpose] lump all EH.
343. conye] conyne H.
344. at] saw E; that H.
345. ay] thai E; they H.
347. of.
348. now—ar] are now commen H.
350. tak] ta.
Lat ilk man on his luf than meyne,
And how he mony tyme has beyne
In grat thrang, and come weill away.
Think we till do richt swa this day;
And tak we of this furde heir-by
Our advantage, for in gret hy
Thai sall cum on vs for to ficht.
Set we than will, [and] strynth, and mycht
For till meyt thame richt hardely."
And with that word, full hastely,
He [hes] displayit his Baner;
For his fayis war cu?Hand neir.
That, quhelen thai saw he wes so quhoyne,
Thai thought vyth tha&m soyne till haf done,
And assemblit full hardely.
Thair mycht men se ficht fellely,
And richt a?e cruell melle mak,
And mony strakis giff and tak.
The douglass thair weill hard wes stad,
Bot the gret hardyment that he had
Confortit his men apon sic wif,
That no man thought on cowardif;
Bot faucht so fast with all thar mayne,
That thai feill of thair fayis has slayne.
And thouch thai wer be full fer ma
Than thai, 3eit vre demanyt thaim swa,
Yet Sir Eumond is slain, and all his men flee.

The Scotch recover their cattle.

Had not Douglas killed the leader, his men would all have been slain.

He often won by killing the enemies' captain.

That Ewmond de Caloñe was ded rich in that ilk fechtyn-sted. And all the lave, fra he was doñe, War planly thair discumfit soñe; And thai thad chassit sum hañ slayñe, And turnyt the prayis haill againe. The hardest fechtyn forsuth this wes That euir the gud lord of douglæf Wes in, as of sa few menñhe.

For, had nocht beyne his gret bounte That slew thair chiftæne in the ficht, His men till ded had all beyne dicht. He had in-till Custum all-way, Quhen euir he com till hard assay, To press hym, the chiftæne to sla; And hap him fell, that he did swa; That gert him victor haue feill siñ. Quhen schir Ewmond apon this wiñ Wes ded, this gud lord of douglæf Till the forest his way he tæñ. His fayis grely can hym dreid; The word weill fer sprang of this deid, Swa that in yngland neir thar-by Men spak of It weill comonly.

DEATH OF SIR EUMOND DE CALION.

Sir Robert de Neville dwelt then at Berwick, and is envious of Douglas’s fame.

Schir Robert de Nevell in that tyde
Wonnyt at berwyk neir besyde
The marchis, quhar the lord dowglaf
In the forest reparande was,
And had at him full gret Invy,
For he him saw so manfully
Mak his boundis ay mar & mar.
He herd the folk that with him war
Spek of the lorde dowglaf is mycht,
And how forsy he wes in fycht,
And how hym oft fell [far] fortouife.
He wret hit hym thar-at all soyfie,
And said, “quhat weyn 3he, is thar nañe
That euîr is worth bot hym alañe?
3e set hym as he war but peir:
Bot I avow, befor 3ow heir,
Gif euîr he cum in-till this land,
He sail fynd me neir at his hand.
And giff I euîr his Baneir
May se displayit apon wer,
I sail assembill on hym but dout,
All thouch 3he hald him neuîr sa stout.”
Of this avow soyne bodword was
Brocht till schir Iames of douglas,
That said, “giff he will hald his hicht,
I sail do swa, he sail haf sicht
Of me, and of my Cumpany
3eit, or ocht lang, weil neir hym by.”

His retnewn than gaderit he,
DOUGLAS DISPLAYS HIS BANNER.

That war gud men of gret bounte,
And to the marchis in gud aray
Apon ane nycht he tuk the way;
Swa that, in the mornyg airly,
He wes, with all hisCumpany,
Befor berwyk; and thair he maid
Men to display his baner braid.
And of his men thair he send he
For till burne townys twa or thre,
And bad thame soyn agane thame speid;
Swa that on hand, gif thar com neyd,
Thai mycht be for the ficht redy.

The nevell, that wist werraly
That dowglass cummyng wes so neir,
And saw all braid stand his baneir,
Than with the folk that with hym war—
And he had a gret men thar,
For all the gud of that cuntre
In-till that tyme with hym had he,
Swa that he with hym thar had then
Weill may than wes the scottis men—
He held his way vp till ane hill,
And said, “lordyngis, it war my will
Till mak end of the gret deray
That dowglass makis vs Ilk day.
Bot me think it speidfull that we
Abyde, quhill his men scalit be
Throu the cuntre, to tak the pray.

431. to] till. marchis] march EH.
432. ane] A.
433. in] in-to.
437. send] sent.
440. on] at H.
442. nevell] Newill E; Newell H.
werraly] wittily.
446. And] written Ande C.
449. with—thar] thar with him.
450. may] so CE; ma H. wes] war.
451. ane] A.
453. Till] To EH.
454. makis] mayis E; does to H.
456. quhill—scalit] till that his
Menyie H.
457. Thro—the] Skailled all, to take our H, the (2)] thair.
Than fersly schute on hym we may,
And we sall hane thame at our will."
Thus all thai gaiff consent thar-till,
And on the hill abaid huvande.
The men fast gadderit of the land,
And drew till hym in full greth hy.
The douglas than, that wes worthy,
Thought it wes feyl mair till bye.
Toward the hill than can he ryde ;
And quhan the Nevell saw at thai
Vald nocht pa3 furth to the forray,
[Bot] pressit till thame with thar mycht,
He vist veill than that thai vald ficht.
And till his men3he can he say,
"Lordingis, now hald we furth our vay ;
Heir is the flour of this cuntre,
And ma than thai alsua ar we.
Assemmyll we [than] hardely ;
For douglas with 3on 3emanry
Sall haf no mycht till vs, perfay."
Than in a frusche assemblit thai.
Thair mycht men heir the speris brast,
And men dyng apon othir fast,
And blude brist out at woundis vyde.
Thai faucht fast apon athir syde ;
For athir party can thame payne
Till put thair fairs on-bak a-gane.

458. schute] schout E ; set H. hym
460. Thus] Than. consent] assent
461. huvande] howand E ; houand
H.
464. Douglas cannot wait,
466. can] gan.
467. Nevell] Newill E ; Newell H.
469. [Bot E] He (wrongly) C. till] to EH.
470. vist] wyst.
471. can] gan.
473. this] the.
474. ma] so CH ; may E.
475. [Assemmyll] Assemblill. [than]
476. 3emanry] 3hwmanry E ; Ye-
manry H.
479. Thair] Than E ; That H.
480. men—apon] ilkane ding on
E ; ilkane dang on H.
481. woundis] woundis.
483. can] gan.
484. Till] To EH.

464 Douglas cannot wait,
but rides towards the hill.
Neville sees that a fight is near.

He encourages his men.

The fight.

He encourages his men.

The fight.
DOUGLAS SLAYS SIR ROBERT NEVILLE. [BOOK XV.

Neville and Douglas fight hand to hand.

The Lordis of nevell and douglafi,
Quhen that the fichting fellest was,
Met to-giddir richt in the prefl.
Betnix thame than gret bargañe wes;
Thai faucht felly with all thair maucht,
Gret rowtis athir till othir raucht.

Douglas was the stronger,

Bot douglafi sterkar wes, I hicht,
And mair vsit alsna to ficht;
And he set hert, and will alsua,
For till delyuer hym of his fa;

[fol. 1186. C] and slays Neville.

Qhill, at the last, with mekill mayñe
Throu forfø the nevell hafl he slayne.
Than his ensen3e he can hye cry,
And on the laiff so hardly
He ruschit, with all his men3he,

The English are soon put to flight.

That in-[till] schort tym men mycht se
Thair fayis tak on thame the flicht;
And thai thame chassit with all thar mycht.

Sir Ralph de Neville and the baron of Hilton are taken.

Sehir ralf the Nevell, in the chafl,
And the Baroun of hiltonñ wafl
Takin, and othir of mekill mycht,
That wes slayn thair in-to the ficht,
That worthy in thar tyme had beyn.
And quhen the feld wes clegit cleyu,
Swa that thair fayis euirilkane
War slayn, [or] chassit away, or tane,

Then Douglas ravages the country,

Than gert he forray all the land,
And sessit all that euir he fand,

486. that] at.
487, 488. H omits.
490. till] to H ; E om.
494. till] to EH.
496. Throw] Off E ; Of H. the]
then. nevell] Newill E ; Newill H.
497. he—hye] hey gan E ; can he H.
498. laiff] lave EH.

488. that] at.
489. all] E om.
490. in-till E] in CH.
492. he] IK.
493. om. Nevell] Newill E ; Newill H.
494. the chass] that place H.
495. the] that EH.
496. the] that EH.
497. [or EH] C om.
498. he] thal.
And brynt the townys in thar vay;
Syne haill and feir haym cummun ar thai.
The pray soyne emang his men3he,  
Eftir thar meritis, delit he,  
And held no thing till his behuf.
Such deeds endeared him to his men.
Sic dedis aucht till ger men luf
Thair lorde, and swa thai did, perfay.
He tretit thame so wifily ay,
And with so mekill luf alsua,
And sic a countenans vald ma
Of thair deid, that the mast coward
Stoutar he maid than a libard;
With cherising thusgat maid he
His men wicht and of gret bounte.

When Neville thus wes brought to ground,
And of cal3eoun schir Ewmond,
The [dreib] of the lorde dowgla3i,
And his renoun, swa socalit waf
Throu-out the marchis of yngland,
That all that war thar-in duelland
Thai dreid him as the deuill of hell.
And 3eit haf I herd oftsi3 tell,
That he so gretly dreid wes than,
That quhen wi3i3s vald thar child3r ban,
Thai wald with rycht ane angry face

513. the] E om.
514. haym] E om.
516. delit] delt E; dealt hes H.
518. till] to EH.
522. a countenans] a-wansement.
sic — countenans] countenance that he H.
524. Stoutar — maid] He maid stoutar EH. libard] libart E; Leop-
pard H.
527. Nevell] Newill E; Newell H.
528. cal3eoun] Callow E; Calhow
will give them to the black Douglas.

[Book XV.]

He may now dwell in peace.

We return to Sir Edward at Carrickfergus.

Beteche thame to the blak dowglaf; 538
*For, with thaire taill, he wes mair fell 539*
*Than wes ony deuill in hell. 540*
Throu his gret vorschip and bounte 539
Swa with his fayis dreid wes he, 540
That thame grevit till heir his nae.
He may at eido now duell at haene 544
A quhile, for, I trov, he sall nocht
With fayis all a quhile be socht.
Now let him in the forest be;
Of him no mair now spek will we.
Bot of schir Eduarde the worthy,
That with all his gude cheuelry
Wes at cragfergus zeit liand,
Till spek mair will we tak on hand.

538. Beteche] Betake H. spek now no mar E; speake na maire H.
539*, 540*. In C only.
grewyt E; groowed 548. gude] EH om.
H. till to EH. 549. at] in.
mony dayes H. 550. Till] To EH. will we] we
544. all—quhile] mony dayes H.
546. Of] And of H. no—spek] will EH.
When Sir Edward had defeated Richard of Clare,
and returned to Carrickfergus,
Sir Thomas Murray returned towards Scotland,
where he soon arrives,
He tells the king about his brother’s deeds,

[BOOK XVI.]

Quhen schir eduard, as I tald air,
Had discumfit richard of clair,
And of Irland all the Barnage
Thrið, throu his worthy vassalage,
And syne with all his men of mayne
Till craftergus wes cumyn agayn,
The gud erll of murreff, thomas,
Tuk leiff in scotland for till pað;
And he hym levit with a [gruching],
And [syne] him chargit to the king
Till pray him specialy that he
Suld cum In Irland him to se.
For, war thai bath in-to [that] land,
Thai suld fynd nane suld thaim withstand.
The Erll furth than his way has tane,
And till his schippees is he gane,
And salit out weill our the se;
In scotland soyné arivit he.
Syne to the king he vent in hy;
And he resauit hym gladsumly,

1. Rubric in H—Here past in Ireland the Noble King To his brother with great gadding. 1] I k. tald] said EH.
7. murreff] Murray Sir H.
8. till] to EH.
9. with a] without H. [gruching E] grudging H; grunching C.
10. [syne EH] C om.
11. Till] To EH.
12. Suld—In] Wald come in H; Cum in-till E.
13. [that EH] the C.
17. out weill] weill out E; well out H.
18. In] In-till.
20. he] E om.
And spirit of his brotheris fair,
And of Journeis that he had thair;
And he him tald all but lesyng.
Quhen the king had left spering,
His charge to the [gud] king tald he.
And he said, 'he wald blithly se
His brothir and als all the effeire
Of that cuntre and of that were.'

A gret men3he than gaderit he.
And twa lordis of gret bounte,
The tane the steward walter wa9,
The tothir Iames of dowglas,
Vardanis in [his] absens maid he,
For till manteym weil the cuntre.
Syne to the se he tuk his vay.
[And] at lowchryan in galloway
He schippit, with all his men3he;
Till cragfergus soyne cummnyn is he.
Schir Eduard of his com wes blith,
And went down for to meit him swith,
And velcummyt hym with gladsum cher;
Sa did he all that with him wer,
And specialy the Erll thoma6
Of murreff, that his nevo was.
Syne to the castell went thai thar;
He maid thame mekill fest and far.

22. he] thai EH.
24. had left] left had EH. spering]
the spering E; his speaking H.
25. [gud E] CH om.
27. als all] also H; se E. effeire
after.
28. of that] what it H. that were]
thar wer.
31. The tane] The ane H. the—
walter] Walter Stewart H.
32. tothir] other H.
33. Vardanis] Wardanys. [his
EH] C om.
34. till] to EH. manteym] main-
taine H.
35. his] the.
36. [And EH] C om. lowchryan]
lochrianE; Lochreane H.
38. TILL] To EH.
40. for] E om.
41. velcummyt] welcumyt.
42. he] so CH; thai (wrongly) E.
43. thar] there H; thar or yar E;
yar J.
46. He] And EH. fest—far]
feast and fare H.
BOOK XVI.  
A DESCRIPTION OF MAY.

Thai sudIornyt thair dayis thre
In gret myrth and in rialte.

How king Robert the Bruce passit in Irland with his brothir Eduard.

King Robert, apon [thiskyn] wis,
In-till Irland arivit is;
And quhen in cragfergs had he
With his men sudIornyt dais thre,
Thai tuk to consell that thai vald
With all thar folk thar vayis hald
Throu all Irland, fra end to othir.
Schir Eduard than, the kingis brothir,
Befor in the avaward raid.
The kyang him-self the reirward maid,
That had, in-till his Cumpany,
The Erll thomas, that ves vorthy.
Thair wayis furthwarde haf thai tanè,
And soyne ar passit Inderwillane.
This wes in the moneth of may,
Quhen byrdis syngis on the spray,
Melland thair notys with syndry sowfie
For softnes of that sweit sesoune;
And lewys on the branchis spredis,
And blomys bricht besyd thame bredis,

47. sudIornyt[ ] soiournyt E; so-
48. In gret[ ] And that in. gret—
in] mirth, solace, aud H. in rialte
49. upon] now upon H. [thiskyn
52. thair] therein H.
55. to] till.
57. avaward] awaward E; Van-
gard H.
58. reirward] Reeregard H.

They feast for 3
days.

When king
Robert had been
3 days in Ireland,

they all set out
to explore the
country.

King Robert
commands the
rearguard.

Description of
May.

61. furthwarde] fordward H;
southward E.
62. Inderwillane] euerilkane H;
E om.
63. Rubric in H—Here faught
King Robert in Ireland, With 5 thou-
sand against 40 thousand.
64. on the] in ilk E; on ilk H.
65. syndry] seymly EH.
66. that] the EH.
67. lewys] levys E; Leaues H.
68. besyd] about H.
Fields and flowers.

And feldis florist ar with flowris,
Weill savourit, of seir colowris,
And all thing worthis blith and gay,
Quhen that this gud king tuk his vay
To ryd furthward, as I said are.
The vardane than, richard of clare,
Wist the kyng wes arivit swa,
And wist that he schupe for till ta
His way toward the south cuntre.
Of all [Irland] assemblit he
Till him a full gret cheuelry
Of squyarís, burges, and 3emanry,
Quhill he had neir fourty thousand.
Bot he vald nocht 3eit tak on hand
With all his fayis in feld to ficht,
But vmbethought him of a slicht;
That he, with all that gret men3he,
Verd in a vode enbuschit be,
All preuely besyde the way,
Quhar at thair fayis suld pa6 avay,
And let the vaward pa6 fer by,
And syne assemmyll Hardyly
On the Reirward, with all thar men.
Thai did as thai deuisit then;
In a wode thai enbuschit wer.
The scottis hoost raid by thame nere;

69. florist ar] strowed are H; ar
strowyt E.
70. savourit] sawerand E; sauour-
ing H.
73. furthward] southward E; Southward H.
76. that] H om. for till] him for
to H; him to E.
78. Of] And of. [Irland EH]
Inglang C.
79. Till—gret] Bath burges and
E; Baith Burgesses and H.
80. Of—burgess] And hobilleris
and EH.
84. But] Bot he, a] ane.
87. All] And.
88. at] that. pass] E om. H
has—Where their faes behooued to ga.
89. vaaward] awaward E; Vangard
H.
90. assemmyll] assembill.
91. Reirward] Reeregard H.
93. a] ane.
94. hoost] ost E; men H.
For thai na schawing of thame maid.
Schir Eduard weill fer forrouth raid
With thame that war of his men; he,
To the reirward na tent tuk he.
And schir richard of clare in hy,
Quhen schir Edward wes passit by,
Send wicht ȝhomen that veill couth schut,
To bikkir the reirward apon fut.
Than twa of thame that send furth war
At the wode-syde thame bykkirrit thar,
And schot emang the scottis men.
The king, that had thar with him then
V thousand wicht and ek hardly,
Saw thai twa sa abaudionly
Schut emang thaim, and cum so neir;
He vist richt weill, withouten weir,
That thai weill neir swm power had.
Tharfor a bydding has he mad,
That no man [suld] be so hardly
Till prik till thame; but sarraly
Ryde reddy ay in-till Battale,
Till defend gif men vald assale.
"For we sail soyne, I vndirta,"
He said, "haf for till do vith ma."
Bot schir colyne cammeU, that ther
Wes by, quhar thai twa ȝhomen wer
Schutand emang thame hardly,
Prikit on thame in full gret hy,

95. For] Bot EH.
96. fer forrouth] foorth before H.
98. To] so EH; And to C.
101. wicht] lycht E; light H.
105, 109. emang] amang.
107. V] Weill v E; Well neere
flu H, ek] EH om.
111. veill] rycht. swm power] some power H; suppowall E.
113. [suld] sould H; sail E; C
om.
114. Till] To EH. till] at EH.
115. in-till] in-to EH.
117. Í] Ík.
118. till] to EH.
119. cammeU] Cambell E; Cambell H.
120. ȝhomen] ȝlumen E; Yemen H.
And slays one of the archers.

The other kills Sir Colin's horse.

King Robert knocks Sir Colin down for disobedience, and says that such disobedience is full of danger.

He advises his men to be wary.

Then 50 of the enemy's archers appear, and shoot some of the king's men.

And soyne the tane he has our-tane,
And with his sper him soyne has slayne.
The tothir turnyt and schot agayne,
And at a schot his hors has slayne.
With that the king come hastely,
And in his gret malancoly,
With aune transiouné in[till] his nave,
To schir colyne sic dusche he gave,
That he dynnyt on his arsoune.
The king bad smertly tyt hym doune,
Bot othir lordis that war [him] by
Avisit the king in sum party.

He said, "the breking of bydding Micht cauf^ be of discomfiting.

Weyn 3he 3on rebaldis durst assale Vs so neir in-till [our] Battale,
Bot gif thai had suppowaill neir?

I wat richt weill, forouten weir,
That we sall have till do in hy ;
Tharfor luuk ilk man be redy."

With that weill neir xxx and ma
Of bowmen com, and bykkyrrit swa
That thai hurt of the kyngis men.

The king ha$ gert his archeris then
Schute for till put thaim than agayne.

123. tane] ane H.
124. his] the E; a H.
128. in—gret] in-till his E; into
his H.
129. ane] A. intill E] into H;
in C. nave] new E; neefe H.
130. he] did H. gave] gewe E;
give H.
131. dynnyt] fell downe H.
132. The—bad] Then bad he EH.
133. [him EH] C om.
134. Avisit] Amoysst E; Has
meased H. in sum] in-to.
135. He] And he E; Bot he H.
the] EH om.
136. be of] be of that C; all our
E; H has—Might be cause of dis-
confiting.
138. in-till our] so E; C omits
our; in our awne H.
139. suppowalle] suppowail E; sup-
ppee right H.
140. forouten] with-owtyn EH.
141. till] to EH.
143. and] or.
146. gert] sent H.
147. Schute] To shoot H. till] to
EH. thaim than] thai men E; them
H.
With that thai enterit in ane playnê, 
And saw arayit agane thame stand 
In four battellis fourty thousand. 
The king said, "now, lordingis, lat se 
Quha worthy in this ficht sall be! 
On thame forouten mair abaid!" 
So stoutly than on thame thai raid, 
And assemblit so hardely, 
That of thair fayis a gret party 
War laid at erd at thar meting; 
Thar wes of speris sic bristing, 
As athir apon othir raid, 
That it a veill gret frusche haÔ maid. 
HorfÔ com thair fruschan, hed for hed, 
Swa that feill on the grund fell ded. 
Mony a wicht and worthy man, 
[As] athir apon othir ran, 
War duschtit ded douñe to the ground; 
The rede bloute out of mony a wound 
Ruschit in sa gret fusionñe than, 
That of the bloute the stremes ran. 
And thai, that vrath war and angry, 
Dang on othir so hardely 
With wapnys that var bricht & bar, 
That mony a vicht man ded ves thar. 
For thai, that hardy war and wicht, 
And frontly with thair fayis can ficht, 
Pressit thame formast for till be. 
Thair myeil men cruell bargane se,
148. ane] A. 
152. Quha worthy in this ficht sall be! see 40,000 men against them. 
156. That of thair fayis a gret party 
152. The Scotch make the attack. 
160. That it a veill gret frusche haÔ maid. 
164. Many are slained or severely wounded. 
166. In sik effusion, that even than 
H. 
148. Soon the Scotch see 40,000 men against them. 
169, 170. H omits. 
169. vrath] wrath. 
172. vricht] gud E; good H. ded 
174. frontly] frontly C; 
175. till] to EH. 
176. bargane] battell H.
The battle is very severe.

Sir Edward won 19 battles in 3 years,
sometimes defeating 20,000 men.

He had always more than 1 against 5,
but king Robert had herc only 1 against 8.

King Robert was always close to him.

Sir Thomas Murray was always close to him.

And hard battall, I vndirstand.
In-till [all] the weir of [Irland]
So hard ane feching wes nocht seyne.

The quhethir of greth victorium nynteyne
Schir Edward had, withouten wer,
In-till less than in-to thre seir;
And in syndry battelis off thai
He vencust twenty thousand & ma,
With trappit horo richt to the seif.
Bot, in [all] tymis, he wes zeit
Ay ahe for v, quhen lest wes he.
Bot the kyng in-to this melle
Had allayis aucht of his famen
For ahe, bot he swa bar him then
That his gud deid and his bounit
Confortit swa all his menjhe,
That the mast coward hardy wes.

For, quhar he saw the thykkest pref,
So hardely on thame he raid,
That ay about hym rowme he maid,
[That he slew all he might ourtak,
And rudely rushed them abak.]
And Erll thomas, the worthy,
Wes in all tymis neir hym by,
And faucht as he war in a rage;
Swa that, throu thar greth vassalage,
Thar men sic hardyment can tak,

177. battall] bargaine H. I] Ik.
vndirstand] tak on hand EH.
178. In-till] in EH. [all EH] C
om. of] of all C; but all should prece
de the weir, as in EH. [Irland
EH] Ingland C.
180. victorium] victours.
181. had] has.
182. In-till] And in-to E; And
that in H. in-to] in EH.
184. He vencust] He vanquisht
H; Wencussyt E. twenty] xxx E;
twentieth H.
186. in all tymis] in all tymys E;
in to tymis C; in all that time H.
196. ay] thar. H has—And sa
great roome about him made.
197*, 198*. In H only; CE omit.
In H, ourtak is spelt ouertake, and
abak is spelt aback.
198. tymis] tyme.
200. throu] for.
201. sic] sic greth. cau] gan E;
did H.
That thai no perell wald forsak.
Bot thame abaundonyt so stoutly,
And dang on thame so hardely,
That all thair fay is afayit war.
And thai, that saw weill, by thair fair,
That thai eschewit sum deill the ficht,
Thai dang on thame with all thar mycht,
*And pressit thame dyn gand so fast,
*That thai the bak gaf at the last.
*And thai, that saw thaim tak the flicht,
*Pressit thame than with all thar mycht,
And in thair fleying feill can sla.
The kingis men ha$ cha$it swa,
That thai war scalit euirikane.
Richard of clare the vay has ta$e
To devillyng, in full gret hy,
With othir lordis that fled him by,
And varnyst bath castell and townys
That war in thair possessownis.
Thai war so felly fleyit thar,
That, [as] I trow, Richard of clar
Sall ha$ no will to faynd his mycht
In battell na in for$ of ficht,
Qubill king robert and his men$he
Is duelland in$to that Cuntre !
Thai stuffit stry nthis on this vi$;
And the king, that wes sa till prif,
Saw in the feild richt mony slayn.

203. abaundonyt] abandon.
208. Thai—thame] Than dang thai on.
  209*—212*. In CH ; E omits.
  209*. thame dyn gand] dinging on them H.
  212*. Here H repeats l. 208.
  209. can] gan.
  211. war—euirikane] disin fat them ilkane H.
  212. vay] way.

[Fol. 121 b. C.] The English and Irish begin to give way,
and at last take to flight.

208 Richard of Clare retreats to Dublin.
209 His men are much scared,

[Fol. 53 b. E.] and are afraid to face king Robert

212 Richard of Clare retreats to Dublin.

215. varnyst] warnysyt E ; garrisht
H. castell] so H ; castellis E.
217. fellony] fellounly H.
218. [as H] CE om. Richard]
schir Richard.
220. for$ of] field to H. of] to.
222. in$to] in.
223. wiss] wiss.
224. sa] E om. till] to EH.
And one of thame that thar ves tane,
That ves arayit Iolely,
He saw grete wondir tendirly.
He askit him, 'quhy he maid sic cher?'

He said him, "scher, forouten wer,
It is no wonder though I grete,
I se heir feill fellit to fete,
The flour of [all north] Irland,
That hardyest wes of hert and hand,
And mast douit in hard assay."

The king said, "thou ha disobed, perfay;
Thou ha disobed mai caus myrthis till ma,
For thou the ded eschapit swa."

And one of thame that thar ves tane,
That ves arayit Iolely,
He saw grete wondir tendirly.
He askit him, 'quhy he maid sic cher?'

He said him, "scher, forouten wer,
It is no wonder though I grete,
I se heir feill fellit to fete,
The flour of [all north] Irland,
That hardyest wes of hert and hand,
And mast douit in hard assay."

The king said, "thou ha disobed, perfay;
Thou ha disobed mai caus myrthis till ma,
For thou the ded eschapit swa."
In the vaward, he suld na tyde
Presf fra his rerward fer of sicht;
For gret perell so fall thar mycht.'
Of this ficht will we spek no mair.
The king and all that with him war
Raid furthwarde in-to bettur aray,
And neir to-giddir than ere did thai.
Throu all the land planly thai raid;
Thai fand nane that thame varnyng maid.
Thai raid evin forrouth drouchyndra,
And forrouth devilling syne alsua;
Bot to gif battale nane thai fand.
Syne thai went forthwarde in the land,
And sowth till Iwnyk held thau';
That is the southmast touñe, perfay,
That in Irland may fimdyn be.

After a halt,
as they prepare
to go on,
the king hears a
woman's cry,
and learns that
a poor laundress
is seized with
labour.
The king said, "Certis, it war pite
That scho in that poynt left suld be
For certis, I trow, thar is no man
That he ne will rew vp-on woman."

His host all than arestit he,
And gert ane tent soyne stentit be,
And gert her gang in hastely;
And othr women till be hir by,
Quhill scho delyuer wes, he bad;
And syne furth on his wayis raid:
And how scho furth suld caryit be,
Or cuir he fure, than ordanit he.

This wes a full greit curtasy,
That sic a kyng and swa mycht;
Gert his men duell on this maner
Bot for a full pouir laynder.
Northwarde agane thai tak the vay;
Throu all Irland thus passit thai
Throu conage richt to dewilling,
And throu al myth and Irrell syne,
And mwnser and [throu] lainenser,
And syne haly throu vllister
To cragfergus forout battell;
For thar wes nane durst thame assale.

280. *vp-on woman* a woman than
E; of women than H.
281. host ost. than thar.
282. ane] A.
284. till] to E; H om.
285. delyuer wes] wes deliuer E;
deliuered was H.
288. *fure than* furth fur E; fur E.
290. sic] swilk.
292. full] EII om. laynder]
lauender EH.
293. Northwarde agane] Norvardo
agane C; Agayne northwart E;
Againe Northward H. the] thair
EH.
294. thus] then H. thus—thai] than perfay.
295. conage] all connach E; all
Connoch H. richt] Hom. devilling]
dewillyne E; Devilline H.
296. myth] methy E; Mich H;
Meath A. Irrell] Icreby E; Irrelle
H; Tyrrell A.
297; 298. Transposed in E.
297. And] Through H. mwnser]
monester E; Monaster H; Munster
A. [throu] through A; CEH om.
lainenser] lenester E; Lawester H;
Linstor A.
298. vllister] wlsister E; all Vlsis-
ter H; all Ulster A.
299. forout] for-owty E; without
The king is than of the erschrye
Com to schir Eduarde halely,
And thair manrent till him can ma,
Bot gif that it war ane or twa.
Till craugfargus thai come agane;
In all that vay was no bargane,
Bot gif that ony pwnȝhe wer
That is nocht for till spek of her.
The ersiche kyngis than euirilkañe
Hayme till thar awne repar ar gañe,
And vndûrtuk in all-kyn thynge
For till obeyȝ till the bidlyng
Of schir Eduard, that thar king call thai.
He wes weill set now in gud way
To conquer the land all halely;
For he had apon his party
The erschry and vllister,
And he wes swa furth of his wer
That he wes passit throu all Irlaud
Fra end till end throu strynth of hand.
Couth he haf gouernit hym throu skill,
And fallowit nocht to fast his will,
Bot with mesour haf led his deid,
It wes weill lik, withouten dreid,
That he mycht haff conquerit weill
The land of Irlaud euirilk deill.

301. than] EH om. the] E om. erschrye] Irschery E; Irshire H.
303. manrent] so H; spelt man-
trent C; manredyn E. till—can] can to him H; gan him E.
307. that] it H. pwnȝhe] pounȝe E; Skirmish H.
308. till] to EH.
309. ersiche] Irsche E; Irish H.
312. obeyȝs till] obey to EH.
313. call] callit E; called H.
314. weill—now] now weill set.

All the Irish kings submit to Sir Edward.
There was but little fighting.
The Irish kings return home.
Sir Edward is now in a good position.
Having passed over all Irlaud, (Fol. 51, E.)
If he had used some want, he might have conquered all Irlaud.
in] so EH; and in C; but and is not wanted.
315. conquer] conquer E; con-
quesse H. all] EH om.
317. erschry] Irschery E; Irshire H. vllister] wlsystyr E; all Vlsister H; all ulster A.
318. of] on EH.
319. all] E om.
320. end (2)] wthyr E.
322. fallowit] folowyt E; followed H.
325. conquerit] conquessid H.
326. euirilk] ilka.
Bot his outrageous succurrd
And will, that mar wes [than] hardy,
Of purposed litit hym, perfay,
As I heir-eftir sall sow say.

**How the gud dowglass slew the erll richmonde of yngland.**

Now leiff we heir the nobill king
All at his eif and his liking,
And spek we of the lord douglafi,
That left to keep the marchis waif.
He gert get vrchtis that ves sle,
And in the hawch of lyntoun-le
He gert thame mak a fair maner.
And quhen the houis biggit wer,
He gert purvay hym richt weil thar.
For he thought for till mak Infair,
And till mak gud cher till his men.

In rychmond wes thar wonnand then
Ane Eml, men callit schir thomas;
He had Invy at the dowglas,
And said, "gif that he his Baner
Micht se displayit apon wer,
That soyn assemble on it suld he."
He herd how dowglas thought to be
At lyntoun-le ane fest till ma;
And he had wittyng weill alsua,

327. succurrd] succured E; succurrd H.
328. mar ves] wes mar. [than EH] and C.
330. ] Ik.

*Rubric in H—How Dowglas slew Richmond, syne at meat In battell their harbreours serued in seat.*

333. lord] lord of.
335. get] so CH; set E. ves sle] war sleye.
336. hawch] halche E; hawgh H. lyntoun-le] lyntaille E; Lyntalle H.
338. housis] housis (= housis) C; howsis E; houses H.
340. for—mak] to mak ane EH.
341. till (1)] to EH. till (2)] to H.
342. thar] E om.
343. men callit] that men callit E; that called was H.
349. lyntoun-le] Lyntaille E; Lyntaille H. ane] and E; a H. till to EH.
350. had] got H. wittyng] witting H; wittering E.
That the king and a gret men泽
War passit than of the cuntre,
And the Erll of murref, thomas.
Tharfor he thought the cuntre was
Febill of men, for till withstand
Men that thame soucht with stalward hand;
And of the marchis than had he
The gouernale and the pouste.
He gaderit folk about hym then,
Quhill he wes nei ten thousand men,
And wode-axis gert with hym tak;
For he thought he his men wald mak
Till hew doune Jedward forest cleyne,
That na tre suld thanarin be seyne.
He learns that king Robert and
Sir Thomas Murray had gone
away.
Thame that he mycht of his men泽;
I trow that than with hym had he
Fifty, that worthy war and vicht,
At all poynt armyt weill and dicht
And of archeris a gret men泽he
Assemblit als with hym had he.
A place than wes thar in the way,
Quhar he wist weill thai vald away,

352. He learns that king Robert and Sir Thomas Murray had gone away.
356. He gathers 10,000 men, and proceeds to Jedwood forest, to hew down the trees there.
359. Sir James of Douglas hears of this, and assembles 50 men and some archers.

[Fol. 123 b. c.]

372. [Tol. 123 b. c.] He lays an ambush in a pass.
that grew narrow like a shield, that had wode apon athir syde;
The Entre wes weill large and vyde;
And as a he schelde it narrowit ay
Quhill that, in-till a he place, the vay
Wes nocht a peenny-staie cast of breid.
The lord of douglas thiddir zeid,
Quhen he wist thai war neir cumand,
And in a cleuch on the ta hand
All his archeris enbuschet he,
And [bad] thame hald thame all preue
Quhill that thai herd him raidh the cry,
And than suld thai schute hardely
Emang that fayis, and hald thame thar
Quhill that he throu thame passit war;
And syne with him furth hald suld thai
Than byrkis on athir syde the way,
That young and thik wes growand ner,
He knyt to-giddir on sic maner,
That men mycht nocht weill throu thaim ryde.
Quhen this wes done, he can abyde
Apon the tothir half the way;
And Richmond in-till gude aray
Com rydand in the first battale.
The lorde douglas haid seyn weill all,
And gert his men all hald thame still,
Quhill richt at hand thai com thame till,
And Enterit in the narrow way.
Than with a he schout on thame schot thai,
Cryand on hicht, "douglas, douglas!"
Than richmonde, that [rycht] worthy waf,
Quhen he [has] herd sa riś the cry,
And douglas baner saw planly,
He dressit him thiddir-ward in hy.
And thai com on sa hardely,
That thai throu thame maid thame gud way;
All at thai [met] till erd bar thai.
The richmond borne doune thar was;
On hym arestit the Douglaf,
And him ruevrit; syiie with a knyff
Rich in that place hym reft the liif.
Ane hat apon his helm he bare,
And that tuk douglas with him thar
In taknyng, for it furrit waf.
And syne in hy his way he tais,
Qhill in the wode thai enterit war;
The archeris well has borne thame thar;
For weill and hardely schot thai.
The ynglif rout in gret effray
War set, for douglas suddandly,
Witl all thame of his Cumpany,
Or enir thai wist, war in thar rout,
And thrillit thame well neir throu-out;
And had almost all done his deid,
Or thai till help thame couth tak hede.
And quhen thai saw thar lord ves slaynec,

407. Cryand] And cryt E; And cried H.
408. [rycht] right H; than E; C om.
409. [has E] had H; C om. herd
hard. riss rise H; raias E.
410. saw] he saw C; but EH omit he.
411. kim] E om.
413. gad] the. H has—That through them haue they made their way.
414. [met EH] mycht C. bar] dang H.
415. On—the] And soone arrested him H.
416. syne] and E; H om.
417. [kym reft] reft him.
418. douglass — him] with him dowglas.
420. his—he] thair wayis E; his wayes H.
422. ves] was H; E om.
Douglas Slays Clerk Ellis and His Men. [Book XVI.

they retreat a little,

and take up quarters for the night.

Douglas hears that a clerk named Ellis, with 300 men, have taken up their quarters near him.

Douglas and his men attack Ellis as he is at meat, and slay him and nearly all his men.

They had a cruel entremet at their dinner!

Thai tuk hym vp, and vent agayne
Till draw thame fra the schot avay;
Than in ane playne assemblit thai.
And, for thar lord that thar wes ded,
Thai schupe thame in that Ilke sted
For till tak herbery all that nycht.
And than the douglais, that wes wicht,
Gat wittering that ane clerk, elyf,
With weill thre hundreth enymyf,
All straucht till lyntoun-le war gañe,
And herbery for thair host had tañe,
Than thiddir is he went in hy,
With all thame of his cunpany,
And fand clerk Elis at the met,
And all his rout about him set.
And thai com [on] hym stoutly thair,
And with suerdis that scharply schar
Thai seruit thame full egyrly.
Thai war slayn doune so halely,
That thar weil neir eschapat nañe.
Thai seruit thame in sa gret wayne
With scherand suerdis and with knyvis,
That weill neir all lesyt thar livis.

434. vent] turnyt E; turned H.
435. Till] To EH.
436. ane] A.
438. Ilke] Ilk EH.
439. till] to EH.
eyss] ane elyss C (but EH omit 2nd ane); Elyss E; Eleis H.
443. till] to EH. lyntoun-le] lyn-
talie E; Lyntalle H.
447. Eliss] Ellys E; Eleis H.
449. [on EH] C om. hym] thaim

436. Slayn war thai full grewously

452. Slayn war thai full grewously

453. thar] E om.
454. in] on. sa] full H.
456. lesyt] left E; leesed H. thar] the.
457. ane] A. entremass] efth-

458. For that subcharge too charg-
ing was H; That sowrchargis to charg-

£E.
Richt till thar host thair wayis tais, 460 [Fol. 1245. C.]
And tald how thar men war slayne
So cleyne, that neir eschapit nane.
And quhen thai of the host has herd
How that the dowglað with thame ferd,
That had thar herbreouris all slayne,
And ruschit als thame-self agaïnê,
And slew thar lord in-myd thar rowt,
Ther wes nane of thame all sa stowt,
That mair will had than till assale
The dowglað; tharfor till console
[Thai] 3eid, and till purpoos haï ðaï ðaï
Till wend hamward, and haym [ar] gaïc;
And sped thame swa apon thair way,
That in yngland soyne cummyn ar thai.
The forest left thai standand still;
Till hew it than thai had no will;
And specaly, quhill the dowglað
So neir hand by thair nychtbour waïf.
And he, thar saw thame turn agane,
Persauit weill thair lord yes slauce,
And by thar hat that he had tane
He wist it alsua weill; for aïc,
That takyn wes, said him suthly,
That the richmond commonly
Wes wount that furrit hat to were.
Than dowglað blithar wes than ere;

460. thar] the.  Richt—thar] To their great H.  thair] the EH.
462. neir] ner E; there H.
463. the] thar.  has] had EH.
465. herbreouris] herbreouris E.
herbryours H.  all] E om.
466. alï] all EH.
469. had than] than had E; had them H.
470. The—tharfor] Therefore they
hane tane H.  till] to EH.
472. haym] hamwart.  [ar E] are H; is C.
474. in] to H.
476. Till] To EH.
477. And] E om.
480. ves] wes.
482. it] E om.; right H.  alsua weill] well also H.
483. suthly] surely H.
484. the richmond] Rychmound E; Richmond ay H.
For he weill wist that the richmond,
His fellounge fa, wes brought to ground.

Shir James of dowglaf on this viio,
Throu his vorschip and gret emprif,
Defendit worthely the land.
This poynt of weir, I tak on hand,
Wes vndirtane so apertly,
And eschevit richt hardely;
For he stonayit, withouten weir,
The folk that weill ten thousand weir
With fifty armyt men, but ma.

I can als tell 3ow othir twa
Poyntis, that weill eschevit weir
With fifty men; and, but all weir,
Thai war done swa richt hardely,
That that war prisit soveranly
Atour all othir poyntis of wer
That in that tym eschevit wer.

This was the first, that sa stoutly.
Wes brought till end weill with fifty.
In galloway the tothir fell;
Quhen, as 3e forrouth herd me tell,
Shir Eudeard the bryst with fifty
Vencust of saint Iohne schir amery
And xv hundreth men be tale.

487. the] EH om.
490. vorschip] worship. gret] his
EH.
493. so] full E; right H.
494. eschevit] eschewyt E; en-
cheeued H; and so in 1. 499.
495. stonayit] na stonayit (!) E;
estoneyed H. withouten] for-owtyn.
weir] wer E; weree H.
496. The] That.
500. all] E om.
501*. 504*. Not in E. Found in
CHJ.
501*. done—richt] all done sa H.
502*. prisit] praised H.
504*. eschevit] encheeued H.
501, 502. It has—This was the first:
that with fittie Was brought to end,
and sa stoutly.
502. till] to EH.
503. In] In-to E. tothir] other H.
504. forrouth—me] heard me be-
fore H.
505. Schir] How Sir H. brysty
bryss E; Bruce H.
506. Vencust] Wencysst E; Van-
quishst H. amery (miswritten
for amery) C; Amery E; Aymery H.
507. spr] fifteene H; fyfty E.
The third fell in-to Eske dale,
Quhen that schir Iohãe de sowlis wað
[The] gounour of all that plað,
That to schir androu the herdclay
With fifty men withset the vay,
That had thar in his Cunpany
Thre hundreth horsit Iolely.
This schir Iohãe, in-to plane melle,
Throu hardyment and souerane bounte
Vencust thame sturdely ilkañe,
And schir androu in hand haþ tañe.
I will nocht reherð all the maner;
For quha sa likið, thai may heir
Young women, quhen thai will play,
Syng it amang thame ilke day.
Thir war the worthy poyntis thre,
That, I trow, entîrmar sall be
Prisit, quhîl men may on thaim meyn.
It is well worth, forouten weyn,
That thar namys for entîrmar,
That in thar tyme so worthy war
That men till heir þeit haþ dantee
Of thair worshïp and gret bounte,
Be lestand ay furth in lovying;
Quhare he, that is of hevnî the king,

508. in-to in-till E. [Eske dale]
Esdaill E; Eskdale H.
509. de] the E; of H. sowlis]
sowlis E; Soulis H.
510. [The EH] C om.
511. the EH om. herdclay] hard-
clay E; Hardeclay H; Herkelay A.
512. withset] beset H.
515. in-to in-till.
516. Throu souerane hardiment
that felle E; Through Soueraigne
hardement, and bountie H.
517. Vencust] Wencussyt E · Van-
quisht H.
519. all] now H; E om.

508. The third was in Eskdale,
against Sir John
de Soulis.

516. But Sir John,
having 500 men,
had the best of it.

520. Young women
still sing about it
in ballads.

528. It is very fit that
the names of such
heroes should
obtain lasting
praise.
Meanwhile some Englishmen, dwelling beside the Humber, sail in ships towards Scotland. [Fol. 125 b, C.]

They knew that King Robert was absent. They sail up the Firth of Forth, and land at Inverkeithing, near Dunfermline. The Earl of Fife opposes them.

Bring thame hye vp till hevyynis blis,
Quhar alway lestand loving i0!

In-till this tyme that the Rychmond Wes on this maner broucht to ground, Men of the cost of yngland, That duelt on hummyr or neirhand, Gaderit thame a gret menzhe, And went with schippes to the se, And toward scotland went in hy, And in the firth com hastely. Thai wend till haf all thar liking; For thai vist richt weill at the king Wes than fer out of the cuntre, And with him mony of gret bounte. Tharfor in-to the firth com thai, And endlang furth held thai thar vay Quhill thai, besyde Enuerkethyne, On vest half, toward dunfermlyne, Tuk land, and fast begouth to reif. The Erll of fiff and the schirreff Saw till thar cost schippes approochand, Thai gaderit till defend thair land, And ay forgane the schippis ay, As thai salit, thai held thar way, And thought till let thame land to tak. And quhen the schipmen saw thame mak

533. hye vp] he wp.
535. Rubrie in H—How the Bishop of Dvnkeldin syne, Scomfist the shipmen beside Dunfermling. In-till] In EH.
538. hummyr] humbre E ; Homber H.
540. with] in EH.
543. haf] haf had CH ; but E omits had.
544. vist] wyst. richt] EH om. at] that EH.
546. And] E om.
548. furth—vay] It wp held thai E ; it held vp their way H.
549. Enuerkethyne] Enuerkething E ; Innerkething H.
550. vest] west, dunfermlyne] dunferlyng E ; Dunfermling H.
551. reif] ryve.
552. schirreff] schyrryve.
554. till] to EH; and in l. 557.
555. ay forgane] a forgayn E ; they forgane H.
556. held] tooke H.
Sic contenan$ in sic aray,  
Thai said emang thaim all that thai  
Vald nocht let for thame land to ta.  
Than to the land thai sped thame swa,  
That thai com thair in full gret by,  
And arivit full hardely.  
The Scottis men saw thair cummyng,  
And had of thame sic abasyng,  
That thai all sannyn raid thame fra,  
And the land letle$ leit thame ta.  
Thai durst nocht fecht vith thame, for-thi  
Thai withdrew thame all halely;  
The quhethir thai var v hundreth ner.  
Quhen thai avay thus ridand wer,  
And na defens begouth to schop,  
Of dunkelden the gude bischop,  
That men callit will$ame syncler,  
Com with a rout in gud manere,  
I trow on hor$ thai war sexty.  
Hym-self wes armyt Iolely,  
And raid apon a stalward steid;  
A chemeyr, for till heil his veil,  
Aboue his armyng had he then;  
And als weil armyt ves his men.  
The Erll with the schirreff met he  
Awayward with [thar] gret men$e.

559. Sic] Swilk. in] and H.  
567. sannyn raid] haill did ryde H.

568. And] And to C; but EH omit to; see l. 558. letless] but stop H.  
571. war] war. hundreth] hunder.  
572. away] away.  
573. schop] shape E; shape H; misspelt scop C.  
574. dunkelden] dunkeldyn EH.  
575. syncler] the sancteeler E.  
580. chemeyr] chemer E; Chimmer H.  
581. Aboye] Apon E; Abone H.  
582. als—ces] armyt weill als war E; armed also were H.  
583. with] and EH.  
584. Awayward] Awaward C; Awayward E; Ryding away H. [thar E] their H; a C.

BRUCE.
He reproves the earl of Fife for his cowardice,

He askit thame weill soyn, 'quhat hy Maid thame till turne so hastely?'

Thai said, thair fais with stalward hand
Had in sic fusione takyné land,
That thai thought thame allout to fele,
And thame to few with thame to dele.

Quhen the bishop herd it wes sa,
He said, "the king aucht weill to ma
Of 30w, that takis sa weill on hand
In his absens till wer the land!
Certis, gif he gert serwe 30w weill,
The gilt spurs, richt by the heill,
He suld in hy ger hew 30w fra;
Richt vald with cowardis men did swa.
Quha lufis his lord and his Cuntre,
Turne smerty now agane with me!"

With that he kest of his Chemer,
And hynt in hand a stalward sper,
And raid toward his fayis in hy.
All turnyt with hym halely;
For he had thame repreuit swa,
That of thame all nane vent him fra.
He raid befor thame sturdely,
And thai hym followit sarraly,
Qubill that thai com neir aproochand
To thar fais that had tane land.

Then the bishop leads his men to the attack in good order.

And sum war knyt in gud aray,
And sum war set to the forray.

The bishop exhorts his men.

The gud bishop, quhen he thame saw,
He said, "lordingis, but dред or aw
Prek we apon thame hardely;

585. He] And.
586. till] to EH; and in l. 594.
587. stalward] stalwart.
594. the] his EH.
595. serwe] serif E; serue H.
And we sail half theame veill lichtly. 616
Se thai vs cum but abaying,
Sa that we mak heir na stynting,
Thai sall weill soyne discumfit be.
Now dois weil, for men sail se
Quya lufis the kyngis mensk to-day!
Than all to-giddir, in gud aray,
Thai prekit apon thame sturdyly.
The bishop, that wes richt hardy,
And mekill and stark, raid forrouth ay.
Than in a frusche assemblit thai,
And thai that, at the first metyng
Of speris, feld so sair sowing,
Vayndist and vald haf beyn avay;
Toward thar schippis in hy held thai,
And thai com chassand felonely,
And slew thame sa dispitfully,
That all the feldis strowit war
Of Inglis men that slayn wes thar;
And thai that zeit held vanslayn
Pressit thame to the se agane.
And scottis men, that chassit swa,
Slew all that thai mycht our-ta.
Bot thai that fle[3zeit], nocht-for-thi,
Swa till thar schippis can thame hy,
And in sum bargis sa feill can ga,
For thair fais thame chasit swa,

616. veill] wele. lichtily] hastely
H.
617. Se that] Gif they see H.
620. sail] soyn sail C; but EH omit soyn. See 1. 619.
625. forrouth] fordward H.
628. Of—feld] Feld off the speris E; Felt of their speares H.
630. thar] the.
631. com chassand] thaim chassyt E them chased H.

The bishop and his men set on the English, [Fol. 126 b. C.]

who retreat to their ships.

Many English are slain;

but some get away.
One Englishman did a great feat;

he seized a Scotchman who was handling him hotly,

threw him over his back, carried him off, and threw him into a boat.

That thai ourtummyllit, and the men That war thar-in all drownit then.

Thar did ane ynglið man, perfay, A weill gret strynth, as I herd say.

For quhen he chassit wes to the bat, A scottis man, that hym handlyt hat,

He hynt [than] by the armys twa; [And], war him weill or war him wa,

He evin apon his bak hym flang, And with hym till the bat can gang,

And kest him in, all magre his. This wes ane weill gret strynth, Iwifð.

The ynglið men, that wan away, Till thair schippes in hy vent thai,

And salit hayme, angry and wa That thai had beyn reboytit swa.

How gude king robert the bruce com hame agane fra Irland.

Nearly 500 men were killed, besides those who were drowned.

when that the schipmen on this við

Wes discumfit, as I deuifð, The Bischoop, that so weill hym bare

That he all hertit that wes thar, Wes zeit in-to the fechting-sted,

Qhar that v hundreth neir wes ded, Forouten thame that drownyt war.

And, quhen the feld wes spulzeit bare,
Thai went all hayme to thar repare.
To the bischop is fallen faire,
That throu his priʃ and his bounte
Haʃ eschevit sa gret Iournee;
The kyng tharfor, ay fra that day,
Hym luʃit, honorit, and prisit ay,
And held hym in-to sic daynte,
That 'his awne Bischop' him callit he.
Thus thai defendit the Cunte
Apon bath halves the scottis Se,
Qhill that the king wes out of land,
That than, as I haue borne on hand,
Throu all Irland his courʃ had maid,
And agane to Cragfergus raid.
And quhen his brothir, as he var king,
Had all erischry at his bidding,
And halely vlcister alsua,
He buskit hame his way to ta.
Of his men that war mast hardy
And prisit of all cheuelry
With his brothir gret part left he,
And syne he went on to the se.
Qhuen thair levis on athir party
Wes tane, he went to schip in hy.
The Erll thomas with him he had;
Thai rasit salys but abaid,
And in the land of gallowa,
Forouten perell, arivit thai.

668. is] it H.
670. Hass—gret] Wes eschewyt swilk a E; Encheued sik a great H.
672. honorit—prisit] and prisit and honoryt E; and praised and
honoured H.
673. into sic] in suylk.
676. the] of the H.
677. land] the land H.
678. I] Ik.
681. var] war.
682. erischry—his] the Irshery at

E; the Irshery at H.
683. halely] haly. vlcister] vlsister E; Vlsister H; Ulster A.
684. ta] ga H.
686. of all] mast of E; als of H.
688. he—to] is went him to E; is went vnto H.
690. vent] went. to] to the.
693. the] E om.
694. Forouten] For-owt E; Without H.
The Scottish lords gladly welcome king Robert on his return.

(Book XVII.)

The vynnyng of the toun of berwik be the scottis men throu the menys of sym of spaldyn.

The lordis of the land wes fayñe
Quhen thai wist he wes cummnyn agane,
And till him went in full gret hy;
And he resauit thame richt gladly,
And maid a fest and gladsum cher.
And thai so wondirly blith wer
Of his come, that na toung mycht say;
Gret fest and fair till him maid thai.
Quhar-euir he raid, all the Cuntre
Gaderit in daynte hym to se.
Gret gladschip than wes in the land;
All than wes wonnyne till his hand.
Fra redis swyr till orkynnay
Wes nocht of scotland fra his say,
Outaken berwik it allañe.
That tyme thar-in wonnyt añe,
That capitane wes of the touñe.
All scottis men in suspicioune
He held, and tretit thame richt Ill.
He had ay at thame hevy will,
And had thame fast at vndir ay.

1. wes] war EH.
4. richt gladly] hamlyly E; tenderly H.
5. a] thaim EH.
6. And then sa wonder blyth they were H.
7. toung] man. come—toung] comming, as man H.
8. and—him] to him for-thy H.
11. gladschip] gladnesse H.
13. redis swyr] the red swyr E; the red Swyre H. till orkynnay] to orknay E; vnto Orknay H.
20. at] to EH. hevy] right ill H.
21. fast] all H.
Qhill that it fell, apon a day,  
That a burgeò, sym of spaldyng,  
Thocht it wes richt ane angry thing  
Ay swagat till reboytit he;  
Tharfor in-till his hert thought he,  
That he vald slely mak cowynë  
With the marshall, quhais cowynë  
He had weddit on-till his viff;  
And as he thought, he did beliff.  
Letteris till him he send in hy  
With a trast man all preualy,  
And set hym tym to cum at nycht  
With ledderis and gud men & vicht  
Till the kow-jet all preuelj,  
And bad him hald his trast treuly;  
And he suld meit thame at the vall;  
For his vach that nycht suld fall.  
Quhen the marshall the letteris saw,  
He vmbethought him than a throw;  
For he vist, by him-selvin he  
Micht nocht of mycht na power be  
For till eschewe so gret a thing;  
And gif he tuk till his helping,  
Ane or othir suld wraithit be.  
Tharfor richt till the king 3eid he,  
And schawit him betuix thai twa  
The lettir, and the charge alsua.

24. *it*] that It EH. *ane*] EH om.  
*angry*] heanie H.  
25. *Ay swagat*] Swagate ay E; On  
sik sort H. *till*] to EH. *reboytit*]  
rebutyt E; rebuted H.  
27. *vald*] wald. *cowynë*] cowynë  
E; conuyne H.  
29. *on-till*] till E; to H.  
33. *af*] A E; ane H.  
34. *gud—vicht*] with gud men  
wiacht.  
38. *vach*] walk E; watch H. *his*  
—*nycht*] on that night his watch H.  
39. *letteris*] lettre E; letters H.  
41. *he*] that he C; but E omits  
that. *vist*] wist. *him-selvin*] him-  
selfe that H.  
42. *na*] no E; nor H.  
43. *escheve*] escheyff E; encheue  
H.  
45. One, another sould wraithed  
be H; E *has*—Ane othyr lettir suld  
writtyn be (!)  
46. *till*] to EH.  
47. *him*] It him.
The king tells him he has done well.

"I bid thee keep to the agreement.

I will send Murray and Douglas after thee."

The marshal, with some men of Lothian, keeps his tryst.

Quhen [that] the king herd that this trañe
Wes spokyn in-to sic Certane,
That him thoughth thar-in [na] fantyf,
He said him, "certis, thou vroucht hað víð,
That thou discouerit first till me;
For gif thou had discouerit [thee]
Till my nevo, the Erll thomas,
Thou suld disple蜚 the lord douglaf;
And him alsua in the Contrer.
Bot I sall wirk on sic maner,
That thou at thine entent sall be,
And haue of nane of thame magre.
Thou sall tak kep weil to thi day,
And with thame that thou purches may
At ewin thou sall enbuschit be
In dwnis park; bot be prewe.
And I sall ger the Erll thomas,
And the lord alsua of dowglaf;
Athir with añe quheyñe of men,
Be thair till do as thou sall ken."
The marshall than, but mair delay,
Tuk leif, and held on furth his vay,
And held the spek preue and still,
Quhill the day that wes set him till.
Than of the best of lowdyañe
He with him till his trist hað tane;
For schirreff thar-of than wes he.
Till dwus park with his menze
He com at evyn, all preuely.
And syne, with a gude Cumpany,
Soyne eftir come the Erll thomas,
That wes met with the lord dowglaf;
A richt fair Cumpany thai war,
Quhen thai war met to-giddir thar.
And quhen the marschall the cowyne
Till bath the lordis lyne be lyne
Had tald, thai went on furth thar vay;
Fer fra the toune thar horf left thai.
Till mak it schort, swa thai vroucht than
That, but seying of ony man,
Outane sym of spaldyne allane,
That gert the deid be vndirtane,
Thai set thair leddevis to the wall;
And, but persaving, com vp all;
And held thame in ane nwke preue,
Qhill at the nycht suld passit be.
And ordanit, that the mast party
Of [thair] men suld gang sarraly
With thar lordis, and hald a staill,
And the remanand suld all haill
Scaill throu the toun, and tak and sla
The men that thai mycht our-ta.
Bot soyn thar ordinans brak thai;
For, als soyn as it dawit day,
The twa part of thair men and ma,

76. 
77. 
80. 
84. 
88. 
92. 
96. 
99. 
100. 
103. 

Murray and Douglas follow him.
The marshal tells them of the plot.
They all come unseen to the town-wall,
climb over it,
and hide within the town.

76. dwus] duns E; Dunce H.
77. all] full H; E om.
83. cowyne] cowyn E; conuyne H.
84. Till] To EH; and in 1. 87.
85. on furth] furth on EH. vay] way.
87. thai vroucht] vroucht thai EH.
90. the] that.
92. vp] wp E; in H.
93. ane nwke] A nuk.
94. at] that EH.
96. [thair EH] thai C. sarraly] sikkerly H.
97. staill] so H; stale E.
100. The] All the CH; but E omits All.
101. thar] this E; his H.
102. dawit] dawen was H.
103. part] partis.
they rush from their hiding-place, and slay many.

The Englishmen rally.

The Scotch put the English to flight.

Some escape.

Those that are in the castle,

All scalit, throu the toune to-ga.
So gredy war thai till the gude,
That thai ran richt als thai var woude,
And sesit housis and slew men;
And thai, that saw thair fais then
Cum apou thame so suddanly,
Throu-out the toun thai rasit the cry,
And schot to-gidder heir and thair.

And ay, as thai assemblit war,
Thai vald abyde and mak debat.
Had thai beyn warnyt, weill I wat,
Thai suld haf said thair dedis der;
For thai war gud men, and thai wer
Fer ma than thai war at thame soucht;
Bot thai war scalit sa at thai moucht
On na maner assemblit be.

Thar wes gret melleis twa or thre;
Bot scottis men so weill thame bar,
That thair fais ay ruschit war,
And cumrayit at the last war swa,
That thai haly the bak can ta.

Sum gat the castell, bot nocht all,
And sum ar slyddin our the wall,
And sum war in-to handis tane,
And sum war in the bargane slane.

On this vi6 thame contenit thai,
Quhill it wes neir noyne of the day;

Than thai that in the castell war,
And othir that fled to thame thar,
That war a richt gret Cumpany,
Quhan thai the baner saw sympilly
Swa standand, stuffit with sa quhoyn,
Thar zettis haf thai opnyt soyn,
And yschit on thame hardely.

Than Erll thomas, that wes worthy,
And als the gude lord of douglas,
With the few folk that vith thame was,
Met thame stoutly with vapnys seir.
Thar men mycht se, that had beyn neir,
Men abaudounë thame hardely.
The ynglië men faucht cruelly,
And with all mychtis can thame payne
Till rusche the scottis men agane.
I trow thai had swa doïe, perfay,
For thai war fewar fer than thai,
Gif it ne had beyn åñe new maid knycht,
That till his name schir vilëhame hicht
Of keth, and of the gawlistouñe
He hecht, throu differens of sur-nouñe,
That bair hym sa [rycht] weill that day,
And put him till sa hard assay,
And sic dyntis about him dang,
That, qhar he saw the thikast thrang,
He prikit with sa mekill mycht,
And sua enforsaly can ficht,
That he maid till his menȝhe vay ;

134. baner] baneris E ; Baners H.
saw] sa H. sympilly] simpilly H ;
simply E.
136. opnyt] apnyt.
139. als] follows lord in EH.
143. thame] E om.
145. can] gan.
146. Till] To EH.
149. Gif—had] Had it not H.

being numerous,


Sir William of Keith and Gaulistoun performs wonders.

There is hard fighting.
At last the English give way, and escape to the castle.

Thus was the town taken.

Much spoil is found in it.

The king advances to Berwick.

[160. [And] E] th[ai] thai that neir war by hym ay Dang on their fais sa hardely, That thai haf tane the bak haly, And till the castell held their vay, And at gre[t myscheiff] enterit thai. For thai war pressit their so fast, That thai feill lesit of the last; Bot thai that enterit, nocht-for-thi, Sparit their zettis hastely, And in hy to the wallis ran, For thai war nocht all se[kir] than.

Thus was the town takyn on this við, With gre[t vorschipe] and hye emprisť; And all the gud that thai thar fand Was sesit smertly in-till hand. Wittaill thai fand in gre[t fusione], And all that fell till stuff of touñe; Thai kept[th] that fra distroying, And syne ha[ñ] vord send to the king. And he wes of that tithing blith, And sped him thiddirward full swith. And as he throu the Cunte raid, Men gaderit till him, quhill he had A me[kill] rout of worthy men. And the folk that war wonand then In-till the merẽ and tevidaill, And in the forest alõ all hail,

163. [thair vay'] the way.  166. feill lesit'] left mony H.
168. Sparit'] Closed H.
171. Rubric in H—Here sent they word to the King, That came to the Castell yeelding. viss] wiss.
172. With] Throu E; Through H. empriss] emprise H; priss E.
173. thai] E om.  174. smertly intill] hailly in their H.
175. fusione] foysoun.
176. till] to. fell—of] serued to stuffe a H.
177. Thai—that'] That kep[th] thai EH.
178. vord] word.
180. full] E om.
And the Est end of lowdiane,
Befor [that] the king com, ar gañe
To berwik with a stalward hand,
That nane that wes that tyme wonand
On 3ond half tweid durst weill apeir.
And thai that in the castell weir,
Quhen thai thair fairs in sic plente
Saw forrouth thame assemblit be,
And had na hope of reskewyng,
Thai war abasit in gret thing.
Bot thai the castell, nocht-for-thi,
Held thai fīf dayis sturdely,
Syne 3ald it on the sext day,
And till thair Cunte syne vent thai.
Thus wes the castell and the toune
Till scottis men possessioun
Brought; and soyn eftir the king
Com ridand with his gadering
Till berwik, and in the casteill
He herbyrit is, bath fair and weil,
And all his gret lordis hym by.
The remanand all comonly
Till herbyr in the toune ar gañe.
The king haś than till Consell tāñe,
That he vald nocht brek douñe the vall,
Bot castell, and the toune with-all,
Stuff weill with men and vith vittaill
And alkynd othir apparaill

187. And] And in C; but EH omit in. lothiane.
188. [that EH] C om. ar] and ar C; but EH omit and.
189. a] sa.
191. half] side H.
194. forrouth] before H.
198. that] so CE; H om. sturdely] right sturdely H.
199. 3ald] 3auld.
200. vent] went.

188 Many other Scotchmen advance against the town.

189 He determines not to destroy the walls.

201 Rubric in H—Here Walter Stewart took of the King Baith Town and Castell in keeping.
205. Till] to EH.
206. herbyrit is] wes herbrid EH.
207. gret] E om.
208. all comonly] commonaly.
209. in] till.
210. till] to EH.
211. vald] wald.
214. alkynd] alkyyn.
but to garrison the castle.

Walter, steward of Scotland,

the king's son-in-law,

undertakes to guard Berwick.

Bruce sends men on a foray into England.

He garrisons the town, and victuals it for a year.

Besides archers, townsmen, and crossbow-men,

Walter has 500 men with him.

also John Crab,

That mycht availl, or 3eit mysteir
Till hald castell or toune of wer.

And valter, steward of scotland,
That than ves 30ung and avenand,

And sone-in-law wes to the king,

Had sa gret will and sic 3arnyng

Neirhand the marchis for till be,

At berwik to 3emsall tuk he;

And resauit of the kyng the toune,

Lath the castell and [the] dwengeoune.

The king gert men of gret nobillay
Ryde in-till ynglande, for till pray,

That brought out gret plente of fee;

And sum cunteis trewit he

[For] vittale, [that in] gret foysoune

He gert bring smertly to the toune,

Swa that bath toune and castell war

Weill stuffit for ane 3eir and mair.

The gude steward of scotland then
Send for his frendis and his men,

Qhill he had with him, but archeris,

But burgeO and but oblesteris,

Fiff hundreth men wicht and worthy,

That armys bar of Ancistry.

Iohne 'crab, a flemyne, als had he
That wes of gret subtilite, 240 a Flemish engineer.
Till ordane till mak aparale
For till defend and till assale
Castell of wer or than Cite,
That nane sler mycht fundin be.
He gert engynis and trammys ma,
And purvait gret fyre alsua;
Spryngaldis and schotis on seir maneris,
That till defend castell afferis,
He purvait in-till full gret wañe,
Bot gynis for crakkis had he nane.
For in scotland zeit than, but wene,
The oyf of thame had nocht beyn sene.
And quhen the toune apon this viô
Wes stuffit, as I heir deuif,
The nobill king his vay haô tañe,
And ryddin toward lowdiane;
And valter steward, that ves stout,
He left in berwik with his rout,
And ordanit fast for Apparaill,
Till defend gif men vald assaill.

Q when till the king of Ingland
Wes tald how that, with stalward hand,
Berwik wes tane, and stuffit syne

240. *gret subtilite*] sa gret sultele
250. *gynis*] gynnys E; gunnes H.
241. *till* (2)] and E; and to H.
251. *wene* EH] weyne C.
245. *trammys*] trammys or crammys
252. *oyss*] wss E; vse H. *sene*
C; cranys or tranys E; Traines H.
(*The word is uncertain.*)
246. *gret*] so CE; great H. *Per-
haps it should be grek (Greek);
234. *I*] Ik.
which might have been written grek,
255. *ray*] way.
and read as gret.
256. *lowdiane*] lowthiane.
247. *Spryngaldis*] Fire-galdes H.
257. *valter*] waltir.
248. *till*] to EH.
258. *in*] at.
249. *vane* EH] badly spelt vayne
260. *Till* To EH. *vald*] wald.
C.
261. Rubric in H—The King of
England his power Gaddered to siege
Barvike but weere. *till*] to EH.
KING EDWARD RESOLVES TO ATTACK BERWICK. [BOOK XVII.

With men and vittale and armyne,
He was anoyit gretumly,
And gert assembill hastyly
His console, and ha$ tane to rede

That he his host wald thiddir leid;
And, with all mycht that he mycht get,
To the toune aie assege set,

And [ger] dik thame so stalwardly,
That, quhill thame likit thair to ly,
Thai suld fer out the trastar be.

And gif the men of the Cuntre
With strynth of men vald thame assale
At thair dykis in-to Battale,

Thai suld avantage haue gretly;
And thought all suth, for gret folly
War till assaill in-to fechting
At his dikis so stark a thing.

Quhen his consell on this maneir
Wes ta$e, he gert bath fer and neir
His host haly assemblit be;
A gret folk than with him had he.

Of ta[n]cister the Erll thomaf,
That syne wes sanctit, as men sais,
In-till his Cumpany wes thair,

And all the Erllis als that war
In yngland worthy for to ficht,

264. vittale—armyne] wictaill of armyn E; armour and vittaile fyne H.

265. anoyit] anoyit richt C; but EH omit richt.

266. assembill] be summound H. hastily] all haley.

268. wald] so CH; will E.

270. So E; C has he set for set (wrongly); H has—Vnto the toun.

271. [ger] such must be the reading; gert CE; gart H (all wrong).

273. trastar] traister E; surer H.

275. men] folke H.

278. And—suth] Thocht all scot-tis E; Although forsooth H. for] it H.

281. his] this.

283. host] est E; men H.


285. longcastell EH miswritten lacister C.

286. sanctit] sanct E.

287. In-till] In.

288. als that] that als.
And baronis als of mekill mycht
With him to that assege had he;
And gert the schippes by the se
Bring schot and othir apparale,
With gret varnysing of vittale.
To berwik with all this menye,
With his vittalis arayit, come he;
And till gret lordis, ilkane syndri,
Ordanit añe felde for thar herbry.
Than men mycht se soyne palþeonis
Be stentit on syndry fassownys,
So feill, that thai a toune maid their
Mair than bath toune and castell war.
On othir half syne, on the se,
The schippis com in sic plente,
Vith vittale, armyng, and vith men,
That all the havyn wes stoppit then.
And quhen thai that war in the toune
Saw their fais in sic foysoune
By land and se cum sturdely,
Thai, as wicht men and richt worthy,
Schupe thame for till defend thar stede,
That thai in auentur of dede
Suld put thame, or than rusche agañe
Thar fais; for thair capitane
Tretit thame sa lusumly,
And thar-with-all the mast party
Of thame that armyt with hym wer.
War of his blude, and sib men ner;

and barons.

292 Several ships sail thither at the same time.
296 So many tents are pitched round Berwick, that they form a town.
300 Berwick, that they form a town.
304 The ships arrive.
308 The Scotch prepare for defence.
312 They are fond of their captain.
316 [Fol. 57 b. E.]

BRUCE.
Or ellis thai war his allye.  
Of sic confort men mycht thaim se,  
And of sa richt fair contenyng,  
As nane of thame had abasing.  
On dayis arayit weill war thai,  
And on the nycht weill wachit ay.  
Weill sex dais thai swa abaid,  
That thai na full gret bargane maid.  

How valter steward ves assal\^eit in berwik be the kyng of Ingland.

\[ \text{In-till this tym that I tell here,} \]
\[ \text{That thai withouten bargane wer,} \]
\[ \text{The Inglis\-men sa closit had} \]
\[ \text{Thar host with dikis at thai maid,} \]
\[ \text{That thai war srynthit gretumly.} \]
\[ \text{Syne with all handis besaly} \]
\[ \text{Thai schupe thame with thar apparałe} \]
\[ \text{Thame of the toune for till assale.} \]
\[ \text{And on our ladeis evin mary,} \]
\[ \text{That bare the byrth that all can by,} \]
\[ \text{That men callis hir natuïte,} \]
\[ \text{Soyn in the mornyg men mycht se} \]
\[ \text{The yngli\- host Arme thame in hy} \]
\[ \text{And display baneris sturdely,} \]
\[ \text{And assemuyll till thar baneris} \]
\[ \text{With Instrumentis on seir maneris,} \]

319. *thai* E om. *his allye* his elye E; of his ally H.  
320. *confort* comfort EH.  
323. *arayit* armyt E; armed H.  
324. *wachit* walkyt E; watched H.  
325. *thai swa* sua thai.  
326. *thai* E om. *maid* haid E; had H.  
327. *Rubric from C.* H has—  

How Englishmen dyked them about,  
And syne went to the Siege but dout.  
330. *at* that EH.  
335. *on* of. *ladeis evin* ladys ewyn E; Ladies Euen H.  
336. *can* gan.  
340. *display* displayit.  
341. *till* to EH; and in ll. 352, 360.  
342. *on* of.
As scaffatis, ledderis, and coueryngis;
Pykis, howis, and ek staff-slyngis;
Till ilk lord and his battale
Wes ordanit quhar he suld assale.
And thai within, quhen that thai saw
[That] men3e raynge thame swa on raw,
Till thar wardis thai went in hy,
That war stuffit richt stalwardly
With stanys, schot, and othir thing,
That nedit till thair defending;
And in-to sic maner abaid
Thair fais that till assayl thame maid.
Quhen thai without war all redy,
Thai trumpit till âne sawt in hy;
And ilk man with his apparaile,
Quhar he suld be, vent till assale.
Till Ilk kyrnelle that wes thair
Archeris till schute assignit war.
And quhen on this vi6 thai war bouâe,
Thai went in hy toward the touâe,
And fillit dykis richt hastely.
Syne to the wallis hardely
Thai went with ledderis that thai had;
Bot thai so gret defens ha3f maid,
That war abovin apon the wall,
That [oft] ledderis and men with-all
Thai gert fall flatlynges to the grounde.
Than men mycht se in litill stound.

343. scaffatis] scaffaldis E ; Scaffolds H. coueryngis] couering E ; Couerings H.
344. ek staff-slyngis] with staff-slyng.
351. schot] & schot.
354. till—thame] to them sailyie 
and advance with all their apparatus of siege.
The Scotch assemble at their posts.
[fol. 131 b. C.]
356. Trumpets sound to the assault.
360. Archers are sent forward.
364. The assailants try to plant their ladders,
368. which are thrown down.
356. till—sawt] till A salt E ; to the assault H.
358. vont] went EH.
363. richt] E om.
364. wallis] wall rycht.
366. defens hass] defend that.
368. [oft E] baith H ; miswritten of C.
370. in] in a.
Men assailzand richt [hardely],
Dressand vp ledderis doughtely,
And sum on ledderis pressand war.
Bot thai that on the wall ves thar
Till all perellis can abandoune
Thame, till thair fais war doungyn doune.

At gret myschef defendit thai
Thair toune; for, gif we suth sall say,
The vallis of the toune than wer
Sa law, that a man with a sper
Micht strik añe othir [vp in] the face.
And the schot als so thik thar was
That it wes wonder for till se.

Walter steward, with a menȝe,
Raid ay about, for to se quhar
That for till help mast myster war;
And quhar men pressit mast, he maid
Suceoure till his that myster had.
The mekill folk that wes without
Had enveronyt the toune about
Swa that na part of it wes fre.
[Thar] mycht men assailȝeouris se
Abandoune thame richt hardely;
And the defendouris doughtely
Vith all thar mychtis can thame payn̄e

Till put thair fais forȝ againe.
On this viȝ thame contentit thai

371. richt] E om. [hardely EH] hardy C.
372. Dressand] Preassing H.
373—376. H has two differing lines here—And them abone defending well, Tumbling them downe to their vnseill.
374. ves] war.
375. can] gan.
376. doungyn] dongyn.
377. At — myschef] With great annoy H.
381. [vp in H] wp in E ; in-to C ; see 1. 731.
383. ves] war.
386. till] to EH.
388. till his] to them H.
389. mekill] mony H.
392. [Thar] E Their H ; That C. assaultȝeouris] the assailiars.
393. can] gan.
396. force] force H ; with force E.
397. viss] wiss.
APPRAOCH OF AN ENGLISH SHIP.

Qhill noyne wes passit of the day;
Than thai that in the schippes war
Ordanit a schip with full gret far
Till cum with all hir Apparale
Richt to the vall, for till assale.

[Till myd-mast wp thair bat thai drew,]

With Armyt men tharin enew;
A brig thai had, for till lat fall
Richt fra the bat apon the vall.
With bargis by hir can thai row,
And pressit thame full fast to tow
Hir by the brighous to the wall;
On that entent thai set thame all.

Thai broucht hir qhill scho com veill neir;
Than mycht men se on seir maner
Sum men defend, and sum assale
Full besaly with gret trawale.
Thai of the toune so weill thame bare,
That the schipmen sa handillit war
That thai the schip on na maner
Micht ger cum till the vall so neir
That thair fall-brig mycht reik thar-till.

So lang abaid thai fechtand still
Qhill that scho ebbit on the ground;
Than mycht men, in a litill stound,
Se thame be fer of war cowyne

398. noyne] none E; Noone H.
400. with] with EH.
401. Till] To EH.
403. And in that schip thai maid
   gret glew C; Till myd mast wp thair
   bat thai drew E; To the mid Mast
   their bate they drew H.
407. can] gan. hir—row] they
can her tow H.
408. thame—row] her right fast to
   row H. full] ryczth EH.
409. Hir by] Beside H.
411. veill] well.
The tide ebbs, and the ship is left aground.

Than thai war eir, that war hir In.

And quhen the se wes ebbit sa,

That men all dry till hir mycht ga,

Out of the toune yschit in hy

Till hir a weill gret Cumpany,

And fyre till hir has kendlyt soyne.

The ship is burnt.

In-till schort tyme swa haf thai done,

That thai in fyre has gert hir [bryn],

And sum war slayn that var hir In;

And sum fled and avay ar gane.

The Scotch capture a clever engineer,

Ane engynour thair haf thai taîne,

That sleast wes of that mister

That men vist, outhir fer or ner;

In-to the toune synce enterit thair.

And retreat into the town,

It fell thame happily, perfay,

That thai gat in so hastely;

For thair come a gret Cumpany

In full gret hy vp by the Se,

Quhen thai the schip saw byrmand be.

Bot or thai com, the tothir var past,

The ȝbet thai barrit and closit fast.

There is harte fighting.

The folk assal3eit fast that day,

And thai within defendit ay

On sic a vi[s], that thai that var

With gret enfor[s] assal3eand thair

Micht do thair will on na maner.

And quhen that evynsang-tym ves neir,

The folk without, that war wery,

And sum woundit full Cruelly,

424. eir] er E; euer H.
426. till—mycht] mycht till yr.
429. till] in H.
430. In-till] In-to EH.
431. thai—has] into fire they H.
[bryn E] byrne C; birne H; see ll.
457, 467.
432. sum war] mony H.
435. sleast wes] wes sleast EH.
438. perfay] that day H.
442. byrmand] brynmand E; burn-
ing H. be] hie H.
444. ȝbet—closit] ȝat and barryt It
rycht.
447. a vis[s] a wise H; awiss E.
448. gret enfor[s] sik a force H.
Saw thame within defend thaim swa,
And saw it wes nocht eyth till ta
The toune, with sic defens wes maid
[By thaim] that it in stering had.
The host saw that thar schip wes brynt,
And of thame that thar-in war tynt,
And thar folk woundit and very;
[Thai] gert blaw the retret in hy.
Fra the schipmen reboytit war,
Thai let the tothir assale no mar.
For throu the schip thai wend ilkañe
That thai the toune weill suld haf tañe.
Men sais that ma schippis than swa
Pressit that tyme the toune till ta;
Bot for that thar ves brynt bot añe,
And the gynour tharin wes tañe,
Now heir tharfor mencione maid I
Bot of a schip all anerly.

When thai had blawen the ratret,
Thai folk, that tholit had panys gret,
Withdrew thame haly fra the wall;
The assalt haf thai levit all.
And thai within, that very war,
And mony of thame voundit sar,
War blith and glad quhen at thai saw

454. till] to.
455. with] qhill E; while H.
456. [By thaim] By them H; And thai CE. H has—By them that with-
in the steering had; E has—And thai that in-till faring had (which makes
little sense).
457. wes] was H; war E. H has—
And of their men in hy were tynt.
459. very] very.
460. [Thai E] They H; The C.
461. reboytit] reboyt E; rebuted H.
466. till] to EH.

456. The English see their ship is burnt,
460 and retreat.
464 Some say more ships than one approached the town.
472 I mention but one.
476 The besieged are glad to see their foes retreat,
Thair fais swagat thame withdraw.
And, fra thai wist suthly that thai
Held to thair palseonys thair vay,
And esyt thame that very war.
And othir, that war woundit sar,
Had lechis gude forsuth, I hicht,
That helpit thame as thai best mycht.

On athir syde wery war thai;
That nycht thai did no mair, perfay.
Fiff days is thar-eftir thai war still,
That nane till othir did mekill Il.
Now leiff we thir folk heir liand
All still, as I haf borne on hand,
And turn the court of our carpyng
Till Schir Robert the douchty king,
That assemblit bath fer and neir
Ane host, that, quhen he vist but weir
That the king swa of Ingland
Had assegit with stalward hand
Berwik, quhar valter steward wais,
Till purpoze with his men he tais,
That he vald nocht sa soyne assale
The kyng of Ingland with battale,
And at his dykis speyaly,
For it mycht weill turn to foly.

Tharfor he ordanit lordis twa,
The Earl of Murreff was one of thae,
The tothir was the lord Dowglaf,
With xvi thousand men to pa\textsuperscript{6}
In Ingland, for till burn [and] sla,
And swa gret ryot thair till ma,
That thae thae lay seyand the tou\-\(\text{n}\),
Quhen thae herd the distructiou\-\(\text{n}\),
That thae suld in-till Ingland ma,
Suld be sa dredand and sa wa
For thair child\(\text{r}\) and [for thair] wiff\(\text{s}\),
That thae suld driend suld leift thair lif\(\text{f}\)\(\text{s}\),
And thair gudis alsua, that thae
Suld driend [than] suld be had away,
That thae suld leift the sey in hy.
And wend to reskew hastely
Thair gude, thair fren\(\text{d}\)is, and thair land.
Tharfor, as I haf borne on hand,
[Thir] lordis send he furth in hy;
And thair thair way tuk hastely,
And in Ingland gert byrn and sla,
And wroucht tharin so mek\(\text{k}\) wa
As thae forrayit the Cuntre,
That it wes pite for to se
Till thame that vald It ony gude,
For thae distroyit all as thae jude.
So lang thae raid distroyande swa,
As thae tranersit to and fra,

\textit{but sends Murray and Douglas to ravage England,}

\textit{in the hope that the English may take alarm,}

\textit{and raise the siege.}

\textit{[Fol. 133\(\text{b}\). C.]

\textit{They advance into England,}

\textit{[Fol. 58\(\text{b}\). E.]

\textit{and lay waste the country,}

\textit{doing great damage.}

\textit{508. murreff\(\text{[}\)} Murray H.
509. lord\(\text{[}\) lord of.
500. till\(\text{[}\) to EH. burn\(\text{[}\) bryn.
[and EH\(\text{[}\) to C; see l. 525.
510. till\(\text{[}\) to EH.
511. seyande\(\text{[}\) seyand E; sieging II.

512. herd\(\text{[}\) hear H.
515. [for thair EH\(\text{[}\) eke C.
516. suld leiss\(\text{[}\) to lese E; to losse II.

518. than E\(\text{[}\) that C; they H.
519. That\(\text{[}\) And H; E om. the\] thair.
520. hasty\(\text{[}\) thaim hasty\(\text{[}\) C; but EH omits thaim.
522. H\(\text{[}\) Ik.
523. Thir EH\(\text{[}\) The C.
524. way tuk\(\text{[}\) wayes held H.
525. byrn\(\text{[}\) bryn E; burne H.
526. wroucht\(\text{[}\) wroucht.
527. forrayit\(\text{[}\) fure through H.
529. vald\(\text{[}\) wald EH.
532. As\(\text{[}\) That H. to\(\text{[}\) oft to H.
They advance to Ripon; then to Boroughbridge and Mitton.

The Yorkshire men assemble in great numbers and of all trades, till at last they number 20,000 men.

The Archbishop of York commands them.

They attack the Scotch, on the way to Mitton.

The Scotch are divided into two hosts.

That they ar cummyne till repoune, [And] distroyit haly the toune.

At burrow-brig syne thar herbry
Thai tuk, and at mytoun thar-by;
And quhen the men of that Cuntr
Saw thar land sa distroyit be,
Thai gaderit, in-till full gret by,
Archeris, burgeð, with 3hemenry,
Prestis, clerkis, monkis, and freris,
Husbandis, and men of all mysteris,
Quhill at thai sammyn assemmyllit var
Weill twenty thousand men and mair.

Richt gud armyngh euench thai had,
The archbishop of york thai maid
Thair Capitane; and to Consale
Hað tane, that thai in playn battale
Wald assale the scottis men,
That fer fewar than thai war then.

Than he displayit his baneir,
And othir bishoppes that thar ver
Gert display Baneris alsua.

All in a rout furth can thai ga
Toward mytoune the reddy vay;
And quhen that scottis men herd say
That thai war till thame cumand neir,
Thai buskit thame on thar best maneir,
And delit thame in-till battellis twa.

533. That] Sa that H. till] to
EH. repoune] repoune EH.
534. [And EH] That thai C. the] that EH.
535. burrow-brig] borowbrig E; Borrow-brig H. herbery] so E; herbery C; harbery H; see ll. 209, 298.
536. mytoun] Midtoun H.
539. in-till] in-to EH.
540. with] and EH.
541. monkis and] Abbots H.
542. mysteris] maneris.
543. at] that. Quhill—samyn]
Dowglað the vaward he can ma; 560
The reirward maid the erll thomas,
For chiftane of the host he was.
And, sua ordanit in gude aray,
Toward thair fais thai held thair vay. 564
Quhen athir had of othir sicht,
Thai pressit on bath halfis to ficht.
The Inglij men com on sadly
With gud contenam[ó] and hardly,
Richt in a front wth a Baner,
Quhill thai thair fayis com so neir
Th[.t] thai thar visage veill mycht se;
Thre sper-lynth, I trow [weill] mycht be
Betuix thame, quhen sic abasing
Tuk thame, but mar, in-to a swyng,
Thai gaf the bak all, and to-ga.
Quhen scottis men hað seyn thame swa 576
Affrayitly fle all thar [way],
In gret hy apon thame schot thai,
And slew and tuk a gret party.
The laiff fled full effrayitly
As thair best mycht, to seik varrand.
Thai war chassit so neir at hand,
That weill ane thousand deit thar;
And of [thaim] zeit thre hundreth war
Prestis, that deit in-to that chað.

560. *vaward—can] awaward gan E; the Vangard can H.*
561. *the] EH om.*
565. *athir] that they H.*
566. *halfis to] half to the E; the halfes to H.*
567. *on] ryczEH.*
569. *front] so CH; frusch E.*
570. *thair] that H; E om.*
571. *veill] well H; E om.*
574. *but—into] that but mar in E.*
575. *gaf] tooke H. all and] and all H.*
576. *hass] had.*
577. *[ray EH] avay C.*
578. *schot] set H.*
582. *war] E om.*
583. *weill ane] well a H; ner A E.*
584. *And] E om. [thaim E] thai C; tha H.*
585. *into] in EH. chass] place H.*
Tharfor that bargane callit wað
The chaphtour of mytouñe' ; for thare
Slayn sa mony prestis ware.

Q when thir folk thus discumfit was,
And scottis men had left the chað,
Thai went thame furthwarde in the land
Slayand, distroyand, and byrnand.

And thai [that] at the sege lay,
Or it wes passit the fift day,
Had maid thame syndry apparele
To gang eftsonis till assale.

Of gret gestis añe sow thai maid,
That stalward heling owth it had,
With armyt men enew thar-in,
And Instrumentis als for to myne.

Syndry scaffatis thai maid vith-all
That war weill hyar than the wall,
And ordanit als that by the se
The tonne suld weill assalȝeit be.

And thai within, that saw thame swa
So gret apparale schap till ma,
Throu [crabbis] console, that ves sle,
Añe cren thai haf gert dref vp hey
Rynand on quhelas, that thai mycht bring

587. chaphtour'] chapur E ; Chapter
H.  mytouñe] Midtoun H.
589.  Rubric in H—The other as-
sault of Barvike, That was right sharpe
to Scots kinrike,  thir'] that thir H ;
this E.  thus] H om.
591.  forthwarde'] forthward E ;
fordward H.
592.  distroyand — byrnand] de-
stroying and burnand H ; swa and
destroyand E.
593.  [that EH] C om.  sege] sege
E ; Siege H.
594.  Or] Ere H.
597.  aœ] A.

598.  owth it] outwith II ; abowyn
It E.
599.  enew] Inew E ; anew II.
600.  als] EH om.
601.  scaffatis] scaffaldis E ; Scaf-
folds H.
602.  weill] far H.
604.  weill assalȝeit] right well
sailyed H.
605.  And] E om.
606.  sechp till] to them H.
607.  [crabbis] miswritten craggis
C ; crabys E ; Crabbes H.
608.  Ane cren] A cranen EH.  hey]
so E ; hie II ; hye C.
It quhar neid war of mast helping.
And pik and ter als haf thai tane,
And lynt [and] hardið with brynstañe,
And dry treis that weill wald [brin],
And mellit syné athir othir in;
And gret flaggatis tharoft thai maid,
Gyrdit with Irne-bandis braid;
Of thai flaggatis mycht mesurit be
Till a gret Tunys quantite.
Thai flaggatis byrnand in a baill
With thair Cren thought thai till availl.
And gif the sow come to the wall,
Till lat thame byrnand on hir fall,
And with ane stark cheyne hald thame thar
Qhill all war brint [vp] that [thar war].
Engynys alsua for till Cast
Thai ordanit and maid redy fast,
And set ilk man syné till his ward.
And schir valter, the gude steward,
With armyt men suld ryde about,
And se quhar at thar var mast dout,
And succur thar with his menȝhe.
And quhen thai in-to sic degr[e
Had maid thame for thair assailing,
On the rude-evyn, in the dawning,

They also prepare pitch, tar, lint, hards, with brimstone, and dry sticks.

They mean to set this bale on fire, and lower it with the 'crane' upon the 'sow.'

They prepare also other engines.

Sir Walter Steward is to go the circuit of the walls constantly.

On the Eve of the Exaltation of the
The Inglið host blew till assale.  
Than mycht men with ser apparale  
Se that gret host Cum sturdely;  
The toune enveremyt thai in hy,  
And assalit with sa gud will—  
For all thair mycht thai set thar-till—  
That thai thame pressit fast of the toune.  
Bot thai, that can thame abandounne  
Till ded, or than till woundis sare,  
So weill has thame defendit thare,  
That ledderis to the ground thai flang,  
And with stanys so fast thai dang  
Thair fais, that feill thai left lyand,  
Sum ded, sum hurt, and sum swoonand.  

Bot thai that held on fut in hy  
Drew thame avay deliuery,  
And skunnyritt tharfor na-kyn thing,  
Bot went stoutly till assalyng.  

And thai abovin defendit ay,  
And set thame till so harde assay,  
[Quhill] that feill of thame voundit war,  
[And] thai so gret defens maid thar,  
That thai styntit thair fais mycht.  
Apon sic maner can thai ficht  
Quhill it wes neir noyne of the day;  

Pressit thair sow toward the wall;  

638. enveremyt] enweround E; enuironed H.  
639. sa gud] sua gret E; full great H.  
641. That—of] That thaim pressyt fast on E; Fast thay them preassed to H.  
642. can] gan.  
643. Till] To EH. till] to EH.  
645. flang] so E; slang H; flang or slang C; see xvi. 651.  
648. swoonand] swoonand E; swoon-ning H.  
649. fut] foot H; feyt E.  
650. away] away EH.  
651. skunnyrrit] scounryt E; so-journde (i) H. thar—kyn] there for na kin H; nocht for that E.  
653. abovin] aboun.  
654. till] to EH.  
656. [And EH] That C.  
658. can] gan.  
659. noyne] none.  
660. in] on EH.
BOOK XVII.  THE WAR-ENGINE ATTACKS THE 'SOW.'  431

And thai within weill soyne gert call
The Engynour that takyne was,
And gret manan3 till him mais,
And swoir that he sulde, bot he
Provit on the sow sic sutele,
That he [to-fruscyt] hir ilke deill.
And he, that has persauit weill
That the dede wes [weill] neir hym till,
Bot gif he mycht fulfill thar will,
Thoucht that he all his mycht vald do;
Bendit in gret hy than wes scho,
And till the sow wes evin set.
In hye he gert draw the cleket,
And smertly swappit out the stane,
That evyn out-our the sow is gane,
And behynd hir a litill we
It fell, and than thai cryit hey
That war in hir—"furth to the wall,
For dreed[les] it is ouris all."
The Engynour than deliuerly
Gert bend the gyne in full gret hy,
And the stane smertly swappit out.
It flaw [out], quhethirand, with a rout,
And fell richt evin befor the sow.
Thair hertis than begouth till grow;
Bot zeit than, with thair mychtis all,
Thai Pressit the sow toward the wall, 
And hafo hir set ther[to] luntly. 688
The gynour than gert bend in hy 692
The gyne, and swappit out the stañe,
That evin toward the lift is gane,
And with gret wecht synę duscht doune
[And] hyt the sow in sic maner,
That it, that wes the mast summer
And starkast for till stynt a strak,
In-swndir with that dusche he brak.
The men ran out in full gret hy,
And on the wallis thai can cry,
‘That thair sow ferryt wes thair!’
Iohnē crab, that had his geir all 3ar;
In his faggattis hafo set the fyre,
And our the wall synę can thame wyre,
And brynt the sow till brandis bair.
With all this, fast assalęcand war
The folk without with felloune ficht,
And thai within with mekill mycht
Defendit manfully thar stede
In-till gret aucetur of dede.
The schipmen with gret apparale
Com with thair schippes till assale,
With top-castellis warnist weill,
And wicht men armyt in-till steill.

689. tharto] thair to E; thereto H; thar in C. luntly] gentilly E; cunningly H; perhaps we should read lustly (= exactly).
691. swappit] wappyt E; swakked H. the] a H.
693. [And EH] That C.
696. summer] sower EH.
697. till] to EH.
698. he] It.
699. out] foorth H.
700. can] gan.

701. ferryt wes] was feryt.
703. his] the H. fagattis] fagaldis E; Faggots H. the] a H.

709. manfully] manlily.
710. in-till] into EH.
713. castellis] castell. warnist]
714. And] Off. in-till] into EH.
Thair batis vp apon thair mastis
Drawyn weill hye and festnyt fast is,
And pressit with that gret atour
Toward the wall, bot the gynour
Hit in añe espyne with a stañe,
And the men that war thar-in gane,
Fra thine-furth durst nane tak [on] hand
With schippes predf thame to the vall.
But the laiff war assal3eand all
On ilka syde sa egyrly,
That certis it wes gret ferly,
That thai folk sic defens hafo maid,
For the gret myscheif that they had.
For thair wallis so law than weir,
That a man richt weUl with a sjDer
Micht strik añe othir vp in the face,
As eir befor tald till 3ow was.
And feill of thainè war woundit sare,
And the layf so fast travaland war,
That nane had tume rest for till ta,
Thair aduersourïs assailjeit swa.
Thai war within sa stratly stad,
That thar wardane, [that] with [him] had
Ane hundreth men in Cumpany

715. _apon_ in middes H. _mastis_ mast EH.
716. _fast is_ fast EH.
717. _that—atour_ so CE; their
great aventure H.
719. _in_ H om. _ane espyne_ aue
hespyne C; the aspyne E; an Aspene H.
720. _And_ That H. _gane_ ilkane
H.
721. Sum ded sum dosnyt, come
doun wynland E; Sum dede dosnyt
sum dede vyndland C; Came downe
dushing on the land H.
722. _on EH_ vpon C.

One boat is hit, and the men
thrown out.

716. _and with boats_ hauled high up
against the masts.

720. The defence is
difficult.

724. [Fol. 59b. E.]
The walls were
very low.

725. [Fol. 136. C.]
The besieged are
very hard pressed.
Their reserve, of 100 men, are all employed at the walls, except 1.

The men who were assailing Mary-gate burnt the drawbridge, and attempt to burn the gate itself.

Sir Walter, hearing of this danger, assembles a force,

Armyt, that wight war and hardy,
And raid about for till se quhar
That his folk hardest pressit war,
Till releif thame that had mister,
Com syndry tymes in placis ser
Quhar sum of the defensour is war
All dede, and othir woundit sare;
Swa that he of his Cumpany
Behusit to leiff thair party,
Swa that, be he añe courñ had maid
About, [of all the] men he had
Thair wes levit with him bot añe,
That he ne had thame left ilkañe
To releve quhar he saw mister.
And the folk that assal¿and wer
At mary ȝet, [to-hewyn] had
The barrañ, and a fyre had maid
At the draw-brig, and brynt it douñe;
And war thringand in gret foysouñe
Richt [to] the ȝet, añe fyre till ma.
And thai within gert smertly ga
Ane to the wardane, for till say
How thai war set in hard assay.
And quhen schir valter steward herd
How men sa stratly with thame ferd,
He gert cum of the castell then
All that war thar of armyt men,

740. 741. till] to EH.
742-6. H omits.
743. Till releif] To releve.
744. defensouris] defendouris.
745. to leiff] for to leve. thair] a
gret H.
746. 747. 748. H.
749. añe] A EH.
749. barrass] Barres H.
749. [to EH] in C. añe] A EH.
till] to EH.
750. [of—the E] of all his H; to all to C.
751. 752. thame—ilkane H. For he had them left euerilkane, For he had them left euerilkane H.
753. of] fra H.
754. with] E om. men—thame that his men sa straitly H.
755. [to-hewyn E] they hewen H; be-hevin C.
756. barrass Barres H.
759. [to EH] in C. añe] A EH.
till] to EH.
760. And] Than.
761. till] to EH.
764. with] E om. men—thame that his men sa straitly H.
765. of] fra H.
766. war thar] that war.
For thair that day assalzeit nane,
And with that rout in hy is gane
Till mary set, and till the wall
Is went, and saw the myscheif all;
And vmbethoucheht hym suddandly,
Bot gif gret help war set in hy
Thar-to, thai suld burne vp the set
[With] the fire [that he fand] thar-at.
Thair for apone gret hardyment
He suddanly set his entent;
And gert all wyde set vp the set,
And the fyre that he fand thar-at
With strinth of men he put away.
He set hym in full hard assay;
For thai that war assaljeand thar
Pressit on hym with vapnys bair,
And he defendit with all his mycht.
Thar mycht men se a fellouie sicht;
With staffing, stoking, and striking
Thar maid thai sturdy defending.
For with gret strynth of men the set
Thai defendit, and stude thar-at,
Magre thair fais, quhill the nycht
Gert thame on bath halfis leif the ficht.

Thair of the host, quhen nycht can fall,
Fra the assalt with-drew thame all,
Voundit, and wery, and forbeft.

At night, the English retire.
They are much surprised at the defence made by the Scotch.

With mate cher the assalt thai left,
And till thar Innys went in hy,
And set thar wachis hastely.
The laif thame esit as thai mycht best;
For thai had gret myster of rest.
That nycht thai spak al comonly
Of thame within, and had ferly
That thai sa stout defens haβ maid
Agane the gret assalt thai had.
And thai within, on othir party,
Quhen thai thair fais so haley
Saw thame withdraw, thai var all blith,
And vachis haβ ordanit wmith,
And syne ar till thar Innys gane.
Their wes bot few of thame ves slane,
Bot feill war voundit wikidly;
The laiff our mesur war wery.
It wes Aνε hard assalt, perfay,
And certanly, I hard neuir say
Quhar quheyn men mair defens had maid,
That swa richt hard assalβeing had.
And of a thing that thair befell
I haf ferly, that I of tell.
That is, that in-till all that day,
Quhen all thair mast assalβeit thai,
And the schot thikkest [wes] with-all,
Women with child and childir small
In Arme-fullis gaderit vp, and bair
Till thame that on the wallis war

A great wonder took place.

Women and children gathered up arrows, and carried them to the men on

The ENGLISH ADMIRE THE SCOTCH DEFENCE. [BOOK XVII.

With mate cher the assalt thai left,
And till thar Innys went in hy,
And set thar wachis hastely.
The laif thame esit as thai mycht best;
For thai had gret myster of rest.
That nycht thai spak al comonly
Of thame within, and had ferly
That thai sa stout defens haβ maid
Agane the gret assalt thai had.
And thai within, on othir party,
Quhen thai thair fais so haley
Saw thame withdraw, thai var all blith,
And vachis haβ ordanit wmith,
And syne ar till thar Innys gane.
Their wes bot few of thame ves slane,
Bot feill war voundit wikidly;
The laiff our mesur war wery.
It wes Aνε hard assalt, perfay,
And certanly, I hard neuir say
Quhar quheyn men mair defens had maid,
That swa richt hard assalβeing had.
And of a thing that thair befell
I haf ferly, that I of tell.
That is, that in-till all that day,
Quhen all thair mast assalβeit thai,
And the schot thikkest [wes] with-all,
Women with child and childir small
In Arme-fullis gaderit vp, and bair
Till thame that on the wallis war

799. al comonly] comonly.
801. hass] had EH.
804. haley] hastily.
805. thame withdraw] withdraw
806. And] And thair C; And their
H; but the line is better without
thair; E has—And has ordanyt thair
808. ves] then H; E om.
809. voundit] woundyt. wikidly]
wttrey E; cruelly H.
814. haly] sharpe H.
818. thair mast] the maist H.
819. [ves EH] thar C.
Arrowes, and nocht ane slayne ves thar, 
Na se politic; and that wes mar 
To myrakill of god almyechty; 
And to nocht ellis It set can I. 
On athir syde that nycht thai war 
All still, and on the morn, but mar, 
Thar come tithandis out of Ingland 
Till thame of the host, that bare on hand 
How that by borrow-brig and mytoune 
Thair men war slayne and dwungin doune; 
And at scottis men throw-out the land 
Raid se politic, byrnand and distroyand. 
And quhen the king ha$ herd this taill, 
His consell he assemblit haill, 
Till se quhe thir farar war him till 
Till ly about the toune all still, 
And assaill quhill it wonnyne war, 
Or than In yngland for till fare, 
And reskew his land and men. 
His consell fast discordit then; 
For southren men vald that he maid 
Arest thar, quhill he wonnyn had 
The toune and the castell alsua. 
Bot northir men wald no-thing swa, 
That dreth thar frendis for till tyne, 
And mast part of thar gudis syne 
Throu scottis menyns cruelte;
SIR THOMAS OF LANCASTER GOES HOME. [BOOK XVII.

Thai wald he leit the sege be,
And raid for till reskew the land.
Of loncastell, I tak on hand,
The Erll thomas wes añe of thai,
That Consalit the king hame to ga.
And, for that mair enclynit he
Till the folk of the [south] Cuntre
Than till the [northir] maunys will,
He tuk it to sa mekill Il.
That he gert turf his geir in hy,
And with his battall halely,
That of the host neir thríd part waś;
Till Ingland hame his way he tais.
But leíf, he hame has tane his gat;
Tharfor fell eftir sic debat
Betuix him and the king, that ay
Lestit, quhill andron herdclay,
That throu the king wes on him set,
Tuk hym syne in-to pomfret,
And on the hill besyde the touñe
Strake of his hede but ransouñe;
Tharfor syne drawin and hangit ves he,
And with him weill a fair mençe.
Men said syne eftir, this thomas,
That on this víʃ maid martir was,
Wes sanctit and myraclis did,
Bot envy syne gert thame be hid.
Bot quhethir he haly wes or nañe,

851. the] his.
852. [longcastell] loncastell EH.
856. [south] E; north CH.
857. [northir] norþyn E; southeroun C; Southeroun H; cf. 1. 846.
861. thríd] the thríd C; but EH omit the.
866. Lastyt. herdclay] hardclay E; Hardecly H; Herkely A.
868. syne in-to] rycht in E; syne into H.
869. the] añe.
871. drawin—hangit] hyngyt and drawyn E; hanged and drawen H.
872. weill—fair] a weill gret E; a great H.
874. viss] wiss E; wise H; wayes A.
875. sanctit] saynet E; syne a Sanct H. myraclis] gud myraclis C; myrakillis E; miracles H.
At pomfret thusgat wes he slane.
And syne the king of yngland,
Quhen that he saw hym tak on hand
Till paf his way sa oppinly,
Hym thought it wes perell to ly
Thar with the laiff of his menȝe;
And his harnaȝ turisit he,
And [in]till Ingland hame can far.
The scottis men, that distroyand war
In yngland, herd soynes tell tithyng
Of this gret seȝe the departing.
Tharfor thai tuk westward the way,
And by carlele hame went [ar] thai,
With prayis and with presoneris,
And othir gudis on seir maneris.
The lordis till the king ar gane,
And the laiff haȝ that vayis tañe;
Ilk man till his repair Is gane.
The king, Iwȝ, wes woundir layne
That thai war cummynn haiûl and feir,
And at thai sped on sic maner,
That [thai] thair fais discumfit had,
And, but tynsale of men, had maid
againe; Sa that their folks relieued
were, And set now free from all
danger.

878. thusgat] thus.
881. Till] To EH.
883, 884. Transposed in H.
884. Hys harnaȝs tharfor tursit he EH.
885. And] H om. [in-till E] till C; To H. can] can he H; gan he E.
887, 888. For these 2 lines H has 8, viz. Throughout England full cruelly, Burning and wasting right rigorously, When that they haue heard tythings tell Of this great Siege that was sa fell; That they all skailed were and gane, Vnto England hame

King Edward retreats.
The Scotch host under Murray avoid him,
going home by Carlisle.

886. King Robert is much pleased.
SUCCESS OF THE DEFENCE OF BERWICK. [BOOK XVII.

Reskowr to thame that in berwik
War assegit richt till thar dik,
[That into full great danger wes,
Through strength of them that sieged hes.]
And quhen the kyng had sperit tithand
How thai had faryne in-till Ingland,
[And of their iourney what progresse,
That they haue had, and what successe,]
And thai haf tal'd hym all thar fair,
How Ingli men discumfit war,
Richt blith in-till his hert wes he,
And maid thame fest with gammy and gle. 908

Thus was Berwick rescued.

Berwik wes on this maner
Reskewit, and thai that thar-in wer.
He wes worthy ayc prince till be
Throu manheid and Subtilite,
That [couth] throu vit sa hye a thynge,
But tynsale, bryng till gude ending.
Till berwik syne the way he tais;
And quhen he herd thar how it waO
Defendit swa richt apertly,
He lovit thame that var thar gretly.
Valter stewardis grete bounte
Atour the laif commendit he,
For the richt gret defens he maid
At the jet, quhar thai men brynt had
The brig, as the heerd me deuiO.

901. Reskovers E; Recourse H.
902. till—dik] faire and thicke (!) H.
903*, 904*. In H only.
904. faryne] farne EH. intill] into H; In E.
905*, 906*. In H only.
905. haf] had. thar] hale the.
911, 912. So in CH; E transposes the lines.
913. [couth EH] thought C. throu] with EH.
915. way—tai 5] King gaes H.
917. swa richt] rycht swa. swa— aperly] sa doone manfully (sic) H.
918. var] war.
919. stewardis] steward his.
920. Atour] Out our.
922. that] EH om.
And certis he wes well till pris,
That sa stoutly with playne fechting
At oppyn set maid defending.

Micht he haf lift quhill he had beyne
Of perfit elde, withouten weyne,
His renoune suld haf strekit fer.
Bot dede, that vachis ay to mar
With all [hyr] mycht waik and vorthy,
Had at his worship gret Invy;
That in the flour of his southeid
Scho endit all his douchty deid,
As I sall tel 3ow forthismar.
Quhen the king had a quhill beyne thar,
He send for masonis fer and neir,
That sleast wes of that misteir,
And gert weill ten fut hye the vall
About berwik his toune our all.
And syne soyne toward lowdyañe
With his menʒe his gat has gane;
And syne he gert ordane in hy
Bath armt men and ʒhemanry,
In-till Irland in hy till fair,
Till help his brothir that wes thair.

924. weill] mekle H. till] to
928. elde] eild E. weyne] wene
930. vachis] walkis E ; watches H.
931,932. H omits. ]hyr E] his C ;
933. That in] Into H.

Had Sir Walter lived long,
he would have been famous.
But death ended all his doughty deeds.
The king sends for masons,
and makes the town-wall higher.
He then prepares to go to Ireland,
to help his brother.
Edward Bruce will not wait for his reinforcements.

but, with only 2000 men, goes to Dundalk.

Sir Richard of Clare assembles 20,000 men on horseback, besides foot soldiers, and goes northward.

Three scouts are sent forward by Edward,

How schir Eduard the bruce vess slayn in Irland.

Bot he, that rest anoyit ay,
And wald in travaill be all-way,
A day forrouth thair arivyng
That war send till hym fra the king,
He tuk his way, furthwärde to fare
Magre them all that with hym war.

For he had nocht than in that land
Of all men, I trow, twa thousand,
Outane the kyngis off erischry,
That in gret rowtis raid hym by.

Toward dundawk he tuk the vay;
And quhen richard of clare herd say
That he com with añe few menȝhe,
All that he mycht assemblit he,
Of all Irland, of Armyt men;

Swa that he had thar with him then
Of trappit horfò twenty thousand,
Bot thai[m] that war on fut gangand;
And held furth northwärde on his vay.
And quhen schir Eduard haȝ herd say
That cummyn neir till hym wes he,

He send discurrouris hym till se;
The sowlis and the steward war thai,

3. forrouth] before H.
5. furthwärde] south-wart E.
Southward H.
6. them] written theme C.
9. erischry] Ircery E; the Irishry H.

11. dundawk] dundalk.
13. añe] a H; sa E.
18. thaim] them H; thai CE
19. vay] way EH.
22. till] to EH.
23. sowlis] sowllis E; Sowles H.
BOOK XVIII.  HE RESOLVES TO FIGHT AGAINST ODDS.  443

And als schir philip the mowbray.
And quhen thai seyn had thar cummyng,
Thai went agane to tell the king,
And said weill thai war mony men.
In hy schir Eduard ansuerd then,
And said, that he suld fecht that day,
Thouch Tryplit or quadruplit war thai.
Schir Iohn ye steward said “sekirly,
I red 3e ficht nocht in sic hy.
Men sais my brother is cumand
With xv hundreth men neir hand;
And war thai knyt with 3ow, 3e mycht
The trastyyar abyde to ficht.”
Schir Eduard lukit richt angrely,
And till the sowlis said in hy,
“Quhat sais thou?” “schir,” he said, “perfay,
As my fallow [has] said, I say.”
And than till schir philippe said he.
“Schir,” said he, “sa our lord me se,
Me think it na foly to byde
3our men, that spedis thame to ryde.
For we ar few, our fais ar feill;
God may richt weill our veirdis deill;
Bot it var vounder that our mycht
Suld ourcurn so feill in ficht.”
Than with gret Ire, “alla0,” said he,
“I wend neu’r till here that of the!
Now help quha will, for sekirly

24. als] E om.
26. the king] tithing E.
30. Tryplit—quadruplit] tribill
and quatribill E; five or sex times
ma H.
32. 3e—nocht] nocht 3e ficht CE;
but H has—yee feght not; which is
far better. in] on.
34. hundreth] so CH; thousands E.
37. richt] all.

who report that
the host is very
large.

Edward says
he shall fight.

Sir John Stewart
advises him to
wait till his
brother comes.

De Souli gives
the same advice.

[Fol. 139. C.]
So does Sir
Philip Mowbray.

Edward, in great’
wrath, declares
that he will
certainly fight.

33. sowlis] sowliis E; Sowles H.
said] he said C; but EH omit he.
40. [has E] CH om.
41. than] E om. And—philippe
Then to Sir Philip the Mowbray H.
43. it—foly] na folly for. H
wrongly omits na.
46. veirdis] werdis.
47. var vounder] war wondir.
This day, but mair baid, fecht vill I.  
Sall na man say, quhill I may dre,  
That strynth of men sall ger me fle!  
God scheld that ony suld vs blame,  
That we defoull our nobill name!"

["Now] be it swagat than," quod thai;  
"We sall tak that god will purvay."

And quhen the kyngis of Erischry  
Herd say, and vist all seckirly,  
That thar kyng, with sa quheyn, vald ficht  
Agane folk of sa mekill mycht,  
Thai com till [him] in full gret hy,  
And consalit hym full tendirly

For till abid his men; and thai  
Suld hald thar fais all that day  
Doand, and on the morne alsua,  
With thair saltis that thai suld ma.  
Bot thair mycht na consell availl;  
He wald all gat haff the battaill.  
And quhen thai saw he wes so thra  
To fecht, thai said, "we may weill ga  
To ficht with 3on gret Cumpany;  
Bot we acquyt vs vtirly,  
That nane of vs will stand to ficht;  
Assuris nocht tharfor in our mycht.  
For our maner is, of this land,  
Till follow and ficht, and ficht fleand,  
And nocht till stand in plane melle
Qhill the ta part discumfit be."

He said, "sen that 3our custum is,
I ask no mair at 3ow bot this,
That is, that 3he and 3our men 3he
Wald all to-giddir arayit be,
And stand on fer, but departing,
And se our ficht and our endyng."
Thai said weill at thai suld do swa,
And synie toward thair men can ga,
That war weil fourty thousand noir.
Edward, with thame that vith him weir,
That war nocht fully twa thousand,
Arayit thame stalwardly till stand
Agane fourty thousand and ma.
Schir Eduard that day wald nocht ta
His cot-Armour, bot gib harper,
That men held [as] withouten peir
Of his estat, had on that day
All hail schir Eduardis aray.
The ficht abaid thai on this wiß;
And in gret hye thar enymaryf
Com, till assemmyll all reddy,
And thai met thame richt hardly.
Thai war sa few, forsuth to say,
That ruschit with thair fais var thai;
And thai that pressit mast to stand
War slaı̈ne douı̈e, and the remanand
Fled till erischry for succour.
Schir Eduard, that had sic valour,

80. ta] ane H.
82. I] Ik. no—3ow] at 3ow no
mar.
86. our (2)] the E.
87. at] that EH.
88. cou] gan thai.
89. fourty] threttie H ; twenty E ;
cf. U. 17, 18, 93.
93. fourty] so CE ; threttie H.
96. [as H] miswritten has C ; als

80. [Fol. 61. E.] He asks them to
wait a little apart,
84. [Fol. 139b. C.] to see him fight
and die.
88. They withdraw
accordingly,
92. Sir Edward's
armour was
worn that day
by Gib Harper.
96. Sir Edward's
host is overborne,
and many of
them are slain.
100. Sir Edward
himself,
Sir John Steward, and Sir John de Soulis are all slain. Wes ded, and Iohne steward alsua; And Iohne de sowlis als with thai, And othir als of thair Cunpany.

[Thai] wencust war sa suddanly, That few in-till the place war slayne. For the laiff haf that vayis tane Till the erische kyngis, that ves thar, That in hail battle howand war.

Iohne tomasswn, that wes leder Of thame of carrick that thair wer, Quhen he saw the discumfiting, With-drew him till añe erische king That of his acquyntans had he; And he resauit him in lawte.

And quhen Iohne cummyyn wes to that king, He saw be led fra the feching Schir philipe [the] mowbray, the vicht, That had beyne doysnyt in the ficht, And be the Armys led wes he With twa men, apon the cawse That ves betuix thame and the toune, That strekit lang in a randonne. Toward the toune thai held thair vay, And quhen in myd cawse war thai, Schir philip of his desynaif Ourcome, and persauit he waf

110. Iohne de] Iohne the E; Sir John H.
112. [Thai E] They H; That C. wencust war] war wencussyt E; vanquisht were H.
113. place] Plaine H.
115. erische] Irsche E; Irish H. ves] war.
117. tomasswn] thomas sone E; Thomson H.
120. erische] Irsch E; Irish H.
122. lawte] leawte E; daintie H.
123. [the E] CH om. vicht] wicht.
127. be the] by the H; with E.
128. the] so CH; A E. cawse] cause E; Caussey H.
130. That] And.
132. cawse] cause E; the Caussey H.
133. desynaiss] desynes E; businesse H.
134. mass] wes E.
Tane, and swagit led vith twa.
The tane he swappit soyné hym fra,
And syne the tothir in gret hy;
Syne drew his suerde delieuerly,
And till the fecht the vay he tais
Endlang the cawse, that than waß
Fillit in-to [sa] gret foysoune
Of men that than went to the touñe.
And he, that met thame, can thame ma
Sic payment, quhar he can ga,
That weill añe hundreth men gert he
Leiff, magre thair's, the cawsee;
As lohne tomasswn said suthly,
That saw his deid all halely.
Toward the battall evyn he jeid.
Jolni Thoniassuii calls to him to come back.
He waits awhile, and then comes back.
Thomasson's men retreat to Carrickfergus.
Com till cragfergus haill and feir.

135. swagat led] led suagat.
136. swappit] swakked H.
138. Syne] And E; He H. his the.
139. the—he] his wayis.
140. cause] cause E; Caussey H.
141. into] so CH; in-till E. [sa H] CE om.
142. to] till.
143. can thame] agayn gan.
144. ga] them ta H.
145. añe hundreth] A hundir.
146. cawsee] cause E; Caussey H.
147. tomasswn] thomas sone E; Thomson H; and in l. 150.
151, 152. Transposed in H. vanquish H. Cryit on] And cried to H.
156. out] E om.
157. sarraly] sikkerly H.
158. wittely] wittely EH.
160, 161. Transposed in H. [Though that] Thought that E; Although H; How that C. lesit] lossyt E; left some H. till] to EH.
The soldiers try to get Sir Edward's head, and, finding Gib Harper, cut Gib's head off, which they put in salt, and send to the king of England.

Thus died these noble men.

Had they been well led, they would not have been so easily conquered.

The men sent by king Robert to help Sir Edward

---

165. saltit] salt.
166, 167. syn] E om. Th—in-till] Till the king Eduard in E. H has—And in a Present but hething In England sent it to the King.
170. All-thouch] Althought.
171. Throu] For. losit] leayt E; losted H.
182. Should lead them to discom-forting H. till (1)] to. outraying] owtreying.
183. Succudry] so H; surquedry E.
184. deir] her E. vorschip] wor-schip EH.
185. way] way EH.
Till cragfergus thai went agane;
And that wes nocht forouten pane.
For thai war mony tymes that day
Assalit with erischry, [bot thai]
[Ay] held to-giddir sarraly,
Defendand thame so wittely
That thai eschapat oft thou mycht,
And mony tymes al0 throu slight;
For oft of thair's till thame gaf thai
Till let thame scathleß pass thar vay.
And to cragfergus com thai swa.
Than batis and schippes can thai ta,
And salit till scotland in hy,
And thar arivit all saufly.
Quhen thai of scotland had wittering
Of schir Eduardis discomfiting,
Thai menyt hym full tendrely
Our all the land all comonly;
And thai that with hym slayne var thar
Full tendrely al0 menyt war.

How king eduard com agane in scotland with his
power till Edinburgh eftir the ded of gud Schir
eduar the Bruce in-till Irland.

Eduard the bruce, as I said air,
Wes discumfit on this manarc.

And quhen the feld wes clengit cleyne,

[191. Till] To EH.
192. [forouten] withoutten H.
193. [tymes] tyme.
194. [erischry] Irschery E; Irishrie
H. [bot thai EH] that ay C.
195. Ay held E] Thai held C;
Held them H.
196. Defendand thame] And de-
fendyt, wittely] worthely H.
198. als] alsua E; oft H.
199. till] to EH; and in l. 201.
H is corrupt.
200. Till] To EH.

[200. They then sail back to Scotland.
201. The Scotch lament Sir Edward's death.
202. This line is corrupt.
203. Wes discumfit on this manarc.
204. thair arivit] arivit thar C; but E has thar arywyt.
205. wittering] witting H.
206. discomfiting] wrenchissing.
208. all comonly] full commonly H; commonaly E.
210. that] thai war CH; but E omits thai.
211. I] is H. air] aire H; her E.
212. manare] maner.
Sir Richard of Clare goes to Dundalk.

Sa that na resisteris wes seyne,
The vardane than, richard of clare,
And all the folk that with him war
Toward dundawk has tane the vay ;
Swa that richt na debat maid thai
At that tyme with the erischrye,
Bot to the toune thai held in hy.

And syne ha$ send furth to the king,
That Ingland had in gouernyng,
Gib harperis hed in-till ane kyt.

In hert thorof he tak sic pryde,
That he tak purpo$ for to ryde
With a gret host in-till Scotland,
Till revenge hym, with stalward hand,
Of the tray, travaill, and of teyne,
That done till hym thar-in had beyne.

And a richt gret hoost gadcrit he,
And gert his schippes by the se
Cum, with gret foysoune off vitale;
For at that tyme he thoucht all hale
For till distroy so cleyn scotland,

214. na resisteris] ne resistens E ;
na resistance H.
215. vrandane] wardane, richard]
schyr Richard.
217. dundawk] dundalk E; Don-
dalk H.
219. erischrye] Irishery E; Irishry
H.
221. hoss] had,
222. Ingland had] had Ingland.
223. in-till] into H; in E. ane]
A E.H.
224. mawpass] mavpas E; Mawp-
pas H.
225. Quhilk—resauit] And he
ressawyt It. gret] E om.
228. sic—a] so CH; a felloun E.
231. in-till] into H; in E.
232. Till revenge] For to weng.
233. the] E om. travaill] of
trawaill, of] the H.
234. till—thar—in] tharin till
him.
238. thoucht—hale] so CH; wald
him taile E.
239. So CH; To dystroy wp sa
clene the land E.
That nane suld be thar-in lifand;
And with his folk in gret aray
Toward scotland he tuk the vay.
And quhen king robert vist that he
Com on hym with sic aûe menze,
He gaderit men, bath fer and neir,
Quhill sa feill till him cummyn weir,
And war als for till cum hym to,
That him weill thought he suld weill do.
He gert with-draw all the catele
Of lowdiane euérïk deill,
And till stryththis gert thame be send,
And ordanit men thame to defend.
And with his hoost all still he lay
At culroð, for he walde assay
Till ger his fais throu fasting
Be feblis, and throu lang walking ;
And fra he feblis had thair mycht,
Asse[m]yill he wald with thame till ficht.
He thought till wirk apon this viø;
And Inglið men with gret mastrið
Com with thar hoost in lowdiane,
And sojne till Edinburgh ar gane,
And thair abaíd thai dayis thre.
Thair schippes that war on the se
Had the vynd contrar till thame ay,
Their ships are delayed by contrary winds.

They send out foragers, who find only one lame cow.

When Earl Warrane sees them bringing it, he says it is very dear beef, for it must have cost 1000 pounds.

The English retreat to Melrose.

266. *thai* of way H. 268. *vittale*] viciae H; *vittailis* E; *vittaile* H.
271. *to* till.
272. *Than—furth* They sent then foorth H; Thai send furth *rych* E.
275. *Outane*] Owtakyn E; Except H. *kon*] so CH; *bule* E.
276. *tranentis corne*] so CE; Tranent toun H.

277, 278. And when the Erle of Warrane, Saw their Forrayours come againe H.
278. *waran*] warayne.
279. *That—saw* Saw that bulc E; And a Kow H.
280. *gat*] fand H.
282. *certis—he*] said he certis.
283. *beiff*] best E; beast H.
285. *ane*] A EH; and in I. 292.
290. *hame*] E om.
291. *till*] to EH.
Thre hundreth neir of Armyt men. 
Bot the lord dowglaf, [that] wes then 
Besyde in-till the forest neir, 
Vist of thar com and quhat thai veir;  
And with thame of his Cumpany 
In-till melrof all preuely 
He hufit in-till ane enbuschement. 
And a richt sturd[y frer he sent 
Without the 3et, thar com till se, 
And bad him hald him all preve, 
Quhill that he saw thame cumand all 
Richt till the Cun3he of the wall, 
And [than] crye hye, “dowglaf! dowglaf!” 
The frer furth than his way he tais, 
That wes derff, stout, and ek hardy; 
His mekill hude helit haly  
The Armyng that he on hym had; 
Apon a stalward hore5 he raid, 
And in his hand he had a spere, 
Abydand apon that maner 
Quhill that he saw thame cumand neir. 
And quhen the formast passit weir 
The Cun3he, he cryit, “dowglaf! dowglaf!” 
Than till thame all a-ne courf he maif, 
And bare a-ne dou[ne deliverly; 
Than dowglaf, with his Cumpany, 
Yschit apon thame with a schout. 
And quhen thai saw sa gret a rout 

294. [that EH] C om. 
conming H; and in l, 301. 
299. hufit] howyt E; hovered H. 
in-till] into H; in E. ane enbusche-ment] A buschement E; a bush-ment H. 
303. cumand] conming H. 
305. than crye] than cry E; crye 

C; crye on H. 
306. furth than] than furth EH. 
way he] wayis EH. 
307. derff—ek] all stout derff and 
E; right darfe, stout, and H. 
308. helit] covered H. 
312. Abyand] And abaid EH. 
315. Cun3he] coynge E; coynie H. 
316. ane] A EH. 
318. Than] And. with] and.
Cum apone thame sa suadanly,
Thai war abaysit richt qretrumly,
And gaf the bak but mair abaid.
The scottis men emang thame raid,
And slew all thaim thai mychta outa;
Ane gret martirdome thair can thai ma.
And thai that eschapat vmslayne
Ar till thar gret host went agoane,
And talde thame quhat kyn velcummyng
Dowglaf thaim maid at thair metnyng,
Convoyand thame agane roydly,
And varnyt thame the playn herbery.

How the gud king robert the bruce followit the king eduard of Ingland south in his awn land.

The English fle, and are nearly all slain.

A remnant escape, and tell how Douglas welcomed them.

The English are much grieved,

and encamp near Dryburgh; and soon after return home.

Rubrie in II—Here followed King Robert in hight, The English King with all his might,

324. richt] EH om.
325. thaim that] thaim at thai C; but them they H; that thai E.
327. eschapat] scaped were H.
328. Ar] And H. gret—went]
329. kyn] good H.
330. metnyng] comming H.
332. varnyt—playn] warnyt planly.

323. gaf] E om.
334. herbreouris] harbreours come H.
333. Cum] H om.; see last line. reboytit] rebutyt E; Rebuted H. that] that great H.
335. Anoyit] gTetly in hert thai weir,
336. In-to] In-till. till] to EH.
337. the] a H.
338. Ar went till Ingland hayra thar vay.
339. haym] E om. haym—vay] but delay H.
That thai war turnyt hame agane,
And how thair herbreour's var slane,
In hy his host assemblit he,
And went south our the scottis se,
And till Ingland his way he tais.
Quhen his host all assemblit was,
Auchty thousand he wes and ma;
And aught battellis he maid of tha;
In ilk battell wes ten thousand.
Syne went he furth on to Ingland,
And in hale rout followit sa fast
The yngliD king, quhill at the last
He com approchand to byland,
Quhar, at that tyme, thar ves liand
The king of Ingland with his men.
Kyng robert, that had wittering then
That he lay thair, with mekill mycht,
Tranontit swa on hym aine nycht,
That, be the morne that it wes day,
Cummyn in-till playn feld war thai,
Fra biland bot aine litill space.
Bot betuix [thaim] and It thar waO
Ane craggy bra, strekit weill lang,
And a gret peth wp for to gang.
Othirwayis mycht thai nocht avay
Till pa3 till biland/s abbay,
Bot gif thai passit fer about.
And quhen the mekill Inglis rout

346. *south*] foorth H.
347, 348. H *omits. way he*] ways.
all] E om.
351. *wes*] war.
352. *on to*] till E; to H.
353. *in*] in-till.
355. *to*] by H.
356. *wes*] wes.
358. *wittering*] witting H.
360. *Tranontit*] Tranountyt E;
When the English find that the Scotch are so near, they occupy the hill, and prepare to defend it.

Douglas undertakes to take the hill by assault, or cause the English to descend.

The king bids him do so.

Sir Thomas Murray,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Line</th>
<th>Text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>371.</td>
<td><em>at</em> [that E]. <em>king</em> [the king CH; *but E omits the]. [robert EH]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>372.</td>
<td><em>thar weir</em> [thar weir E; were there H].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>373.</td>
<td><em>path</em> [peth].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>374.</td>
<td><em>thai</em> [E om].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>375.</td>
<td><em>Thaìr</em> [There H; The E].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>376.</td>
<td><em>braid</em> [braid].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>377.</td>
<td><em>place</em> [so CE; pass E].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>378.</td>
<td><em>[has E] hes H; wass C</em>.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>379.</td>
<td><em>thame—thaìr</em> [thought thar thaim E; them thought for H].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>380.</td>
<td><em>Eftir</em> [his consell ha6 he send, And askit quhat wes best till do].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>381.</td>
<td><em>till</em> [to EH; and in 1. 387].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>382.</td>
<td><em>Dowglaf</em> [ansuerd thar-to].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>383.</td>
<td><em>And said, “schir, I will vndir-ta That in schort tyme I sall do swa, That I sall vyn 3on place plauly, Or than ger all 3on Cumpany Cum douñ till 3ow heir in this plaine.”</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>384.</td>
<td>*The king than said till him agane, “Do than,” he said, “and god the speid!” Than he furth on his wayis 3eid, And of the host the mast party Put thame in-till his Cumpany, And held thar vay toward the pla6. The gud Erll of murreff, thomasf, Left his battell, and in gret hy,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>385.</td>
<td><em>vyn</em> [wyn EH].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>386.</td>
<td><em>heir in</em> [her to E; into H].</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>387.</td>
<td><em>than said</em> [said than. H has—Or ye sall neuer trow me againe. Do—and] Do than quhar mychtie E; The King then said, great H.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>389.</td>
<td><em>partly</em> [hardy. voy*] [way EH. plass] place H; pass E; and in 1. 398*.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>391.</td>
<td><em>gud</em> [H om. thomass schir thomass C; Sir Thomas H; but E omits schir, and H omits gud].</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Bot with thre men in Cumpany,  
Com till the lordis rout of dowglais;  
And, or he enterit in the plaif,  
Befor thame all the place tuk he,  
For he vald that men suld him se.  
And quhen schir James of dowglais  
Saw that he swagat cumyny waif,  
He prisit thar-of gretly,  
And velcummyt hym full humylly,  
And syne the place can samyny ta.  
Quhen Inglis men saw thaim do swa,  
He prisit him thar-of gretly,  
And velcumbyt hym full humylly,  
And syne the place can samyny ta.  
Quhen Inghf men saw thaim do swa,  
Thai lichtit and agane thame eid.  
Twa knychtis, that douchty war of deid,  
Thomas arthyn ane hat to name,  
The tothir schif rauf of [cobhame],  
Com doune befor all thair menye,  
Thai war bath of full gret bounte,  
And met thair faiis richt manly;  
Bot thai war presit gretumly,  
Thair mycht men se men weil assale,  
And men defend with stout battale,  
And arrowes fie in gret foysoune,  
And thai that owth war twmmyl doune  
Stanis apon thame fra the hicht.

396. thre] four E; few H. in] of his.
397. till—of] to the Court of the Lord H.
399. place] so CH; pass E; and in II. 400, 405.
400. vald] wald.
403. prisit] praised H.
404. full humylly] hamlyly E; honorably H.
405. sync] to H. can] so CH; thae E; samyny ta] togdidder ga H.
408. that—war] rycht doucithy.
409. arthyn] ouchtre E; of Struthers H. ane hat] heght ane H; one had E.
410. rauf] rawf E; Ralph H. [cobhame E] coubane C; Cowbane H. but note the rime.
412. of full] full of.
413. richt manly] manlely E; right manfullie H.
415. men (2)] rycht E. men weil] well other H.
417. arrowes] harnys E; but H as C. fle] fley.
418. owth] owe E; abone H. twmmyl] tumbill E; tumbled H.
Sir Ralph Cobham takes to flight.  

The Scotch put Sir Ralph Cobham to flight, and take Sir Thomas, who was ever afterwards held to be the best of English knights, since he surpassed Cobham.

When Sir Robert saw his men assail the hill so boldly,

But thai that set bath will and mycht
To vyn the peth, thame pressit swa,
That schir rau lf [of cobhame] can ta
The way richt till his host in hy,
And left schir thomas manfully
Defendand with gret mycht the plaf,
Qhill that he swa supprisit wa$ That he wes tane throu herd fechting ;
And tharfor synye, qhill his ending,
He ves renownyt for best of hand
Of a knycht, wes in all Inglan$ For this ilk [schyr] rau lf of [cobhame]
In all Inglan$ he had the na$e
For the best knycht of all that land ;
And for schir thomas duel$ fechtand
Qhill that he swa siipprisit wa$ That he was tane throu her$ fechting ;
And tharfor syne, quhill his ending.

He ves renownyt for best of hand
Of a knycht, wes in all Inglan$ For the best knycht of all that land ;
And for schir thomas duelt fechtand
Quhar schir rau lf, as befor saide we,
With-drew him, prisit our hym wes he.

Thus war thai fechtande in the plaf ;
And quhen the king robert, that wa$ Wif in his deid and ek verty,
Saw his men ay swa douchtely
The peth apon thair fayis ta,
And saw his fais defend thame swa,
Than gert he all the erischry
That war in-till his Cumpany,
Of Argyle and the Ilis alsua,
Spede thame in hy on-to the bra.
He bad thame leiff the peth haly,
And clym vp in the Craggis by,
And speid thame fast, the hicht to ta;
And thai in gret hy haþ done swa,
[And (clamb) allgait wp to the hycht,
And (left) nocht for thair fayis mycht.
Magre thair fayis, thai bar thaim swa
That thai ar gottyn aboun the bra.]

Than men mycht se thame ficht felly,
And rusche thair fais sturdely.
And thai that till the paþ war gane,
Magre thair faiis, the hycht haþ tane.
Than layd thai on with all thar mycht;
Thair mycht men se men felly ficht.

There wes aþe pereluþ Bargane:
For a knycht, hat schir Iohn ne breteñe,
That lichtit wes abovyn the bra,
With his men gret defens can ma;
And scottis men sa can assaill,
That gaf thame so felloune battale,
That thai war set in sic affray.

That thai, that fle mycht, fled avay.
Schir Iohn of breteñe that wes tane,

448. hy on-to] hy vnto H; gret hy to E.
447. He] And. peth] sp. CEH.
448. in—by] on the Craiges there-by H. by] hy.

452. [left] leve E.
453. Then faught they wonder fel-

456. rusc] rushed H. sturdely]
457—460. H omits.
460. men (2)] thalm.
461. ale] A E; a right H.
462. hat] heght H; E om. bre-
tane] the breteñe E; of Britaine H.
463. wes] hes H. abovyn] aboune E; abone H.
465. And] Bot the H. sa can]
sua gan E; can sa H.
466. That] And EH. thame] to thame CH; but E omits to, and H has feill for felloune.
468. fle mycht] mycht fley.
469. of] the.
And richt feill of hir folk war slane.

Of franʃ thar tane ves knychtis twa;
The lord of souly wes añe of tha,
The tothir wes the marshall breña,
That wes [a weill] gret lord at hame.
The laiff sum deid, and sum war tafe;
The remanand thai fled ilkane.

And quhen the king of yngland,
That ȝeit at biland wes liand,
Saw his men discumfyt planly,
He tuk his way in full gret hy,
And southwardis fled with all his mycht.
The scottis men chast hym herd, I hicht,
And in the chaʃ haʃ mony tane.
The king quytly avay is gane,
And the mast part of his menȝhe.

Walter Stewart,
Valter steward, [that] gret bounte
Set ay on hye cheuelry,
With v hundreth in Cumpany
Till york's ȝettis chaʃ can ma,
And thair sum of thair men can sla,
And abaid thair quhill neir the nycht,
Till se gif ony vald ysche to ficht.
And quhen he saw nane vald cum out,
He turnyt agane with all his rout,

470. And maist part of his Menyie slaine H.
471. tane ves] tane wes E; were tame H.
472. of souly] of Sowllie H; the sole E.
473. tothir] other H.
474. [a weill E] a right H; ane C.
475. deid—war] ded war and sum E/H.
476. And the remanand fled ilkane E; The remanand fled were euereilkane H.
481. southwardis] Southward H; furthwart E.
470. And maist part of his Menyie slaine H.
471. tane ves] tane wes E; were tame H.
472. of souly] of Sowllie H; the sole E.
473. tothir] other H.
474. [a weill E] a right H; ane C.
475. deid—war] ded war and sum E/H.
476. And the remanand fled ilkane E; The remanand fled were euereilkane H.
481. southwardis] Southward H; furthwart E.
And till the host is went in hy,  
That than tane had thair herbery
In-till the abbay of Biland,
And riweus that wes by neir hand.
The king of Inglandis ger,
That he had levit in-to biland;
All gert thai lepe out our thar hand,
And maid thame all glaid and ek mery.
And quhen the king had tane herbery,
Thai broucht till him the presoneris
All vnarmyt, as it efferis;
And quhen he saw lohiie of Bretane,
He had at hym richt gret disdeyne;
For he wount wes till spek hely
At hayme, and our dispitfuUy;
And bad haf him avay in hy,
And luk he kepit war stratly,
And said, “war it nocht [that] he war
His wourdis that war sa angry;”
And mekly he hym cryit mercy.

Thei led him furth, forouten mair,
And kepit hym weill, ay quhill thai war

He then returns to the main host,  
who are at Byland and Bievaulx.

When the prisoners are brought before king Robert,
he is much displeased with Sir John Breton, on account of his spiteful speeches;
who is therefore closely guarded,
Cummyn ha’me to thair awnè Cuntre.
Lang eftir syne ransonyt wes he
For twenty thousand pund to pay,
As I haf herd mony men say.

Then the two French knights come before the king.

Q when that the king this spek had maid,
The franche knychtis, that tane men had,
Wes brought richt thar byfor the king;
And he maid thame fair velcummyng,
And said, “I wat richt weill that 3he,
For 3our gret worschip and bounte
Com for till se the fichting heir.
For, sen 3e in the Cuntre war,
3our strinth, 3our vorschip, and 3our mycht
Vald nocht thoil 3ow escheve the ficht;
And sen that cauf 3ow led thar-till,
And nouthir wretch na euill will,
As frendis 3he sall resanit be,
Quhar velcum heir all tym 3e be.”

They thank him.
Thai knelit and thankit hym greetly
Of the grace he thame did suthly,
And he gert tret thame curtasly;
And lang quhill with him thaim had he,
And did thaim honour and bounte.

At last he sends them to France without ransom.

To the king of Fraunce in presand
He sent thaim quit, but ransoun fre,
And gret gyftis to thaim gaff he. 544
His frendis thusgat curtasly
He couth ressawe, and hamely.]
And his fais stoutly [to]-stonay.
At biland all that nycht he lay.
For thair victor all blith thai war;
And on the morn, forouten mair,
Thai haiff furthwarde tane thair vay.
So fer at that tyme travalit thai
Byrmand, slayand, and distroyand,
Thair fayis, vith thair mycht, noyand,
Qhill to the wald cummyne war thai.
Syne northwarde tuk thai haine thar way,
And distroyit, in thair repair,
The vale haly of beauvare.
And syne with presoners and catele,
Riche® and mony fair Iowele,
Till scotland tuk thai haine thar way,
Blith and glad, Ioyfull and gay.
And ilk man went to thair repair,
And lovit god thame fell so fair,
That thai the king of Ingland
Throu vorschip and throu strinth of hand,
And throu thair lordis gret bounte,
Discumfit in his awne Cuntre.

544. gret gyftis] gifts great H.
546. hamely] right humbly H.
547. to-stonay] certainly the right reading; miswritten till stonay C
(by usual change of till for to);
astoney H; stonay E.
549. victor] wictour E; victorie H.
550. forouten] withouten H.
551. furthwarde] forthwart E;
Southwards H.
554. vith] with all.
555. to] till. wald] so CE; wall H.
556. northwarde] northward. Synce
North againe they tooke the way H.
557. distroyit] syne hameward H.
558. The wale all planly of Beau-
war E; They destroyed haill the wall
of Bewar H.
561. Till] To EH.
gay] Ioyfull of their Pray H.
563. thair] his H.
564. Thanking great God of their
welfare H.
566. vorschip] worship.
567. lordis] Kings H.
568. Discumfit] Discomfist had H.
[BOOK XIX.]

How the lord sowlis thought throu tressoun wth his complisis till haf put doun gud king Robert the bruce & how he wes varnit be a lady.

A short peace.

Thus wes the land a quhilie in peff;
Bot covati5, that can nocht cef;
Till set men apon felony,
Till ger thame Cum till sen5ory,
Gert lordis of full gret renoune
Mak a fell coniuraciou5e
Agane robert, the douchty king;
Thai thoughtt till bring him till ending,
And for till bruke, eftir his dede,

The kynrik, and [ryng] in his sted.
The lord of Sowlis, schir vil5ane,
Of that purcha5 had mast defame ;
For principall tharoff wes he
Bath of assent and cruelte.
The lord de Soulis, schir vil5ane,
Some great lords conspire against
king Robert.

Till set men apon felony,
Till ger thame Cum till sen3ory,
Gert lordis of full gret renoune
Mak a fell coniuraciou5e
Agane robert, the douchty king;
Thai thoughtt till bring him till ending,
And for till bruke, eftir his dede,

The kynrik, and [ryng] in his sted.
The lord of Sowlis, schir vil5ane,
Of that purcha5 had mast defame ;
For principall tharoff wes he
Bath of assent and cruelte.

He had gert be with him syndri,
Gilbert mayle-Erll, John of logy,
Thir war the knychtis I tell of heir,
And richard brou5e als, a squyeir ;

RUBRIC. haf] miswritten hap. 11. of Sowlis] the soulis E; Sowles
1. Thus] Than. H.
3. 4. Till] To EH.
9. for till] for to H; to E.
10. [ryng] liff C; to ryng E;
Reigne H.
11. Rubric in H—Of the great 17. the] EH om. I—of] that I
Treasoun the ordaining, To Robert tell.
the Brvce the noble King.
And gud schir dauid the brechyne 20 and Sir David Brechin was
Wes of this deid arrettit synie, implicated in it.
As I sall tell sow forthirmair.
Bot thai ilkane discoverit var 24 They were found
Throu ane lady, as I herd say, out by means of a
Or till thair purpo$ cum mycht thai, lady,
For scho told hally to the king 28 who told the
Thair purpo$ and thair ordanyng, king.
And how that he suld haf beyn ded, 28 The king seizes
And soulis ryng in-till his sted; them.
And told him werray takynynyg 32 De Soulis has 360
That this purche$ wes suthfast thing, squires in his
And quhen the king wist it wes swa, livery.
Sa sutell purchas$ can he ma, 36 De Soulis was taken at
That he gert tak thame euivilkane. Berwick.
And quhar the lord soulis ves ta$e, 40 He was taken at
Thre hundreth and sexte had he
Of squyeris, cled in his liverye,
At that tyme in his Cumpány,
Outane knychtis that var Ioly.
In-to berwik than takyn ves he; 44 De Soulis
Than mycht men all his men$e se
Sary and wa; for, suth to say,
The king leit thame all pa$ thar vay,
And held thame that he takyn had.
The lord soulis syne cfitir maid 44 De Soulis
Playn granting of [all] that purchas$,

19. the] off. 35. hundreth] hundir.
24. Or] Ere H. 41. for] bot E; the H,
25. hally] hailly H; all E. 42. thar eay] thair way E; away
28. ryng] Ring H. H.
29. werray] so CE; very H. 43. that] at EH.
32. can] gan. ma] ta H. 44. syne] sone E; then H.
34. ves] was. 45. all that] so E; that haill H;

BRUCE. that C.
A parliament tharfor set thar vað;
And thiddir broucht thir menʒe war.
The lord sowllis hað grantit thar
The deid in-to plane parliament;
Thar soyn eftir he wes sent
Till his penans till dumbertaın;
And deit in that tour of staine.
Schir gilbert male-erl, and logy,
And richard broune, thir thre planly,
War with ane assis thar ounlane.
Tharfor thay drawin war ilarne,
And hyngit and hedit all thar-to,
As men had demyt thame till do.
And gud schir dauid the brechyne
Thai gert chällanş richt stratialy syne ;
And he grantit, that of that thing
Ves maid till hym discoveryng,
Bot he thar-till gaf na consent.
And for he helit thair entent,
And discoverit [It] nocht to the king,
That he held of all his halding,
And had maid till him [his] fewte,
Igit to hang and draw wes he.
And as thay drew him for to hyng,
The pepill ferly fast can thring

46. *tharfor set* set tharfor. *thar*
47. *thiddir broucht* broucht thiddir. *thir* this E; that H.
48. *sowllis* the sowllis E; Sowles H. *thar* so EH; miswritten *war* (copied from l. 47) C.
51. *Till* To H. *penans* paines H. *till* to E; in H.
52. *in that* thar in a.
53. *male-erl* maleherbe E; Maly-erl H.
55. *ane assis* a-syss E; assise H. *thar* thain.
58. *demyt* dempt E; damned H. *had—thame* them damned had H. *till* for to E; to H.
59. *dauid the* dawy off.
60. *chällanş* chalance E; chal-lege H.
62. *Was* Was H; Wes wele E.
64. *Bot* Bot H.
65. *[It EH] C om.*
66. *That—of* Whome of he held H.
67. *had* E om. *[his E] CH om.*
68. *to* till.
70. *can* gan.
Him and his myschei [for] to se,
That to behald was gret pite.

Schir Ingerame vmphravell, that than
Wes with the king [as] scottis man,
Quhen he that gret miseifein can se,
"Lordis," he said, "quhar-to press 3e
To se at myscheiff sic a knycht,
That wes so vorthy and so wicht,
That I haf seyn ma pres to se
Him for his richt souerane bounte
Than now dois for till se him heir?"
And quhen thir vordis spoken weir,
With sary cheir he held him still,
Qhill men had done of him thar vill.
Syne, with the leiff of the king,
He brought him menskfully till erding.
And syne to the king thus said he,
"A thing, pray I 3ow, grant to me ;
That is, that 3he of all my land,
That in-to scotland is lyand,
Wald gif me leiff till do my will."
The king than soyne ha3 said him till,
"I will weill graunt that it swa be ;
Bot tell me, quhat anoyis the?"
He said agane, "grant [me] mercy,
And I sail tell 3ow it planly.
Myne hert giffis me no mor to be
With 3ow duelland in this Cuntre.

71. [for EH] C om.
73. vmphravell] the umfraweill E;
Vmfrauile H.
74. [as E] a CH.
75. <can] gan E ; did H.
76. Lordis—said] He said lord-
ingis EH.
73. I] Ik. ma] so EH ; may C.
81. till] to EH ; and in ll. 91, 108,
112.
86. menskfully] so CH; menskly
E.
87. thus] EH om.
88. pray I] I pray EH. to] E
om.
90. into—is] is in-till scotland E;
is into Scotland H.
92. hast] hes H ; bad E.
94. anoyis] annoyes H ; amowis E.
95. grant me H] schyr graunt E;
grant C.
Tharfor, bot at it nocht sow greiff;
I pray sow hertly of sow ur leiff.
For quhar sa richt worthy a knyght,
And sa cheuerful and sa wicht,
And sa renownit of vorschip syne
As gud schir danid the brechyne,
And sa fulfillit of all manheid,
Wes put to sa felloune a ded,
My hert forsuth may nocht gif me
Till duell, for na thing that may be."
The king syne said, "sen thou will swa,
Quhen-euir thou likis, thou may ga;
And thou sall haf gude leiff thar-to
Thi liking of thi land till do."
And he him thankit gretumly,
And of his land in full gret hy
As him thought best, disponit he.
Syne at the king of gret bounte,
Befor all thai that with him war,
He tuk his leyff for euirmair;
And vent in Ingland to the king,
That maid him richt fair velcummyng,
And askit him of the north tithing.
And he him tald all, but lesing,
How thai knychtis distroyit war,
And all, as I tald [till] sow air,
And of the kyngis Curtasye,
That levit him debonarly
Till do of his land his liking.
In that tyme war send fra the king

99. bot at] bot that E; that H. 100. thou likis] the likys E; ye will H. thou (2)] ye H.
101. richt] Noble and H. 110. 111. vent] went EH.
103. vorschip] worship EH; hye 120, 121. H omits.
105. felloune] welanys E; villan-
106. ous H. 126. lerit] leyyt.
128. war] wes.
Of scotland messingeris to tret
Of pefs, gif that thai mycht it get,
As thai oftsis before war send,
Quhar that thai south nocht bring till end.
For the gud king had in entent,
Sen god sa fair grace till him sent,
That he had wonyn all his land
Throu strinth of Armys till his hand,
That he peñ in his land wald ma,
And all the landis stabill swa,
That his air eftir hym suld be
In peñ, gif men held thair laute.

In this tyme now that vnphrevele,
As I bair sow on hand eir-quhil,
Com till the king of Ingland,
The scottis messingeres thar he fand
Of peñ and rest to haf tretiñ.
The kyng wist schir yngerame veñ viñ,
And askit his consell thair-to,
Quhat he wald rede him for till do.
"For him," said he, "thought herd to ma
Peñ wyth kyng robert bruce his fa,
Qhill that he of hym vengit war."
Schir Ingerame till hym maid ansuar,
And said, "he delt sa Curtasly
With me, that on na viñ suld I

Messengers come from king Robert to the English court, to treat of peace.

[Fol. 146 b. C.]

King Robert is desirous that his successor should enjoy peace.

These messengers arrive.

King Edward asks Umphra-ville's advice,

not wishing for peace.

Umphra-ville says he will give no counsel against Bruce.
Giff consell till his merring."
"The behufs neid-way," said the king, 156
"To this thing heir say thine avift."
"Schir," said he, "sen your Willis is
That I say, wit zhe sekirly,
For all your gret cheulry,
Till deill with hym zhe haf no mycht.
His men ar worthyn all sa wicht
For lang wsage of gret fechting,
That has beyne norist in sic thing,
That ilk zeman is sa wicht
Of his, that he is worth a knycht.
Bot and zhe think zour weir to bring
Till your purpos and gud liking,
Lang trewis with hym tak sail 3e.
Than sail the mast of his men3e,
That ar bot sympill zhemarly,
Be distren3eit all comonly
To wyn thair met with thair travale.
And sum of thame neid mon thame call
With plewch and harrow for to get,
And othir ser craftis, thair met,
Swa that thai armyng sail worth ald,
And sail be rottyn, distroyit, or said ;
And feill, that now of weir ar sle,
[Fol. 147. C.]

155. merring] nethring E; hurt-
ing H.
156. The—neidway] The behowis
nedwayis E; Thou behooues need-
wise H.
158. willis] so CE; will it H.
161. Till] To EH. hym] them H.
162. ar—sa] all worthyn ar sa E;
sa worthie are and H.
163. gret] EH om.
164. has beyne] has bene E; haue
bene H.
165. zeman] 30wman E; Yeman
H.
167. and] gif H.
168. Till] To EH. your] good H.
and gud] and your E; at your H.
169. sail] EH om.
172. distren3eit] distroyit E; dys-
stroyit P; strenyed H, all comonly]
commanly.
174. neid—call] of need mon call
H; nedis but fail E.
176. ser—thair] Crafts their dayly
H.
178. sail] H om. rottyn] rousted
H. distroyit] stroyit. or] and EH.
Here follows the catchword—
And feill that now of ver are sle.
In-till a lang trewis sall de,
And othir in thair sted sall ri6
That sall cwn litill of sic mastri6.
And quhen thai thus [diswsyt] ar,
Than may 3he move on thame 3our wer,
*And sall richt weill, as I suppo6,
*Bryng 3our entent till gud purpo6."
Till this assentit thai ilkane;
And eftir syne war trewis tañe
Betuix the twa kyngis, that wer
Talit to [lest] for thretten 3heir,
And on the marchis gert thame cry.
The Scottis men kepit thame lely;
Bot yngli6 men apon the se
Distroyit, throu gret Iniquite,
Marchand-schippis that saland war
Fra scotland to flandris with war,
And distroyit the men ilkane,
And till thar oy6 thar gude ha6 tañe.
The king send oft till ask redref6,
Bot nocht thar-of redref6 ther wes;
And he abaid all tyme askand.
The trewis on his half gert he stand
Apon the marchis stabily,
And gert men kep thame leley.

180. a] the E; tha H. trevis] trewes H; trew E.
182. cwn] conn E; ken H. sic] that.
183. thus] E om. [diswsyt E] diffused (for disused) H; decuisit (!) C.
185*,186*. Found in EJ; but omitted in P. H also omits these lines. till] to.
185. Till] To EH.
186. sync] sone.
188. Talit] Tailzeit E; Taken H. [lest E] last H; rest C; see l. 204.
190. lely] leely.
192. Iniquite] crueltie H.
194. to] till. war] waire H.
195. the—ilkane] euirilkane.
196. till] to EH. thar (2)] the EH. gode] goods H.
198. thar—ther] off It redressyt.
200. trevis] trewes H; trew E.
The ded of gud schir valter steward.

While this truce lasted

Walter Stewart falls ill.

His sickness is incurable, and he dies.

He is greatly lamented.

[ Fol. 1476. C. ]

He is interred at Paisley with great honour.

The ded of gud schir valter steward.

IN this tyme that the trewis war
Lestand on marchis, as I said ar,
Walter steward, that worthy was,
At bathket a gret seknes tais.
His euill it woxx ay mair and mair,
Qhill men persaunt by his fair
That hym worthit neyd to pay the det
That na man for till pay may let.
Schrevyn, and als repentand wele,
Qhuen all wes done him ilke dele
That nedit cristin man till haf,
As gud cristyn the gast he gaf.

Than mycht men heir folk gret and cry,
And mony a knycht and ek lady
Mak in [apert] richt euill cher;
Sa did thai all that euir thair wer.
All men hym menyt comonly;
For of his elde he wes worthy.

Qhuen thai lang tyne thar dule had maid,
The corfo to paslay haf thai had,
And thar, with gret solempnite
And with gret dule, entyrit wes he.
God for his mycht his saull he bring
Quhar Ioy ay lestis but Endyng!—Amen.

204. Rubric in H—Walter Stewart here died he. At Paslay eirded syne was he. the] E om.
205. Walter] schir waltir.
206. bathket] Bathcat H; bathgat E.
207. it—ay] ay wouxx E; waxt ay H.
208. hym—to] he of need must H.
209. for] E om. till] to EH.
210. Schrevyn] schrywyn E; Shriuuen H. repentand] repenting H; repentit E.
211. him] to him H.
212. nedit—till] crystyn man nedyt till E; Christen men ought for to H.
213. mycht—folk] men mycht her men. gret] wepee H.
214. ek] mony A E; faire H.
216. comonly] commonaly.
217. tyne] quhill.
218. entyrit] erdyt E; cirded H.
219. he] mot H; E om.
After his ded, as I said aye,
The trewis that swa takyn war
For till haf lestit xiiij 3eir,
Quhen twa 3eir of thame passit weir
And ane half, as I trow, alsua,
Kynge Robert saw men wald notcht ma
Redref of schippes that war tane,
And of the men althar war slæno
Bot continuat thair mawite
Quhen euir thai met thame on the se.
He send and acquyt hym all planly,
And gaf the trewis wp oppinly,
And, in wengeans of this trespæ,
The gud erl of murreff, thomáref,
And donald Erll of mar alsua,
And Iames of douglæf with thaim twa,
And Iames steward, that ledar was
Eftir his gud brother dissef,
Of all his brothir men in weir,
He gert upon thair best maner
With mony men bown thaim to ga
In Ingland, for to burne and sla.
And thai held furth soyn till Ingland—
Thai war of gud men ten thousand—
And brynt and slew in-to thair way;
Thair fais fast distroyit thai.
And swagatís furthward can thai fair,

227. Rubric in H.—The Erle of Mavray and Dowglas, With their Oast commen to Wardal was. ded death H.
229. xiiij] thretteene H; viij E.
235. continuat] ay continuat C; ay continued H; contynowyt (omitting ay) E. mawite] mawye E; prauitie H.
238. [Fol. 64 b. E.] When two years and a half of the truce was over,
239. in] in the.
242. thaim E] them H; thair (for thaim) C.
244. brother] brotheris.
245. brothir] bruderyis.
248. burne] bryn.
249. soyn] soone H; E om.
ACCESSION OF EDWARD III. [BOOK XIX

and advance to Weardale.

[ Fol. 148. C. ]
At this time Edward of Carnarvon dies, and is succeeded by Edward of Windsor.

He had married Philippa of Hainault, and had Sir John of Hainault with him.

He was then at York.

He gathers 50,000 men.

He is 18 years old.

Till wardill quhill thai cummyn war.
That tyne Eduard of carnaravan, 256
The king, wes ded, and laid in stañe.
And Eduard, his soñe, that wes 3yng, 260
In Ingland crownyt wes for kyng;
And surname had of wyndissoyr.
He had in france beyn of befor
With his moder dame Isabell, 264
And wes weddid, as I herd tell,
Till a young lady fair of face,
That the erllis douchter wañof
Of hennaut; and of that cuntre
Brought with hym [men] of gret bounte.
Schir Iohñe of hennaut wes thar leder,
That wes richt viñ and wicht in wer.
And that tym that scottis men war
At wardale, as I said 3ow ar,
In-to 3ork wes the new maid king,
And herd tell of [the] distroying 272
That scottis men maid in his Cuntre.

A gret host till him gaderit he;
He was weill neir fifty thousand.
Than held he northwarde in the land
In haill battale with that men;he.

The scottis men all cokdaill

254. Till] To EH. wardill] wardail E; Wardall Park H.
255. carnavarane] carnauerayne E; Carnauerane H.
256. stañe] Lame (!) H.
258. wes for] wes to E; then was H.
259. had] E om. wyndissoyr] wyndisser E; Windsore H.
260. of] thar E; H om.
262. I] Ik.
263. Till] To H; With E.
265. hennaut] hennaud E; Hennault H.
266. [men EH] ane C.
267. of hennaut] the hennaud E; de Henault H. thar E om.
268. richt] E om. viss] wiss; that—that] in that time the H.
270. wardale] wardaile E; Wardall Parke H.
271. In-to] In-till.
272. [the EH] thair C.
276. northwarde] northwart.
279. all cokdaill] a day cokdaile E; they had all Cokdaill H.
Fra end till end thai heryt hai'll,
And till wardaill agane thai raid.
Thar discurreur"s, that sicht had had
Of cu"myng of the yngliß men,
To [thair] lordis thai tald it then.
Than the lord douglas in a lyng
Raid furth [for] till se thair cu"myng,
And saw that sevyn battellis war thai,
That com rydand in gud aray.
Quhen he that folk behaldin had,
Toward his host agane he raid.
The Erll sperit giff he had seyne
The Ingliß host; "3a, schir, but weyne."
"Quhat folk ar thai?" "schir, mony men."
The Erll his ayth haß [suorn] him then,
"We shall ficht with thame, thouch thai war
3eit ma eftsonis than thai ar."
"Schir, lovit be god," he said agane,
"That we have sic aôe Capitaine,
That swa gret thyng [dar] vndirta.
Bot, be saint bryde, It beis nocht swa,
Giff my consaill may trowit be.
For fecht on na maner sall we
Bot it be at our avantage.
For me think It war nane outrage
Till fewar folk aganyg ma
Avantage, quhen thai ma, to ta."
As thai war on this wiô spekand,
Our aôe hye ryg thai saw rydand

280. thai heryt[ ] had heryd. 282. had (1) has E; hes H.
290. host] ost E; Òast H. 292. The—schir[ ] That ost 3a schir
he said E; The Òast? yea Sir (he said) H.
294. [suorn E] made H; C om.
The armies meet in Weardale.

Toward thame evyn a battell braid;
Baneris displayit enew thai had.
And ane othir come eftir neir,
And richt apon the sammyn maner
Thai com, qhill sevyn battellis braid
Out-our that bye Ryg passit had.
The scottis men war than liand
On north half [wer], toward scotland.
The daill wes strekit weill, I hicht.
On athir syde thar wes ane hicht
Till the vattir doune, sum deill stay.
The scottis men in gud aray,
On thair best wif buskit ilkañe,
Stude in the strynth that thai had tane;
And that wes fra the vattir of wer
A quartir of ane myle weill ner.
Thai stude thar, battell till abyd.
And ynglið men, on athyr syd,
Com ridand dounward, qhill thai wer
To weris vattir cummyñ ner;
And on othir half thair fais war.
Than haf thai maid a-rest richt thar;
And send out archeris a thousand
With hudis of, and bowis in hand,
And gert thaim weill drink of the vyñe,
And bad thaim gang to bikkyr syñe
The scottis host in abandonne,

followed by another,
till 7 of them appear.
The Scotch are on the North bank of the Wear,
the banks of which are steep.
The Scotch are a quarter of a mile from the river.
The English ride down to the river on the other side.

[Fol. 149. C.]
The English send their archers forward,

309. a] in H.
310. anew] Inew E; anew H.
311. ane othir] a nothyr E; another H.
314. hey] hey.
315. than] thar.
316. [wer] E nei r C; neere H; see l. 323.
317. I] Ix.
319. Till] And till E; And to H.
320. thar]
323. fra] far fra H.
324. ane] A EH.
325. Thai—thar] Thar stud thai EH.
329. And] As.
332. hudis of] hudis off E; Hounds (!) H.
333. vyne] wyn.
335. abandonne] a randoun H.
And luk if thai mycht dyng thaim douñe. 336  
For mycht thai ger thame brek ary, 337  
Till haue thaim at thar will thoucht thai. 338  
Armayt men doun with thaim thai send, 339  
Thame at the watter till defend. 340  
The lord dowglaf haȝ seyn that fair, 341  
And men that richt weill horsit war, 342  
And armayt, a gret Cunpany, 343  
Behynd the battell pruely 344  
He gert hufe, to byd thar cummyng. 345  
And quhen he maid to thaim taknyng, 346  
Thai suld com prikand fast, and sla 347  
With speris that thai mycht our-ta. 348  
Donald of mar thar chiftaine waf, 349  
And archbald with hym of dowglaf. 350  
The lord dowglaf toward thaim raid; 351  
A gown on his armyng he had, 352  
And trawersit alwayis vp agâne, 353  
Thame neir his battell for till trayne. 354  
And thai, that drunkyn had of the wyne, 355  
Com ay wp endlang in a lyne, 356  
Quhill thai the battell com so neir 357  
That arrowis fell emang thaim seir. 358  
Robert of ogill, a gud squyer, 359  
Com prekand than on a courser, 360  
And on [the] archeris cryit agane, 361  
"3he wat nocht quha mais 30w thot traîne! 362  
It is the lord dowglaf, that will 363  

336. Thai ger (sic) thaim cum apôn thaim doun E. 337
338. Till] To EH; and in li. 340,
354. lord] lord of C; but EH omit of.
344. battell] bataillis.
345. hufe] howe E; hower H.
348. that] all that H.
SIR WILLIAM ERSKINE IS MADE PRISONER. [BOOK XIX.

Sum of his playis ken 3ow till!"
And quhen thai herd spek of dowglaf,
The hardyest affrayit was,
And agane turnit halely.

His takyn maid he thaim in hy;
And the folk that enbuschit war
So stoutly prekit on thame thar,
That weil thre hundreth haf thai slayñe,
And till the wattir hame [agayne]
The remanand all can thai chaß.

Schir williame of Erskyn, that waß
*Newlyngis makyn knycht that day,
*Weill horsit intill gud aray,
Chassit, with othir that war thar,
So fer-furth, [that] his horß him bar
Emang the lwmp of Ingliß men,
That with strang hand he [tane] wes then.
Bot of hym weill soyn chaynge wes maid
For othir that men takyn had.

Fra thir Ingliß archeris war slayñe,
Thai folk raid till thar host agane.
And richt swa did the lord dowglaf;
And quhen that he reparit was,

Thai mycht emang thair fayis se
Thair palyseownys soyne stentit be.
Than thai persauit soyne in hy,
That thai that nycht wald tak herbey.

But Douglas gives the signal,
[Ed. 1496, C.]
and 300 archers are slain.

Sir William Erskine, a young Scottish knight, is taken prisoner.

A retreat on both sides.

The English begin to pitch their tents for the night.

---

364. Sum] follows ken in EH.
366. affrayit] efrayit.
368. thaim] than E; then H.
maid—thaim] then he made H.
371. hundreth] hundir.
372. [agayne] agane E; againe H;
miswritten ar gayne C.
373. all] begins the line in E.
can] gan.
374. [that] thar.
375*, 376*. In CH; E om. H has
—New made Knight that samine day,
Well horsed into good array.

364. [that EH] with C.
378. That] And EH. he—wes] he
takyn wes C; wes takyn EH. For
takyn, read tane.
379. chaynge] chang E; change H.
383. lord] lord off.
385. emang] amang.
386. Thair] The. palyseownys]
palpownys E; Paullions H.
387. Than] And.
And schap till do no mar that day,
Tharfor alsua thame herbreit thai,
And stentit palȝeownys soyn in hy.
Tentis and luggis als thair-by
Thai gert mak, and set all on raw.
Twa novelreis that day thai saw,
That forrouth in scotland had beyn nañe.
Tymbrys for helmys wes the tane,
That thame thought than of gret bewte,
And alsua wounder for to se;
The tothir crakkis war of wer,
That thai befor herd neuivr eir.
Of thir twa thyngis thai had ferly.
That nycht thai wachit stahvardly;
The mast part of thame armyt lay,
Quhill on the morne that it wes day.

The Scotch keep a careful watch.

T
HE yngliȝ men thame vmbethought,
Apon quhat maner that thai moucht
Ger scottis lewe thair avantage;
For thame thought foly and outrage
To gang wp to thame, till assale
Thame at thar strynthhis in playn battale.
Tharfor of gud men añe thousand,
Armyt on horf bath fut and hand,
Thai send, beynd thair fayis to be
Enbuschit in-till a wale;
And schup thair battellis, as thai wald

The Scotch keep watch all night.
They place an ambush of 1000 men in a valley.
They make a feigned attack.

The Scotch do the same.
Two novelties were seen that day, viz. crests and cannon.

389. schap\[ shape H; schup E.  
till\] to EH.
390. alsua thame\[ thaim alsua.
391. stentit\[ stented H; stent E;  
stynit C (but see l. 386).  
soyn\] E om.
394. nocelreis\[ noweltyis E; new  
things H.
395. forrouth\[ before H.
396. Tymbrys\[ Tymbres H; Tym-
meris E; wes\] war.
399. tothir\[ other H.  
crakks\]
Apon thame till the fechting hald.

For thame [thought] scottis men sic will

Had, that thai mycht nocht hald thaim still.

For thai knew thame of sic corage,

That thai trowit strenth and advantage

Thai suld leyff, and meit thame planly.

Than suld thair buschement hastely

Behynd prek on thame at the bak ;

Sa thought thai weill thai suld thaim mak

For till repent thame of thair play.

Thair enbuschement furth send haf thai,

That thame enbuschit preualy.

And on the morn, sum-deill airly,

[In-till] the host syne trumpit thai,

And gert thair battell braid aray ;

And all arayit for to ficht,

Thai held toward the wattir richt.

Scottis men, that saw thame do swa,

Bown on thair best wiJ can thaim ma ;

And in battell planly arayit,

With baueris to the vynd displayit,

Thai left thair strynth, and all planly

Com doune to meit thame hardely

In als gud maner as thai mowcht,

Richt as thair fayis befor had thought.

Bot the lord dowglaf, that ay-quhar

417. *thame*] thai E; they H.

[thought EH] C om. sic] of sik H.

418. *Had*] H om.

420. *trowit*] thought E; sould leaue H.

421. *leyff*] leve. And meeet them in the field planly H.

422. *hastely*] halily.

423. *prek*] brek EH.

424. *mak*] wraeke H.

425. *For—of*] And make them to repent H.

416. *send haf*] sent H.

426. [In-till E] Into H; And till C. syne] soone H; hey E.

429. *battell braid*] battells brade H; braid bataillis E.


434. *can*] gan.


438. To feght they shupe them hastely H.

441. *guhar*] where H; was war E.
Set out wachis heir and thar,

[But Douglas finds out about the ambush,

Than in gret hy soyn is he went

[Fol. 159 b. C.]

Befor the battellis, and stoutly

and bids his men turn right about without breaking the ranks,

He bad ilk man turn hym in hy

and so retreat.

Richt as he [stud], and, turnit swa,

They do so, and when they come to their former place of strength,

Vp till thair strynth he bad thaim ga,

they face their foes again.

Swa that na let thar-in be maid.

And thai did as he biddin had,

And thai perçives the trick.

Quhill to thair strynth thai com agaëe ;

Than turnyt thai thame with mekill mayn,

They do, and when they come to their former place of strength,

And stude reddy to giff Battale,

Giff thair fayis wald thame assale.

Giff their fayis wald thame assale.

Quhen Inglið men haf5 seyn thai?«

And thair baneri,* swa that thai thar

Sir John of Hainault sees the

Bot turne thame as thai standand

He says the Scotch are led by a captain

And be arayit for the ficht,

And agane to thar strinth ar went.

He says the Scotch are led by a captain

3one folk ar gouernyt wittely ;

And he that ledis thame war worthy,

And he that ledis thame war worthy,
DOUGLAS FINDS A BETTER CAMPING-PLACE. [BOOK XIX.

fit to govern the Empire of Rome.

For a-viś, worship, and wisdom, To gouerne the Empyre of rome.”

Thus spak that worthy knycht that day ;

And the enbuschement, fra that thai

Saw that thai swa discouerit war, Toward thar host agane thai far.

And the battell of Ingliś men,

Quhen thai saw thai had falit then

Of thar purpoś, to thair herbery

Thai went, and lugit thame in hy.

On othir half richt swa did thai ;

Thai maid no mar debat that day.

Q when thai [that] day oundrivyn had,

Fyres in gret foysoune thai maid,

Als soynè as the nycht fallen was.

Than the gud lord of dowglaf,

That spyit had a plaś thar-by,

Twa myle fra thine, quhar mar trasty

The scottis host mycht herbery ta,

And defend thame bettur alsua

Than ellis in ony place thar-by.

It wes a park, that halely

Wes enveronyt about with [wall] ;

It wes neir full of treis all,

Bot a gret playn in-till it was.

Thiddir thoucht the lord dowglas

Be [nycytarti] thair host to bryng.

Tharfir, forouten mair duelling,

469. a-viś [anus H.; awise E.

worship] wit H.

470. Empyre [misswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.

469. a-viś [anus H.; awise E.

worship] wit H.

470. Empyre [misswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.

469. a-viś] awise H.

470. Empyre] miswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.

469. a-viś] awise H.

470. Empyre] miswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.

469. a-viś] awise H.

470. Empyre] miswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.

469. a-viś] awise H.

470. Empyre] miswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.

469. a-viś] awise H.

470. Empyre] miswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.

469. a-viś] awise H.

470. Empyre] miswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.

469. a-viś] awise H.

470. Empyre] miswritten Enpyre C.

475. battell] bataillis E; battells

478. lugit] logit.

481. [that EH] the C.

484. Then H; And than E.

485. spyit had] bad spyit.
By night, the Scotch, after having made up their fires, retire to the park.

At daybreak, the English miss the Scotch, and send out scouts to find them.

They find them in the park in Weardale.

The English also shift their camp.

For eight days nothing is done

beyond jousting and skirmishing.

Thai bet thair fyres and maid thame mair,
And syne all samynyn furth thai fair,
And till the park, without tynele,
Thai come, and herbryit thaim richt wele
Vpon the vattir, and als neir
Till it as [that] thai forrouth weir.
And on the morn, quhen it wes day,
The Ingli6 host myssit avay
The scottis men, and had forly,
And gert discurrour\'s hastely
Prek to se quhar thai var avay.
And by thair fyres persauit thai,
That thai in the park of wardale
Had gert herbery thar host all hail.
Tharfor thair host, but mair abaid,
Buskit, and evin anent thaim raid,
And on othir half the vatter of wer
Gert stent thair pal\'eownys, alfo neir
As that befor stentit war thai.
Aucht dayis on bath halffi\'s swa thai lay,
That Ingli6 men durst nocht assale
The scottys men with playne-battale,
For strinth of erd that thai had ther.
Thar wes ilk day Iustying of wer,
And scrymmyng maid full apertly,
And men tane on ather party.
And thai that tane war on a day

497. mair] mar E; yare H (which perhaps is right).
498. syne—samynyn] syne all samyn E; all samyn syn C; syne togidder H. furth] can H.
500. richt] all H; E om. wel] weill E; haill H.
501. [that] inserted for the metre; see l. 515. forrouth] beforouth E; before H.
504. away] away EH.
509. wardale] werdale E; Wardaill H.
515. thair] thar E; of H.
516. halff\'s] halff. thai lay] lay thai. bath—swa] this wise H.
On the ninth day Douglas sees a way to circumvent the English.

He takes 500 men with him, and, in the night, rides to the other side of the English host.

Half his men carry bare swords, to cut the ropes of the English tents, whilst the rest should use their spears.

On a né other changit war thai.
But othir dedis nane war done,
That gretly is apon till moir ne;
Qhill it fell, on the nynt day,
The lord dowglaf haif spyit a vay,
How that he mycht about thame ryd,
And cum apon the ferrest syd.
And at evyn him purvayit he,
And tu with him a gude menye,
v hundreth on horish, ves richt hardy;
And in the nycht, all preuely,
For-out noyis so fer he raid,
Qhill that he neir enveremyt had
Thar host, and on the ferrest syd
Toward thame sely can he ryd,
And half the men that with hym war
[He gert in hand have suerdis bar;
And bad thaim hew rapys in twa,
That thai the pail50wnys mycht ma
To fall on thaim that in thaim war.]
Than suld the laiff that forouth ar
Stab doune with spares sturdely.
And, quhen thai herd his horne, in hy
To the wattr hald doun the way.
Quhen this wes said that I here say,
Toward their fais fast thai raid,
That on that syd no vachis had.
And as thai neir war approchand,
Ane ynglið man, that lay bekand
Hym by a fyre, [said] to his feir—
"I wat nocht quhat may tyd vs heir;
Bot a richt gret [growyng] me tais;
I dremd me sair for the blak Dowla."
And he, that herd [him], said, "perfay,
Thou sall haf cauf, gif that I may!"
With that, with all his Cumpany,
He ruschit on thame hardely,
And proud palʒeownys doune he bare,
And with speris that scharply schar
Thai stekit men dispituisly.
The noyis weill soyn raið, and the cry;
Thai stabbit, stekit, and thai slew;
And mony palʒeownys doun thai drew.
A felloun slauchṭir maid thai thair,
That thai, that liand nakit war,
Hed na power defens to ma;
And thai but pite can thame sla.
[Thai] gert thame wit that gret folly
Wes, neir thar fayis for to ly,
Bot gif thai trastly vachit war.
The scottis men war sлаand thar
Thai fayis on this vіf, quhill the cry

550. vachis] wachis E; Marches H.
553. [said EH] syde C.
555. a richt] rycht a E; a H.
[growyng E] growing H; growyng C.
556. me] E om. the] H om.
557. [him EH] C om.
560. on] in on.
561. proud] E om.
562. And] E om.
564. the] als the H; E om. cry]
565. And thai stabbyt stekyt and
566. mony] E om. donn
569. drewe] threw H.
569. Had] Had EH.
570. can] gan.
571. [Thai E] They H; That C.
573. trastly] straitly H. vachit]
wachit E; watched H.
574. slaund] slayand.
575. viss] E om.
The whole of the English host is at last aroused. 
Raið thrôu the gret host comonly, 
That lord and othir var on steir; 
And quhen the dowglas wist thai veir Amrand thame all comonly, 
He blew his horne for till rely 
His men, and bad thame hald thar vay Toward the wattir, and swa did thair 
And he abaid henmast, to se 
That nane of his suld lefit be. 
And as he swa abaid hufand, 
Swa come ane with a club in hand, 
And swa gret rowtis till him raucht, 
That, had nocht beyn his mekill maucht 
And his richt souerane gret manhede, 
In-till that plað he had beyne ded. 
Bot he, that na tyme wes affrayit, 
Though he weill oft wes herd assayit, 
Throu mekill strynth and gret manhied 
Has brocht the tothir on-to ded. 

Then Douglas blows his horn, to collect his men. 

He retreats behind the rest. 

A man with a club attacks him, and nearly kills him. 

But he at last kills his assailant. 

The Scotch miss their leader. 

They determine to go and seek him. 

576. gret] EH om. comonly] commonly E; all commonly H. 
578. veir] wer. 
579. comonly] commonly. 
580. till] to EH. 
583. henmast] hindmest H. 
585. swa—husband] baed swa how- and E; abade sa hufand H. 
589. gret] E om. 
591. affrayit] effrayit. 
594. on-to] to the. 
595. to] till EH. 
596. rydyn] ridyne E; ridden H. 
601. can] gan. 
602. [read EH] can C, 
603. affray] effray.
A tutlyng of his horne herd thai.
And thai that ha[o] it knowin swith
War of his cummyng woundir blith,
And sperit at him of his abaid;
And he tald how a carll him maid
With his club richt ane felloune pay,
That met him stoutly in the way;
"That, had nocht vre helpit the mair,
I had beyn in gret perell thair."
Thusgatis spekand, thai held thar way,
Quhill to thar host cummyn ar thai,
That on fut, armyt, thame abaid,
For till help, gif thai myster had.
And, al[o] soyne as the lord dowgla[o]
Met with the Erll of murrefif was.
The Erll sperit at hym tithing
How he had far[n] in his outyng.
"Schir," said he, "we haf drawyn blude."
The Erll, that wes of mekill mude,
Said, "and we had all thiddir gane,
We had discumfit thame ilkane."
"It mycht haf fallyn weill," said he,
"Bot sekirly enew war we
To put vs in zon auentur.
For, had thai maid discumfitur
On vs that zondir passit wer,
It suld all stonay that ar heir."
The Erll said, "sen that it swa is.

604.  tutlyng] tutilling E; towting H.
609.  his] A.  richt ane] sic E; sa H.
611.  vre] fortoun E; God H. helpit] helped him H.
612.  ] He EH.
613.  Thusgatis] Thusgat E; Thusgait H.
614.  thar] the.
The Earl advises to attack the English.

Douglas tells a story.

That we may nocht with Iperdis,
Our felloune fais forf assail,
We sall it do in playn battale.”

Lord douglas said than, “be saint bryd,
It war gret foly at this tyd.
Till ws with sic anche host till ficht,
That ilk day growis of mycht,
And vittale ha[f] thar-with plente.
And in thar cuntre he[ir] ar we,
Quhar thar may cum vs na succourf;
Herd is to mak ws heir rescourf;
Na we may forra for to get met;
Sic as we haf heir mon we et.
Do we with our fayis tharfor
That ar heir liand vs befor,
As I herd tell this othir 3er
How that a fox did with a fischar.”

No/a. how the fox playt wyth the fischar.

Douglas says—
“A fisherman had a little hut near a river,
with a bed and a fire in it,
and but one door.
A dure ther wes, withouten ma.

632. Iperdis] Iupertys E; jeopard-
ies H.
633. forss] force H; for to E.
634. it do] do It.
635. Lord] The lord EH. than]
EH om.
638. ilk—growis] growys ilk day.
of] of maire H.
639. vittale hass] has wictaill.
tharnith] at all H.
641. rs] to vs H.
643. Na we ne may ferrar mete to
get E; Nor we not forray may to get
meat H.
647. I] Ik.
649. can] gan.
651. for till] for to E; fish to H.
652. that] then H. thar had] had
thar EH.
653. luge] loge. thar had] thar-
by.
655. ek] E om.
656. A—ther] And ane doore H.
withouten] for-owtyn.
A nycht, his nettis for till se
He raiʃ, and thair weill lang duelt he.
And quhen that he haf done his ded,
Toward his luge agane he 3ed,
And with licht of the litill fyre,
That in the luge wes byrnand schyre,
In-till the luge a fox he saw,
That fast can on a salmond gnaw.
Than till the dure he went in hy,
And drew ane sword delierly,
And said, "tratour, thou mon heir out."
The fox, that wes in full gret dout,
Lukit about sum hoill to se;
Bot nane ysche thar couth he se,
Bot quhar the man stude sturdely.
A lawchtane mantill than hym by
Lyand apon the bed he saw;
And with his teyth he can it draw
Atour the fyre; and, quhen the man
Saw his mantill ly byrnand than,
Till red it ran he hastely.
The fox gat out than in gret hy,
And held his way his warand till.
The man leit hym begilit Ill,
That he his salmond swa had tynt,
And alsua had his mantill brynt,

One night, on his return to the hut,

he sees there a fox, gnawing at a salmon.

He draws his sword, and stands in the doorway.

[Fol. 66 b. E.]
The fox, seeing no other way of escape,

seizes a mantle that lies on the bed,

and draws it towards the fire.

The man rushes forward to save it,

and the fox escapes.

So the man lost his salmon,

and had his mantle burnt.
Douglas sees a way of escape.

And the fox seathles gat his way.
This ensamplill I maw weill say
By 30n folk and vs that ar heir.
We ar the fox, & thai the fischer
That stekis forouth ws the way;
Thai weyné we may nocht get away,
Bot richt quhar [that] thai ly; perde,
All as thai think, it sall nocht be;
For I haf gert spy ws a gat.
Suppoós that it be sum-deill wat,
A page of ours we sall nocht tyne.
Our fayis, for this small tranontyné,
Wenys we sall weill pryéd ws swa,
That we planly on hand sall ta
To gif thame oppynly battale;
Bot at this tyme thair thought sall fale.
For we to-morne heir all the day
Sall mak alfo mery as we may,
And mak ws boune agane the nycht.
And than ger mak our fyres bright,
And blaw our hornys, and mak fair
As all the warld our awne it war,
Quhill that the nycht weill fallyn be.
And than, with all our harnaó, [we]
Sall tak our way hamward in hy,
And we sall gyit be richt graithly
Quhill we be out of thair danger,
That lys now enclosit her.
Than sall we all be at our will,
And thai sall let thame trumpt Ill,
Fra thai wit weill we be away."
Till this haly assentit thai,
And maid thame gud cher all that nycht,
Quhill on the morn that day wes licht.

A pon the morn all preualy
Thai turst harnað and maid reddy;
Swa that, or ewyn, all boune war thai.
Thair fayis, that agane thame lay,
Gert haf thair men that thar wes ded
In cartis till añe haly sted.
All that day caryand thai war
With cartis, men that slayne war thar.
That thai war feill, men mycht weill se,
That in carying so lang suld be.
The hostis bath all that day wer
In peð; and, quhen the nycht ves ner,
The scottis folk, that lyand war
In-till the park, maid fest and far,
And blew hornys and fyres maid,
And gert thame byrû bath bright & braid,
Swa that [thair] fyres that nycht war mair
Than ony tyme befor thai war.
And quhen the nycht wes fallyn wele,
With all thair harnað ilke deill
All preualy thai raid thair way.
Soyn in a moð enterit ar thai

712. trumpt] trumptyt.
718. tursy] tursyt.
719. ewyn] Euen H.
720. Thair] And thair.
721. wes] war.
722. haly] hallowed H.
723—726. H omits.
725. men mycht] mycht men.
727. all] E om.
728. and quhen] till that H. ves]
wes.
730. tu] mak thaim.
733. that (1)] at. thair—nycht]
fyres that nycht C; their fires that
night H; that nycht thair fyris
E.
736. ilke] ilka E; euirilk H.
that was a mile broad. They cross the moss on foot, leading their horses.

They lose very little, except a few sumpter-horses.

When all have crossed the moss, they are very glad, and ride homewards.

The English, next day, are astonished.

They find their traces, leading to the moss, which they dare not cross.

That had will a lang myle on braid;
Out-our that moirth on fut thai zeid,
And in thair hand thar horno led thai.
It wes richt ane noyus way;
And nocht-for-thi all that thar wer
Com weill outour it, haill and fer,
And tynt bot litill of thar ger,
Bot gif it war ony swimmer
That in the moirth wes left liand.
Quhen all, as I haf born on hand,
Out-our the moirth that wes so braid
War cummyn, a gret gladschip thai had,
And raid furth hamwarde on thar way.
And on the morn, quhen it wes day,
The ynglith men saw the herbery
Quhar scottis men war wount to ly
All woyd; thai wonderit gretyly then,
And send furth syndry of thar men
To spy quhar thai war gane away,
Qhill at the last thair traish fand thai,
That till the mekill moirth thame had,
That wes so hydwiort for till waid,
That aventur thame thar-to durst nae;
Bot till thar host agane ar gane,

740. had] was H. a-on] twa myle lang of E; twa mile of H. 742. it] And it. richt ane] rycht A E; a full right H. noyus] noy-some H.
After l, 742 H inserts four lines, and alters it. 743, 744; thus—
Bot Flaikes in the Wood they made Of wands, and them with them had:
And sykes therewith brigget they:
And sa had well their horse away,
On sik wise, that all that there were,
Came through the Mosse baith haill and feere.
743. thar] thai. See also last note.
746. ony] ony auld H. swimmer] summer E; Sowmeere H. (Summer = sumpter-horse.)
And tald how that thai passit war,
Quhar neuir man wes passit ar.
Quhen ynglið men herd it wes swa,
In hy till Consale can thai ta,
That thai wald follow thaim no mar.
Thair host richt than thai scalit thar,
And ilk man till his awn he raid.
Kyng Robert than, that witteryng had
That his men in the park swa lay,
And at quhat myscheiff thar war thai,
Ane host assemblit he in hy.
Of twenty thousand richt hardy
He send furth hað with erlis twa,
Of marche and angouð war thair,
The host in wardale till releiff;
And, gif thai mycht so weil escheiff
That sammyn mycht be thai and thair,
Thair thought thair fayis till assay.
So fell it that on the sammyn day
That the moð, as ȝhe herd me say,
Wes passit, the discurreuris, that thar
Rydand befor the hostis war,
Of athir host hað gottin sicht.
And thair, that worthy war and wicht,
At that metyng Instit of wer.
Enszenisis hye thai cryit ther;
And by thair cry persauit thair

[764. wes] had H; E om.
766. till] to EH. can] gan.
769. he] they H; E om.
772. at quhat] so E; quhat at C.
at—thar] what mischiefe then at H.
774. And x thousand men, wicht & hardy E; Ten thousand men wicht and hardy H.
775. He—hass] He has send furth E; And sent them fourth H.
768. The English host disperses.
772. The English host disperses.
776. with the Earls of March and Angus.
780. When Douglas's scouts, having crossed the moss,
784. get sight of the other host,
788. warcries are raised.
By the cries they discover that they are friends.

That thai war frendis, and at a fay.
Than mycht men se thame glad & blith, And talit to thair lordis swith.
The hostis bath met sammyn syne; Thar wes richt hamly welcummyne
Maid emang gret lordis thar; Of thair metyng Ioyfull thai war.
The Erll patrik and his menzhe
Had wittale with thame gret plente, And thar-with weill relevit thai
Thar frendis; for, the suth to say,
Quhill thai in wardall liand war, Thai had defalt of met, bot thar
Thai war relevit with gret plente.

The hosts meet with great joy.

Earl Patrick's men have plenty of provisions, which they give to Douglas's men.

All go to Scotland joyfully.

Earl Patrick's men have plenty of provisions, which they give to Douglas's men.

All go to Scotland joyfully.

King Robert welcomes them home, and rejoices at their safe return.

That thai war frendis, and at a fay.
Than mycht men se thame glad & blith, And talit to thair lordis swith.
The hostis bath met sammyn syne; Thar wes richt hamly welcummyne
Maid emang gret lordis thar; Of thair metyng Ioyfull thai war.
The Erll patrik and his menzhe
Had wittale with thame gret plente, And thar-with weill relevit thai
Thar frendis; for, the suth to say,
Quhill thai in wardall liand war, Thai had defalt of met, bot thar
Thai war relevit with gret plente.

That thai war frendis, and at a fay.
Than mycht men se thame glad & blith, And talit to thair lordis swith.
The hostis bath met sammyn syne; Thar wes richt hamly welcummyne
Maid emang gret lordis thar; Of thair metyng Ioyfull thai war.
The Erll patrik and his menzhe
Had wittale with thame gret plente, And thar-with weill relevit thai
Thar frendis; for, the suth to say,
Quhill thai in wardall liand war, Thai had defalt of met, bot thar
Thai war relevit with gret plente.

That thai war frendis, and at a fay.
Than mycht men se thame glad & blith, And talit to thair lordis swith.
The hostis bath met sammyn syne; Thar wes richt hamly welcummyne
Maid emang gret lordis thar; Of thair metyng Ioyfull thai war.
The Erll patrik and his menzhe
Had wittale with thame gret plente, And thar-with weill relevit thai
Thar frendis; for, the suth to say,
Quhill thai in wardall liand war, Thai had defalt of met, bot thar
Thai war relevit with gret plente.

That thai war frendis, and at a fay.
Than mycht men se thame glad & blith, And talit to thair lordis swith.
The hostis bath met sammyn syne; Thar wes richt hamly welcummyne
Maid emang gret lordis thar; Of thair metyng Ioyfull thai war.
The Erll patrik and his menzhe
Had wittale with thame gret plente, And thar-with weill relevit thai
Thar frendis; for, the suth to say,
Quhill thai in wardall liand war, Thai had defalt of met, bot thar
Thai war relevit with gret plente.
How gud kyng robert the bruce crownyt his young sone davie & dame Iohane his spouss.

Soyne eftir that the Erll thomaf
Fra vardale thus reparit was,
The kyng assemblit all his mycht,
And left nane that wes worth to ficht.
A gret host than assemblit he,
And delt his host in partis thre.
A part to norhame went but let,
And thair ańe strat assege wes set,
And held thame in, richt at thar dik.
The tothir part on to awnwyk
Is went, and thair ańe sege set thai;
And quhill at thir assegis lay
At the castellis, I spak of ar,
[Apert] assaltis maid thai thar,
And mony fair gud cheuelry
[Eschewyt wes full douchtely].

1. Rubric in H—The King Robert assembled there, Three Oasts, in England for to fare.
2. vardale] wardaill E; Wardall H.
7. norhame] norame EH.
8. And a stark assege has set E; And thair a staltward Siege they set H.
10. on to] vnto H; till E. awnwyk] Anwyk E; Anulke H.
11. ańe] A E; a H.

12. at] that EH. thir assegis] there the Siege H.
15. gud] EH om.
16. From E; so also H; C omits. Eschewyt] Encheued H. wes] war E; was H; the usual form is wes, which I have therefore adopted; see l. 24.
The kyng at thai castellis liand
Left his folk, as I bare on hand,
And with the thrid host held his way
Fra park to park, hym for to play,
Huntand, as all his awn It war.
And till thame that war with him thar
The landis of northumbirland,
That next scotland thar wes liand,
In fee and heritage gaf he,
And thai payit for the selys fee.
On this wiß raid he distroyand,
Qubill that the kyng of Ingland,
Throu consell of the mortymer,
And his moder, at that tyme wer
[Ledaris] of hym, that than young wes,
To kyng robert, till tret of pes
Send messyngers, and swa sped thai,
That thai assentit on this way,
Than a perpetuall pes to [tak],
And thai a mariage suld mak
Of kyng robertis soûne davy,
That than bot fiff 3eir had scarsly,
And of dame Iohane alof of the tour,
That syne wes of full gret valour.
Sistir scho was to the young king
That Ingland had in gouernyng,
That than of [eild] had sevin 3er.
[And monymens is and lettrys ser,

18. bare] bar.
24. next] neyst. scotland thar]
to scotland EH. wes] war.
30. at] that E; that at H.
31. [Ledaris E] Leaders H; Leder
C. of] to H.
32. till] to EH.
34. that] he H.
35. Suld thar a perpetuale pesst tak
E. [tak E] take H; mak C.
37. Of] With H; Off the E.
38. That fye yeeres auld was then surely H.
39. Iohane] Iane H. tour] towre H.
41. young] jing.
42. Ingland had] had Ingland.
43. [eild EH] Ingland (!) C.
3H. than—hâd] had in eild then H.
44—49. From E; CH omit.
That thai off Ingland that tyme had, 48
That oucht agayn scotland maid,
In-till that tretys wp thai gaff;
And all the clame that thai mycht haff 52
In-till scotland on ony maner.]
And king Robert, for scathess ser
That he till thame of Ingland
Had done of weir, with stalward hand,
Fully xx thousand pund suld pay 56
Of syluwr in-to gude monay.
Quhen men thir thyngis forsponkin had,
And with selys and athis maid
Fesnyng of frendship and of pef,
That neuwr for na chanef suld ce;
The maryage syne ordanit thai
Till be at berwyk, and the day
Thai haue set quhen [that] it suld be;
Syne went ilk man till his Cuntre.
Thus maid wess pef quhar wer wes air,
And syne the assegis rasit wair.
The kyng Robert ordanit till pay
The syluwr, and agane the day
He gert weill for the [mangery]
Ordane, quhen that his sone davy
Suld weddit be; and erll thomaes,
And the gud lord alfs of douglaes,
In-till his stede syne ordanit he
Devysouris of that fest till be;

48 The English give up all claim to Scotland,
and king Robert agrees to pay the sum of 20,000 pounds.

52 When this is arranged,

56 the marriage is appointed to take place at Berwick.

64 The sieges of Norham and Alnwick are raised.

68 [Fol. 67 b. E.] Arrangements are made for the wedding, and Murray and Douglas are appointed to conduct the marriage-feast.
For aine male eò tuk hym so sare,
That he on na viò mycht be thar.

His maill eò of Ane fundying
Begouth; for, throu his caild lying,
Quhen in his gret myschef wes he,
Him fell that herd perplexite.

He stays at Cardross.

At cardrosò all that tym he lay;
And quhen neir cummyne wes the day
That ordanit for the weddung wes,
The Erll and the lord dowglaò
To berwik come with mekill fair,
And brought young davy with thaim thair.

Murray and Douglas go to Berwick with prince David,
where they are met by the English queen, Mortimer,
and the princess Joan.

On othir party cumyn wer
With gret affair and rialte;
The young lady of gret bewte
Thidder thay brought with riche affair.
The wedding haue thay maid richt ther
With gret fest and solemnite;
Thair mycht men myrth and gladnesse se.

Much rejoicing takes place,
and English and Scotch are very friendly.

For full gret fest thay maid richt thar,
And Inglisò men and scottis war
To-gidder in Ioy and in solaò;
Na felloune spek betuix thaim was.
The fest a weill lang tymè held thay,
And quhen thay buskit till fair away,
The queyn haò left hir doughter thar
With gret richèò and ryall far.

73. aene—ess] a malice E; his sickness H. tuk hym] him tuk.
75. This malice off enfundeyng E; His sickness came of a fundying H.
76. Begouth for] He had tane H.
    81. weddyn.
    82. lord] lord of.
    83. To—come] Come to berwik.
    84. davy] dawy E; David H.
    85. and] and the. The Queene,
and with her the Mortimer H.
BOOK XX.]  DAVID AND JOAN ARE CROWNED.

I trow that lang quhill no lady
To houf wae gevin so richly.
The Erll and the lord dowglaco
Hir in dante resauit haf,
As it wae worthy, sekyrly;
For scho wae syne the best lady,
And the fairest, that men mycht se.

Eftir this gret solempnite,
Quhen on bath halfis levis wes tañe,
The queyne till Ingland hame is gane,
And had with hir the mortymer.
The Erll and thai that lewit wer,
Quhen thai a quhile hir convoyit had,
Toward berwik agane thai raid;
And syne, with all thar Cumpany,
Toward the kyng thai went in hy,
And had with thame the ȝounȝ davy,
And als dame Iohane the ȝounȝ lady.
The kyng maid thame fair welcummyng;
And eftir, but lang delaying,
He haf set ane parliament,
And thiddir with mony men is went.
For he thocht he wald in his lif
Croune his ȝounȝ sone and his vif
At that parliament, and swa did he;
With gret fair and solempnite
The kyng davy wes crownyt thar;
*And all the lordis at thar war;

103. The] And the.
104. danye] daynte E; great daintie
H.
105. wes] war.
107. mycht] thurstd.
109. on] of. halfis] half E; sides
H. levis wes] lewys war E; the lieue
was H.
111. the] E om.

Murray and Douglas receive her.

She was very fair.

The queen and Mortimer return to England.

[Fol. 156b. C.]

David and Joan go to visit king Robert,

who appoints a parliament,

at which David is crowned king, and Joan queen.
*And all of the Comminite, 128*
*Maid hym manrent and fewte. 129*
*And forouth that thai crownit war, 130*
The king robert gert ordane thar, 128
Gif it fell that his sone davy 130
Deit but air male of his body 128
Gottyn, robert stiward suld be 132
Kyng, and brwk [all] the Rialte, 132
That his dochter bar, mariory. 132
And at this tale suld leley 136
Be haldin, all the lordis swar, 136
And it with selys affermyt thar. 136
And gif It [hapnyt] robert the kyng 140
To pass till god, quhill thai [war] zyng, 140
The gud Erll of murref, thomas, 140
With the lord alsu of dowglas, 140
Suld hane thame in-to gouernyng, 144
Quhill thai had wit to steir thar thing; 144
And than the lordschip suld thai ta.
Heir-till thair Athis can thai ma; 144
And all the lordis that wes thar 144
Till thir twa vardanys athes swar, 144
Till obeif thame in-to lawte, 144
Gif thame hapnyt vardanys to be. 144

[Remainder of the text]

[Fol. 157. C.] Q when all this thing thus tretit wes,
And affermyt with sekirnef,
The king till cardro\textsuperscript{3} went in hy;  
And thar hym tuk sa felonly  
His seknes, and him travalyt swa,  
That [he] wist [him] behuift ma  
Of all this lifF the commou\textsuperscript{\textdegree}ne end,  
That is the ded, quhen god vill send.  
Tharfor his lettres soyne send he  
For the lordis of his Cuntre;  
And thai com as he biddyn had.  
His testament than ha\textsuperscript{8} he maid  
Befor bath lordis and prelatis;  
And till religioune of seir statis,  
For heill of his saull, gaf he  
Silu\textit{r} in-to gret quantite.  
He ordanit for his saull richt weill;  
And quhen at this wes done ilk dcill,  
“Lordingis,” he said, “swa is it gane  
With me, that thar is nocht bot a\textsuperscript{n}e,  
That is, the ded, withouten dreed,  
That ilk man mon thole on neid.  
And I thank god that ha\textsuperscript{8} me sent  
Spa\textsuperscript{\textdegree} in this lifF me till repent.  
For throu me and my warraying  
Of blud thar ha\textsuperscript{8} beyne gret spilling,  
Quhar mony saklef\textsuperscript{\textdegree} man wes slayne;  
Tharfor this seknes and this payne  
I tak in thank for my trespa\textsuperscript{\textdegree}.

151. \textit{till} to EH.  
152. \textit{felonly}\textsuperscript{]} fellely E; suddenly.  
153. \textit{His} The.  
154. [he EH] him C. [him EH]  
he C. \textit{ma} to ma.  
155. \textit{this} his.  
156. \textit{the} to, \textit{ded} death H.  
159. \textit{he biddyn} thai biddyng.  
160. \textit{till} to EH. \textit{religioune} Religions H. \textit{statis}\textsuperscript{]} Estates H.  
161. \textit{richt} E om.  
162. \textit{till} EH.  
163. \textit{His} The.  
164. \textit{the} to, \textit{ded} death H.  
165. \textit{richt} E om.  
166. \textit{at} EH om. \textit{ilk dcill} ilka-dele.  
167. \textit{Lordingis — said} He said lordingis.  
168. \textit{mon} fall H. \textit{on} so CH;  
off E.  
170. \textit{mon} fall H. \textit{on} so CH;  
off E.  
172. \textit{till} to EH; \textit{and in} II. 180,  
195.  
174. \textit{thar — beyne} has bene  
rzycht.  
175. \textit{res} war.
My fixed intention was, to make a crusade against God's foes. But, as I cannot now do this, I desire my heart to be sent to the Holy Land.

Choose therefore a knight to bear it thither."

They all weep; but he prays them to carry out his wish.

And my hert fyschit fermly waß, Quhen I wes in prosperite, Of my synnys till savit be, To travell apon goddis fayis. And sen he now me till hym tais, That the body may on na við Fulfill that the hert can deuif, I wald the hert war thiddir sent, Quar-in consautil wes that entent. Tharfor I pray 3ow euir-ilkane, That 3he emang 3ow cheif me ânce That be honest, wið, and wicht, And of his hand ânce nobill knycht, On goddis fayis myne hert to bere, Quen sault and corð disseuerit [er]. For I wald it war wortely Brought thar, sen god will nocht that I Haue power thiddirward till ga."

Than war thair hertis all so wa, That nane mycht hald hym fra greting. He bad thame leiff thair sorowyng;—

"For it," he said, "mycht nocht releif, And mycht [thaim-self] gretyly engreif."

He prayit thame in by till do

The thyng that thair war chargit to.

Than went thai furth with drery mwde, And emang thame thair thought it gude,
That the worthy lord Dowglaf,
*Quham In bath wit and vorschip waf,
*Suld tak this travaill apon hand;
*Heir-till thai war all accordand.
*Syne till the kyn that went in hy,
*And tald hym at thai thought trewly,
*That the douchty lord Dowglaf
Best schapen for that travell was.
And quhen the king herd at thai swa
Had ordainit hym, his hert till ta,
That he mast 3arnit suld it haf,
He said, "sa god him-self me saff,
I hald me richt weill payit, that 3he
Hafä chosyn hym; for his bounte
And his worship set my 3arnyng,
Ay sen I thought till do this thynge,
That he it with hym thar suld ber.
And sen 3he all assentit er,
It is the mar likand till me.
Let se now quhat thar-till sayis he."
And quhen the gud lord of Dowglaf
Wist at the kyn that spokyn haf,
He com and knelit to the kynge,
And on this viö maid him thanking,
"I thank 3ow gretly, lorde," said he,
"Of mony large and gret bounte
That 3he haf done till me feill sif,
205. worthy] worthi. lord] lord of. 206*-211*. E omits; found in CH.
208*. Heir-till] Hereto H.
209*. Syne till] And to II.
210*. at] that H.
207. at] that EH.
208. till] to EH; and in ll. 214, 217.
203. They choose Douglas to undertake the charge;
206* 207* 208* 209* 210* 211* and tell the king of their choice.
206 The king is much pleased at this, saying he too should have chosen Douglas.
212
216
220 Douglas kneels before the king,
and thanks him very heartily.
213. And—set] For Certes it hes bene II.
215. it—ber] mine heart sould with him beare H.
220. at] that EH, the kynge] so CH; thing E. hass] was.
222. viss] wiss. him thanking] his talking H.
224. large] largess EH.
225. till] to H; E om.
DEATH OF KING ROBERT.  

Sen first I come to your servit.  
Not our all thing I mak thanking,  
That she so digne and worthy thing  
As your hert, that illwymynt wes  
Of all bounte and worthynes,  
Will that I in my seemsell tak.  
For 3ow, schir, will I blithly mak  
This travell, gif god will me gif  
Laser and space so lange till liff.”  
The kyng hym thankit tenderly;  
Thar wes nane in that Cumpany  
That thai ne wepit for pite;  
Thair cher anoyus wes to se.

Obitus roberti bruss regis scocie.

Q when the lord dowglas on this viö  
Had vndirtañe so hye enprisö,  
As the gud kyngis hert till ber  
On goddis fayis apon wer,  
Prisit for his enprisö wes he.  
And the kyngis Infermite  
Woxe mair & mair, quhill at the last  
The dulfull dede approchit fast.  
And quhen he had gert till hym do,  
All that gud cristin man fell to,  
With werray repentans he gaf

228. so digne] sa dyng.
229. Illwymynt] enumynyt E; il-
ligmate H.
prowes.
231. seemsell] seemsall E; keeping
H.
232. will I] I will.
233. travell] travaail.
234. Laser] Layser E; Laiser
H.
236. Thar] Than.
237. ne] na. thai—ford] weaped
not for great H.
238. That was great sorrow for to
see H.
239. Rubric in H—Here died King
Robert, and was syne Solemnedly
buried in Dvnfermlyne.
240. hye] hey.
241. till] to EH; and in l. 234.
242. apon wer] for to weere H.
243. Prisit] Praised H.
245. Woxe] Woux E; Was H.
246. dede] death H.
247. till—do] doe him to H.
248. man—to] men sould do H.
The gast, that god till hevin couth haf
Emang his chosyn folk till be,
In Ioy, solace, and angell gle.
And fra his folk wist he wes ded,
The sorow ra3 fra sted to sted.
Thair mycht men se men rif thar hare,
And cumly knychti's gret full sar,
And thair nevis oft sammyn driff,
And as wode men thair clothes rif,
Regratand his worthy bounte,
His vit, strynth, and his honeste;
And, our all, the gret Cumpany
That he oft maid thame curtesly.
"All our defens," thai said, "allaf!"
And he that all our confort was,
Our wit, and all our goureynge,
Is brocht allas! heir till Ending;
His worship and his mekill mycht
Maid all that war with him so wicht,
That thai mycht neuir abaysit be,
Quhill forouth thame thai mycht him se.
Allaf! quhat sall [we] do or say?
For in lif thar livest ait ay,
With all our fais dred war we,
And in-till mony fer Cuntre
Of our worship ran the renoune;
And that wes all for his persoune!"

250. that] whilk H. couth haf] haiff E ; mot hau H.
251. Emang] Amang EH. folk]
252. angell] Angells H.
253. comely] comely H ; comounly E.
254. nevis] newffys E ; hands H.
of samyn] togiddier H.
255. Regratand] Regarding H.
256. vit] wyt. strynth and] his strenth EH. his (2)] H om.
257. all] haill H.
258. all] our weale H.
259. Is—allas] Allace is brought.
260. forouth] before H.
261. [we EH] I C.
263. all] hal H.
264. our] our H.
265. Is—allas] Allace is brought.
266. forouth] before H.
267. [we EH] I C.
268. fals] faes H ; nychtbowris E.
269. fer] ser E ; other H.
270. In C.
271. rais] CH ; sprang E.
272. Whilst he lived, we were dreaded everywhere.
273. It was all due to him!"
With sic vordis thai maid thair mayne;
And sekirly wonder wes nane.

For bettir gouernour than he
Micht in na Cuntre fundyn be.
I hop that nane that is on lif
The lamentacioun suld discrif
That thai folk for thair lord maid.
And quhen thai lang thus sorowit had,

And he debowalit wes cleny,
And bawlyt syne full richly,
And the worthy lord dowgla9
His hert, as it forsopyn was,
Ha9 resauit in greit dantee,
And he bowelit wes cleny,
And bawmyt syne full richly,
And the worthy lord dowglas
His hert, as it forsopyn was,
Ha9 resauit in greit dantee,

With gret fair and solenipnite
Thai haiie him had till dunfermlyne;
And hym solemnly erdit syne,
And in a fair towme in the queyr.
Bischoppes and prelatis that thar weir
Assoljeit hym, quhen the serui9
Wes done as thai couth best demif;
And syne, apnon the toder day,
Sary and wa ar went thar way.

Lord, the good H. lord] lord of.

281. [lif] lyve.
282. The lament and sorrow can
descriue H. discrif] discryve E;
descriue H.

282. [thai] tha H; that E.
284. thai—thus] that they langu
H.

285—288. The numbering in brack-
ets follows Pinkerton's edition. Lines
291—298 are really misplaced in E, and follow l. 284. The arrangement
in CH is the right one, and is here
followed.

285. [283.] debowalit] debowaillyt
E; bowelled H.
286. [294.] bawlyt] bawmyt E;
balmed H. full] E omt.
287. [295.] And—lord] The worthy

277. vordis] wordis.
word—And in a fair towme in the
queyr.

293. [287.] And] so H; spelt Ande
C; E om. towme] tumb E; Tombe
H. in] in-till. queyr] quer E;
Queire H.

297. [291.] toder] tothyr E; other
H.

298. [292.] way] so EH; way C.
ar—way] they went away H.

299. Rubric in H—Here bouned
the Lord Dowglas forward, To the
haly Land with the Brvees Heart.
Quen at the gude king beriit was,
The Erll of mwrreoff, schir thomas,
Tuk all the lande in governyng;
All obeysit till his bidding.
And the gud lord of dowglas syñe
Gert mak ane caff of siluir fyñe,
Anamalyt throu subtilite.
Thar-in the kyngis hert did he,
And ay about his haif it bare,
And fast him bownty for his fare.
His testament deuisit he,
And ordanit how his land suld be
Gouernit, quhill his agane-cummyng,
Of frendis, and all other thing
That till him parteinit ony viss,
With sa gude forsicht and sa viss
Or his furth-passyng ordanit he,
That na thing mycht amendit be.
And quen that he his leif haif tane,
To schip till berwik is he gane;
And, with ane nobill Cumpany
Of knychtis and of squyary,
He put him thar in-to thar se.
A lang way furthwarde salyt he;
Betuyx cornwale and bretanje
He salit, and left the grund of spanye
On north half hym; and held thar way

299. at] that EH.
300. mwrreoff] Murray H.
302. obeysit] obeyit E; obeyed H.
304. siluir] gold right H,
305. Anamalyt] Ennamylyt E; Enamelled H.
306. did] put H.
308. his] to EH.
311. agane] gayn.
312. Of] By H.
315. Or] Ere H.
317. huss] had.
318. till] to E; at H.
319. an] A E; him a H.
321. thar into] thar to E; in by to H.
322. furthwarde] furthwart.
323. Betuyx] For betuix. bet-yanne] bretayne E; Bærtanye H.
324. spanye] spanye E; Spainyie H.
and arrives at Seville.

Douglas arrives in Spain.  

Bot grely war his men and he 

Travaled with tempest on the se;

Bot though thai grely travalit war, 

Haill and feir thai cumyn ar. 

Thai arivit at graunt sebell; 

And eftir, in a litill quhill, 

Thar horf to land thai drew ilkañe, 

And in the touñe haþ herbery tane. 

[He] hym contenyt richt richly; 

For he had a fair Cumpany, 

And gold eneuch for till despend. 

The kyng all soyne eftir hym send, 

And him richt weill resavit he, 

And profferit hym in gret plente 

Gold and tresour, horf, and armyng;

Douglas refuses, 

saying that he will, however, 

help him against the Saracens.

The king of Spain sends for Douglas, 

and offers him treasure.

Douglas refuses, 

saying that he will, however, 

help him against the Saracens. 

The king thanks him.

Qhill till sebell the graunt com thai. 

Bot grely war his men and he 

Travaled with tempest on the se;
And the maner thar-of alsua;
Syne till his Innys can he ga.
Quhen that the king him leвит had,
A weill gret sudlorne thair he mad.
Knychtis that com of fer Cuntre
Com in gret rowtis hym to se,
And honorit him full gretumly;
And our all men mast soueranly
The yngliȝt knychtis that war thar
Honour and Cumpany hym bar.

And Douglas abides there for some
time,
and many foreign
knights come to
see him.

Douglas abides
there for some
time,
and many foreign

356

knights come to

356

see him.

356

[Fol. 160. C.]

One knight,
much esteemed,

360

had his face all
covered with

scars.

364

When he sees
Douglas's face
without a scar,

368

he expresses his
astonishment.

372

Micht in the face vnwemmyt be.
And he ansuerc thar-till mekly, And said, "love god, all tym had I Hands, mynde hede [for] till were."

Quha wald tak tent to this answar, Suld se in it vndirstandynge, [That, and] he that maid askyng
Had had hands to wer his face,

That for defalt of fence so was To-fruscit in-to placis ser, Suld haf, may fall, left hail and fer.
The gud knychtis that than war by Prisit this answar gretumly; For it wes maid with meke speking, And had richt hye vndirstanding. Apon this maner still thai lay,

Quhill throu the cuntre thai here say That the [hey] kyng of Balmeryn, With mony a mwdy sarasyne, Wes enterit in the land of spayne, All haill the Cuntre till [de]manze. The kyng of spayne, on othir party, Gaderit his host deleyuerly, And delt thame in-to battellis thre. And to the lord dowglas gaf he
The waward, for to leid and steir;
All hail the stranger is with him weir.
And the gret mastir of saint Iak
The tothir battell gert he tak.

The Reirward maid hym-[selvyn] thar.
Thusgat denisit, furth thai war
To mete their fayis, that in battale,
Arayit reddy to assale,
Com agane thame full sturdyly.

The dowglas than, that wes worthy,
Quhen he to thame of his ledyng
Had maid ane fair amonestyn
Till do weill, and na dece to dreed;
For hewynnis blif suld be thair meid,
Gif that thai deit in goddis scruif;
Than, as gud werriours and wif,
With thame stoutly assemblit he.
Thar mycht men fellonne fechting se;
For thai war all wicht and hardy
That war on the cristyn party.

*Bot ere they ioyned in battell,*
*What Dowglas did, I sall you tell.

*The Bruce’s Heart,* that on his brest
*Was hinging, in the field he kest,*
*Upon a stane-cast, and well more:*
*And said, “now passe thou foorth before,*
*As thou wast wont in field to be,*

The Spanish king gives Douglas the command of the vanguard.
The Master of St Iago leads the second battalion;
and the king himself, the rearguard.

Douglas exhorts his men.

Then Douglas takes from his neck the case with the Bruce’s heart, and casts it before him, saying, “Pass thou forward, not in black letter.
*And I sall follow, or els de.*
*And sa he diid withouten ho,
*He faught euene while he came it to,
*And tooke it vp in great daintie;
*And euer in field this vsed he.*]
So fast [thai] faucht with all thar mayne,
That of sarasenys war mony slayne;
The quhethir, with mony fell fachoune,
Mony cristyn thai dang thar doune.

Bot at the last the lord douglas,
And the gret rout that with hym was,
Pressit fast the sarasenys swa,
That thai haly the bak can ta.

And thai chassit with all thar mayn,
And mony in the cha§ ha§ slayn.
So fer chassit the lord dowglas
With few folk, that he passit wes

All the folk that wes chassand then.
He had nocht with him atour ten
Of all men that war with him thar.
Quhen he saw all reparit war,

Toward his host than turnit he.
And as he turnit, he can weill se
That all the chassaris turnyt agaïne;
And thai [relyit] with mekill mayne.

And as the gud lorde dowglas,

but, in returning, As I said air, reparand was,

428*. **de**] die H.
421. **[thai]** they H ; C om. So—
faucht] And faucht sa fast.
422. **of**] E om. sarasensy] their
servants (!) H.
423. **fell**] fele.
424. **Mony**] Mony A EH. **thai—
thur**] dang thai EH.
425. **gret rout**] Christians H.
427. **fast**] vpon H ; E om
428. **bak**] flight H. **cau**] gan.
431. **lord**] lord of.
432. **folk**] E om.
433. **wes**] war. Foorth far fra
them that chased then H.
434. **atour**] our E ; bot skant H.
438. **So CH ; And quhen the sary-
zynys gan se E.
439. **al**] E om.
440. **And**] E om. [relyit E] reeled
H; relevit C. (Here thai = the Sara-
cens; see l. 500.)
441. **lorde**] lord of EH.
442. **air**] er.
So saw he, richt besyd hym ner,
Quhar that schir willjame de sancler
With a gret rout enveremyt waft.
He wes anoyit and said, "allaß!
3one worthy knycht will soyn be ded,
Bot he haf help throu our manhed.
God biddis vs help him in gret hy,
Sen that we ar so neir hym by.
And god wat weill our entent is
Till lif and de in his seruif;
His will in all thing do sail we,
Sall na perell eschewit be
Quhill he be put out of 3one payñe,
Or than we all be with hym slayn."

With that with spurris spedely
Thai strak the horf, and in gret hy
Amang the saracenys soyne thai raid,
And rowme about thame haf thai maid.
Thai dang on fast with all thair mycht,
And feill of thame to ded haß dicht.
Gretar defens maid neutr sa quhoyûe
Agane so feill, as thai haue doyne,
Quhill thai mycht lest to gif battale.
Bot mycht no worschip thar avale
That tym, for ilkane war slayn thar;
The sarasynys sa mony war
That thai war twenty neir for Aûe.
The gud Lord douglasû thar wes slaûe,
DOUGLAS IS FOUND BESIDE BRUCE'S HEART. [BOOK XX:

And vilzane sancler syne alsua;
And other worthy knychtis twa,
Schir robert [logan] hat the tañe,
And the tothir walter Logane;
Quhar our Lord for his mekill mycht
Thair saulyis haue to hevynnis Licht!—Amen.

THE gud Lord douglaf thus wes ded;
And the sarasenys in that sted
Abaid no mair, bot held thar way;
Thair knychtis ded thar levit thai.
Sum of the Lord douglassis men,
That thair Lord [ded] had fundyn then,
3eid weill neir wood for dule & wa.
Lang quhile our hym thai sorowit swa,
And with gret dule syne hame him bar.
The kyngis hert haue thai fundyn thar.
And that haym with thame haue thai tañe,
And ar toward [thair] Innys gañe
With greting and with euill cher;
Thair sorow angry wes to her.
And quhen of keth gud schir vilzane,
That all that day had beyn at hame—
For at sa gret myschef wes he,
That he come nocht to the Iourneye,
For his Arme wes brokyne in twa—
[Quhen he that folk sic dule saw ma,
He askyt quhat it wes in hy,
And thai him tauld all opynyly,
How that thar douchty lord wes slayn
With sararynys that releyt agayn.
And quhen he wyst that It was sua,]
Atour all other he wes mast wa,
And maid so woundir cuill cher,
That all wounderit that by him wer.
Bot till tell of thair sorowyn
Anoyis, and helpis littill thing.
Men may weill wit, though nane thaim tell,
How angry, sorowfull, and how fell
Is till tyne sic ane lord as he
Till thame that war of his menzhe.
For he wes [swete] and debonar,
And weill couth tret his frendis far,
And his fais richt felonly
Stonay, throu his gret cheuelry.
The quhethir of littill effer wes he,
Bot our all thing he luft Lawte;
At tresoune [growyt he] so gretly,
That na tratour mycht be hym by,
That he mycht wit, na he suld be
Weill pwnyst of his Cruelte.

495. wes brokyne] brokyn wes.
496—501. From E; also in H;
not in C.
496. that folk] tha folkes H.
498. him tauld] tauld him H.
500. releyt] had turned H.
502. he—mast] him was.
505. till] to EH.
506. Anoyis] It noyis.
507. tell] told H.
508. sorowfull] for sorow, What
dule and sorow men make wald H.
509. Is] For H. till] to EH.
ane] A EH.

kept at home
that day by a
broken arm,
asks for whom
they grieve?

Hearing of
Douglas's death,
his greeff is
excessive.

It is needless to
say how they
were all grieved.

500

504

508

[Fol. 162. C ]

512 For Douglas
was kind to his
friends,
and terrible to
his foes.

516 He detested
disloyalty.

520
Fabricius, who warred against Pyrrhus, hated treason as he did.

Once, when Fabricius was defeated, Pyrrhus' physician offered to poison his master.

But Fabricius replied that Rome could conquer her foes without foul means, and sent the physician to Pyrrhus.

I trow, the leill fabricius,
That fra rome [to warray] pirrus
Wes send with a gret menze,

[Hait] tresoune na leñ than he.
The quhethir, quhen this pirrus had,
On him and on his menze, mayd
Añe outrageouñ discumfitour,
Quhar he eschapat throu anentour,
And mony of his men war slane,
And he gaderit añe host agane,
A gret mastir of medicyñe
That pirrus had in governyñe
Profferit to this fabricius
In tresouñe for to slay pirrus;
For in his first potacioun
He suld him gif dedly poysouñe.

Fabricius than, that woundir had
That he sic proffer till hym maid,
Said, "Certis, rome is wele of mycht
Throu strynth of Armys in-to ficht,
Till vencuñ weill thar fais, though thai
Consent to tresouñe be na way.
And for thou wald do sic tresouñe,
Thou sall, to get thi warisouñe,
Ga till pirrus, and lat hym do

521. leill] Lord H.
522. [to warray] to warry E; to wearry H; warryit C.
524. [Hait] Hated H; Luftit (!) C; Luftyt (!) E.
525. this] that H; E om.
528. anentour] anentour E (printed ane tour PJ); anentour H.
530. gaderit] had gaderyt EH. ane] his H; E om.
532. pirrus had] had pyrrus.
533. Profferit] Profferyt E; mis-written Perofferit C. to this] to E; vnto H.
534. for] E om.
535. For in-till his neyst potioun.
537. than] EH om.
538. Off that proffre that he him maid.
539. wele] welle; meekle H.
541. Till vencuss] To wencuss E; To vanquish H. wcell] E om.
544. I sall the gat A warysoun H; Thou salt ga fetch to warisoun H.
545. till] to. Ga till] Euen at H.
Quhat euir in hert hym lyis the to."

Than till pirrus he sende in hy
This mastir, and gert [him] oppenly
Fra end till end tell all this tale.
Quhen pirrus had it herd all hale,
He said, "wes neuir man that swa
For laute bar hym till his fa,
As heir fabricius dois till me,
It is als [Ill] to ger hym be
Turnyt fra way of richtwisned,
Or to consent till vikidnesd,
As at mydday to turne agane
The sone, that rymis [his] courf all playn."

Thus said he of fabricius,
That syne vencust this ilk pirrus
In playne battell throu hard fechting.
His honest lawte gert me bryng
In this ensampell her, for he
Had souerañe prïf of his lawte;
And richt sua had the lord douglas;
That honest, leill, and worthy was;
That ded wes, as befors said we;
All menyt hym, strange and prewe.
Quhen his men lang had maid murnyng,
Thai debowellit hym, and syne
Gert sett hym, [swa that] mycht be taïce
The flesche all haly fra the baïe.

546. Quhat euir him lyis on hart
that-to.
548. [him H] CE om.
549. all] him.
551. neuir] euir.
553. dois] bears H.
554. [Ill EH] eull C.
556. [to] elis. till] to EH.
558. [his EH] the C. all] E om.
560. vencus] weneussyt E; vanquish H. [ilk] same H.
563. her] now H.

[548] to tell him all the plot.
When Pyrrhus heard it,

he declares that Fabricius could no more be turned from virtue than
the sun from its course.

560 Afterwards, Fabricius conquered Pyrrhus in fair fighting.

So likewise was Douglas honest, loyal, and worthy.

Douglas's men boil his body to remove the flesh from his bones.
They take his bones with them, and depart homewards.

[Fol. 163. C.]

They return to Scotland, and bury the bones in the church of Douglas.

His son, Sir Archibald, [Fol. 70. E.] rears a tomb of alabaster to him.

The cariounye thair in halie pla$ Erdit with richt greit vorschip wa$; The Banys haue thai with thame ta$e, And syne ar till thar schippes ga$e. Quhen thai war levit of the kyng, That dule had of thar sorowyng, Till so thai went, gud wynd thai had, Thair cour$ till Ingland haf thai maid, And thair saufly arivit thai; Syne toward scotland held thar vay, And thar ar cummyne in full greit hy. And the banys richt honorabily In-till the kirk of dowglaf$ war Erdit, with dule and mekill car. Schir arch[i]bald his so$e gert sy$e Of alabast bath fair and fy$e [Ordane] a tow$e full richly, As it behufit till swa worthy.

Q when that [on] this vi$ schir vilja$e Of keyth had brought the banis hame, 592 And the gud kyngis hert alsua, And men had richly gert ma With fair affeir the sepulture, The Erll of murreff, that the cure 596 That tyme of scotland had haly,

With gan worship haȝ gert bery
The kyngis hert at the abbay
Of melros, quhar men [prayis] ay
That he and his haffe paradis.
Quhen this wes done that I deuif,
The gude Eyll gouernit the land,
And held the pure weill to warand.
The law sa weill mantemyt he,
And held in peȝ swa the Cuntre,
That it wes neir led or his day
So weill, as I herd ald men say.
Bot syne, allall! poysont wes he;
To se his ded wes gert pite.
The lordis deit apon this viȝ.
He, that hye Lorde of al thing is,
Vp till his mekill blis thame bryng,
And grant [his] grace, that thar ofspryng
Lede weill the Land, and ententif
Be to [folow], in all thair lif,
Thair nobill elderis gret bounte!
[The] afald god in trinite
Bryng ws hye vp till hevynnis blis,
Quhar all-wayis lestand liking is!—Amen.

600. [prayis] prays E; do pray H; miswritten playis C.
602. wes] E om.
604. [pury] poor H; power E.
605. law] Lawes H; lave E. mantemyt] so CE; maintained H.
607. led] E om.
609. poysont] pusonyt.
610. By a false Monk full traiterously H.
611. [The] Thir.
612. hye] hey E; H om.
613. mekill] joyfull H.
614. [his E] vs CH.
615. the Land] E om.
616. [folow E] follow H; miswritten folowor C.
617. nobill] so E; Noble H; miswritten nobillis C.
618. [The EH] Quhar C. afald] afauld E; anefald H.
Explicit liber excellentissimi et nobilissimi principis roberti de broyss scotorum regis illustrissimi qui quidem liber scriptus fuit & finitus in vigilia sancti Iohannis baptiste viz. decollacio eiusdem per manum I. de R. capellanum Anno domini Millesimo quadringentesimo octogesimo septimo.

**Epitaph.**

Epitaphium regis roberti broyss.

hic Iacet inuentus Robertus Rex benedictus;
qui sua gesta legit, repertit quot bella peregit;
Ad libertatem deduxit per probitatem
Regnum scotorum: nunc viuit in arce polorum.

[Finitur codicellus de virtutibus et actibus belli-
cosis, viz. domini Roberti bryf, quondam Scottorum regis illustrissimi, Raptim scriptus per me Iohannem Ramsay, ex iussu venerabilis & circumspecti viri, viz. magistri Symonis lochmaleny de ochtirmunsye, vicarij bene digni, Anno domini millesimo quadringentesimo octuagesimo Nono.


Desine grande loqui, frangit deus omne superbum;
Magna cadunt, inflata crepant, tumefacta premuatur;
Scandunt celsa humiles, trahuntur ad yma ferocees;
Vincit opus verbum, minuit lactantia famam.
Per ea viscera marie virginis que portauerunt eterni patriis filium. Amen.—E.]

Here endes the booke of the Noblest King,
That euer in Scotland yet did ring,
Called King Robert the Bryce,
That was maist worthy of all ruce;
And of the Noble & good Lord Dowglas,
And mony ma that with them was.—II.
How the good wife taught her daughter.

A Dictary.
[How the good wife taught her daughter.]

[The two following pieces are printed here because they immediately follow "The Bruce" in the St John's College MS. They are in the same handwriting as "The Bruce," and were no doubt written at the same time, viz. in 1487.

Of "How the good wife taught her daughter" there are at least eight copies extant. They are numbered and described at p. xiv of "The Hystorie of the Moste noble Knight Plasidas, and other rare pieces, collected into one book by Samuel Pepys, and forming part of The Pepsian Library at Magdalene College, Cambridge. Printed for the Roxburgh Club, 1873," edited by H. H. Gibbs, Esq. Following Mr Gibbs' numbering, the copies are as follows:

1. A version reprinted in the volume just mentioned, pp. 163—171, said to have been derived from a MS. "reserved long in the Studie of a Northfolke Gentleman," and first printed in 1597, with the following Title-page:

THE | NORTHREN | MOTHERS | BLESSING. | The way of Thrift. | Written nine yeares | before the death of G. | Chaucer. | LONDON, | Printed by Robert Robinson for | Robert Dexter. 1597. | In 33 seven-line stanzas, the last three lines being much shorter than the first four, as in Nos. 5, 6, 7, and 8. Some of the stanzas are irregular. It is proper to add that "The Way to Thrift" is a separate poem, of 71 lines, beginning—"Lord God what is this worldes wele," and ending—"And from solace turnes to suddain sorrow;" reprinted in The Hystoric of Plasidas, pp. 173—175.

2. A copy in MS. Kk. i. 5 in the Cambridge University Library, printed in Ratis Raving, &c., ed. Rev. J. R. Lumby (E. E. T. S. 1870); pp. 103—112, and entitled "The Thewis off Gudwomen." It consists of 316 lines, in a similar metre to that here printed, and is of the same type. See further remarks below.


5. A copy in Porkington MS., No. 10, leaf 135, back, entitled "The good wyfe wold a pylgremage." Printed in the same volume, pp. 39—43. In 14 stanzas, the metre resembling that of No. 1.


7. A similar copy in MS. R. 3. 19 in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge. The collations with No. 6 are given by Mr Furnivall.

8. A copy in the Loscombe MS., entitled "How the Goode Wif thauth

1 Now MS. cxxx in the possession of Lord Ashburnham; described in Piers Plowman (B-text), pref. p. xxi; ed. Skeat.
hir Doughter;” printed in 1838 by Sir F. Madden, and again by Mr Hazlitt, in his Early Popular Poetry, vol. i. In 35 stanzas; metre similar to that of No. 1.

At p. xxi of The Historye of Plasidas, Mr Gibbs gives a harmony of the copies numbered 1, 6, 7, and 8, which more or less resemble each other. No. 5 is in a similar metre. The copies to be compared with that here printed are therefore Nos. 2 and 4. Of these, No. 2 is expressed in different language, and can only be compared as regards the general sense; but No. 4 is no other than a different copy of the very same type of the poem, and agrees sufficiently closely with the text to admit of collation. I denote the text here printed by the letter A, and the text printed by Mr Lumby by the letter B. The following is the general scheme, shewing the corresponding lines of the two versions.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Version A (here printed)</th>
<th>Version B (ed. Lumby)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1—54</td>
<td>1—54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>55—68</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>69—80</td>
<td>55—62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>81—110</td>
<td>63—74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>111, 112</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>113—116</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>117—166</td>
<td>77, 78</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>167—170</td>
<td>79—128</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>171—210</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>211—218</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) [235, 236]</td>
<td>(a) 179, 180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) [241, 242]</td>
<td>(b) 183, 184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) [237, 238]</td>
<td>(c) 185, 186</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>219—234</td>
<td>187—202</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a) 235, 236</td>
<td>(a) [179, 180]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(c) 237, 238</td>
<td>(c) [185, 186]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>239, 240</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(b) 241, 242</td>
<td>(b) [183, 184]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>243, 244</td>
<td>like 203, 204</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>245—254</td>
<td>205—214</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>255—272</td>
<td>215—218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>273, 274</td>
<td>219—236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>275—278</td>
<td>237, 238</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>279—296</td>
<td>239, 240</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>297, 298</td>
<td>like 241, 242</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>299—302</td>
<td>243—260</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>303—306</td>
<td>261—264</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>265—316</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Such verbal variations as seemed to me to be worthy of notice are given in the footnotes.

I must add that, in the marginal summary, I have copied Mr Lumby’s words where practicable, for the convenience of the reader.]
Incipiant documenta matris ad filiam.

THE gud wif schawis, the best scho can,
Qhilk ar the thewis of a gud woman;
Qhilk Gerris women be haldin deir,
And makis pouer women princis peir;
With sum ill techis and Ill thewis,
That followis foull women & schrewis.
As to the first, men suld consyder
That womanis honor is mair slyder,
And eythar blekyt be mekill thing,
As farest roò soyne takis fadyng.
A woman suld haue cuir raddour
Of thing that greif mycht hir honour;
With pite and humilite,
And litill of langage for to be.
Nocht lowd of lauchtir, na of langage crouò,
And euir do sum gud to the houb;
Nocht oyò of tratlyng in the touò,
Na with men for to rowk & rowò;
Suet and hamly, sempill and coy,
With fenòit fair nocht mak our moy.
Nocht nyse, proude, na our delicat,
Na contrefet our gret estat;
Favour na dedis of dishonour,
Kep vorschip till all creatour;
Be nocht lefull tratlyngis till heir,
Na till reherò, quha vald thaim speir.

1. the] fore.
2. the] B omits.
4. makis] B omits (better).
5. techis] manneris. Ill (2)] B om.
8. mair] tendyr &.
11. haue cuir] ay have.
16. do—thò] doand gud in her.
17. of] na.
18. men—to] no zonge men. ò]
20. fenòit] fenòand.
22. our] nocht our.
25. till] to.
and obedient;     Till hir frendis obeysand be,
not too gay in     In gudly thing that may supple;
dress,            Nocht delicat in hir clothing,
to make folks     Bot playn maneir and gudly thing.
envious;         Nocht our costlik, na zeit sumptuounf,
not to dress for   To mak folk at hir Invyouf;
show,            Na covat nocht clething mair deir
lest she be       Na be resone hir stat suld feir;
deemed a light    And thouch scho be cled precisely,
woman.           Conat nocht to be seyn for-thi.
[fol. 164 b. C]   Quhen scho is proude to schawe hir than,
There are proper    Is taknyng of aue euill woman;
times for women    Bot quhen it aw with reson to be,
to shew themselves, To schaw hir than is honeste,
but it should be    With suet gud rownd contyrnans;
done with         Nocht our fer prey hir till avans.
modesty.         Till schaw hir pryd, that men may se,
God honours        That is bot pomp and vanite.
lowliness.         Bot cuir with dreid and schamfulnes
After pride comes    Scho suld draw to the lawast plaft,
shame.           And erar lawar place to tak
                Na hear, and be put abak.
                God dois honour till lawlynas,
                Quhen prid is pwnyst in all plaft,
                Quhilk in women is mair to blame,
                For eftir pryd oft followis scham.
                Nocht than thai suld be honest ay
                Eftir thair estat ilk day,

27.  obeysand] obeydient.
28.  thing] thingis.
29.  delicat] outragouss.
32.  folk] vthir.
34.  hir—feir] suld hir effeir.
35.  preciously] honestly.
38.  taknyng] takin.  aue euill] a
licht.
43.  Till] To.  pryd] proud.  that] at.
44.  That—pomp] Is pryd, wangible.
48.  hear and] fra her place.
49.  till] to.
51.  mair] maist.
54.  estat ilk] stat euilk.
And hear honour, bettre thing,
And lawar stat, lakar clothing.
For pryde gais no thing be the claif,
Bot be the hert that woman haf.
For sum will be sa stoutly cled,
Or thai will crab thar men in bed,
That half the riches that he haf
Sall scant be worth his viis claf.
Than quhen thai cled ar our statly,
Men will presoyme na gud, treuly,
Bot that scho does it for paramour;
And thus-gat faid sall hir honour.
Tharfor the best thing is, I wat,
Is to be cled eftir thair estat.
Kepe thame fra delit nocht variabill,
And fra all dedis dishonerabill,
Nocht fra the deid all anerly,
Bot fra all that is Ill likly.
Fle ill folk and suspekt place,
Gret lak followis of Ill liklyname;
For euir dishonorit Cumpany
Fadis all honour comonly.

Dant nocht madenys our vantonly,
Na feyd thame nocht deliciously;
For metis and drynkis deliciously
Drawis to lichery : men sais thus.
Na let thame nocht go to thar will
Bot it weill suddane be thair-till.
Na to clerk-playis na pilgrimage,

Dress should be suitable to the rank in life.

Some men's riches are of less value than their wives' clothes.

Too fine clothing is dishonourable.

Keep women from all dishonourable deeds.

from all suspected places.

Bad company damages character.

Give not women too delicate food or drink.

Let them not attend clerk-plays or pilgrimages.

See insertion in B, II. 55—62.
Perhaps better omitted.
In margin of A—vel vakabile; walable B.
dead.
Bot nocht fra.
thing that.
Let not young people be together alone.

After seven years of age, nature is strong.

Great harm comes thus.

It were better to guard against such harm.

Brothers and sisters often perish thus.

Let them not dance or sing publicly,

nor "run at bars."

Bot thar be vith thaim vif folk of age.
Thoill thaim nocht rage with rybaldry,
Na mengill thame with neuir vith ladry.
Northir nycht nor day to hant allane,
That has beyn ded of mony aene,
All be thai neuir so syb no tendir;
For nakit lying lufrent will gendir.
Fra thai be passit sevin seeir and mair,
Natur spryngis and will nocht spair;
Suppoft no man will thame mystrast,
The lang acquyntans will nocht lest
Vith fors of nature; and sutedte
Of the fals fend, that is so slee,
Drawis sic plesand acquyntans
Throu 3outhede and throu ignorans.
And 3onthede can no perells cast
Quhill at all be perist at the last.
Than "had I wittyn!" will thai say,
With mony "allas" and harmesay.
Than war it bettir forsee the Ill
Or sic mysfortoun fall thame till.
For, as men redis in ald storys,
Ten thousand tynt ar on this vif
Of sistir and brothir in sic lik caft,
That banyst syne fra frendis waft,
In strange rewmys fled for schame,
That durst neuir eftir be seyne at hame.
Kepe thame fra giftis to gif or craff,
Or billis of Amowris till resaff;
Or zeit till dalf in-to the ryng,
Na oppinly in the rew to syng,
Na ryn at bares in the vay;
Bot hald thair Innys gif thai vill play.

111. Na giftis gyf na drowreis
112. Or billis] Na bill. till to.
Oyf nouthir flying, sturt, no striff,
Pref nocht to greiff nouthir man na viff.
In thrift strif ay with hir nychtbour,
Quha best can thrif bot dishonour.
Pref nocht in fest to syt our hye,
Na euire day in lik prowde be;
Na our cleyn vesching on verk-dayis,
Na on the verkday gang to playis.
Flawm nocht na flurid that vill fade,
To mend the mak that god has made,
Vith paynteyn vatteris to ger hir scheyne:
On haly dayis hir hyde hald cleyne:
Nocth with colouris na vith pantre,
For sic thing is bot geglotrye.
Schaym is, to day be quhit and rede,
And vallowit on the morn as lede,
Kep bydding ay, and lyf clenyly;
Thank god, and luf hym yhandly.
Be euir of pure folk pyteabill,
Do almus deid, be cheritabill,
Gif nane Ill word behynd thar bak,
And loyf all leid, and no man lak.
And gif scho be in goddis band,
Be leil and trew till hir husband,
And gracious ay till hir mënche.

Let them not indulge in strife,
[Ped. 165 b. C.]
but vie with their neighbours in thrift.

Be not proud,
not lazy on workdays.

Let not women use painting;

for it is a shame to be white and red one day,
and faded the next.
Keep the hue of nature.

Be piteous to the poor.

Speak well of people behind their back.

Let a wife be loyal to her husband.

let them not indulge in strife,
Kepad in houshald honeste;
Till all folk suet and debonar,
With gudly deid at hir power.
Be ferme of hed, bath fut and hand,
Nocht oft in-to the strete vaverand;
For vaveryng betakynmis vilsumnas,
Vanvit, velth, or wantownas.
Or ellis to sek sum Cumpany,
Quhilk war nocht lik to be gudly.
Bot euir hald rowme and playn maneir,
Euir hald hir fallowschip till hir feir.
Fle fra diffamyt Cumpany;
Lik drawis till lik ay comonly.
Luf nocht gret sleping na zeit sucinas,
For mekill Ill cummys of ydilnas.

[Fol. 166. C.]
Nocht leif to vantoune giglotris,
Kepe feris of women that ar vifì;
And euir conforme hir to the best
Of women that ar vorthyest.
Do na thing that lik Ill may be,
Gif na occasioun for till le;
For quhen scho dois that is lik Ill,
Trast nocht that folk will hald thaim still.
Thoch it be neuir so secretly,
Trast weill, it beis nocht hyd for-thi;
SuppoO scho heir of it na thing,

144. in houshald] her husbandis.
146. deid] wyll.
147. bath] B om.
148. into—strete] in stret to be.
152. Quhilk] At.
155. diffamyt] desamyt.
156. till] to.
159. vantoune] wantoune.
160. that] at.
162. vorthyest] worthyst.
163. lik Ill] ill yk; see l. 165.
164. till] to.
Folk will nocht leiff of thar demyng.
Hant nocht vith men our anerly,
All-thouch thai be neuir sa worthy.
Na gang nocht allane hir erand,
Tak child or madyn in hir hand;
It is na poynt of honeste
A gud woman allane to be
In cumpany of mony año;
And mekill les of año allañe.
Trast weil, it is año euill custum;
For na folk will the gud presun;
And quhen scho passis hir erand,
Byd nocht apon it lang dremand,
Na syt nocht doune to hald talkyng
Quhill scho forget hir hame-gangyn.

Think quhat scho has till do at laymé,
And euir be dreand till haue blaymé;
Womyn that has año vantoune hert
Ane hour or twa thinkis bot año stert.
Gif men thame withgang wantonly,
Syne will thai couat the mastry;
Thar is no thyng thai couat mair
Na fredoine, fawyng, and gud fair;
Na thai vald neuir repreuit be,
Na zisit correkit in na degré.
Thai suld kep laute, with all mycht,
And mast quhar thai haf laute hycht.
Hate nocht but gret caŭs manifest;
The fersit luif euir be luift best;

Seek not men's company.
Go not alone on errands.
It is no point of gud custum
for women to be out alone.

Be not long on errands.
Think of what is to be done at home.
Women forget how time flies.
Women like to rule.

but should be obedient.

Indulge not hatred.
Stick to a first love.
That scho serwe nocht to haue repruf
For vnaute to forset luff,
And vyn lufrent of hir menȝe.

Fra drunkyn folk and taverne fle.
Be of gud prayer, quhen scho may,
And heir meʃ on the haly day.
For mekill grace cumis of praying,
And bringis men ay to gud ending.
And in the kirk kepe our all thing
Fra smyrking, keking, and bakluking;
And efʃr noyne, on the haly day,
Owthir pray, or sport at honest play.
But leif set nocht thi hert to luff,
For efʃr followis gret repruff.

Be of gud prayer, qidien scho may,
Go to church.
And heir meʃ on the haly day.
For mekill grace cumis of praying,
And bringis men ay to gud ending.
And in the kirk kepe our all thing
Fra smyrking, keking, and bakluking;
And efʃr noyne, on the haly day,
Owthir pray, or sport at honest play.
But leif set nocht thi hert to luff,
For efʃr followis gret repruff.

Leif thi awn will and tak consale,
Or it sall turn the to tynsale.
Tayt nocht with men, na mak raging,
For oft it takis aʃe foull ending;
It is aʃe takyn of foull women
To tyg and tayt oft with the men.

Follow advice.

Tayt nocht with men, na mak raging,
For oft it takis aʃe foull ending;
It is aʃe takyn of foull women
To tyg and tayt oft with the men.

Be nocht lefull chargis to tak,
Na erand ber, na message mak,
For thai condiciones ar of barnys;
At eyn nocht seis, hert nocht ʒarnys;

199, 200. That sche of Inf have
neuer repruf To do wnlawte to hir
luʃe (sic) B.
201. Press to be lowyt with her
menȝe B.
203. of gud] leif of.
205. grace] gud.
207, 208. And our al thinge kep
her in kirk To kek abak, to lauch, or
smyrke B.
209. noyne] wnce.
210. sport] play. After l. 210, B
inserts 2 lines —To Reid bukis or lere
weinge, Be occupeid cuer in sum
thinge.

199, 200. That sche of Inf have
neuer repruf To do wnlawte to hir
luʃe (sic) B.
201. Press to be lowyt with her
menȝe B.
203. of gud] leif of.
205. grace] gud.
207, 208. And our al thinge kep
her in kirk To kek abak, to lauch, or
smyrke B.
209. noyne] wnce.
210. sport] play. After l. 210, B
inserts 2 lines —To Reid bukis or lere
weinge, Be occupeid cuer in sum
thinge.
Thus our all thing, as air said I,
Kepe thame fra cancryt Cumpany;
For quha dissamyt is, or wik,
Vald all the layff war to thame lik;
Quha smyttit war, wald all var swa,
And slanderit folk vald euir hane ma;
Bot tak sampill ay by hir nychtbour,
Gif euir scho thinkis to haff honour.

Gif madynnis euir gud teching,
And doctryne thame quhill thai ar zing,
In keping with a gud mastres,
Quhilk keennis vertues, mair and les;
And chasty thame quhill thai ar cheld,
Quhill visdome cum throur vit in eld.

223. women suld] suld women.
225. savis—tym] kepis thaim oft tymis.
228. vikit] wykit.
230. for-outen] without a.
233. do if] dud (for do't).
234. is] (by mistake for it).

So women should be kept close,
and not allowed to see wicked ways.

Such restraint may be used for their good.

These rules should be particularly observed with the young.
Correct girls while young.

224] 224. is] war.
230, 240. B omits,
243—246. B has—And ȝheit weil
mar suld madenis ȝhinge ȝe stratly
kepit with gret awinge; In teiching
with a gud maistress, Quhilk knawis
gud thewis, mar & less,
247. chastly] chaiste; see U. 259,
278. cheld] child.
248. vit—eld] wyt or eild.
For 3outhede euir enclynis to vice,
For seilden fynde we barnys vi$	ext{f}$.
Thow may in 3outhede ty$	ext{f}$ a cheld
That for na gold wald do it in eld.
For-thi 30ung lordis ar put in cure,
Quhill visdome cum thai$m$ be nature.
For falt of aw and of teching
Bryngis thame oft to mysgouernyng;
Quhilk and thai had in thair 3outhage,
Quhill thai of visdome had knawlage—
(And chasty thame quhen thai do my$	ext{f}$,$$	ext{f}$)
Our rekles thoula$	ext{f}$ wantoun is)—
Thai suld be chast and cheritabill,
Worthy women, wi$	ext{f}$ and abill,
And eft$	ext{f}$ cum to gret valour,
And do thair frendis gret honour.
And quhen thai get nane instructione,
Na for mysdeid ma pwnycioune,
Bot lettis thame follow thair vantownes,
And favouris thame in thair vikkidnes,
Of all thair Ill thai haue the vit;
And, do thai weill, the mast merit.
For oftymes frendis, as men redis,
Ar damplit for thar barnis dedis.
Quha will kep bath fra perishing,
Tak tent, and kep wele thus teching;

249. euir] ay.
child] child.
252. it] B om.
253. in] to. After l. 254, B inserts 4 lines.
256. Gerris madenis oft tak ili end-
inge B.
257. Quhilk and] i.e. which if; referring to teching. Lines 259, 260 are out of place; see U. 275, 276.
259. chasty] chaste.

260. Fore wantone thouloue wantoun is.

Is B.
265. get nane] haf na.
266. mysdeid ma] thar misdeid.
267. follow thair] flow in.
270. mast] mar.
271. as—redis] have no dreid.
272. dedis] deid. Here B adds two lines.
274. Teich thaim in 3outhed our all thinge.
And pwnys thame quhen thai do myf,
And rekles or our wantoun is,
And let thame nocht haf all thar will,
Bot chastly thame quhen thai do Ill.
Bettir is with chastly thame mend
Na saull and Iiff bath tak Ill end.
And kep thame fra neyd and mystair,
That pouerte gar thame nocht mysfair;
For pouerte makis mony Ill woman
Quhilk, and thai had a thrifty man,
With gudly sufiand lyffing,
Thai wald neuir forfalt, for na thing.
For oft tymes vrechit neidliking
Sic mysteris haldis madyinis In,
That thai ar pynit with pouerte,
Quhilk gret neid gerris thar hertis de;
And may nocht, for thair vrechitnes,
Gret couatif, and gredyines,
Put thame in souundred to profit.
Thus of thar Ill thai haf the vit,
And all the charge haill of thar syn
That neid and pouerte puttis thaim In.
Bath plicht and perell on thaim lyis,
That tynis thar barnys on this wif.
Thai haue no craft; how suld thai liff,
Quhen frendis will thame na thing gif?
Than is thar nocht bot do or de;

and great need makes their hearts die,
so that they come to no good.

Great peril is theirs, who thus lose their children.
On neyd thus mon thai fulis be.
And syne, quhen thai haf tane a fall,
Than wary thai thair frendis all,
And puttis thame out of goddis grace;
Thus bath ar tynt throu vikkidnað.

Explicit documentum matris ad filiam. per manum
J. de R. capm.

302. neyd] fors.
303—306. Not in B; which has 48 lines in place of them.
A Dietary.

This poem, here turned into Lowland Scottish, is attributed to Lydgate. There are several versions of it. One in MS. Harl. 2251, foll. 4, 5, was printed by Mr Halliwell in his Selection from the Minor Poems of Dan John Lydgate for the Percy Society, 1840, pp. 66—69. Mr Halliwell remarks that "the poem is very common in manuscript, but several of the copies vary considerably from each other. It may be sufficient to refer to MS. Harl. 116, fol. 116; MS. Oxon. Bernard. 1479; MS. Rawlinson, Oxon. C. 86; MS. Arundel 168; MS. Sloane 775; and MS. Sloane 3554, which contains a Latin version. Ritson has inserted this in his list of Lydgate's works in two places, under Nos. 55 and 61." Another copy is in MS. Lambeth 853, which Mr Furnivall has printed, side by side with the Latin version from MS. Sloane 3534 [3554?], in his Babees Book (E. E. T. S. 1868), pp. 54—59. The copy in the Lambeth MS. has its stanzas arranged in a different order from that of the Latin version; but the present copy both follows the order of the Latin version exactly, and translates it closely. The metre, be it observed, is that of Chaucer's Monkes Tale.

Incipit documentum notabile.

I.

For heill of thy body, kep wele fra cald thi hede;
Ete no raw met, tak gude heid thar-to;
Drink hailsome aill, feyd the on licht bred,
With appetit rif fro thi met also.
With agit women fleschly hauect nocht ado.
Apon thi slepe drink nocht of thi cowpe;
Glad toward bed [and] at morow, both two;
And oyf neuir late for to sowp.

II.

And gif so beis that lechis doith the fale,
Than tak gud hede till oyf thyngis thre,

6. Apon thi slepe Lat. post somnum.
7. [and] inserted to make sense; see Lat. version.
A DIETARY.

Eat temperately, work moderately,
be meek and content,
not grudging, but cheerful.

Temperat dyet, temperat travaule,
Nocht malicins for none aduersite;
Mek in troubill, glad in pouerte,
Rich of litill, content with sufficians,
Neuir grunching, bot mery lik thi degre;
Gif phisik lakís, mak this thi gouernans.

III.

Believe not every tale; be not too hasty, nor violent to the poor, but courteous in talk.

To euere tale soyne gif thou na credans, Be nocht hasty nor sodanly vengabill; To pouver folk do no violans,
Curtañ of langage, of feding mesurabill; On syndry metis nocht gredy at the tabill; Of fedyng gentill, prudent in dailians,
Clefñ of toung, of word nocht dissavable, To say the best set alwayis thi plesans.

IV.

Hate double-faced people.

Haue in dispit mowthis that beyn downbill, Suffer at thi tabill no dissencioune; Haue in dispit folkis that beyn trowble;
Of fals rownarís and of fallacioune Within thi court suffer no diuisioune; Quhich in thi houshald sall cañf gret encreñ Of all weillfair, prosperite, and fusioune, And with thi nychtbour liff in rest and peñ.

V.

Be clothed according to your rank.

Be clynly cled efiñr thine estat; Pañ nocht thi boundis, kep thi prømeñ belif. With thre folkis be nocht at debat;
First, with thi bettir bewar for to striff; Agane thi fallowís na querellis to contrif; With thi subiect to striff it is gret schame;
Quharfor I consell the to prescru all thi liff Till liff in peñ, and get the a gud name.
VI.

Fyre at morow and toward bed at ewe,
Aganis mystis merk and air of pestilens;
Be tymly at með, thou sal the bettir eschew;
First at thi rysing, do to thi god reuerens;
Wise[\(t\) the pouer with ententif diligens,
Of all in myster haf ay compassioune;
And god sal send bath grace and Influens
The till encre\(\phi\) and thy possessioune.

VII.

Suffer no surfattis in thi hou\(\phi\) at nycht,
Be war with reirsuppers \& of gret exce\(\phi\);
Of nodding hedis and of candill-licht,
Of sleuth at morow and sluy\(\)imeryng Idilnes,
Quhich of all vice is chef porteress.
Voyd all dronkyn-lewlear\(\)s and lychours,
Of all vnthrifty evill the masteres,
That is to say, dy\(\)l-player\(\)s and hazardour\(\)s.

VIII.

Eft\(\)ir met be var, mak nocht lang to slepe;
Hede and stomok preserue ay fra cald;
Be nocht pensiff, of grethoucht tak no kepe;
Eft\(\)ir thi power maynteme ay thi houshald.
Suffer in tyme; in thi richt be bald;
Swer no athis, no men to begile.
In 3owth be lusty, sad quhen thou art ald;
No varldly Ioy lestith bot a quhile.

IX.

Dyne nocht at morow befor thine appetit,
Cleyne air and walking mak\(s\) gud degestioune;

Have a fire morn and eve.
Rise early, and say your prayers.
[44 Fol. 168 b. C.] Visit the poor, pity the needy, and God will reward you.
Allow no surfeits, nor eat into suppers, nor sit up nodding by candle-light.
Have nothing to do with drunkards, liars, lechers, and dice-players.
Do not sleep long after meals; and keep both head and stomach from cold.
Live according to your income.
Swear not to deceive.
This world’s joys will change.
Do not dine before you have an appetite.
Drink not between meals, and avoid salt
meat.

Betuix malys drink nocht for na plesand delit,
Bot thrist or travale be the occasioune.
And salt met doith gret oppressioune
To febill stomokis, quhen thai can nocht restreyne
Fra thingis contrar to thair complexioune;
Of gredy handis the stomok has gret peyne.

Thus in two thyngis stondeth all the velth
Of soull and body, quho so lest thame sew;
Modreth fude giffeth to a man his helth,
And all surfat doith fra hym remew;
And cherite is to the saulis dew.
This rescript both is of no potyngary,
Of master Anton nor of master hew.
Till all indifferent richeg is dyetary.

Explicit documentum valde vtile, quod1 I to 30w, &c.

1 Written merely as "q," with a stroke through the tail.

75. Modreth] Lat. moderata. 76. Mexreth] Lat. debit.
77. saulis] for saule; no doubt emitur.
78. both] Lamb. bouzt; Lat. anime.
79. altered to suit the metre; Lat. anime.
80. dyetary] miswritten dyetry.
dew] Lat. debita.
NOTES.

SCHEME SHEWING THE REFERENCES TO JAMIESON’S EDITION.

N.B.—The division of the poem, in this edition, into 20 Books, and the numbering of the lines, are exactly copied from Pinkerton’s edition (extra lines being marked with an asterisk), because it is to his edition that the references in Jamieson’s Scottish Dictionary are made. Hence Jamieson’s Dictionary serves equally well for the present edition. It is most extraordinary that Jamieson should, in his own edition, have divided the poem into fourteen books, thus introducing a new system of references, for which his own Dictionary is useless!

To compare any passage in the present edition with the corresponding one in Jamieson, observe the numbering of the folios marked E. Thus the first line on p. 81 is marked “Fol. 12. E.,” and answers to the “Fol. 12 a.” in Jamieson, p. 68. The 1863 reprint of Jamieson follows the old edition page by page, a very convenient arrangement.

Another method of comparing the present edition with Jamieson’s is to employ the following scheme.

Here “Order A.” signifies the arrangement in Pinkerton’s and in the present edition, an arrangement also followed in Jamieson’s Dictionary; whilst “Order B.” refers to the arrangement in Jamieson’s edition. I omit notice of slight differences in the number of the lines in a Book. The “breaks” below shew where certain Books commence together.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Order A.</th>
<th>Order B.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I. 1—630</td>
<td>I. 1—630</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. 1—194</td>
<td>&quot; 631—824</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; 195—589</td>
<td>II. 1—395</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. 1—534</td>
<td>&quot; 396—929</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; 535—762</td>
<td>III. 1—223</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. 1—774</td>
<td>&quot; 229—1003</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. 1—656</td>
<td>IV. 1—656</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. 1—372</td>
<td>&quot; 657—1028</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; 373—672</td>
<td>V. 1—300</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. 1—685</td>
<td>&quot; 301—935</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII. 1—520</td>
<td>VI. 1—520</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX. 1—459</td>
<td>&quot; 521—980</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; 460—757</td>
<td>VII. 1—298</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X. 1—825</td>
<td>&quot; 299—1126</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Order A.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Order A</th>
<th>Order B</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>XI. 1—655 ...</td>
<td>VIII. 1—659</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII. 1—106 ...</td>
<td>&quot; 660—1065</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; 407—588</td>
<td>IX. 1—182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII. 1—744 ...</td>
<td>&quot; 183—931</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIV. 1—554 ...</td>
<td>X. 1—554</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XV. 1—550 ...</td>
<td>&quot; 555—1124</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVI. 1—694 ...</td>
<td>XI. 1—698</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVII. 1—260 ...</td>
<td>&quot; 699—958</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; 261—946</td>
<td>XII. 1—686</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XVIII. 1—210 ...</td>
<td>&quot; 687—896</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; 211—568</td>
<td>XIII. 1—358</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIX. 1—226 ...</td>
<td>&quot; 359—538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; 227—812</td>
<td>XIV. 1—538</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XX. 1—620 ...</td>
<td>&quot; 587—1210</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Order C.—The edition by Prof. Cosmo Innes.

Unfortunately, there is yet a third numbering of the lines in “The Bruce.” Prof. Cosmo Innes, instead of dividing the poem into books, divided it into 150 paragraphs, following the divisions (not always marked alike) of the manuscripts. The following scheme will probably suffice to shew the references. I may remark that the pages in Innes are numbered very nearly as in the present edition. Thus p. 273 of Innes is p. 283 of my own.

Order A.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Book I.</th>
<th>Paragraphs I.—X.</th>
<th>Order C. (pp. 1—25).</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>&quot; II.</td>
<td>&quot; XI.—XVII. (begins p. 26).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; III.</td>
<td>&quot; XVIII.—XXVII.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; IV.</td>
<td>&quot; XXXVII.—XXXVI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; V.</td>
<td>&quot; LXXV.—LXIV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; VI.</td>
<td>&quot; LXXVI.—LXXI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; VII.</td>
<td>&quot; LXXX.—LXIX.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; VIII.</td>
<td>&quot; LXXII.—LXXI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; IX.</td>
<td>&quot; LXXVII.—LXXXI. 38</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; X.</td>
<td>&quot; LXXVIII.—LXXXII. 38</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XI.</td>
<td>&quot; LXXXIII.—XCIV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XII.</td>
<td>&quot; XCIV.—CIII.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XIII.</td>
<td>&quot; CIII.—CXI.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XIV.</td>
<td>&quot; CXII.—CXV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XV.</td>
<td>&quot; CXVI.—CXIX. 26</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XVI.</td>
<td>&quot; CXX.—CXXV. 38</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XVII.</td>
<td>&quot; LXXXVI.—CXXXVII. 38</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XVIII.</td>
<td>&quot; CXXXII.—CXXXVII. 38</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XIX.</td>
<td>&quot; CXXXVIII.—CXLIV.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>&quot; XX.</td>
<td>&quot; CXLV.—CL.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The references to Jamieson’s edition (Order B.) are given by Innes in his “Table of the Chapters,” pp. xxxiii.—xlIII.
NOTES TO BOOK I. (A.D. 1286—1305.)

(Jamieson, I. 1—630 ; Innes, pp. 1—25.)

References to Pinkerton's edition are denoted by 'P.,' to Jamieson's edition by 'J.,' and to Innes' edition by 'I.' For the signification of 'C.,' 'E.,' and 'H.,' see the first footnote on p. 1.

Before beginning, the reader should learn, once for all, that the letters ν, ω, and υ are completely interchangeable in both the MSS., and particularly so in the Cambridge MS. Thus, we have υνέρ = envy, l. 47; ωανέρ = have, l. 89; ωεκε = weyle, i.e. well, 118; ωςχτ = aucht, ought, 255; ωρε = ure, experience, 312; &c.

The heading is from E.; so also is the text as far as Bk. iv. 56, the Cambridge MS. being imperfect at the beginning.

2. Supposes that, even if. Nocht bot, only; common in Yorkshire as 'nobbetur.'

4. And, if. The reader is referred to the Glossarial Index for explanations of the significations of words. Only a few of the more striking peculiarities of diction are observed upon in the Notes.

7. The tothir for that othir, the second. The italic letters denote the contractions of the MS. The word 'tothir' is written 'toy,' followed by an upward curl; where the 'y' stands for θ = th, and the curl is the usual abbreviation for ir. In l. 9, the word 'that' is written 'yt.' In l. 22, the word 'thar' is written as 'y' followed by a curl. The contractions are all of the usual character. The capitals are those of the Edinburgh MS., as far as Book iv. 56, after which the Cambridge MS. (imperfect at the beginning) becomes the basis of the text, and is closely followed.

9. Suth, sooth, true. Obviously the right reading, as pointed out by Innes; printed such, P. and J.

15. Lenth of tyme, length of time. So in H., and obviously the right reading, though the modern editors ignore it. The various readings are so fully pointed out in the footnotes that it will seldom be necessary to draw attention to them.

37. As observed in the footnote, ll. 37—132 are quoted by Wynton, in his Cronykil of Scotland, ed. Macpherson, book vii. c. ii. 1—54, and 57—98; or ed. Laing, book viii. 123—176, and 179—220. Wynton makes a slight break at l. 90 of our text, merely to introduce the lines—

"For-thi sayd Mayster Ithon Barbere,
That mekyll tretyd off that materen"—

in order, no doubt, to acknowledge his obligation to the elder poet. Wynton also quotes other passages, viz. ll. 135, 136, 141—164, 168—170, 187—194, and 197—212. See the footnotes.

The first passage, as it stands in Wynton, is quoted with singular fidelity, and agrees with our text very closely upon the whole. It seems
fair to conclude that the existing transcripts and oldest editions of our poem are also tolerably faithful, and that no great change took place in the language between 1375 and 1487.

On account of the closeness of the agreement between our text and Wyntown’s quotation, some results of a collation with Wyntown are recorded in the footnotes to ll. 37—132.

Line 37 exactly agrees with the first line of an old song upon the death of Alexander III., which is preserved by Wyntown at the end of his seventh Book. As it consists of only 8 lines, I quote it entire from Laing’s edition, ii. 266:

“Quhen Alexander our Kyng wes dede
That Scotland led in luwe and le,
Away wes sons off ale and bred,
Of wyne and wax, off gamyn and gle:
Oure gold wes chaundy in-to lede:
Crist, borne in-to Vyrgynyte,
Succoure Scotland and remede
That stad is in perplexyte.”

A facsimile of the first four lines of this song, from three MSS., may be seen in the Preface to Laing’s edition of Wyntown, Pref. p. xl.

Alexander III. of Scotland died March 16, 1286. The crown nominally went to his granddaughter Margaret, generally known as “the maid of Norway.” At her death in 1290 (Oct. 7), no less than 13 claimants for the crown presented themselves; Tytler (Hist. Scot. i. 34) gives the names of twelve. John Baliol was not declared king till Nov. 30, 1292. The period from 1286—1292 makes up Barbour’s ‘six years.’

It would be out of place to point out all the points in which Barbour agrees with, or differs from, other historians, or to discuss the historical value of the poem. The reader who studies history will consult the various chronicles which treat of this period, and are cited by Lord Hailes and Tytler. The general reader will probably be satisfied with the familiar account in Scott’s Tales of a Grandfather, or he may consult the clear epitome, with numerous dates, in The Annals of England, ed. 1876. I may, perhaps, call attention here to Wyntown’s Chronicle, ed. Macpherson, or ed. Laing; Fordun’s (Latin) Chronicle, ed. Skene; Political Songs, ed. Wright (Camden Society); Robert of Brunne’s translation of Langtoft’s Chronicle, ed. Hearne; Annals of Scotland, by Sir David Dalrymple (Lord Hailes), 2 vols. 4to. 1779; Hume of Godscroft’s Hist. of the Houses of Douglas and Angus, Edinb. 1644; and Tytler’s and Burton’s Histories of Scotland; to some of which I shall refer again. See also Scott’s notes to The Lord of the Isles, in a complete edition.

51. Eldest systir. Baliol was the grandson of Margaret, eldest daughter of David, earl of Huntingdon, who was the grandson of David I. of Scotland. Robert Bruce (grandfather of the great king of that name) was the son of Isabel, the second daughter. A third
claimant, John Hastings, lord of Abergavenny, was grandson of Ada, the third daughter. Annals of England, p. 171.

57. "They said, the succession to a kingdom was not like a succession to fiefs of a lower character." The argument was that Bruce (a male) took precedence of Baliol's mother (a female). It was quite untenable.

62. "They asserted it was quite otherwise." To 'bear in hand' often signified to 'assert strongly.'

63, 64. The drift is rather dark. The context makes the argument here to be in favour of Bruce; in which case it must run thus. "They (Bruce's friends) asserted it was quite otherwise (from what the others said); because then [i.e. were Baliol in the right] the next of kin, whether male or female would succeed; [which would be quite unlawful.]"

67. "Robert Bruce, earl of Carrick." See note to l. 477 below.

90. "But the game went quite otherwise." Here Wyntown interpolates the two lines quoted in the note to l. 37.

105. Ride, ride on horseback. See the remarkable description of the Welsh fighting on foot, and charged by English cavalry, in Sir Walter Scott's The Betrothed, ch. iv. Wales was subjugated in 1283, only three years before the death of Alexander III.

106. Fra ewyn fell, from the time when the evening fell; i.e. after nightfall.

115. "That always seized, without restoring."

122. The proverb referred to is well expressed in the Ingoldsby Legends (Misadventures at Margate) in the form—"Be warned in time by others' harm, and you shall do full well." Chaucer has a proverb somewhat like it, C. T. ed. Tyrw. 5762; and Tyrwhitt notes that the Latin form of it is—"Qui per alios non corrigitur, alii per ipsum corrigentur." Cf. "Wise men learn by other men's mistakes, fools by their own;" Hazlitt's Eng. Proverbs, p. 477.

132. Wyntottswas—"Reserwys that till hys Majeste;" and omits ll. 133, 134.

137. "And by the whole (i.e. full) assent of them all."

140. "Warring against Saracens." However, that was in A.D. 1272. Perhaps Barbour confused the capture of Acre in 1291 with Edward's presence there in 1272.

171. A litill qwhile; from Nov. 30, 1292, to July, 1296.

187. "From Wick near Orkney [really in Caithness] to the Mull of Galloway [in Wigtonshire]," i.e. from the one end of Scotland to the other.

194. If the king's officers treated the Scotch ill, it is also probable that they treated the English poor not much better. The description of them here given bears a striking resemblance to one in Piers Plowman, B. iv. 47—60. See also the Song of the Husbandman, and a Poem on the Evil Times of Edward II., in Polit. Songs, ed. Wright, pp. 149, 323.
247. "As full liberty to leave, or fulfil, whatever his heart impels him to."

254. *Let, leave, let alone; as in l. 299. This, as explained in the footnote, is the obvious solution of the passage, misprinted in former editions. Hence, in l. 256, we have *do furth*, i. e. continue, go on with.

276. "Both the poor, and those of high birth also."

283. "Baron William Douglas was the first nobleman who joined Wallace, May, 1297, in the heroic attempt to free his country, overrun in 1296 by Edward I., an attempt utterly ruined at Falkirk, July, 1298; so that Wallace's progress was terminated in a twelvemonth or so; and Henry's poem on him is but the history of two years, while this of Barbour embraces twenty-four. Wallace was taken, and beheaded, 1304-5; but William Douglas had deserted him, August, 1297, and yielded himself prisoner to Edward I. See Annals of Scotland [by Lord Hailes], I. 249. Baron James Douglas, whose deeds grace this poem, was his son."—P. See Hume (of Godscroft); Hist. of House of Douglas, p. 18.

313. *James is, in general, disyllabic in Barbour.

323. *Will off wane; cf. *will of red, l. 348. See this phrase explained in the note to ii. 471.

339. "Two Roberts, Earls of Artois, are famous; Robert I., 1237; Robert II., 1250. It seems uncertain to which our author alludes."—P. Or perhaps the allusion is to Robert, count of Artois, counsellor of Edward III., born 1237, died Aug. 16, 1314. Froissart narrates some of his adventures, capp. viii, xxv, xxvi, xci—xciii. He is described as wise and wary, and, on one occasion, came to England in the disguise of a merchant. Johnes refers us to three memoirs of him, by M. Lancelot, in vols. 8 and 10 of the Mémoire de l'Académie des Inscriptions.

343. *Catone, i. e. Dionysius Cato, an author of the fourth century, known for his Breves Sententiae and Distichorum Libri IV, often quoted by old authors; e. g. by Chaucer and by the author of Piers the Plowman. The particular allusion is to Dist. ii. 18—

"Insipiens esto, quum tempus postulat aut res; Stultitiam simulare loco prudentia summa est."

354. *The byschop; called *byschop WylSAME off Lambyrtoun* in l. 412. Fordun records his death as taking place in 1328. He was archbishop of St Andrew's. See Wyntown, viii. 3087, and the account of him in Hailes's Annals of Scotland, ii. 10, 11, 27, and 30.

356. So it is said of Chancer's Squire, that "he carf befor his fader at the table." Cf. ii. 92 below.

364. Douglas's fidelity is again enlarged upon near the end of the poem; see Book xx. 516.

393. *Wlispyt, lisped. In the allit. Troy-Book, ed. Panton and Donaldson, l. 3881, we are told that Hector "stotid a little;" and Guido de Colonna says—"parum vero erat balbutiens in loquela."

406. *Lovynt, praised (not loved). Common in Barbour; see l. 476 below.
409. Strivillyne, Stirling; spelt 'Strivelyn' in Fordun, ed. Skene, cap. cxi. Stirling castle was besieged by Edward, and surrendered July 24, 1304. See Peter Langtoft's Chronicle, translated by Mannyng, ed. Hecarne, ii. 326; Wyntown, bk. viii. c. 18.

445. Here the story of the Bruce really begins. Lines 1—444 form an introduction; and ll. 445—476 form the real exordium of the poem.

446. Romanyss, lit. romance; i.e. the story or narrative. Barbour so calls it, not because it is fiction, but because his "soothfast story" concerning the deeds of the Bruce is a story celebrating the actions of a hero. The old 'romances' of Alexander were regarded as containing veritable history.

455. Barbour's use of the word 'thai' is perfectly reckless; it is often almost impossible to follow him in this respect. The passage clearly means that their foes (the English) were so numerous, that ever, for one of themselves (the Scotch), they (their foes, the English) were a thousand strong. Yet, by God's help, the Scotch were a match for their enemies. Cf. Joshua xxiii. 10.

458. "They were sometimes rather more than less." Here they is a repetition of thai in l. 455, and means the English; and the sense is that, for every Scotchman, the English numbered rather more than a thousand instead of less. Barbour has several similar exaggerations, and often transfers the word 'they' from one side to the other after this sort. Pinkerton's reading, that the Scotch were "more than inferior" to their enemies (if I understand him rightly) is mere nonsense. His text has—"Thai war sum tame ev'n mar than lies," and his note is—"As being not only few, but discomfited, divided, dispirited."

465. So Fordun (ed. Skene, cap. cxii) calls Robert Bruce "alter Machabæus." But Peter Langtoft (ed. Hearne, ii. 290) exhorts Edward I. to follow the example of the Maccabees; which is taking the other side. Cf. 1 Macc. iii, iv.

477. "This lord the Bruce, of whom I spake before." Barbour has often been censured for this odd mistake. The Bruce of whom he is going to speak is the hero of his poem; but the Bruce of whom he has already spoken (see ll. 67, 153) is that hero's grandfather. Robert Bruce the grandfather, Baliol's rival, died in 1294. His son, of the same name, died in April, 1304. The grandson, our hero, "who throughout adhered to the English interest, succeeded to his earldom of Annandale, but continued to pass his time at the English court;" Annals of England, p. 175, note s; cf. p. 174, note l. Of course the similarity of the names caused the confusion, and the chief wonder lies not so much in the fact that Barbour fell into the error, as in the fact of his doing so at a time when the deeds of those worthies were still fresh in men's memories. Wyntown, writing at a later period, distinguishes carefully between the three generations; bk. viii. cap. 7. However, Barbour's mistake causes little trouble; we have now done with the two elder Bruces, and have only the grandson to consider henceforward.
481. Here Wyntown again follows Barbour more or less closely; see his bk. viii. cap. xviii. l. 2769, ed. Laing. He says—

"Quhen all this sawe the Bros Robert,  
That bare the crowne swee eyffyrwart,  
Gret pyte off the folk he had,  
Set\footnote{1} few words theroff he mad,  
Apon a tyme Schyr Thon Cwmyn,  
Togyddfyr rydand fra Streuylvyn," &c.

He then quotes the rest of the passage, to the end of l. 514, with much exactness. The only variations are as follows. 489. \textit{said lord} full lord said. 490. \textit{And gyff that} Forthi gyve. 491. Wyntoun inserts \textit{yow}, correctly. 501. \textit{than thai} than ne (printed thayne). 504. \textit{suth-fast} faithfull. 506. \textit{his assent some} sone his consent. 509. Wyntown omits \textit{that}. 511. \textit{The barowynys thus} Thus thir twa lordis. 512. \textit{And that Ilk nycht} That ilke nycht than. 514. \textit{that thai forespokyn} all that thai spokyn.


515. Wyntown passes over ll. 515—560, evidently considering the passage as a digression.

520. "That may ever guard himself against treason."

525. The allusion is to the legends of the Trojan war \textit{said} to be composed by Dictys of Guossus, and to the Latin prose history of the Fall of Troy ascribed to Dares the Phrygian; see the account of Lydgate's Troy-book in Morley's English Writers, ii. 432. The real author of the mediaeval Roman de Troie appears to have been Benoit de Sainte-Maure, about A.D. 1175 to 1185. Hence was probably derived the version of the Historia Troiana by Guido de Colonna, finished in 1287. See Preface to the Gest Hystorialie of the Destruction of Troy, ed. Panton and Donaldson (E. E. T. S.), p. ix. I suppose that Dares was a merely imaginary author, to whom it was convenient for the romance-writers to ascribe their fictions; the work ascribed to Dictys is older, and can be traced back to the time of Nero. See \textit{Dares} and \textit{Dictys} in Smith's Classical Dictionary; Warton's Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, iii. 81; and Dunlop's Hist. of Fiction, ch. vi.

533. \textit{Pionsowe}, poison. The reference is not to the historical account of Alexander's death, but to that which is given by the romance-writers. See the romance of Alexander, in Metrical Romances, ed. Weber, i. 320, where he is said to have been poisoned by Antipater. So too Chaucer, in his Monkes Tale, regrets Alexander's death by poison.

545. \textit{Pionsowe}, a dagger; see the footnote. Perhaps a still better reading would be \textit{pionsoues}, in the plural. This is evidently the word meant. Halliwell gives "\textit{Punchion}, a bodkin," as a Northern word. Cotgrave has "\textit{Poineson}, a bodkin;" in modern French \textit{poinsen} means an awl; and Richardson gives quotations for \textit{punchion} in the sense of a weapon. This shows that \textit{poison} was regarded as synonymous with \footnote{1} although.
bodkin; and bodkin was also a word which could be used in the sense of dagger. Chaucer, in his account of Caesar's death in the Monkes Tale, uses the very word, saying the conspirators "stikede him with boydekins." Nares (s. v. Bodkin) gives two other quotations in which Caesar is spoken of as having been slain with bodkins. Hamlet speaks of a man making his quietus "with a bare bodkin;" Act iii. sc. 1.

549. Arthur. See Sir Thomas Malory's Morte Arthur, and the Alliterative Morte Arthur, ed. Brock (E. E. T. S.). We there read how he defeated the Roman emperor, Lucius Iberius, and was himself crowned emperor at Rome; and how he was slain by his nephew, Modred or Mordred. See also Wyntown, ed. Laing, v. 4301, and the next note.

560. The broite, i.e. the Chronicle called "The Brut." Wace translated Geoffrey of Monmouth into French verse as "Li Romans de Brut," and Wace's work was the chief foundation of the English version by Layamon; see Morley's Eng. Writers, i. 505, 615. The death of "Luces the emperor," i.e. Lucius Iberius, occurs in Layamon's Brut, ed. Madden, iii. 111.

However, the really interesting point about this allusion to the Brut is that Barbour himself wrote a poem with this title, though it is not now extant. This we learn from Wyntown, who frequently alludes to it in his Cronykil, ed. Laing, bk. ii. 133, 773; bk. iii. 622; bk. iv. 1183; bk. v. 511, 3154, 4245, 4292.

561. Here again we come to a passage quoted by Wyntown, who continues the narrative from l. 514 above in these words:—

It fell, efftyr this band-makyng,
Ihon the Cwmyne rude to the Kyng
Off Ingland, and tald all the cas,
To trow, noucht all yhit as it was,
Bot the indenture till hym gave he
Off thare cunnandis prwff till be.

He then misses ll. 567, 568, gives ll. 569—572 in a different form, misses ll. 573—588, and continues:—

Than Cwmyne hyys leve tuk, and hame went.
And the kyng a Parleament, &c.


602. Wyntown continues the above-mentioned quotation to l. 601, but for this line he substitutes—On the morne in his Parleament. He then continues his quotation, more or less closely, to the end of Book II. l. 9. The variations are slight and unimportant.

625. "And, to secure that, I put in pledge my whole heritage." That is, he offered to forfeit all his lands if he did not appear; and the king accepted this security.
NOTES TO BOOK II.  (A.D. 1305—1306.)
(Jamieson, I. 631—II. 395; Innes, pp. 26—47.)

1. Fordun and Wyntown add that the duke of Gloucester, a friend to Bruce, sent him a piece of money and a pair of spurs. Bruce took the hint, and set off for Scotland with all speed. With Book II., compare Fordun, ed. Skene, capp. cxiv.—cxix., pp. 338—342; and Wyntown, ed. Laing, bk. viii. 2853—2930.

The first 9 lines of this Book are quoted by Wyntown; see note to Book I. l. 602. He also cites, more or less closely, ll. 17—36. See note to l. 36.

16. Fordun and Wyntown add that Bruce, in his flight, met a messenger who was bearing a letter to Sir John Cumyn, and who endeavoured to avoid him. The message was accordingly intercepted, and the messenger slain.

17. Fyfth, fifteenth. Wyntown says—"on the fyft day." So also Hart; see the footnote. "Robert the Bruce com hame on the ferd [i.e. fourth] day;" Wallace, xi. 1155.

18. Lochmaben Castle is in Annandale, not far to the N. E. of Dumfries, which is mentioned in l. 26.

23. A halting line; the reading summond (H) scans better than socht. Wyntown has—

"How he chapyd, and all the cas,
How before all hapnyd was."

33. In the freris, in the (Gray) Friars' church. The Grey Friars were the Franciscans or Minorites. The place meant is the chapel of the Minorite convent. The date of the murder, according to Fordun, is Feb. 10, 1306. See Lord of the Isles, i. 27, ii. 13; and Scott's note to i. 27.

36. Here Wyntown's quotations from Barbour cease. He omits all the rest of Bruce's history, referring his readers to Barbour for information.


44. "Who did not respect the sanctity of the altar." See Gyrrth in the Glossary.

81. Dyschop; see note to i. 354.


92. See Book i. 356, and the note.

96. "When the tables were removed;" i. e. after dinner.

112. Clyffurd, probably Lord Robert Clifford; Ann. Scot. i. 5.

118. Ferrand is the horse's name; possibly the same as farrand or weill-farrand, i. e. handsome. However, it occurs again as the name of a horse in the Bulk of Alexander the Great, pp. 79, 92.
121. "Take him as if you did it of your own head," i.e. without any suggestion from another. Accordingly, he adds—"as if I had given no advice thereto."

130. Taucht him, gave him, handed over to him. Pinkerton is wrong in suggesting the reading raucht.


150. "Scone, near the left bank of the Tay, rather more than a mile north from Perth, is memorable for its palace, the ancient residence of the Scottish kings, and the place of their coronation;" Cyclopaedia of the British Empire, ii. 727.

151. In kingis stole, on the royal throne, lit. stool; cf. l. 180. The celebrated "stone of destiny," on which the Scottish kings, before Bruce, had been crowned, had been carried off from Scone by Edward I. in August, 1296. The stone is now at Westminster, embedded in the coronation-chair. It came originally from Spain (!), by way of Ireland; Wyntown, bk. iii. c. 9.

178. Bruce was crowned at Scone, March 25, 1306, in presence of the bishops of St Andrews and Glasgow. The ceremony was repeated on Palm Sunday, March 27; Annals of England, p. 176. Cf. Fordun, cap. cxviii.

189. Maymteym, maintain; the usual spelling in Barbour.

199. Lord Hailies observes that the "letters patent to Pembroke are drawn up in an enraged and vindictive style." It is true that, worn by disease and age, Edward displayed a ferocity during the last two years of his life which has somewhat tarnished his greatness as a king.

200. Sir Aymer de Valence, earl of Pembroke, was third son of the half-brother of Henry III. His arms are described in Walter of Exeter's poem on the Siege of Carlaverock; see Ann. of England, p. 178, note l, and p. 152, note k. His tomb is in Westminster Abbey; see an account of him in Brayley's Hist. of Westm. Abbey, ii. 275. Pembroke College, Cambridge, was founded in 1347 by his widow, Mary de St Paul.

205. Raiss dragoun, lit. raise the dragon. Jamieson explains it by "to deliver up to military execution." The context rather implies that it signifies to harry, to act tyrannically, or probably, "to play the devil." In the absence of other explanation, I would suggest that to "raise the dragon" may very well be equivalent to raising the devil's standard. Ducange gives—"Draco, (1) vexillum in quo draconis effigies efficita; (2) effigies draconis, quae cum vexillis in ecclesiasticis processionibus deferrit solet, qua vel diabolusipse, vel haeresis designantur, de quibus triumphant ecclesia." We are all familiar with St George and the dragon, wherein the dragon represents evil. Perhaps the verb to dragoon has hence drawn somewhat of its sinister meaning.

211. Sir Philip Mowbray nearly captured king Robert at Methven; ii. 413. He was afterwards defeated by Douglas; viii. 21. He held Stirling castle against Bruce; x. 806. After the battle of Bannock-
burn, he not only yielded up the castle according to his previous engagement, but took the Scottish side. He accompanied Edward Bruce to Ireland, and performed great deeds of valour after Edward’s death; xviii. 125.

Sir Roger Mowbray was engaged in the conspiracy of De Soulis against Bruce (see Book xix. 11), but died before he was brought to trial; Fordun, cap. cxxxv.

Sir Ingraham de Umphraville was on the English side at Bannockburn, xii. 451; he afterwards joined the Bruce, but left him on finding that Sir David Brechin had been executed for joining in De Soulis’ conspiracy; xix. 73. He was mainly instrumental (says Barbour) in establishing a truce between England and Scotland; xix. 158. Compare his three pieces of advice, all of the same tenor; ii. 257; xii. 452; xix. 158.

235. Lennox was formerly written Leuenax, a name probably compounded of Leven, and ax, a stream or water, so that Levenax merely meant, originally, the river Leven, but afterwards included that district of Dumbartonshire through which the Leven flows; see Jamieson’s note. The reference is to Malcolm, 5th earl of Lennox; Hailes’s Annals, ii. 2. By Atholl is meant John de Strathbogie, Earl of Athol, afterwards executed; see Lord of the Isles, note to ii. 26. “When John, Earl of Atholl, nobly descended, who had with other murthered John Comin, was apprehended by King Edward the first, and some intreated for him, the king answered: ‘The higher his calling is, the greater must his fall be; and as he is of higher parentage, so shall he be higher hanged:’ which according was performed, for he was hanged on a gallows fifty feet high;” Camden, Remaines concerning Britaine, ed. 1657, p. 259.

236. Edward Bruce was Robert’s impetuous and headstrong brother, afterwards slain in attempting to make himself king of Ireland; see Book xviii. See Lord of the Isles, note to iv. 20.

237. Sir Thomas Randolph’s great exploit was the taking of Edinburgh castle; x. 584. He had just been made Earl of Murray, x. 264. At king Robert’s death, he became regent of Scotland, xx. 300. Wyntown greatly praises his powers of governing; bk. viii. 3143. He was Bruce’s nephew (ix. 732), and died in 1332; Hailes’s Annals, ii. 146; Fordun, cap. cxlvi. See Lord of the Isles, vi. 1, and the note.

Hugh de la Haye (lit. of the hedge) was “brother of Gilbert Hay of Errol.”—P. Cf. Book ii. 490; iii. 25; and see notes to Lord of the Isles, ii. 13; and The Wallace, viii. 581. “David Barclay, of Cairns in Fife.”—P. On which Jamieson remarks—“on what authority this is asserted we are not informed [yet it is clearly copied from Hailes, Ann. Scot. ii. 2]. It seems probable that this is the same David who received from Robert I. the lands of Knocky in Glenesk, Forfarshire; also Rothmay, Brechine, Kinlock, &c. on the forfeiture of David de Brechin; see Robertson’s Index, 18. 79—26. 79. A charter of the lands of Colcarny, Kinross-shire, to John, son of David Barclay, in the reign of David I., is referred to, ibid. 53. 28.” See Jamieson’s note.
239. **Frasale**, Fraser. "Alexander Fraser, the brother of Simon Fraser of Oliver Castle in Tweeddale, the ancestor of the families of Lovat and Salton."—J. See the song on the Execution of Sir Simon Fraser, a.d. 1306, in Polit. Songs, ed. Wright, 212; also Lord of the Isles, notes to ii. 26. Barbour calls him Alexander below; ii. 407.

**Somervelle**, Sir John Somerville; see Craufurd's Peerage, p. 445, and Jamieson's note.

243*. **Cristall of Setoun**, i.e. "Christopher Seton, of Seton, ancestor of the Duke of Gordon, Earl of Winton, Earl of Dunfermlin, and Viscount Kingston; see Hailes' Annals, ii. 2."—P. (note to ii. 418). He rescued Bruce at the battle of Methven; Book ii. 418. He was (according to Barbour) betrayed to the English, and executed by Edward; iv. 16. He was Bruce's brother-in-law; see Annals of England, p. 176, note a; and Lord of the Isles, notes to ii. 26.

247. Saint Johnston is another name for Perth, on account of its church being dedicated to St John. Instances of the use of this name are common. Thus Lambarde says—"He was by birth a Scot, of Perth, now commonly called Saint John's Town;" Perambulation of Kent, ed. 1656, p. 413. And see Skelton, ed. Dyce, ii. 218.

279. **Bot gyt thai faile**, "unless they fail to keep their word."

303. **Meffyn**, Methven, about six miles to the west of Perth; still vulgarly called **Meffen**. "Eodem anno [1306] rex Robertus, xix die mensis Junii, victus est apud Methfen," &c.;Fordun, cap. cxix.

329. **Our weerdis dele**, allot our destiny.


365. **Renk**; so in J1; **reuk**, P. The MS. may, of course, be read either way. **Renk** means a rank of fighting men, and the text says that those that remained on horseback dealt such blows that the rank of men around them reeled. So also, in l. 380, the expression is—"that all the sembl schuk," i.e. till all the assembly reeled. For examples of the word, see **reng** in Stratmann, who gives an example of the spelling **renk** from St Brandan, ed. Wright, 12. Chaucer has the pl. form **renges**, Kn. Tale, 1736. Jamieson reads **renk**; but in his Dictionary explains it as "**reuk**, the atmosphere," since that was the reading before him in Pinkerton's edition. He was thinking of **rak** or **roke**, a mist; but I cannot accept that interpretation here, when l. 380 is considered.

378. **Assenzie**, warcry; better spelt **enseinzie** (see l. 426 and iii. 27), from the French **enseigne**, a token.

381. **Till-hewyt** is a false spelling of **to-hewyt**, i.e. hewed in twain; due to the constant confusion, throughout this poem, between the prepositions **till** and **to**. The past participle would be **to-hewyn**, which appears in Book xx. 367, but is miswritten **till-hevyne** in the Cambridge MS. Cf. **to-heave** in Chaucer, C. T. Group B, 430.

384. **Thai feble fast**, they are giving way already; a natural exclamation of encouragement, which did not, however, express the truth.
437. "And it may yet happen, if they wish to pursue us, we shall, however, to some extent require them a turn."

471. _Will off wane_, lit. wild of weening, i.e. wandering in opinion, at his wit's end, at a loss. See Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat, p. 94, l. 155, and the note at p. 309. It occurs again, i. 323; vii. 225. It is equivalent to _will of red_, i. 348, iii. 494; and Wallace, ii. 250. Both phrases are equivalent to the expression in i. 318—"He wyst nocht quhat to do na say."

479. _Boroundoun_. The source of this name has not been traced, nor is it clearly known to whom allusion is made. Hart reads 'Halyburtoun.' Sir W. Scott has it _Barendown_; Lord of the Isles, ii. 13. However, Tytler (i. 91, note 7) says it was Sir William de Boroundoun; "this knight is a witness to a charter of Haig of Bemerside to the Abbey of Melrose, along with Thomas Rymer of Ercildoun and others. Chartulary of Melrose, Bib. Harl. 3360, fol. 109 a."

491. _Sir Nele Cambell_. "This was the predecessor of the family of Argyll. He was an early and faithful adherent of King Robert, who gave him his brother, the Lady Mary Bruce, in marriage. He died in 1315. His brother, Sir Donald Campbell of Redhouse, was ancestor of the noble family of Loudon. See Cranford's Peerage, pp. 13—15."—J. Nele is also written _Nigel_, and in Latin _Nigellus_; but it is a Scandinavian name. Hence also the name of _Nelson._

494. "Enduring their tribulation in the mountains." Jamieson's Scot. Dict. gives—"_Month, Mounth_, (1) a mountain; (2) the Grampian mountains towards their Eastern extremity. _To gang o'err the Month_, to cross the Grampians; North of Scotland dialect." It is opposed to 'the planys' in l. 496, and is rendered by 'the hyllis' in l. 508. See Wyntown, vi. 2229; and notes to Fordun, ed. Skene, ii. 385.

503. _Fur thai_, they fared, they acted. _For he_, because he.

513. _Nele the braggis_, Neil or Nigel Bruce, Bruce's brother. He defended Kildrummy Castle, iv. 61, 185; but was taken and executed, iv. 313; see Lord of the Isles, notes to ii. 26.

517, 518. _Tytter—na_, rather—than. _Angyr_, affliction.

528. _Thebes_. See Statius, Thebais, lib. xii. King Adrastus was one of the Seven Heroes who warred against Thebes, and the only one who returned home in safety; see l. 547. Compare—

"Yet, as some authors make mentioun,
Or Theseus entred into the toun,
The women first, with pekois and with malles,
With gret labour beat downe the walles."

_Lygate, Storie of Thebes._

534. _Campaneus_, properly Capaneus; he was struck by lightning whilst attempting to scale the walls of Thebes, because he had defied Zeus. Cf. Euripides, _Phoenissae_, 1172; Sophocles, Antigone, 126—136; Æschylus, Seven against Thebes, 425; Statius, Thebais, x. 826; Dante, Inferno, xiv. 63. Barbour no doubt followed the account in Statius.
NOTES TO BOOK III. (A.D. 1306.)

(Jamieson, ii. 396—iii. 228; Innes, pp. 47—74.)

1. Lord of Lorne. Probably the rubric in Hart's edition, suggesting that this was John of Lorn, is wrong. The person intended is rather John of Lorn's father, Allaster Macdougal, who was really Lord of Lorn at this time. He had married the third daughter of Comyn, and was therefore Comyn's son-in-law, though Barbour here calls him his nephew. See the long note to the Lord of the Isles, i. 11. John of Lorn is mentioned further on, vi. 481; vii. 80, 92.

48. Him abandonyt, took upon himself, gave himself up to. In l. 80 it means 'demeaned himself;.' in iv. 655, abandonyt means 'completely subjected.' In the last sense it occurs in Skelton, ed. Dyce, i. 273; ii. 260.

62. The old phrase for 'stand in awe' was simply to 'stand awe,' here slightly altered to stand ane sik awe, which is equivalent to stand sik ane aw, lit. to 'stand such an awe,' i.e. to stand in such awe. There is no real difficulty, when once the old phrase becomes familiar. Thus, in Havelok, l. 277, we have—

"Al engelond of him stod awe,
All engelond was of him adad." 

In my edition of Havelok, I have printed "stod [in] awe," but now perceive that the MS. reading is correct. I add another example of this odd idiom, from p. 78 of The Buik of Alexander:—"As he stude of thane lytill awe." And it occurs in The Wallace, v. 929, vi. 878, ix. 458.

66. "Stop them, himself alone, without more (to help him)."

67. Marthokys sone. This is in the vocative case, and refers to the person addressed. Jamieson's guess is surely correct; he supposes Marthok to be Muratach, now Murdoch, and thus 'Marthokys sone' is simply Maemurdoch.

68, 69. "Just as Gaul (or Gall) Mac Morna was wont to rescue his men from Fingal." In the Book of the Dean of Lismore, Translation, p. 43, Oisin (or Ossian) the poet addresses 'high-minded Goll, who combats Fionn.' Here Fionn (or Fingal) is Fionn Mac Cumhaill, Oisin's father. See Morley, Eng. Writers, i. 182, 183. Prof. Morley says that Barbour makes the Lord of Lorn "quote to his men Fionn, by the name of Fingal, in his strife against Goll Macmorna, as an example of courage." Of course this is a slip; it is Goll Macmorna whose courage is here praised. Fordun (cap. cxx) says that the conflict here described took place at Dalry, Aug. 11, 1306; and Bower calls it the "battle of Dalry;" Scotichron. xii. 11. Dalry or Dalree means the King's Dale. "It is close to the celebrated pool of St Fillan, about a mile, or little more, below the village of Tyndrum."—J. Tyndrum is in Strath Fillan, Perthshire, near the border of Argyle.
73. Gaudifer is "Sir Gaudifer de Larys, whose adventures in arms form the chief subject of that chapter of the Romance of Alexander the Great which treats of the 'Foray of Gadderis,' where he [Alexander] is opposed by the mighty 'Duke Betys, that Gaderis aucht;' pref. to Bruce, ed. Innes, p. xxvii. The story is to be found in the Buik of the Most noble and vailyeand conquerour Alexander, callit the Foray of Gadderis, Bannatyne Club, 1834; but, as this appears, from the concluding paragraph, to have been translated from the French about 1438, Barbour must have seen it in an earlier form. Cf. Warton, Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 142, 299. Larys may be Larissa, in Thessaly. The story is, that Alexander, when besieging Tyre, also sent some men on a foray, who were attacked by duke Betys of Gaderis. Subsequently, Alexander himself was opposed by Betys and Gaudifer; and, on the flight of Betys, Gaudifer rallied the flying host, and even unhorsed Alexander himself and several of his leaders. Tholimir no doubt means Ptolemy, one of Alexander's generals. Cuneus and Daukllyne are called Caulus and Dauclene in the Romance.

93. This is the story of the Brooch of Lorn, so well told in Scott's Tales of a Grandfather, ch. viii; cf. The Lord of the Isles, ii. 14; and the note. But Barbour does not make any mention of the Brooch.

99. Makyne-drosser, spelt Malindorser in Hart. The name is Gaelic, and signifies the sons of the doorkeeper, or (as Barbour rightly explains it) the 'durwarth sonny's' or door-ward's sons. The derivation is from the Gaelic mac, a son, and na dorsair, of the door-keeper; dorsair being again derived from dorus, a door, and fear, a man.

102. "They had a third man in their agreement (or plot)." Sir W. Scott makes the third man the father, or Mae Androsser himself. See Book v. 521. See the list of stories of this character in the Note to Book v. 521.

109. "Between the side of a lake and a steep bank." They were retreating from Dalrie, near Tyndrum, and most likely towards the Tay, whence they started; ii. 589. If so, the scene of the encounter would be in Glen Dochart, between Loch Dochart and Ben More. Tydeus was caught in a similar situation, vi. 211.

146. Pinkerton remarks that Bruce here kills three men; afterwards, three more, v. 521; three more, vii. 189; four, vi. 149; fourteen, vi. 313. However, Barbour clearly exaggerates in many places, and his business was chiefly to impress his readers. The recurrence of the number three is awkward. It is probable that at least the "Brooch of Lorn" story is told twice over, viz. here (iii. 93—146) and in v. 559—656; but the details are varied in a very skilful manner. See note to Book v. 521.

153. Macnaughtan was a baron of Cowal, which is the district of Argyleshire between Loch Fyne and Loch Long. "All that I can discover in our records is, that the lands which formerly belonged to John, the son of Duncan, the son of Alexander of Yle, were given by David Bruce to Alexander Maenaughtan; v. Ind. Chart. 99, 100."—J.
172. "So may our Lord preserve me!" lit. 'see me.' This expression is in Chaucer; v. See in Tyrwhitt's Glossary.

186. "Deploring the harm that they have received."

208. Alluding to the battle of Cannae. "Here, on 2 Aug. 216 B.C., Hannibal with 50,000 Africans, Gauls, and Spaniards, defeated Paulus Æmilius and Terentius Varro, with 88,000 Romans, of whom 40,000 were slain. The victor sent to Carthage three bushels of rings, taken from the Roman knights;" Haydn, Dict. of Dates. Cf. Wyntown, bk. iv. c. 16.

235. The story of Hannibal's close approach to Rome, and of his attack upon the Romans being stopped by a storm on two successive days, is given in Plutarch; see North's translation, ed. 1631, p. 1077. It occurs also in Wyntown, bk. iv. c. 17.

242. Teyss, twice. Plutarch and Wyntown say only twice in all; but Barbour generally enlarges his numbers.

281. "Nil actum credens, si quid superesset agendum;" Lucani Pharsalia, ii. 657.

291. "Unless he be very unlucky, he will partially achieve it; and if he lives, it may well be that he will achieve it wholly."

301. "Than he had reason for, by far."

321. "These afflictions I can no longer endure; for, though it should thereby come about that I should die, I must stop here."

337. Kildrummy Castle is on the Don, in Aberdeenshire. It is described in Cordiner's Antiquities and Scenery of the North of Scotland.

385. Kyntyr, Cantire, a peninsula in Argyleshire; Gaelic Ceantire, lit. land's end; from ceann, head, headland, extremity, and tir, land. See Lord of the Isles, ii. 9, and the note.

390. "And pursue his destiny to the end."

418. Fut-hate, foot-hot, with all speed; and so in xiii. 454. Spelt foothot in Chaucer, Man of Lawes Tale, Group B, l. 438.

420. Thresum, holding three at a time, with three in all. So also fifsum, five in all; &c. Cf. l. 424.

437. Ferembrace, Fierabras or Ferumbras the Saracen, son of Balan or Lavan, the sultan of Babylon, and brother of the fair Floripas or Florippa. "We have [in English] two versions of this romance; one of them the Farmer MS. analysed by Ellis (vol. ii. p. 369), and now in the library of Sir Thomas Phillipps; the other a fragment [unprinted] of great length, MS. Ashmole 33. They both belong probably to the end of the fourteenth century. The original of the romance is the French Fierabras; see Les Anciens Poetes de la France, tom. iv;" &c. Warton's Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 197, q. v. The Farmer MS. was printed for the Roxburgh Club in 1854, with the title—"Romaunce of the Sowdone of Babylone and of Ferumbras his sone, who conquered Rome." The reader who consults this will find in it all the points mentioned by Barbour. The Ashmole MS. begins with the combat between Fierabras (feri brachium) and Oliver, in which the latter is victorious.
440. *Duk-peris,* apparently ‘duke-peers;’ but really a corruption of *douze pairs,* the twelve peers of France. Wyntown writes *douche-sperys,* v. 4350; and, what is most to the point, we find, in the *Sowdone of Babylone,* p. 10, the spelling *dosipers;* and, at p. 14, *dosyperys.*

441. *Eyremor,* the tower of Aigremont (called *Agremare* and *Eyremoure* in the Farmer MS., and described as in Spain), in which eleven of the twelve peers were imprisoned together with Florippa, the daughter of Balan, by Balan himself, king of the Saracens, who is here called *Lawyne,* and in the Farmer MS. is called *Lavan.* They were released by Charlemagne. Pinkerton refers us to Conquestes du Grand Charlemagne, *Roi de France,* &c.; printed at Troyes, about 1750. And see Fierabras, Chanson de Geste, ed. Kroër and Servois, Paris, 1860.

455. *Mantrybill.* In the Complaint of Scotland, ed. J. A. H. Murray, p. 63, is mention of “the tail of the brig of the *mantribil,*” which is evidently an episode in the romance of Fierabras; and accordingly, in the *Sowdone of Babylon,* p. 77, I find that “Mautreble” is Lavan’s “chef cite,” and that the giant Agalofoure was warden of the “brigge” over the river Flagote that led to it. Richard of Normandy swam his horse over the river, killed the giant (p. 105), and won the bridge (p. 106). *Flagot.* An extract relating how Richard of Normandy swam his horse over “Flagote the flood” is printed in Warton’s Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 200.

459. *The maylis,* those with which Christ was crucified. *The sper,* the spear (of Longinus), which pierced the Saviour’s side. These relics are here said to have been recovered from Fierabras. Wheeler, in his *Noted Names of Fiction,* says that “Fierabras, who was a Saracen, made himself master of Rome, and carried away from it various sacred relics, especially the crown of thorns and the balsam which was used in embalming the body of the Saviour.” In the *Sowdone of Babylon* (p. 113), Charles wins back these relics, offers the cross at Paris, the crown at St Denis, and the “nayles thré” at Boulogne.

479. “And sought the thick groves, and set snares.”

493. “For he supposed the king had been dead;” cf. i. 509.

494. *Will off red,* lit. wild of rede (or counsel), i. e. at a loss what to do. Cf. i. 348; and see note on *will of wane,* ii. 471.

517. *But anger gret,* without severe affliction. *Anger* commonly means affliction, not only in Barbour, but in Piers the Plowman, &c. In i. 530, the adj. *angry* may have the usual modern sense.

540. *Sales,* sauce; alluding to the proverb—“Hunger is the best sauce;” in French, “Il n’y a sauce que d’appetit;” in Italian, “Appetito no vuol salse.” Ray says—“this proverb is reckoned among the aphorisms of Socrates—‘Optimum cibi condimentum fames, sitis potas;’” Cicero, de Finibus, lib. ii.”


577. *But,* Bute; on their way from the Clyde to Cantire.

578. *Frely fute,* noble or handsome child. Jamieson explains it to
mean 'noble woman,' unnecessarily. *Fute* is the same as *fode*, spelt *fude* in Sir Perceval, 1326; and Stratmann quotes "his freli *fode,*" Sir Eglamour, 1254; "to wedde *pat freli* *fode,*" Anadas, ed. Robson, liv. 6; cf. "min o'zene child, my *leue fode," King Horn, ed. Lumbly, 1340, Mätzner (note to K. Horn, 1340) quotes "that frely *fode,*" Amis and Amiloun, 557. *Fode* usually has the sense of child, and is used of both sexes; it means, literally, one *fed* or nourished up. The sense is—"as they, in rowing, rose with their ears, they could see many a handsome child along the coasts, looking on at them."

583, 584. "So spanned the oars, that the skin might often be seen left behind on the wood;" i.e. on the handle. The oars were, probably, but roughly made, and the knights were not much accustomed to the exercise. Compare Lord of the Isles, v. 13.

588. "To advance them in their floating."

658. *Stycht*, determination, resolve. The word is not in the Dictionaries, but the connected verb is found in the form "Stightele, to establish, to dispose," Halliwell; *stithlen*, to dispose, Stratmann; *stihlen*, to dispose, fix, Stratmann; cf. A.S. *stihlan*, to establish. Thus *stycht* means fixed purpose, resolution, determined course of action.

659. "Angus at that time was the lord of Islay." The isle of Islay was formerly called *Ila*, and is here denoted by *Ile;* see Jamieson's note. It lies beyond Cantire.

666. *Donavardlyne*, Dunaverty, where there was once a castle. It is near Southend, which, as its name implies, is on the southern coast or end of Cantire.

680. *Rauchryne* is now called Rathlin. Jamieson remarks that the spelling here given is no corruption, and cites ten ways of spelling the name, including *Rauchryne, Rachraind, Rechran, Rochrine*, from Archdall's *Monasticon Hibernicum*, p. 11. It lies in the North Channel, between Cantire and Ireland. Pinkerton refers us, for a description of it, to Hamilton's Observations on the North of Ireland. Scott spells it Rath-Erin; Lord of the Isles, ii. 9.

682. *In mydwart*, in the middle, between. The readings *mid watter* (P) *mydawatter* (J) are due to misreading the MS., and may be dismissed.

687. *Rais*, race, i.e. current. The "Race of Brittany" can hardly be other than that now named Rennell's Current, from Major Rennell, who first traced its course. It begins, from the Atlantic, at Cape Finisterre, follows the curve of the coast round the Bay of Biscay, and then shoots across the English Channel, often endangering vessels near the Scilly Isles. Its greatest velocity is 90 miles per day, as observed on the French coast off Brest. See Atlas of Physical Geography, by Petermann and Milner, p. 40. See an allusion to the channel between "Rachrin" and Ireland in Fordun, ed. Skene, ii. 387.

688. "Or the strait of Morocco in Spain;" i.e. the strait of Gibraltar. Chaucer also calls it "the straite of Marrok," Man of Lawes Tale, Group B, l. 465.
696. *The moel*, i. e. the Mull of Cantire; from the Gaelic *maol*, a promontory.

706. "Hi summno in fluctu pendent, his unda dehiscens
Terram inter fluctus aperit;" Virg. Æn. i. 106.

745. *Loud and still*, i. e. under all circumstances. It is a common phrase in old romances; see Halliwell. A similar phrase is "in hey and low," used by Chaucer.

---

**NOTES TO BOOK IV. (A.D. 1306, 1307.)**

(Jamieson, III. 229—1003; Innes, pp. 74—102.)


14. *Marcus*. "Marcus, bishop of the Isles [which included the Isle of Man] from 1272 to 1303; see Keith's Catalogue."—P. Pinkerton adds that there seems to be no authority for saying that he died in 1303, and observes that Barbour here makes him alive in 1306. "The Isle of Man at this time belonged to the crown of Scotland."—J. The see is still called that of Sodor and Man, where Sodor means 'the southern Islands;' cf. Icel. suðr-eyjar, a name given to the Hebrides in the Landnámabók.

16. See note to Book ii. 243°. Jamieson, in a long note (p. 479), clearly shews that *Loudon* (l. 17) means the castle of Lochdow in Ayrshire, of which Sir Gilbert de Carrick (ancestor of the Earl of Cassilis) was hereditary keeper. Lochdon, or Loch Doon, is the source of the "bonny Doon."

18. *Judas*, i. e. Iscariot. The phrase "disciple of Judas" or "child of Judas" means a very wicked man; see P. Plowman, B. prol. 35.

20. *In Ingland*, to England; probably a mistake. Jamieson says (p. 480)—"Such regard had King Robert for the memory of Sir Chrystal, that he erected a chapel on the spot where he had been executed, hard by the town of Dumfries."


37. *Bruce* is here a mistake of the scribe for *Brice*; note the reading *Bryse* in Hart. The person meant is Sir Brice Blair; Ann. Scot. ii. 19, note. And see Jamieson's note to The Wallace, vii. 205.

41. "Was coupled in God's bond," united in matrimony.

47. "The gyth, or sanctuary, of St Duthac at Tain, whence the Earl of Ross took the queen, Elizabeth, daughter of Aymer de Burgh earl of Ulster, and Marjory, the king's daughter by his former wife, Isabella, and delivered them up to the English."—P. Tain is in Rossshire, on the Dornoch Firth. See Ann. Scot. ii. 9.
56. *Dongeoun*, dungeon. The most remarkable case was that of the Countess of Buchan, “who was imprisoned within the castle of Berwick, in a cage made on purpose;” Tales of a Grandfather, chap. viii. Scott explains that this cage was not one that was hung out over the walls, as some have said, “like a parrot’s cage out at a window;” but was a cage such as is not unfrequently found in prisons, “resembling one of those places in which wild beasts are confined.” Her crime was that she placed the crown on Bruce’s head with her own hands, at the ceremony of his coronation. See Ann. Scot. ii. 10.

57. Here, fortunately, the Cambridge MS. begins, to the considerable improvement of the text; see footnote to this line.

73. “The prince of Wales and many young nobles are knighted with great ceremony, May 22, 1306; when the king takes an oath to conquer the Scots or die in the quarrel;” Ann. of England, p. 176.

94. “Some (of the) best (were) wounded, and some were slain.”

117. “And placed it high upon a heap of corn.”

119. Evidently an allusion to a proverb. It looks as if the form of it intended is—

“Fire and pride
Can no man hide.”

I have not, however, so found it. Line 124 seems to intimate the usual form of the proverb, viz. “There is no smoke without some fire.”

127. “First like a star, then like a moon.”

181. It is well known that Snowdoun was a name formerly given to Stirling castle; see note to Lady of the Lake, vi. 28. But it would appear, in this place, that the title is applied to Kildrummy castle. Jamieson says—“In a MS. formerly belonging to Sir James Balfour of Dunmilne, Lyon King at Arms, now in the library of the Advocates, the title of the Snowdoun Herald is derived ‘from Snowdoun castle of the county of Rosse, the residence of our ancient Scottish kings.’ I have met with no other vestige of this castle; the same account, however, is given by Nisbet; Heraldry, ii. 166.”

It looks as if the name of Snowdoun may have been given, at the time, to Kildrummy castle, in consequence of the queen’s being in residence there.

190. Barbour inserts the death of King Edward I. too soon. He was “obliged by sickness to remain in Northumberland and Cumberland, the summer and autumn, 1306; and he was at Lanercost all the winter 1306-7; see this proved from Rymer’s Foedera in the Annals of Scotland, ii. 5.”—P. In fact, we must suppose many months to elapse between lines 193 and 194. And it may be well to bear in mind that Edward’s death did not occur till after the battle of Loudon Hill, described in Book viii.

203. Edward died at Burgh-on-the-Sands, about five miles from Carlisle, July 7, 1307.

209. It is remarkable that we have a very similar story told of Henry IV. See II. Henry IV.; Act iv. sc. 4. In a note on that scene
in Staunton's Shakespeare, a much earlier instance of a similar play upon words is given. Pope Silvester II. had, it was said, been assured by a spirit that he should not die till he had said mass at Jerusalem. In A.D. 1003, he said mass in the church called 'the Holy Cross in Jerusalem;' he was there suddenly taken ill, and soon after died. The story is fully related by Wyntown, bk. vi. c. xii, who calls the church that of "Jerusalem in Vy Laterane." Mr Furnivall kindly refers me to a note in Singer's Shakespeare, who cites "a remarkable coincidence in a passage of Anna Comnena (Alexius, lib. vi. p. 162, ed. Paris, 1658) relative to the death of Robert Guiscard, king of Sicily, in a place called Jerusalem at Cephalonia. In Lodge's Devils Conjured is a similar story of Pope Sylvester; but the Pope outwitted the devil. And Fuller, in his Church History, bk. v. p. 178, relates something of the same kind about Cardinal Wolsey, of whom it had been predicted that he should have his end at Kingston. Which was thought to be fulfilled by his dying in the custody of Sir William Kingston. See Cavendish's Life of Wolsey, Chiswick edition, 1825, vol. i. p. 320."

241. The same story is told in The Complaint of Scotland, ed. Murray, ch. x. p. 84; where we are warned against believing a prophecy attributed to Merlin, that Scotland would one day be united to England; and we are also reminded of similar dubious prophecies, such as that uttered by Caiaphas (John xi. 50), the response of the Delphian oracle to Cresus, and the oracle concerning the contest of Pyrrhus with the Romans. A very similar prophecy was told concerning Provenzano Salvani, who is mentioned in Dante, Purg. xi. 121; see the story in a note to Cary's translation. In the Compl. of Scot., chap. vi. p. 63, mention is made of a tale of "Ferrand, erl of Flandris, that mareit the denyl," evidently some story resembling the Tale of Melusine; see Dr Murray's preface, pp. lxxiii, lxxiv.

Ferrand, prince of Portugal, became earl of Flanders by marriage with Jane, daughter of Baldwin IX., earl of Flanders. Philip Augustus of France defeated Ferrand and Otho IV. (emperor of Germany) at Bouvines, between Lille and Tournay, July 27, 1214.

249. Rosbek; so in Hart. I have no doubt that it is a misprint for Rosbek, or some such form, and that the place meant is the modern Roubaix, which lies a little to the north of a line joining Lille and Tournay, and not far from Bouvines.

251. Parisius veniet, shall come to Paris. Parisius for Parisios is not uncommon.

257. "Shall go right to Paris, without doubt." Here went (so spelt in both MSS.) is used in place of the more usual form went.

260. "This is the meaning of the saying."

336. The story goes back to the latter part of the year 1306.

374. "Their tackle, oars, and rudder;" cf. l. 633.

384. Sir John de Hastings, lord of Abergavenny and seneschal of Aquitaine, the chief competitor for the crown of Scotland against Balliol and the elder Bruce; see note to Book i. 51.
388. Brathweck, i.e. Brodick castle, on the E. coast of Arran. Jamieson is doubtful about the etymology of it, but it does not admit of a moment’s doubt; for the spelling Brathweck clearly points to the Icel. breiðr, broad, and the spelling Brodick is an equally obvious corruption of Broad Wick, i.e. broad bay, alluding to the semi-circular bay just at that place. See Lord of the Isles, v. 6, and the note.

391. Abandonit, subjected; as in l. 655. Thus Skelton has to abandonue, i.e. to subject, in his Magnyfycence, l. 1477, ed. Dyce, i. 273; and see Dyce’s note, ii. 260.

392. Warn, refuse; more commonly spelt wenne.

404. The tradition is that Bruce landed at a place on the west coast of Arran, still called the King’s Cove. See Jamieson, who refers to Stat. Acc. ix. 167.

518. The tothir day, the next day; lit. the second day.

556. Turnbergis nek, Turnberry Point, on the Ayrshire coast, some distance to the south of Ayr. The castle belonged to the Earls of Carrick, and in this instance to Bruce himself. See next note.

599. “Edward bestowed the lordship of Annandale, the paternal estate of Bruce, on the Earl of Hereford; the earldom of Carrick, his maternal estate, on Henry Percey,” &c.; Ann. of Scot. ii. 15.

606. “Had become English,” i.e. had sided with the English.

609. To rend, to go; i.e. he intended to go. The reading went (E and H) is wrong, as the sequel will shew that he did not go after all.

617. As for this mysterious fire, it still remains unexplained. See Lord of the Isles, v. 17, and the note. The story is continued further on, v. 14.

632. This story about the good wife is repeated in Book vii. 238, q. v.

682. Wes, i.e. was inspired. Jeromy, Jeremiah. Ysay (l. 683), Isaiah.

685. So thyn ar saucin, are sown so thinly, are dispersed so widely; i.e. come so seldom. Cf. sawyn; Wallace, xi. 1226.

697. Segis, mansions, or positions. Soft, propitious.

711. “So that he should spend his utmost power on astrology,” lit. should break his head in (studying) the stars.

721. “That confers upon them their natural dispositions.”

735. “That men, naturally predisposed (by their nativities) to evil.”

747. Nigramansy, necromancy; spelt nigramonge in Piers Plowman, A. xi. 158. The Latin mediaeval writers spelt it nigromantia, and hence the phrase “the black art;” see the remarks on the word in Trench, Eng. Past and Present, Lect. V.

753. Pithones. This reading, from Hart’s edition (but with the ending -s for -sse), was adopted as being more intelligible. Strictly speaking, the correct reading is certainly Phitones, as in the Edinburgh MS.; for though Phitones is an erroneous spelling, it was the usual spelling in mediaeval writers. Thus Chaucer has Phitonesse, in his Freres Tale, l. 7092, cd. Tyrwhitt; Lydgate has it twice; so also
Gower, Skelton, G. Douglas, and Sir D. Lyndsay; see the references in Dyce's Skelton, ii. 151. The passage in Skelton is in Phyllyp Sparowe, ll. 1342—1359:—

"I conjure Phyllyp, and call
In the name of kyng Saul;
Primo Regum expresse,
He bad the Phitonesse
To wytchcraft her to dresse," &c.

Thus the Phitonesse is the witch of Endor; the derivation being from Python. A similar transposition of consonants is seen in Chaucer's Adriane, for Ariadne.

771. "Guessed it, or certainly knew it."

NOTES TO BOOK V. (A.D. 1306, 1307.)

(Jamieson, IV. 1—656; Innes, pp. 102—126.)


1. Were, i.e. Ver, the spring. But I suspect Barbour is wrong, and that the time of the year was the autumn (of 1306). "Bruce suddenly issues from his retreat, at the end of September. He besieges Henry de Percy in Turnbury Castle (near Girvan, in Ayrshire), but an English force puts him again to flight;" Annals of England, p. 176. Barbour was thinking of the spring of 1307, when Douglas won his castle; see l. 255. Hailes (Ann. Scot. ii. 17) thinks that Barbour is right.

11. "To recover the covering of their heads," lit. head. Hevede is e early the proper reading, though written hevid in MS. E, and hede in MS. C. The final e is, however, superfluous, and the very best reading would be heved, with reved in l. 12.

13. In a footnote to Warton, Hist. Eng. Poetry, ed. Hazlitt, ii. 288, Mr Hazlitt explains grevis by 'growing things.' This is, of course, an error. Grevis = grevis, i.e. groves; a word familiar to readers of Chaucer, as occurring in one of his best passages; see Kn. Tale, 637. The reading gressys, i.e. grasses, is very inferior.

15. "With his fleet and a small company." The story is continued from Book iv. 631.

24. Intill one, in one direction, in a straight course. See the story as told in the Lord of the Isles, v. 13—17, and the notes.

74. Purvay, provide, ordain; rather than 'prepare,' as explained by Scott.

76. Myne heritage. Turnbury Castle had belonged to Bruce's mother, Martha, countess of Carrick. See Lord of the Isles, note to v. 19.
85. "For a warrior should not take much heed."
104. Langtoft, as translated by Brunne, ed. Hearne, ii. 337, speaks of "a sergeant of Galwye, his name was Makedowell," who seized Thomas and Alexander Bruce, the king's brothers, and delivered them up to king Edward. Jamieson supposes him to be the Macdowell here mentioned, though there seems to be nothing to shew this. See Ann. Scot. ii. 10.
133. A lady. Speaking of this very period, Fordun (cap. exxi.) says of Bruce:—"tandem, Deo miserante, per auxilian et potentiam Christianae de Insulis cujusdam nobilis feminine, et sibi benevolae, adjutus, post multos et varios circuitus et infinitos labores, dolores et pressuras, redit ad comitatum de Carryk;" &c. Cf. l. 178 below.
151. Erll adell, the earl of Athole; see Book iv. 62. He was executed at London; Annals of Scotland, ii. 14. See note to the Lord of the Isles, ii. 26.
152. The queyn; see Book iv. 55.
156. Cristole of Setoun; see Book iv. 16, and note to ii. 243*.
174. "Except where worth might be proved;" i. e. on the battle-field.
201. Schonand, shunning. The Edinb. MS. has skownrand or skowurand. Jamieson inserted the latter form in his Dictionary, but corrected it to the former one in his edition.
214. Lap on, leapt on horseback; i. e. took horse and fled.
236. "He shall not enjoy it without a fight."
255—462. Quoted from Jamieson's edition, in the Appendix to Introduction to Castle Dangerous.
262. "Dimidium facti qui cepit habet; sapere aude;" Horat. Ep. i. 2. 40. The common English proverb is—"Well begun is half done."
276. His fader; Lord William Douglas. Hume of Godscroft, in his Hist. of Douglas, p. 17, tells how Thomas Dickson assisted Lord William to take the castle of Sanwheire by stratagem.
317. A mantill. "The close vest with sleeves, and mantle or cloke over it, in the Spanish fashion, were long the dress of the men in Scotland, poor as well as rich. See Peblis to the Play, and other old Scottish poems."—P.
336. Sunet Brydis, Saint Bridget's or Saint Bride's. Her day was Feb. 1; see Chambers, Book of Days, i. 206.
388. Burdis set, tables set out; alluding to the movable tables, set
on trestles, commonly used in the olden time. They were laid aside when the feast was over. See Our Eng. Home, p. 30.

403. "Then he struck off the heads of the tuns of wine." See the description of the Douglas Larder in Castle Dangerous, ch. iv.; and Hist. of Douglas, by Hume of Godscroft, ed. 1644, p. 28, where we read that "this Cellar is called yet the Douglas Lairder."

412. Fordid, destroyed, spoilt, rendered useless; misprinted sordid, P. and J. It occurs again; ix. 323.

424. Or than, or, at any rate.

433. "In order that men should less know where they were."

493. As of the men, as among the men. Hart has—As ony man, a needless change.

521. This story of the three traitors who attempted to kill Bruce is told over again, in a different form, in Book vii. 400. There is another similar story in Book vii. 79. In fact, the number of times it appears, in some form or other, is rather confusing. The clearest way is to give the list of them:

(1) The two Macindrossers, with a third man not named, attack Bruce when on horseback. All are slain. Book iii. 93.

(2) A one-eyed man and his two sons undertake to slay Bruce for a reward of forty pounds, and attack Bruce and his page. All are slain; v. 485.

(3) Five of John of Lorn's men attack Bruce and his foster-brother. All are slain; vi. 595.

(4) Three traitors, carrying a wether, after passing the night with Bruce and his foster-brother in a lone house, attack them. All are slain, as well as the foster-brother; vii. 79.

(5) Three traitors find the king alone with his two hounds. All are slain, two of them by a hound; vii. 400.

These adventures do not include the fight between Bruce and Lorn's men, on which occasion he slew fourteen; vi. 108.

546. Varrar, more aware, better aware.

575. About his hals, hung round his neck. This shews that the sword was a long two-handed one, like Lord Lindesay's, as described in The Abbot, ch. xxi.

595. Bot and, and also. A vyre, a cross-bow bolt; Pinkerton wrongly says 'an arrow.'

642. Toym, leisure; a different word from tym, time.

NOTES TO BOOK VI. (A.D. 1307.)

(Jamieson, IV. 657—V. 300; Innes, pp. 126—150.)

3. Yngerame, Sir Ingraham de Umfraville. This is a manifest slip of memory; the person meant is Sir Ingraham Bell, governor of Ayr, as distinctly stated in Book v. 483.
84. "That they might land together (on the opposite shore)."

85°. The eight lines, from *Hie two men to allew abaid* should, each of them, have been preceded by an asterisk, to shew that they are not in Pinkerton's edition.

87. *Quhistbyng*, baying. The reading *questyonng* in the Edinb. MS. is a false one, added afterwards in darker ink. Hart has *whissiling.* Cf. l. 94.

101—106. These lines are a corrupt repetition of ll. 85°—92°. The Cambridge MS. rightly omits them.

120. "Since he was protected with armour."

121. *Thurt*, needed; clearly the right reading; see the footnote. The line means—"so that he needed not fear their arrows." Though this form does not seem to be noticed by Jamieson, it is common enough. Spelt *poirt*, it occurs six times in William of Palerne; and spelt *port*, three more times in the same. See other instances in the Glossary to William of Palerne, s. v. *port*. Even Stratmann, however, gives but one instance of it (spelt *pelrt*) from Layamon, l. 22923; which he enters under *perrt*. See Book xx. 107, footnote.

128. *For litill strynt of erd*, owing to a slight vantage of position. *Tane*, undertaken.

149. *Fiff sum*, five in all; cf. note to iii. 420, and *sex sum* in l. 231 below.

179. This story is clearly inserted to give some air of probability to the preceding story about Bruce. The original passage is in Statius, *Thebaidos*, lib. ii. Barbour's account may be compared with that in Lydgate's Story of Thebes, pt. ii. l. 1128. See the whole passage from Lydgate, with explanatory notes, in Specimens of English, a.d. 1394—1579, ed. Skeat, pp. 28—33, 376—379.

196. "The other (should reign) a year, after that (the first year) was past."

210. *Behauit away*, behoved to get away, i.e. had to pass.

246. *And oft fell*, and it often happened.

268. *Him allane*, alone by himself. The reference in the footnote is misprinted; see l. 178, not 378. And see ll. 273, 278, 320.

314. "Then they greatly praised God, the almighty."

316. *Thaim byrd*, it behoved them. See *buren* in Stratmann.

323, 324. "They that were always accustomed to be with him marvelled, and pressed forward (lit. yearned) to see him."

336. In a note on the Four Cardinal Virtues, pr. in Relig. Antiq., p. 154, we find—"Fortitudo itaque habet in dextro latere audaciam, in sinistro ignaviam." See also Ratis *Raving*, ed. Lumby, p. 34; and Spenser, F. Q. ii. 2. 38.

348, 349. "And undertakes that which should be undertaken, and leaves what should be left."

392. *Thrilleall*, Thirlwall; mentioned above, v. 460. The name means 'pierce-wall,' and Fordun (Scotchchron. iii. 10) tells a story about the Picts and Scots piercing the great Roman wall of Hadrian, whence
(according to him) the place where the wall had most suffered was called Thirlit-wall, i. e. pierced wall, in Latin Murus perforatus. Wyn
town (Cronykil, v. 3251) likewise says that the Roman wall was called
Thryl-wal, though the name was doubtless only applied to a particular
portion of it. Camden (Britannia, iii. 490) says that “Thirlewale
castle” is near the rivulet Poltross, and that it stands “where the Scots
opened to themselves a way into the province between Irthing and
Tine.” This means a few miles to the westward of Haltwhistle, on
the borders of Northumberland and Cumberland. Thirlwall was, in
fact, the name of a Northumbrian family, who may have been so named
from living near a place where the Roman wall had been broken
through by the Scots.

432. “Was slain there in the battle.”

463. Cumnock is in Ayrshire. Stratez, narrowest. The reference
is clearly to a district named Cumnock, i. e. to the valley joining Old to
New Cumnock, and opening into the valley of the Nith. See l. 511.

481. John of Lorn, the son of Allaster of Lorn; see note to Lord
of the Isles, i. 11; and see Scott’s abridgement of the present passage
of Barbour in the note to canto ii. st. 32 of the same poem. Wallace
was hunted in a similar manner; see Jamieson’s edition of Wallace,
v. 25, note.

487. Streccour, a fast runner, a dog for the chase; from the verb
streke, to go rapidly (Halliwell). The Edinb. MS. and Hart have the
absurd reading traitour!

503. “For the sake of Sir John Comyn, his uncle.” But Comyn
was father-in-law to the father of John of Lorn; see note to Book iii. 1.
510. Randale, Randolph; at this period on the English side; see
note to ii. 237.

522, 523. “Paid attention to them, and to no other quarter, and did
foolishly.”

533. “Was far stronger than he (i. e. his party) was, and more in
number.”

561. “He (king Robert) supposed that he (Lorn) knew that it was
really the king whom he was following.”

560. “Has slain the fifth;” lit. has done the fifth out of days.
The phrase is common. Cf. Will. of Palerne, l. 3817; and see l. 652.

656. Perhaps till should be to, i. e. too; the constant confusion be-
tween till and to in both the MSS. would easily cause the mistake, if it
be one. At any rate till is here used with that sense. The line
means—‘But ye took to yourself too great a share.’

666. “I could annoy them very much the more.”
NOTES TO BOOK VII. (A.D. 1307.)

(Jamieson, V. 301—935 ; Innes, pp. 150—173.)

1. Lines 1—230 and 400—487 are given in Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat, ed. 1873, pp. 203—214 ; with explanatory notes at pp. 335—337, many of which are here repeated.

2. *Vill of wayn,* for *will of wayn,* completely at a loss; see note above, to ii. 471. So also *will of vayn* in l. 225.

10. *Abide zhe heir,* if ye abide here. Observe how the inferior addresses his superior as *ye ;* the superior replies with *thou,* l. 15.

18. "That whosoever would aye wade along stream the length of a bowshot."

27. "And continued their way along it;" here _held on_ signifies continued, persevered in.

48. "And he is very far off by this time."

65. _Lest on lif,* last alive, remain alive.

71. "And stood lurking in a bush."

72. "Until the hound came close at hand." It is interesting to observe that even Shakespeare uses while in the sense of until; see Macbeth, iii. 1. 44 ; Richard II. i. 3. 122.

90. _Price and lovyng,* honour and praise. If *loving* had been intended, it would have been written _luff_ or _luffing._

103. "If he were attacked (or challenged to fight) on equal terms."

105. This is the adventure so excellently told in the Lord of the Isles, canto iii. st. 18—30.

118. "And asked them whither they wished to go."

127. _Late,* demeanour ; lit. gesture, manner.

132. _Bryng hym than of daw,* then bring him out of day, _i. e._ kill him; as above. See note to vi. 650.

135. _Havyng,* demeanour; lit. having.

137. "Fellows, ye must, all three, till we be better acquainted, go in front all by yourselves." Cf. l. 1. 146.

142. "Sir, there is no need to believe any ill (to be) in us."

160. The reading of the Edinb. MS. is very inferior. The word _a_ is emphatic, and means _one._

163. The word "houf_" is written for "housis," and should be read as a disyllable.

177. "Saw that it became him of necessity to sleep." _Slep_ is here a verb in the infinitive mood, not a substantive.

179. _Valk,* awake; used transitively. The intransitive form is _walkyn,* whence _valkyr_ in ll. 210, 291. The introduction of the letter _n_ (after a stem) renders a verb intransitive in Meso-Gothic, Swedish, &c. See note on verbs ending in _-nan_; Skeat’s Meso-Gothic Glossary, p. 303. Cf. Swed. _vaka,* to watch ; _vakna,* to awake.

188. _As foull on twist,* like a bird on a bough.

192. _Rovit he,* snored loudly; _he = high, _i. e._ loudly.
218. *Na war, &c.*; had it not been for the defensive armour which he wore.

238. *The gud wyf,* the good-wife, the mistress of the house. This story, of the good-wife who predicted Bruce's success and sent her sons with him, is repeated from Book iv. 632.

Jamieson has a long 'additional note,' containing a tradition that the three sons of a widow (all by different husbands, and consequently bearing three different names, Murdoch, Mac Kay, and Mac Lurg) helped Bruce, by a stratagem, to gain a victory at a bog called Moss Raploch, near the Dee. They were rewarded by grants of land.

302*. *To-vauерand,* lit. to-wavering, i.e. wandering uncertainly in different directions. This is certainly the true original reading, for which *to warrand,* i.e. to a place of security (as in Hart's edition) is an ingenious substitution; so also in l. 331. We have already had *vauer-and,* wandering, vagabond, in l. 112 above, and the verb *vaueryt,* wandered, in l. 41. Cf. *wauерand wynd,* i.e. changeable wind, in Wallace, iv. 340. For *varrand,* see l. 347.

330. *Nakyt,* i.e. unprovided with defensive armour; the usual sense. See l. 434.

368. The reading *sagat* (E.) instead of *sa* (C.) is better, because otherwise the line is too short. The sense is the same.


447. *But langar frest,* without longer delay.

455. *Top our tail,* top over tail, head over heels.

467. *Schot,* rushed, darted; *so schute,* dart, in l. 390. In like manner *schot = rushed,* in Havelok, l. 1838.

471. "That stone-dead he fell (lit. drove) to the earth."

494. *Glentrewell,* Glentruel or Glentrool; probably the Glen of Loch Trool, which is near the Western border of Kirkcudbrightshire. It was "a strate place," i.e. a narrow pass; l. 529.

543. *May we do suw,* if we may do so; if we can succeed in doing so. See l. 439 above, and the note.

622. *Cliffurd,* one of the family of the Cliftords of Cumberland, Wauiss, i.e. Vaux, also the name of a Cumberland family. Vaux was originally *de Vaulx,* i.e. *de Vallibus,* of the vales. "Henry II. bestowed Gilsland on Hubert, a Norman, who took the name of *de Vaulx,* as descriptive of his property, 'from the dales or vallies, of which the country is full.' It has been said, for the same reason, that it was called Gilsland; from *gill,* which 'in the dialect of the county signifies a dale or valley.' See Hutchinson's Cumberland, i. 47; Camden, iii. 455."—J. *Gill,* by the way, signifies rather a small ravine or rocky chasm; Icel. *gil.* *Maid a metle,* had a quarrel, took to blows.

623. *Raucht him a cole,* fetched him a buffet. *Colè* is properly a blow on the neck; O.Fr. *colee* (Burguy), from *col,* the neck. It was used both of a blow given in anger and of the *accolade* given in dubbing a knight. The Edinb. MS. has *roucht nocht him to lee,* recked not
to lie to him (or, to call him a liar). Hart reads \textit{raught him routes three}, gave (lit. reached) him three blows.

624. "And either then betook himself to his own men;" i. e. they took sides, and began a general fight. Hence \textit{Deparit} = parted, l. 626.

632. \textit{Com of toune}, lit. came out of town; merely a general phrase for 'set out.'

634. "Saw so few men offer them battle."

---

\textbf{NOTES TO BOOK VIII. (A.D. 1307.)}

(\textit{Jamieson, Book VI. 1—520; Innes, pp. 173—192.})


9. \textit{Kyle}. This is a district of Ayrshire, occupying the central portion of it, between Cunningham on the North, and Carrick on the South. It contains the Craigs of Kyle, above the river Doon.

13. Cunningham is the name of a district, in the Northern part of Ayrshire. See above.

14. \textit{He gert helde}, he caused to be held or kept under his dominion. \textit{Helde} is the past participle here. Cf. \textit{gert sallit}, xviii. 168, and the note thereon.

15. Bothwell Castle; on the Clyde, above Glasgow.


28. Godscroft says—"Sir James Douglas, knowing the way by which they must go, called \textit{Machanacks way}, he lay in a strait foord betweene two marishes, called \textit{Ederfoord};" Hist. Douglas, p. 28. But Jamieson says that the late David Macpherson held that the form in MS. E. is right, and that \textit{Makynokis way} is "a narrow pass on the bank of Makynok wattyr;" Geog. Illust. He placed it near Kilmarnock; which, by the way, is mentioned in l. 95 below.

37. \textit{South half}, south side. Correct 'north' to 'south,' and 'south' to 'north' in the marginal note.

95. Kilwinning is between Kilmarnock and Ardrossan. At Ardrossan, Sir Philip had reached the sea-coast of Ayrshire; he then followed the coast-line due north, through Largs to Innerkip. The rest fled back to Bothwell (l. 111) in an opposite direction.

123. Galston is not far to the E. of Kilmarnock. Loudoun and Loudoun castle are close to Galston

133. The year meant is 1307. "That Bruce defeated Sir Aymer at Loudon-hill, appears from the English historians Matthew of Westminster and Trivet; see Annals of Scotland, ii. 20."—P.

218. \textit{Eschelis}, squadrons; a better reading than \textit{battalis}; see footnote. In Marco Polo, ed. Yule, ii. 326, we find "Ils font eschiel en
mer.” Colonel Yule’s note is—“Eschiel is the equivalent of the Italian schera or schiera, a troop or squadron, and thence applied to order of battle, whether by land or sea.” It is perfectly clear that the O.Fr. eschele, a squadron, sometimes spelt eschierie, and borrowed from the O. H. German scara (mod. G. schauer), a troop, which again is from the O. H. G. scerjan, skerjan, to divide (E. to shear)—is a totally different word from O.Fr. eschelle, a ladder, from the Lat. scala. The two forms were, however, early confused, and the less intelligible word eschierie was modified so as to coincide with the common term eschelle. It is one of the very numerous examples of a corruption in the form of a word, due to close resemblance of an obscure to a well-known form.

226. (Footnote.) Jamieson gives the (very corrupt) reading of E thus—

“Thar bassynettis burnyst all
Agayne the son glemand off lycht all.”

257. That vs thar doun, whom it needs us to fear; cf. vs betydis in l. 254. Pinkerton and Jamieson, not understanding the word thar, misread it as char, which is unmeaning. See the Glossary.

280. Cant and keyn, proud and bold; certainly the right reading. It was a common phrase. It occurs, for example, in Laurence Minot; see Spec. of Eng. ed. Morris and Skeat, sect. xi. (c.) 107—

“The king of Beme was cant and kene,
Bot þare he left both play and pride.”

290. Ek thair renowne, increase their renown; cf. ranowne, l. 520.

296. Sarray, closely; used as equivalent to sarraly. The line means—“And right closely together rode along.” Innes rightly explains sarray (mis-rendered ‘artfully’ by Jamieson), but is himself wrong in making raid = arrayed. See raid, rode, in l. 89.

351. To ga should, probably, have been printed to-ga. See to-ga in the Glossary, and cf. Book ix. 263, 269.

361. The king. This must mean Edward I., who was not yet dead, though his death has been narrated at a much earlier point of the narrative; see Book iv. 333, and note to iv. 190. In l. 364, it means his successor, for Sir Aymer fought at Bannockburn; see Book xi. 176.

368. “With a small army like a rabble.”

393. The mouth; i.e. the Grampian mountains; see note to Book ii. 494. Tytler (Hist. Scotland, i. 102) defines ‘the Mounth’ as being “the name anciently given to that part of the Grampian chain which extends from the borders of the district called the Mearns to Loch Rannach.”

395. Sir Alexander Fraser was last mentioned in Book ii. 407; see note to ii. 239.

397. Symon. It is odd that Sir Simon Fraser should be mentioned here, as he was put to death the year before; see note to ii. 239. It is still more odd that he should be mentioned yet again, in Book ix. 10.

425. Selceryk, Selkirk; Hart has Ettrik. See a note upon “Selkirk, or Ettrick forest,” in Lord of the Isles, v. 34, note.
427. Gedword, C.; Jedworthis, E. This Jedworth forest must have been on the banks of the Jed, which runs past Jedburgh into the Teviot. It is called 'Jedward forest' by Hume of Godscroft; see last line of Appendix I. to Introduction to Castle Dangerous. Jedworth is the old name of Jedburgh. See the note to The Wallace, ed. Jamieson, vii. 1277.

447. Lanrik. There is a Lanrick not far from the Trosachs and Loch Vennachar, but the place here meant is clearly Lanark, the principal town in the neighbourhood of Douglasdale; and, indeed, MS. E reads lanark; see the footnote. The line means—"just as if they wanted to go to Lanark," i.e. for the purpose of selling the contents of the sacks. See the story in Godscroft, quoted in App. I. to Intro. to Castle Dangerous; see also a note to the Lord of the Isles, vi. 1; and Tales of a Grandfather, ch. ix. "The castle-hill of Lanark is on the south of the town, but no ruin of the castle remains; its seite (sic) being now (A.D. 1790) a bowling-green and garden."—P.

450. Ladis, loads; see l. 467. Gang on raw, proceeding in a row.

453. Sir John of Webtoun is called Sir John Walton by Godscroft, and Sir John de Walton by Scott. See Castle Dangerous, especially the Appendix to the Introduction, which contains Godscroft's account of Douglas's successes.

NOTES TO BOOK IX. (A.D. 1307, 1308.)

(Jamieson, VI. 521—VII. 298; Innes, pp. 192—219.)

1. We have now come to about the time of the death of Edward I., which took place July 7, 1307. It has been inserted much too early; see note to Book iv. 190.

10. This seems to be a mistake; see note to viii. 397.

34. Ennerrowry, Inverury, on the Don, about 15 miles north-west of Aberdeen. "Bruce went to the north of Scotland October, 1307."—P.

59. But strinth, without a strongly fortified place to protect them.

64. The sense of apane is not clear here; it is certainly an adverb, and represents the French à peine etymologically, but Barbour uses it, both here and in l. 89, in a very odd way. The quotations in Jamieson shew that it is also used, in Wallace, in an equally strange manner. Jamieson resorts to the desperate guess that, in this particular passage, it means 'provided,' from the Old French apaper, to nourish, provide. This is quite out of the question, and not worth considering, as it does not answer for l. 89. In Wallace (viii. 911) Jamieson says that "nocht apayn" means 'scarcely, hardly;' and refers us to Cotgrave, who translates à peine by "hardly, not without much adoe." This, again, is clearly wrong, because it ignores the negative, and makes 'nocht apayn' and 'apayn' to mean exactly the same thing. There is
another passage in Wallace (xi. 1313) where apayn off loss off lyce means 'on pain of loss of life,' a sense which is also found in Old French for à peine. This gives a gleam of light; and we may, I think, suppose apayn to mean here 'under a penalty,' or 'at a pinch.' The line then means — 'Unless they be, at a pinch, the braver men.' So too, in l. 89, we may suppose the sense to be — 'yet shall they flee, at a pinch;' i. e. for fear of losing their lives. So too, in Wallace, viii. 911, we have — 'And nocht apayn to wyn it by no slycht,' i. e. and not, at a pinch, to win (the town) by any stratagem.

107. The Slevach. Pinkerton reads Slenach, and says — "The Slenach is probably in the mountains of Benachie, a few miles west of Inverury." Jamieson has Slenach, unexplained. The MSS. of Fordun (Gest. Annal. cap. cxxii.) have both Slenach (or Slevach) and Slevach. In every instance where Slenach occurs, it is doubtless a mis-reading for Slevach = Slevach. Innes prints slevacch, and says — "It is believed to be Sliach, a place in the parish of Drumblate in the Garioch, where a consistent local tradition concurs with chronicle and history," p. 497; and adds an additional remark at p. 517. But the simple solution of the whole matter is, I suspect, that the phrase 'the slevach' merely means the highlands, with especial reference to the rugged and difficult country within the Gaelic border. It is the Gaelic sliabhach, mountainous, an adjective derived from sliabh, a mountain. The same word accounts for the name of the Slive Broughta Mountains, Slieve Bloom, Slieve Mish, &c., in Ireland. Hence it is that, in the very next line, we read that the king lay "in that strinth," i. e. in that strong position.


127. Martymes, Martinmass, i. e. Nov. 11, 1307.

138. Maid kynchits, dubbed some new knights; the common practice before a battle. So in xii. 413.

188. Strabogy, Strath Bogie, the vale of the Bogie, within which is situated the town of Huntly, Aberdeenshire.

190. Coner and ga, to recover and walk about.

202. Aird meldrom, Old Meldrum, not far from Inverury.

204. Befor yoill-cyn and nycht, one night before Christmas Eve, or two nights before Christmas Day. The account in Fordun differs; he makes the Earl of Buchan's men afraid to attack the Bruce, as above, l. 183, but he dates this at Christmas, saying — "Sicque die natalis Domini pudore victi et confusi redierunt, treugas postulabant, &c." The battle described here by Barbour (II. 206—279) is related by Fordun under the date 1308. He says — "Iterum congregati sunt Johannes Comyne et Philippus de Mubra cum Scotis et Anglica quam pluribus apud Inverury, anno Domini mcccvi, quod, ut rex Robertus audivit, gravi adhuc infirmitate detentus, de grabato suo, quo semper
portabatur, surrexit, et suis, ut se armarent et e quo ut imponerent, imperavit." Lord Hailes gives May 22, 1308, as the date of this battle; Ann. Scot. ii. 24.

249. Merdale, rabble; from O.Fr. merdaille, a dirty crew.


297. Fra end to end. The district extends along the north of Aberdeenshire, and can be traced by the names Buchan-haven, near Peterhead, Buchan Ness (S. of Peterhead), Bullers o' Buchan, still further south along the coast, and Logie Buchan, on the river Ythan.

306. Mair and mair. Fordun notices that this was the turning-point in Bruce's career; after his battle with the Earl of Buchan, he was always as successful as he had before been unfortunate. The real cause of this is easily traced to the death of Edward I.

309. The scottis se, a name given to the Firth of Forth; cf. l. 460.

312. Forster, forester. "A village, vulgarly named Forster-seat, about two miles east from Forfar, is said to be properly designed (sic) Forster-seat, as having been the place where the forester anciently resided. Platan is unquestionably the same which is called the Forest of Platter or Plater, in a charter of Robert Bruce 'to the Abbey of Restennet,' granting 'a liberty to cut wood in it;' Ind. Chart. 4. 43. This priory is about a mile from Forfar, and not more distant from Forster-seat. The grant was renewed by his son David; ibid. 38, 40."

—J. See Jamieson's note for further information.

328. All fre. "But Dundee was still held by the English, till 1313. See Book x. 801."—P.

338. Moffat seems the right reading; the Camb. MS. has Mufhet, as I read it. Innes read it Musbey, and took it to mean Montefé, which seems rather far-fetched. Olifert or Olifart is the same as Oliphard, the old form of the name which is now spelt Oliphant, probably by a corruption. See Cranfurd's Peerage, p. 376, and Jamieson's note.

340. The Erl. Malise, Earl of Strathern; see l. 434.

391. There is an odd story in The Wallace about a Sir Thomas de Longueville, who had been a pirate; and it is asserted (bk. xi. 1148) that he was the "knight of France" here mentioned by Barbour.

412. The tothir, the second. Tuk, reached the top of, surmounted.

450. Fordun (Gest. Annal. cap. cxxix.) dates the taking of Perth on Jan. 8, 1312, which seems to be the right date. Barbour here places it earlier, apparently in 1308.

509. Barbour again speaks of "Sir Aymery of Sanct John" in Book xvi. 506. He has made a mistake in the Christian name; the knight's name was John de St John. See Annals of Scotland, ii. 25; Jamieson's note; and a note to Lord of the Isles, vi. 1. "The custody of the marches of Cumberland and Annandale was given to him, and he died in the year 1302;" Ann. of England, p. 173. A drawing of his coat of arms is given in the same work, at p. 177.

517. The Cree divides Wigtonshire from Kirkcudbrightshire. Fordun says the battle took place beside the Dee. He dates it June 29, 1308.
522. The Camb. MS. has buttill, which Innes retains, with the remark that "the Edinb. MS. and the editions have Bothwell, in contempt of geography." But he does not tell us where 'Buttill' is, and, after all, Bothwell is not so very far off. However, it is generally considered that the place meant is a certain Butel Castle, on the sea-coast of Galloway, which belonged to the Balliol Family; see Ann. Scot. ii. 36, note; Tytler's Hist. Scot. i. 104; Ker's Bruce, i. 345. If this be the true solution, then the Camb. MS. is right after all, and the reading buttill should have been retained.

609, 610. "When they had hastily pierced through them, they boldly directed their heads inwards again," i.e. having charged right through, they turned their horses' heads round, and charged again.

673. The forest, i.e. of Selkirk, otherwise called Ettrick forest; see Book viii. 425, and the note. Barbour uses it in a wide sense, as he makes it extend to the Water of Lyne; see next note.

683. The "wattir of Lyne" falls into the Tweed, a few miles above Peebles.

686. "Heard their sayings, every word of them." The Edinb. MS. has the extraordinary variation—And hard ane say tharin—'the dewill!'. Upon which variation, probably quite corrupt, Sir Walter Scott founded his remark in the Lord of the Isles, v. 7—"A language much unmeet he hears." See Scott's own note upon that line.

691, 692. According to Jamieson, Sir Alexander Stewart of Bonkle or Bonkile (now Bunkle) was grandson of Alexander, High Steward of Scotland. Bunkle is not far from Dunse, Berwickshire.

695. Adam of Gordon afterwards sided with Bruce, but not till after 1312; see xv. 333. He afterwards obtained from Bruce the lordship of Strathbogie, Aberdeenshire. See Jamieson's note, who refers to Nisbet, Heraldry, i. 308; Gordon's Hist. of the House of Sutherland, p. 38; Ind. Chart. 2. 40; Rymer's Foedera, iii. 82, 300, 396. West Gordon is in Berwickshire, S.W. of Greenlaw.

NOTES TO BOOK X. (A.D. 1308—1313.)

(Jamieson, Book VII. 299—1126; Innes, pp. 219—249.)


11. John of Lorn; see Book vi. 481, and the note. This adventure is described in The Tales of a Grandfather, near the end of chap. ix., and in the Lord of the Isles, note to i. 11.

17. Ane euill place; the terrible pass of Brandir, down which the river Awe flows, out of Loch Awe into Loch Etive. See the description in note K to the Highland Widow.
27. Crechanben, Ben Cruachan, overlooking Lochs Awe and Etive, Argyleshire; see the Highland Widow, ch. i. Though not "the highest mountain in all Britain," it is of great height, about 3670 feet, or somewhat higher than Snowdon.

34. The se, the lake; i.e. Loch Etive, a sea-loch, not the inland Loch Awe, from which the ships could not have escaped. The reader should consult the minute descriptions of this scene in notes K and L to the Highland Widow, one of which is quoted from the Bridal of Caolchairn, the other from Tytler's Life of Bruce.

73. Apert, open, manifest; i.e. bold. Pinkerton prints a pert, and takes pert to mean 'brisk.' This must have arisen from inattention, as the word is very common. See l. 315 below.

82. Ane vatir, the river Awe.

86. Brig, bridge. Of course only a slight wooden one; see ll. 88, 93. It was situate at a place called the Rocks of Brandir.

113. Dunstaffynch, called Dunstaffynch in Fordun, cap. cxxvi., is now generally called Dunstaffnage. Dunstaffnage Castle is near Oban, on the W. coast of Argyleshire. See Pennant's Hebrides, p. 410.

123. Alexander; otherwise called Allaster of Argyle; or, in Fordun, "Alexander de Ergadia." See Annals of Scotland, ii. 27, and note to Lord of the Isles, i. 11.

125. Tretis, an offer of a truce; the Edinb. MS. has treysteris, i.e. men to treat about a truce. Fordun says that Bruce and Alexander could not come to terms, expressly contrary to Barbour's account. He adds that Alexander fled to England, and died there.

129. Rebell, rebellious. "The Earl of Ulster is ordained to co-operate with the fleet of Johannes de Ergadia, or John of Lorn, in opposing the rebellious subjects of Edward II., as he denominates the Scots, An. 1310. See Rymer's Foedera, iii. 223."—J.

136. Here there seems to be a considerable break in the narrative. The capture of Linlithgow castle did not take place, it is supposed, till 1311. In 1310, according to Fordun, there was a severe famine in Scotland. Also a truce had been concluded with England in 1309, which lasted till August, 1310. In September Edward II. made a fruitless invasion of Scotland, of which Barbour takes no notice.

137. Lythkow, Linlithgow; peill, a small castle; see l. 147. The story of its capture by stratagem is told in Tales of a Grandfather, ch. ix.

151. Husband, husbandman, small farmer. Fee, cattle.

153. From l. 194, the man's name seems to have been Bunnock; Hart's edition says Binny. Scott calls it "Binnock, or as it is now pronounced, Binning." Jamieson notices that the arms of some of the Binnings contain a waggon, with "a demi-horse furnished for a waggon as the crest;" with a reference to Nisbet's Heraldry, i. 100. The 'waggon' is supposed to have reference to the exploit here narrated.

180. Hede-soyme, the head-soam, or rope passing from the cart to the head or heads of the animals that drew it; answering to what we

BRUCE. 37
should now call 'the traces.' See Soyme in Jamieson, Soam in Halliwell. The traces being cut, the waggon could not be withdrawn, nor the gate closed.

193. Vonyn hay, lit. had won hay, i. e. bad cut and dried it, ready for carrying or 'leading,' as it is often called in country parts. Cf. "with cartis hay to leid;" The Wallace, ix. 701.

196. But dangeir, without making any trouble of it.

227. "Began to drive the waggon quickly." So, in l. 231, call all means "drive along all!"

232. He; not Bunnock, but the driver; who let his 'gad-wand' or whip fall out of his hands, and seized the hatchet in his belt; see l. 174. Barbour constantly changes the persons whom he denotes by he or that.

267. "The charter, which is curious, is published by Home, lord Kainis, in his Essays on British Antiquities, and in Shaw's History of Moray. It has no date."—P.

305. His eym, his uncle, i. e. king Robert.

313. Mycht. Innes says—"both MSS. have ficht." This is a mistake; the readings are—mycht, C.; fycht, E.; might, II.; as in the footnote.

324. Lumbard. The name recurs in l. 761 below. For variations, see the footnotes. After Gascon, i. e. Gascon, insert a semi-colon or full stop, which seems to have 'dropped out' at press.

336. For the continuation of the narrative, see l. 506 below.

352. This tym that, whilst. The two events, the capture of Roxburgh castle by Douglas and of Edinburgh castle by Randolph, were very nearly contemporaneous. Fordun (cap. cxxx.) dates the former on Shrove Tuesday, and the latter on March 14, 1313. Barbour mentions "fasteryn eyyn" in l. 372, meaning likewise the eve of the great Fast-day, i. e. Shrove Tuesday. Pinkerton explains this by "6 March, 1313." This is clearly wrong; since, according to Sir H. Nicolas's Chronol. of History, pp. 60, 76, Easter-day in 1313 fell on April 15, and Shrove Tuesday on Feb. 27. Barbour is, at any rate, right here in his order of events. For the narrative, see Tales of a Grandfather, ch. ix.

361. Treyn, wooden; the Edinb. MS. has Irne, i. e. iron, which is less probable. There is a misprint in the footnote; for 'Irne C,' read 'Irne E.'

375. "They wholly covered the armour that they wore with black frocks."

390. "He will make merry to-night, even though they be taken away by the Douglas." That is, the man will be so taken up with the sports of Shrovetide as not to heed the chance of his cattle being stolen. Cf. l. 440.

456. This was "Gillemin de Fiennes, a knight of Burgundy;" Annals of Scotland, ii. 37.

471. I make the reading of the Edinb. MS. to be—"The castell tint be, cleane and law," i. e. the castle to be lost, clean and low, i. e. wholly
and to the bottom. So too, in l. 124 above, we have “cleyn and law,” as a sort of proverbial phrase. The word could not there be read as ‘cleyu,’ and I have no belief in the word ‘cleue,’ as printed by Jamieson; still less in the form ‘clef,’ sheerly invented by Innes.

476. “But nevertheless he held the tower very sturdily till the second day.”

481. Tretit thame, treated with them, made terms.

516. The readings victory (CH) and body (E) are clearly both wrong. The original word is lost, but I can give a shrewd guess at it. I do not doubt that it was voidry, another spelling of voidre, which is closely connected with slicht in ix. 747, in a similar allusion to Randolph’s character. Voidry, an uncommon word, would easily be misread as victory on the one hand; and, on the other, if written ‘voidery’ (i.e. ‘voidy’ with a slight curl) would quite as easily be mistaken for ‘body,’ on account of the occasionally close resemblance between the letters b and v in Lowland-Scottish MSS. The sense of it is ‘cunning, stratagem,’ lit. power to avoid. This is the sense required.

529. “Before that the siege should miscarry through his fault.”

Or at = ere that. Forfure is the past tense subjunctive.

608. Ayndless, breathless; see aynd (breath) in the next line. The Edinb. MS. has the bad spelling handles.

673. “If they had been of good counsel.”

705. Tyre. So in CH; Treile, E. Pinkerton rejects the reading Tyre, saying—“It was in a town of the Oxydrace that Alexander incurred this danger; Arrian, lib. vi. p. 394, ed. Blancardi. But the name is unknown, and Barbour’s authority escapes me.” In North’s Plutarch (ed. 1631, p. 705) it is said that it was “in assailing a city of the Mallians, which they say are the warlikest men of all the Indians.” The solution is, of course, that Barbour did not take his story from genuine history, but from a romance; viz. from Li Romans d’Alixandre, par Lambert li Tors. See the edition by H. Michelant, p. 217, where the very word befoiri (see l. 708) is used.


737. See a notice of St Margaret, wife of Malcolm Canmore of Scotland, in Chambers, Book of Days, ii. 584. She died Nov. 16, 1093.

799. Womyn, won. Innes proposed to read womin in l. 793, but won here. His text reverses these readings. Both ways he is wrong; for the form here must be the same as before, being equally a past participle after has.

815, 816. Lenteryne, Lent, 1313. Saint Iohnnis mess, St John’s mass, i.e. June 24, or Midsummer day, 1313. From l. 821, we learn that the arrangement was that Sir Philip Mowbray obtained just a year’s truce, during which Stirling castle was to be relieved. This led to the battle of Bannockburn, fought on June 24, 1314; i.e. on the very day on which the year expired.
NOTES TO BOOK XI. (A.D. 1313, 1314.)

(Jamieson, VIII. 1—659; Innes, pp. 249—273.)

1. Comand, covenant; referring to the agreement made between Sir Philip Mowbray and the Scotch. See Book x. 820.

24. As men sayis; this shows it was a popular proverb. It means—"A little stone may upset a great waggon." In Hazlitt's Proverbs we find—"A little fire burns up a great deal of corn;" and—"A little leak will sink a great ship."

32. Outrageous, extreme; alluding to the great length of time assigned.

50. "God may very well dispose of our destinies."

84. See The Lord of the Isles, canto vi. st. 4, and the notes; Fordun, cap. cxxxi.; Rymer's Foedera, iii. 476-8, 481.

107. "With horses covered with complete mail." Here playn seems to represent the Fr. plein. The Edinb. MS. has in plait and mailze; on which Innes remarks—"The distinction between the two kinds of armour, if known, was not so specific in Barbour's age."

123. Charre, multitude of waggon, for carrying baggage. O.Fr. charroy, which Cotgrave explains by—"Carriage, portage, waynage, waggonage; the carrying of things by wayne, cart, or waggon; also, a cart or other carriage; also, a cart-load, chariot-load, or waggon-load of." This word is miswritten char in the Edinb. MS., and is followed by a blank line. The passage somewhat puzzled Pinkerton and Jamieson, but is easily set right by the Cambridge MS.

153. "Holes shall be rent in whole cloth."

163. The young Earl of Gloucester, Gilbert de Clare, who was killed in the battle, was the king's nephew, being son of Joan of Acre, daughter of Edward I., who married Gilbert, Earl of Clare and Gloucester. See Annals of England, p. 166, and p. 183, note n.; Annals of Scotland, ii. 46. Barbour mentions his name below; xiii. 466.

The Earl of Hereford was Sir Humphrey de Bohun, constable of England. See a notice of him in Annals of England, p. 185, note y; and of his father in the same, p. 173, note f. He was taken prisoner at Bannockburn, and exchanged for Robert Bruce's queen. He died in 1322. A later Humphrey de Bohun, who became Earl of Hereford in 1336, is noticed in my preface to William of Palerne, p. xi.

174. Sir Giles de Argentine, whose fate is so well narrated in The Lord of the Isles, vi. 33, and note to vi. 35. See Annals of Scotland, ii. 48.

184. Berwick was the place appointed for the English bands to meet; they were to be assembled there on the 10th of June; see Lord of the Isles, note to vi. 4, which refers to the summons issued to the sheriff of Yorkshire, in Rymer's Foedera, iii. 481, quoted in Annals of Scotland, ii. 41.
210. Torwoodhead Castle is a little to the South of Bannockburn. Torwood contained Wallace’s Tree; see note to Wallace, ed. Jamieson, v. 319.

274. *Yon castell*, i.e. Stirling castle; see l. 6.

290. *On fut*. Innes points out that this decision materially influenced the fate of the battle, and that, in this policy, the Scotch imitated the Flemings, who successfully resisted with infantry the best chivalry of France in the decisive battle at Courtray, July 11, 1302.

304. *Battalis*; battalions. Scott has borrowed the word.

"In battles four beneath their eye
The forces of King Robert lie."

Lord of the Isles, vi. 10.

See the excellent note upon these lines, fully explaining the order of battle.

334. "The men of Argyle, the islanders, and the Highlanders in general, were ranked in the rear;" Lord of the Isles, vi. 10, note; q. v. Pinkerton suggests that Bruce put them there because he could least trust them, and added his own men of Carrick to their ranks, because he could trust them most.

352. *Saturiday*; Saturday, June 22, 1314.

374. *Sunday*; Sunday, June 23, 1314, being the Eve of St John; see l. 382. The reading *saturiday* (C) is a mere repetition from l. 352, due to inattention.

442. *The kirk*. This “can only mean St Ninian’s;” Lord of the Isles, vi. 18; note.


547. *Faldyn*, fallen; cf. the readings *fallyn* (E), *fallen* (H). Innes says, without any authority, that “fald means to shed, or drop as withered flowers.” Perhaps he took *fald* to be equivalent to *fade*; but, if so, the explanation is inadmissible, because *fade* is a weak verb, and *fald* would produce the form *falded* (weak), not *faldyn* (strong). The usual explanation is perfectly correct. "‘See, Randolph,’ said the king to his nephew, ‘there is a rose fallen from your chaplet’;” Tales of a Grandfather, ch. x. The insertion of the ‘excrescent’ *d* is a mere peculiarity of pronunciation, due to Scandinavian influence. So in Havelok the Dane, l. 2698, I am persuaded that the right reading is—""pat he [ne] felden so dos þe gres,"" that they fell not as the grass does. Still more clearly is this shewn by the Danish form of the verb to fall, viz. infin. *fald*, pp. *fallen* or *fallet*. Wyclif, in like manner, writing in a Northern dialect, says—"*vnclene spiritis, whemhe seien him, felden down to him*;” Mark iii. 11. Cf. *falding*, i.e. falling, xiii. 632.

573. *Dencort*; spelt *Dancoort*, xii. 351. The real name seems to have been *Dayncourt* or *Deyncourt*; Leland, Collect. i. 546; Rymer, *Federa*, iii. 310, Anno 1312. See note in Jamieson.

655. *Feill*, feel; i.e. feel the force of his attack. Cf. xii. 588,
NOTES TO BOOK XII. (A.D. 1314.)
(Jamieson, VIII. 660—IX. 182; Innes, pp. 273—294.)

22. Jamieson reads “An hat off tyre;” and, in his Dictionary, refers us to A.S. tyr, which is a mere adaptation of tiara, and is certainly not to the point. The Edinb. MS. may equally be read “An hat off cyre,” and I have no doubt that this is the real reading; cyre being a corruption of the Fr. cuir, leather, and merely another form of the queyr- in queyrbolle. The reading of C., viz. queyrbolle, is a corruption of cuir bouilli, that is, leather soaked in hot water to soften it that it might take any required shape, after which it was dried and became exceedingly stiff and hard. See my note on quyrboilly in Chaucer’s Prioresses Tale, &c.; Group B. 1. 2065 (Clarendon Press Series). It is amusing to notice that Hart’s edition turns the word into carbuncle!  

29. Bowme, Bohun; pronounced as boon, and spelt Boeing by Scott. The spelling Bowme is, of course, a mistake for Boeing; but it is remarkable that Hart also reads Boeing, though he makes it rime with down; see Rubric quoted in the first footnote to Book XII. Sir Henry Bohun was cousin to Sir Humphrey Bohun, Earl of Hereford, one of the commanders of the English army. See Lord of the Isles, vi. 15.  

49. “They sprang together in a strait career.” See sprenten in Stratmann.

77. “They made a great dash at them.” MS. E. has schowt, i.e. shout; badly.  
82. “Their horses’ feet got nearly all of them away.”  
99. Thomas, i.e. Randolph; see xi. 633.  
110. Relyng, reeling, giving way. MS. E. has relying, which is the usual spelling of ‘rallying.’

133. Thame, them. I have omitted to note the reading him (E), which, however, is manifestly wrong. Innes remarks that both MSS. read him, but this is a mistake; the reading of C. is ‘thame,’ as printed.  
143. Here, again, Innes says that men is omitted in both MSS.; but it is only omitted in E., as noted.  
144. “Took off their helmets in haste to give themselves air, for they were hot; they were all covered with sweat.”

148. Fayndit, tested, tried, put to the proof. Either reading, fayndit thair fayis (put their foes to the test), or fandit thair force (put their strength to the test), gives good sense. The reading fudyt (P. and J.) is not really that of MS. E., which has fandit, another spelling of fayndit.

171. Luf, to praise. Such is, apparently, the sense, though we commonly find love, to praise, as distinguished from luff, to love. The two words are occasionally confounded. MS. E. reads—“we aucht to love and luff,” i.e. we ought to praise and love, where the distinction is duly made.
191. *The quhethir*, however; a very common phrase. Innes says both MSS. have ‘And quhethir;’ but this is only true of MS. E., as noted.

193. “For all shall rest with you.”

250. *Leit of us lichtly*, think lightly of us; a common phrase. Cf. “And lete līfte of ū pe lawe”; P. Plowman, B. vi. 170. The reading heychtly (E) is probably a mere blunder.

290. *Neill*, Nigel Bruce; see iv. 61, 176.

300. *Thar*, rightly so printed by Pinkerton, was turned into char by Jannieson, though the latter word does not properly exist. See note to viii. 257.

302. “Will prevent us from being surrounded.”

306. “Have an eye for taking any of their riches.”

333. *The nycht*; the night of Sunday, June 23.

355. Sir Robert Clifford’s advance had been foiled by Sir Thomas Randolph.

354. *All about*, all round. Innes proposes to read *tham about*, as in Hart; but it is hardly necessary.

360. For ‘rown and’ (a misprint), read ‘rownand,’ i.e. whispering; which is far better than *rountand* (E), which means ‘making a great noise.’ Cf. l. 368.

373. *In punzeis*, in slight skirmishes; lit. in puny things.

406*. *Hard feld*, dry and firm ground, as opposed to the marshy ground where the ‘polis’ or pools were.

407. The eventful day was Monday, June 24, 1314.

413. “They made knights, as it behoves men to do who use those arts;” i.e. the arts of war. See note above, to ix. 138.

429. *Schiltron*, a squadron; see the Glossary. It means a close compact body of men, without specifying the form of them. Pinkerton says that Hearne’s edition of Robert of Gloucester shews that “*shiltron* is an host ranged in a round form.” No reference is given, and, even if it be so in that work, it is not so generally. A similar mistaken description is given (according to Tytler, Hist. Scot. i. 357) by Hemingford, vol. i. p. 165. The word is sufficiently common. Stratmann gives six references for it, s. v. *schildtron*, to which add:—“ar the *scheltrons* come to-gedders; Trevisa’s description of the Battle of Hastings. And see seven references s. v. scheltron in allit. Morte Arthure, ed. Brock; and *four* s. v. *shelron* in the allit. Troybook, ed. Panton and Donaldson. In 1 Kings iv. 2 Wyclif uses scheltron to translate ‘acien.’

431. *Rad till byd*, afraid to bide.

439. *Our-tak*, covered; lit. took over.

505. *It her*, hear it. Innes quotes from the Lanercost Chronicle, p. 225, where there is an express notice of this “*sonus maximus et horribilis ex lanceis fractis et ex dextraeiis vulneratis ad mortem*.” Compare Scott’s line—“And steeds that shriek in agony;” Lord of the Isles, vi. 24. And see Scott’s note to that line.
509. I have omitted to note the reading *doughty* in E., which has—"And mony hardy men & doughty;" a reading which (as Innes remarks) quite misses the meaning.
563. *Wan pluss*, won place, i. e. gained ground.
564. *The quhethir*, although. Innes is wrong in saying that the occurs in neither MS.; it occurs in C.

NOTES TO BOOK XIII. (A.D. 1314.)

Jamieson, IX. 183—931; Innes, pp. 294—321.


32. *Tynt the sueit*, lost their lives. *Suet* is lit. sweat; but the A.S. *swit* is often used to signify blood shed in battle, the life-blood of wounded heroes. See Grein's A.S. Dictionary.


46. *Lechynge*, healing. Supply a full stop at the end of the line.

85. "That were more numerous than they were by a great deal."

98. *Nakit* here means 'unarmed'; a common use of the word. See note to vii. 330.

131*—141*. These fourteen lines are only found in Hart, not in the MSS.; but they are certainly genuine, though Pinkerton and Innes think them unnecessary.

132. *On a side*, on one side, on one of the sides of the rank opposed to them. *So a front* = one front, l. 163. And see l. 348.

173. *Not*, employment, business. *Had apon hand so gret not*, had so much business upon their hands. *Not* is clearly the right reading, though only preserved in the best MS. It is the A.S. *notu*, employment; and not to be confused with the High German *not*, which is merely the High German way of spelling *need*. A knowledge of German is often misleading to such as do not understand Grimm's law. The A.S. *notu* also means *use*, and the German form of it is *nutz*.

183. *Armoris* and *quyntis*, coats-of-arms and badges; used by the warriors as distinctions. The *armor* is Chaucer's *cote armour*, Kn. Tale, 158; of no use as a defence, being made of a flimsy material, but worn over the true armour of defence, and charged with armorial bearings. See *Cote armure* in the Prompt. Parv., where Way notes
that "Sir Thomas de la More [ap. Camden, p. 494; see Ann. Scot. ii. 48] relates that the Earl of Gloucester was slain at Bannockburn, in consequence of his neglecting to put on his insignia, termed in the Latin translation *togam propre armature.*" *Quyntis* is merely (as Innes says) the Fr. *coïntises,* signifying finery or *quaïnt* attire; see Roquefort and Burguy. The Edinb. MS. has the misspelling *quhytysss* (due to omission of *n* and insertion of *h*), an unreal word which much puzzled Pinkerton and Jamieson. The former took it to be a bad spelling of *coats* (cf. the reading *coates* in Hart); the latter was persuaded that it meant *hats!* Note the use of discrivit (described, discerned, made out) in l. 185, which clearly proves what the *armoris and quyntis* were intended for.

217. "That they gave way a little wee bit;" note Hart’s reading *recooled,* i.e. recoiled.

Jamieson’s explanation is not correct; he makes it mean ‘they felt terror,’ from A.S. *wandian,* to shun; but this would have given us the form *wandit.* The word is clearly French, viz. the O.Fr. *gandir* or *wandir,* to save oneself, escape, turn aside, a word of Teutonic origin; cf. Moeso-Goth. *wandjan,* to turn, A.S. *wendan,* to turn. Thus Barbour uses the word in its true sense, viz. to turn aside, to swerve. It occurs elsewhere; see the Glossary.

219. "That their undertaking was worse than before." *Coryne* properly means plot, design; in this place it means no more than attempt or undertaking.

229. "Yeoman, swains, and the rabble of camp-followers." This incident is admirably described by Sir W. Scott; Lord of the Isles, vi. 30, 31.

264. "Would, with their honour, have been away;" i.e. would have been glad to be away, if they could have retreated honourably.

275. *In tropellis ser,* in several small companies. The Fr. *troupeau* would have been spelt *tropel* or *tropel* in Old French.

305. "Have good day! for I will (turn) again." See Lord of the Isles, vi. 32; Ann. Scot. ii. 48.

308. "Than to live here and flee disgracefully." The line runs badly; but is easily restored by reading *shamly,* as in the Edinb. MS.

321. "The third best knight." In a note, Lord Hailes says—"the three most eminent worthies of that age were the Emperor Henry of Luxembourg, Robert Bruce, and Sir Giles de Argentine;" Ann. Scot. ii. 48. Jamieson has some remarks on the name in an Additional Note, p. 484 of his edition.

365. *Cum 3he in it,* if you were to come into it.

374. "Close your ranks as closely as you can." See below, ll. 568, 569.

379. "The Round Table is an artificial mound near Stirling Castle;" P. (who refers to Nimmo’s Hist. of Stirlingshire). On the other hand, in the last note to the Lady of the Lake, Scott says—"The ring within which justs were formerly practised, in the castle-park, is still called the Round Table."
412. Mastry, mastery. The governor of Bothwell castle received
the Earl of Hereford and his men, but took care that they did not
interfere with his own powers.

415. The three parts, i.e. three quarters.

439. "For fear they should again make head against him."

447*-450*. Innes says these four lines are in Hart. But they
are in the Camb. MS. too.

454. Fut-hat, foot-hot, speedily; see note to iii. 418.

463. The Camb. MS. says 700 pairs; Edinb. MS. and Hart say 200.
The latter is better; but, either way, it is an exaggeration. "Of
barons and bannerets, there were slain 27, and 22 made prisoners;
of knights there were slain 42, and 60 made prisoners;" Ann. Scot.
ii. 51.

465. See note to l. 183 above, and note to xi. 163.

468. Tybotot (C) is better than typont (EH). "By English writers
he is called Payen Tybetot; Annals of Scotland, ii. 51. He is fre-
quently designed Paganus Tybotot in the Feodera."—J.

472. Wypont, Vipont. "It is probable that Sir Alan Wypont,
who defended the castle of Lochlevin for David II. against the English,
A.D. 1335, was his son; see Hailes, Ann. Scot. ii. 178."—J. The
charters shew that the Latin name is de Veteri Ponte.

484. See this passage paraphrased in Ann. Scot. ii. 50. Lord
Hailes adds—"I know not what judgment to form of this story. It is
certain that the Earl of Athole returned to the service of England;
Feodera, t. iii. p. 644, anno 1317. And it is equally certain, that
sentence of forfeiture was pronounced against him in parliament, anno
1323; Chart. Dunferm. t. ii. fol. 24. It is strange that punishment
should have been delayed, until 1323, of an offence so atrocious, said
to have been committed in 1314."

486. At rebouris, at cross purposes, against the grain; i.e. in great
dislike. Cotgrave gives "à rebours, overthwartly, quite contrary, full
against the course, wooll, or haire; inside out, upside downe, clean
kamme." Also "rebours, adj. crosse, overthwart, wayward, surly, rude,
sroward," &c. Also "rebouser, to worke against the wooll or haire;"
&c. "Rebours, the wrong way of a stuff; from Lat. reburrus, rough,
in late Latin documents; we find, in the glosses of Isidore, 'reburrus,
hispidus';" Brachet's Etym. Fch. Dict.

495. Herth, C.; Airth, H.; keth (i.e. Keith), E. The name intended
may very well be Airth. There is a place of that name only a few
miles S.E. of Stirling. See remarks on the family of Airth in Jamieson's
note to Wallace, ix. 1283.

511. Neir syb, nearly related. It has already been observed that
the Earl of Gloucester was nephew to king Edward; see note to xi. 163.
Edward's sister Joan married (1) Gilbert de Clare, father of the Earl
of Gloucester here mentioned; and (2) Ralph de Monthermer. As
Ralph de Monthermer bore the arms of Clare at the siege of Caer-
lavrock in 1300 (Ann. of Eng. p. 178), and was styled Earl of Glou-
cester till the death of his wife in 1307, it must have been he who sent Bruce the pair of spurs, and so saved his life; see note to ii. 1. Tytler (Hist. Scotland, i. 87) says that Bruce received that intimation of his danger "from his kinsman, the Earl of Gloucester." The Scotch were naturally desirous of saving the young earl's life; see note to l. 183 above.

523. Betwnyg looks like Betoun. "Lord Hailes writes Twenge, Ann. Scot. ii. 52; Knyghton, Twange, Dec. Script. 2518; Rymer, Twenge, iii. 148; Twynge, 271; Tweng, 444."—J.

544. "Became of his dwelling," i.e. lived afterwards in Scotland, and took the Scottish side. The Edinb. MS. has belewyt, answering to beleft in Hart, with the sense of 'remained.' Jamieson, in his Dictionary, wrongly says that belewyt of means 'delivered up.' But see Bileve in Halliwell. Compare Chaucer, Sq. Tale, 583—"Swich harm I felte for he ne myghte bileue," i.e. because he could not stay, or remain behind.

580. "None could be behind his fellows so much as a stone's throw, without being at once slain, or taken so speedily that no one would attempt to rescue him, however much he loved him." Cf. ll. 601—606.

587. Winchburgh is in Linlithgowshire, in the direct road from Linlithgow to Edinburgh.

588. Thai is in the Camb. MS., though Innes says he found it only in Hart. The Edinb. MS. omits it.

611. "Counte Patrik of Marche ful gentely reseivd king Edward into his castel of Dunbar, and thens the king cam by water to Berwick;" Scala Chron. ap. Leland, t. ii. p. 547; see Ann. Scot. ii. 49. It is said that Oriel College, founded by Edward in 1326, was due to his gratitude to the Virgin Mary for his escape at Bannockburn; Antiq. Oxon. t. ii. p. 103; Ann. Scot. ii. 49.

623. "They left (behind them) a part of their troop," Camb. MS.; "They were very straitly bestead," Edinb. MS.

632. Falding, falling, downfall, reverse. The reading faldyn is a mere blunder. See faldyn, xi. 547, and the note.

642. Has stands here in both MSS. Jamieson reads have; Pinkerton prints hase.

650. "Their foes (being) vanquished, was great in power." The Edinb. MS. has here a line which is due to an adaptation of l. 656* below; and the scribe really missed this line and the next five, by passing from hicht at the end of l. 649 to hicht at the end of l. 655*.


684. The queen and her daughter Marjory had been taken at Tain; see iv. 39—56.

693. Ane knaiff child, a boy; as in Chaucer, Cler. Tale, 612.

695. Robert, i.e. Robert II., the first of the Stewarts, A.D. 1371—1390. See Tales of a Grandfather, ch. xvi.
697. Eyme, uncle. Davy, David II., who reigned (says Barbour) forty-two years. He was only about four years old at his accession, the Earl of Murray being regent. His reign lasted from the death of king Robert, June 7, 1329, to his own death, Feb. 22, 1371, or forty-one years, eight months and a half.

704. It is extremely fortunate that Barbour has thus accurately dated his work. He tells us it was in A.D. 1375, after king Robert had reigned five years. Strictly speaking, this is an inaccurate expression, for he did not complete the fifth year of his reign till Feb. 22, 1376. It is true that the year 1376 was called 1375 up to the 24th of March inclusive, but this will not help us out; for, in l. 707, the poet expressly says that king Robert had been dead 46 years, and no more, which only brings down the time to June 7, 1375. He therefore clearly alludes to the fifth year of Robert II., as explained in the side-note.

Barbour adds another note of date; he tells us that the reigning king was 60 years of age. Robert II. was born Mar. 2, 1316, and completed his 59th year in March, 1375. The two data, that Robert II. was in his 60th year, and that Robert I. had been dead 46 years, and no more, would limit us to the months of March, April, May, and June of 1375. But there is no reason why we should suppose all the expressions used to be taken in their strictest sense. It is sufficient to know that the poem was in hand in 1375.

It is, perhaps, of more importance to remark that this paragraph seems to have been added afterwards; we should have expected to find it at the end of the poem. Else we must suppose that Barbour merely made a note of the date en passant, and completed the poem afterwards.

731. "That none should be heard (should have their claims considered) afterwards."

735. This was in the latter part of the year 1314; see Ann. Scot. ii. 54.

741. "Of an approved kind, that is worth speaking of here."

NOTES TO BOOK XIV. (A.D. 1315.)

(Jamieson, X. 1—554; Innes, pp. 321—340.)

1. Barbour gives a full account of Edward Bruce's expedition to Ireland. He landed there May 25, 1315, and was slain in battle Oct. 5, 1318. Cf. Annals of Ireland, subjoined to Camden's Britannia.

9. Erishry of Irland, the Erse or Irish inhabitants of Ireland, as distinguished from the Erse or Gaelic inhabitants of Scotland.

27. Sir John Soulis was, probably, a brother or a cousin of the Sir William Soulis, also called Lord Soulis, who conspired against Bruce's life in 1320; see xix. 11. According to Barbour, he perished in Ireland; xviii. 110.
28. Sir John Stewart was the brother of Sir Walter Stewart, the king's son-in-law. Barbour narrates his death in Ireland; xviii. 109. Sir Allan Stewart is mentioned in 1. 405.

29. Jamieson has some remarks on the family of Ramsay. Ouchtirhouse or Auchterhouse is in the S. of Forfarshire. In The Wallace, vii. 890, 902, it is expressly said that the Ramsays mentioned by Barbour was Sir Alexander Ramsay, son of Sir John Ramsay, and that he won Roxburgh castle; see x. 356.

31. Jamieson has a few remarks on the name of Fergus of Ardrossan. Ardrossan is on the coast of Ayrshire.

33. Wavering Firth, Waivering Firth; called Woking's Firth in E and H. The name of Woking's Firth has not been traced, nor can I trace that of Waivering Firth, which is the alternative offered by the Camb. MS. It is known that the landing-place was not far from Carrickfergus; see i. 45. Innes shews that it has been supposed that the bay intended is Larne harbour, or Lough Larne. A glance at the map will shew that Edward must have landed either in Lough Larne or Belfast Lough; and there are three reasons in favour of the former. These are (1) the tradition to that effect; (2) its somewhat shorter distance from the Ayrshire coast; and (3) that it parts more of the character of a frith or fiord.

47. Macnduell, Mandevill. "A letter is directed by Edw. I. [II.?] to Mandevill as in Ireland, 12th Aug. 1314; Thomas de Mandevile."—J. "The Mandevilles were lords of the barony of Dufflin. After the murder of Patrick, Earl of Athol, at Haddington in 1242, the Bissets, then a numerous and powerful family, fled from Scotland and took refuge in the Glyuns of Antrim, where they obtained a settlement under the De Burghys, Earls of Ulster. The Macdonnells of Antrim are said to owe their possessions there to a marriage with the heiress of the Bissets. The Logans were considerable proprietors in the N. of Ireland; and two parishes in the Diocese of Connor had the names respectively of Ecclesiae villa Hugonis de Logan, and Ecclesiae vilæ Walteri de Logan, now Templepatrick and Ballywalter. (Dr Reeves's Down and Connor.) The Savages had the manors of Rathmore, Duntorsy, and others, in Ulster. A townland in the parish of Donegore, called Ballysavage, preserves this family name. They are lineally represented by Mr Nugent of Portaferry in the Ards. (Dr Reeves's Down and Connor.)"—Innes.

102. Kynquis, chiefs or reguli. One of them was named O Dymsy (i.e. O Denpsy); see i. 329. "Of the Reguli of Uladh or Ulster, see Reeves's Down and Connor, pp. 364—369. One no doubt was that Doneualdus [Doneualdus?] Oneyl Rex Ultmonæ, and claiming yet higher style, who was the head of the Cînel Owen, or Tyrone Oneills, from 1283 to 1325, and who is known to us from the remarkable appeal which he made to the Pope, in the name of the whole Irish people, against the dreadful oppression of the English in 1318. (Fordun, xii. 26.)"—Innes.
A sufficient list of these chieftains, including this "Doneval O Neel," will be found in The Lord of the Isles, note to vi. 4. It is taken from Rymer's Foedera, vol. iii. p. 476.

105. Makfulchiane, C; Makgullane, E; Makgoulchane, H. Jamieson suggests Magh Cullen or Mac Gillian; Innes says it does not mean Mac Quillian, but Mac Coolechan of Clannbrassil.

106. Makmartane, C; Makartane, E. Jamieson suggests that he is the earl of Desmond of l. 141, and interprets the name as Macarthy. Innes makes it Mac Cartane. Perhaps Jamieson is right; for in the list above referred to (note to l. 102) we find "Dermod Mac Arthy, dux Hibernicorum de Dessemond."


113. Endwillane. Innes shews some reasons for identifying this with the Moiry Pass, called "the pass of Emerdullam" in 1343, which he locates in the parish of Killevy, in Armagh (in Ulster), close to the boundary of Louth (in Leinster). He adds that "a small square castle in ruins still marks the place." See the next note.

133. Kilsaggart. "About a quarter of a mile from Moiry Castle is Kilnasaggart, where there are traces of a cemetery, and a curious tall stone monument in memory of Ternohc Mac Ceran."—Innes. The name clearly means "the priest's cell" (cella sacerdotis), and might have been applied to many places. I suppose that, by "Moiry castle," Innes means the castle mentioned in the last note, as situate in the Moiry Pass. This is quite a different place from Moira, at the other (northern) extremity of Armagh. Jamieson's suggestion, that Kilsaggart is near Dublin, is out of the question. Edward had not yet advanced so far as Dundalk.

135. "Dundalk was within the pale, and a strong hold of the Anglo-Irish in those days."—Innes.

143. Bremayne. The name occurs again in l. 515, where we find the spellings Breman (C), Bryrname (E), and Brunhame (H). It is supposed to be a corruption of Bermingham, i.e. Birmingham. "Sir John de Bermingham, a valiant and distinguished commander, arrived about this time, a.d. 1315, with a select body of English forces, sent by Edward II. See Leland's Hist. Irel. bk. ii. cap. 3."—J. After Edward Bruce's defeat and death, he was created earl of Louth; Rymer's Feodera, iii. 767; Ann. Scot. ii. 82.

Wardoune, possibly Verdon, as suggested by Innes; see l. 515. Sir Miles Verdon was one of the English leaders; Tytler's Hist. Scotland; i. 127.

145. Butler; i.e. Lord Edmund le Botiller (or Butler), Justiciary of Ireland; Feodera, iii. 492; Ann. Scot. ii. 62.

146. Sir Maurice Fitz-thomas; Feodera, iii. 492.

159. Innes says—"Barbour everywhere calls Richard de Clare the King's Lieutenant. Edmund Butler was Justiciary [or lord lieutenant]. Richard Clare, however, was one of the chiefs of the English party in
Ireland.” Hailes remarks—“Barbour often mistakes the names of places and persons. He figured to himself that Richard de Clare was the English deputy in Ireland; and, from an error natural enough, he supposed that the deputy always commanded the armies opposed to Edward Bruce. He omits some events altogether, and is too apt to magnify skirmishes into battles; yet his narrative contains circumstances curious and characteristical;” Ann. Scot. ii. 61.

Perhaps Barbour really meant Richard de Burgh, at that time Earl of Ulster, and the actual leader of the army opposed to Edward Bruce.

221. Revics, streets; Fr. rues. The Scotch took Dundalk on June 29, 1315; Ann. Scot. ii. 61.

233. Lufre, delivery; better spelt leuere (¼ livere).

252. Kilross is probably Carrickmacross, co. Monaghan, not very far from Dundalk. See note in Innes.

280. “Yon host is but the ofscouring (lit. gathering) of the country.”

313. Compare i. 465, and the note.

315. Forsuk, turned aside from, avoided; lit. forsook.

329. Odysmy. “Fyn O Dymsy” is mentioned in the list referred to in the note to l. 102. “O Dempsy was the name of the hereditary lords of Clanmaliere, a territory on either side of the Barrow, comprising the baronies of Portnahinch in Queen’s County, and Upper Philipstown in King’s County.”—Innes.

337. A gret revar; in my opinion, clearly the Blackwater, flowing into Lough Neagh. The localities of the rivers mentioned have not been well made out hitherto, but are really not difficult to identify. Innes suggests that the ‘gret revar’ is “apparently the Barrow;” but if he means the large river of that name in the S. of Ireland, it is wholly out of the question; for it has nothing to do with Ulster.

We have just read of the Scotch advancing from Dundalk to Carrickmacross; in l. 394 we shall find them at Connor. See the note to that line. It is clear, too, that they went from Carrickmacross to Connor by a circuitous route, through a wild country previously unknown to them. In other words, they went round Lough Neagh on its western side, instead of going, as before, to the east of it. This simple explanation satisfies all the conditions, and enables us to point out the route, and all the places mentioned. The first thing was, that O’Dempsey decoyed the Scotch across the (Armagh) Blackwater by telling them that the Irish there were friendly. The following sentence, from the Cyclopaedia of the British Empire, exactly explains this matter. “Its ancient name was Avon More, or the great river, a title only merited by comparison with the smaller streams of the district. The Armagh Blackwater is not remarkable for anything except its historical importance, as having been long the boundary between the jurisdiction of the English pale and the independent country of the Tyrone O’Neills.” Precisely so.

The succeeding notes explain the rest.
339. "Low by a brim (of a lake)." The word brim originally meant not so much the sea-shore as the sea itself, as in "on ãn bradan brime," on the broad sea; Cod. Exon, ed. Thorpe, p. 194. The sea or lake meant is Lough Neagh, the largest lake in the British Islands, about 18 miles long. O'Denpsy conducted the Scotch along its Western shore till he got them to the Northern end of it, where he expected to destroy them all by famine.

345. "Where all the cattle were withdrawn (from them) about two days' journey or more." They were two days' journey beyond the place where they had crossed the Blackwater, with wild country to the west, and, as we shall see, an impassable river beyond them.

352. Innes says—"The Camb. MS. has owth, meaning, apparently, a shelter or hiding-hole. In the Edinb. MS., the space for the word is left blank. Hart gives Ane litill south, which Jamieson adopts." There is no difficulty whatever, when it is once known that owth is not a substantive at all. Indeed Jamieson, in his Dictionary, explains it well enough as—"Owth, prep. above; over. Wyntown." Here, however, it is used adverbially, but with the same sense of above, or beyond; the word being merely A.S. āt, our 'out,' used a little peculiarly. It occurs again in xvii. 598; xviii. 418. The sentence means—"This false traitor had caused his men to dam up the outlet of a loch, a little beyond where he had lodged Sir Edward and the Scotchmen; and then let out the water during the night."

354. Louch, a loch or lake. Any pool in a river would have served the purpose. We shall see that the Scotch were very near to Loch Beg, but that would have been too large to dam up, I suspect.

364. "Nevertheless, they had enough." Said ironically.

369. Riveris tway; either the Bann and the Blackwater; or rather, the Bann and the artificial flood which O'Dempsy had caused in their rear. Of course, the Irish knew the country well. They had now led the Scotch up to Loch Beg and the Bann, and had then created a flood behind them; thus completely catching them in a trap.

371. The bane, the river Bann. This was pointed out by Jamieson. The Bann is an 'arm of the sea' in a double sense. It has an estuary into the sea, but it also twice expands into a 'sea' in the old sense, i.e. into a lake; for it passes through Lough Neagh and Lough Beg. The Irish had done their work well; they had taken care that the Scotch should not be near the sea-coast, where they might in some way have helped themselves, but in the corner between Lough Beg and Lough Neagh, with flooded land behind them, so that all escape seemed hopeless.

373. Willster, Ulster. "Ulster is here used in its limited application, as including only the counties of Antrim and Down."—Innes.

376. "Had it not been for a rover of the sea (or lake); his name was Thomas of Down." It is possible that the 'sea' is here merely Lough Neagh. This would explain the man's name—Thomas of Down. He was a man accustomed to traversing the lake, which is surrounded
by the counties of Antrim, Londonderry, Tyrone, and Armagh, whilst that of Down just comes up to it at one corner. This man's ship would, probably, be kept at the Southern end of the lake; in traversing it, he would come near the wild country at the Northern end, and there discover the plight of the Scottish army. He would then sail out of the lake, and 'up the Bann' (though, strictly, it was down stream), till he came to where they were. If, however, he had really come from the sea-coast, the expression is quite correct. My suggestion is chiefly intended to show how the rover might have learnt their condition, and what was probably his cruising ground. See the next note.

380. "They knew him well." No doubt; for they may have made his acquaintance in their former march from Carrickfergus to Dundalk, when they had to pass the 'Upper' Bann, i.e. the Bann before it enters Lough Neagh. Probably, he had ferried them across it.

381. Tane, taken. Most likely, it means that he had captured or appropriated them. His object was gain, and he made it both by ferrying passengers and by picking up what was not his own.

383. In *biggit land*, in cultivated land, or in land with farm-houses built on it. They were now advancing from the neighbourhood of Lough Beg to that of Connor.

394. *Coignersis*, Connor, to the N. of the town of Antrim. In the side-note, I have called it 'Conyers,' as that is clearly the pronunciation which Barbour intended. Lord Hailes calls it 'Coyners.' In some maps it is marked as Conner; and Innes notes that some people still call it 'Con-yr.' In the Cyclopaedia of the British Empire, we read—"It was a place of some note in 1315, at the time of the invasion of Edward Bruce, by whom it was taken, after the defeat of Richard, Earl of Ulster, before its walls. It is supposed to have gone to decay after the irruption of the expelled Irish in 1333. There are now no traces of an episcopal seat; a large Presbyterian meeting-house is the principal object in the village."

420. To "ryde aganis" is to ride so as to meet; as in Chaucer.

421. *Iuperdy*, a dangerous experiment; lit. a jeopardy.

515. *Breman*, &c. See note to l. 143 above.

522. *Kylkenane*; perhaps *Kylkenane* (E) is the right reading. "Kylkenane was, before the reformation, a church and parish in Island Magee [near the mouth of Belfast Lough] in the county of Antrim. In 1310, *Michael of Kylkenan* was summoned to a parliament at Kilkenny. (Cal. Canc. Hibern.)."—Innes.

---

NOTES TO BOOK XV. (A.D. 1316; after l. 266, 1315.)

(Jamieson, X. 555—1124; Innes, pp. 340—360.)

1. See an account of the events in Ann. Scot. ii. 66.
The date of this battle is before April 4, 1316; see note to l. 100.

BRUCE.
19. Caryage, baggage belonging to the army.

39. Barell-feris, barrel-hoops, hoops of barrels that had been emptied. This is an easy solution of the word, obtained by adopting the reading of the better (Camb.) MS.; the Edinb. MS. has barell-ferraris, and Jamieson's Dict. gives us—"Ferraris, s. pl. Barell-ferraris, casks for carrying liquids. Fr. ferrière, a large leathern bottle." This is a mere guess, and really leaves ferraris unexplained; since "barrel leathern bottles" or "cask leathern bottles" is nonsense. I take fer to be merely the Fr. fer, an iron; and hence, an iron hoop. Ducange expressly gives—"Ferrare, compedibus vincire . . . Ferrare tonellos, dolia circulis ferreis munire," i.e. to protect casks with iron hoops. The reading ferraris I take to be a mistake for ferraris, from the Fr. ferrure (Lat. ferratura) meaning 'iron-work.' Thus barell-feris would mean 'barrel-irons,' and barell-ferraris would mean 'barrel-ironwork,' which comes to much the same thing; and the expressions are therefore equivalent, as various readings should be.

In l. 20 we are told that all the baggage-attendants were withdrawn; hence feris cannot be taken to mean 'companions,' or men, but must denote things. I suppose that the Scotch, in abandoning their baggage for the moment, placed the more worthless parts of it on the outside, and strewed the approach with any rubbish at hand. Certainly the old hoops of emptied barrels would be very effective in giving trouble to hostile cavalry; or, as Barbour phrases it, they "considerably cumbered (i.e. embarrassed) them that were riding."

49. Stane, stone. In the Camb. MS. the word looks like store, as Innes notes. If the reader can make anything of the reading sture, he may do right to adopt it.

My view of the matter is, that the right reading is stour, and that stok means a sword-thrust. The sense of stour is a commotion, especially the onset of battle. Thus the passage would mean—"with thrusting, with forward rush, and with retreating, according as either side beat the other." The expression, not being very clearly put, would easily be turned into "with stok, with stane" (meaning 'with stock (stake) or stone") because these two words are often used in company. But surely the knights fought with swords "knyghtlik;" see l. 53.

56. "Who might be most at their above," i.e. who was getting the upper hand.

59. "And rushed at them recklessly." Schot = rushed, dashed.

63. "That ever dared to wait for his comrade."

75. Fizwarne, Fitz-warren, already mentioned above; xiv. 515. Of this, the reading syve-warine or fyve-warine (E) is a mere corruption, and we need not resort to the desperate expedient of translating it by sovereign, as in Jamieson, with the explanation that sovereign means the mayor of the town. Still, it shews us that, in xiv. 515, the Edinburgh MS. gives the better reading, and should have been followed there.

83. Mont-peleris, probably Montpelier. "It appears that, even in these times, Montpelier was famous for its invigorating clime."—P.
100. Palmsunday; i. e. April 4, 1316.
101. Tuesday in Easter Week, i. e. April 13; since Easter fell, in 1316, on April 11.
105. Easter Even; i. e. April 10.
131. The morning of Easter-day, April 11, 1316. Cf. l. 248.
137. "He sent one to the king in haste." Edward Bruce was not really crowned king till some three weeks later, viz. May 2, 1316. Ann. Scot. ii. 66. See l. 161.
162. "When that he heard such a hasty business (lit. such haste) was in hand." Hy, haste; as in ll. 159, 165, and at least fifty other places. It does not mean 'a shout,' as Innes supposes.
168. "By the time that his foes were approaching:"
181. Gib Harpar, Gilbert (the) Harper; no doubt a minstrel. His death is narrated in Book xviii. 95, 165.
198. "Lost heart, and would have been (away or back) again,"
228. There should be a full stop at the end of l. 227. Lines 228—231 are, of course, genuine; though omitted by the scribe of the Camb. MS., who passed from se (l. 227) to he (l. 332) by mistake, keeping the rimes perfect.
268. Here Barbour goes back to the year 1315.
271*.—274*. Missed by the scribe of E, because of the repetition of menzhe at the end of ll. 270 and 274*.
272. Tarbord, isthmus. The word is the Gaelic tairbeart, an isthmus; and the names of East Tarbert and West Tarbert are still given to two places situate on the narrow isthmus that joins Cantire to the mainland. Similarly we can at once account for Tarbet, the name of a place situate on the narrow strip of land between Loch Lomond and Loch Long. In l. 290, mention is made of "the two Tarberts," i. e. of the East and West Tarberts above mentioned. "Magnus, king of Norway, is said in 1098 to have, in like manner, drawn his ships across this neck of land."—P. That king Robert's great ships were occasionally hauled overland is proved from the Chamberlain's Accounts; see the quotations in Tytler, Hist. Scot. i. 368.
276. Lownyt all with treis, all sheltered with trees. See Loun in Jamieson. However, lownyt here means no more than 'covered'; it was not so wholly sheltered that no wind could blow there at all, as the story shews us. The Edinb. MS. has lompanyt, which Jamieson explains by 'laid,' without any authority. This lompanyt can only be a corruption; the reading loned (Hart) is somewhat more correct. Cf. Ann. Scot. ii. 64, note.
331. The Merse is a district in the S. of Berwickshire.
336. "And weened (thought) they (the English) had been few." Here again, MS. E misses several lines, passing from he at the end of l. 336 to he at the end of l. 344*.

337*. "Saw only the fleeing (i.e. retreating Englishmen) disperse themselves, and them that seized upon the prey." The sense of *scaill* is determined by l. 353* below; see note to that line. It means that he only saw the English in small companies at a time, and so was deceived as to their number.

337, 338. "If he would make haste, he would very easily defeat them, and rescue all the cows."

345*. Here again MS. E omits 12 lines, owing to the repetition of *ky* at the end of ll. 338 and 356*. Innis notes that MS. E omits two lines here, but he must have meant *twelve*. So, at l. 336 above, he notes that MS. E omits *seven* lines; but he must have meant *eight*.

353*. "And then both the forayers and the dispersed men knit (themselves) all wholly into a squadron."

341. If we adopt the reading *scaill*, the sense is—"The rest behind them (i.e. the rear-guard) made a dispersion," i.e. followed in loose order, in order to keep a look-out. If we read *stail*, the sense must be the same as in xvii. 97, which see, as also the note. *Maid a stail*, took up a fixed position. The latter is, perhaps, the better; cf. the reading of E in the next line—"*their lump all hail."

351. "Let each man then think upon his love" (C); or, "think of his sweetheart" (E).

375. "And though they (the English) were, by very much, far more than they (the Scotch) were."

376. *Vre*, practice; see *Ure* in Jamieson. *Demanyt thaim*, lit. demeaned them; i.e. made them demean themselves.

398. "The fame of this deed spread very far."

415. "Ye place him (count him) as if he were without peer."

514. *Hail* and *feir*, whole and sound; or, as we say, safe and sound. *Feir* is the Icel. *feirr*, able, capable, safe; Pinkerton oddly confuses it with *fair*.

536. "A trite illustration of a terrible name. It is told of Talbot, of Marlborough," &c.—P.

538. *Beteche*, commit, deliver; cf. *betaucht*, xx. 351. Black Douglas; in allusion to his swarthy complexion; see Book i. 397. He was commonly called by the Scotch "the good Sir James." Hume of Godscroft (p. 20) heads the chapter concerning him with—"Of good Sir James, the first James, and eighth lord of Douglas." Compare—"Ay trew till him was Jamys the gud Douglase;"

Cf. Gaelic *dubh-ghlas*, dark gray; and the story in Hume (p. 3) that the founder of the family, Sholto Douglas, was so named because he was a "black, gray man." Unluckily for the story, "the name is undoubtedly territorial, and taken from Douglas river and dale;" Scott's note N to The Abbot. The word *Douglas* means the "black water,"
and the name occurs in Lancashire and in the Isle of Man as well as in Scotland; see Taylor's Words and Places.

541. Grevit is written for gravit; thame grevit means 'it made them shudder.' See Grue in Jamieson, and observe the various readings.

NOTES TO BOOK XVI. (A.D. 1316, 1317.)

(Jamieson, XI. 1—698; Innes, pp. 360—385.)

29. It seems to have been in the latter part of 1316; see note to I. 63.

36. Loch Ryan in Galloway is a sea-loch, between Ayrshire and Wigtonshire.

46. Feast and fur, feasting and good fare.

63. It can hardly have been May, which is the month so frequently adopted by the poets for all their incidents. It must have been later than May, 1316, and earlier than May, 1317. Lord Hailes says—"The King of Scots and his brother by forced marches, passed through the country of Lowth, and advanced to Slane; 16th February" [1316-7]. He thinks that the battle here mentioned was but an unimportant skirmish.

119. Sir Colin Campbell, according to Jamieson, was the son of the Sir Neil Campbell mentioned in iii. 392, and seems to have been the head of the family of the Campbells of Loch Awe. "Anno 1316, during the Irish war, he got for his service the whole lands of Lochow and Ardsceodinis. He was the son of Nigellus or Neil Campbell, designated miles in Ragman Roll; see Nisbet's Remarks, p. 28."—J. Hailes calls him "the king's nephew;" Ann. Scot. ii. 69.

129. "With a truncheon (which was) in his fist."

131. "That he fell noisily against his saddle-bow." His horse was dead, but he had not had time to get off him; so we must suppose. Or else he had mounted another.

132. "The king bade (them) pull him down quickly." To tēt is to snatch; see Jamieson. He was to be pulled off his horse, and made to fight on foot.

141. "That we shall have (much) to do very soon."

187. "Always one against five, when he (i.e. his army) was least."

209°—212°. Omitted in MS. E, owing to the repetition of mycht; ll. 208, 212°.

223. "In this manner they filled their castles with men."

232. "I see many here felled under foot."


261. Drochynbra, i.e. Drogheda, where they crossed the Boyne.
According to Hailes, the Scotch took Castleknock, near Dublin, Feb. 23; were at Leixlip, on the Liffey, Feb. 25; after 4 days, marched to Naas in Kildare; and arrived at Callan in Kilkenny, Mar. 12.

265. Lwunjik (C); Lynrike (II); Kynrike (E). It appears that Limerick is the place meant; see Annals of Ireland, in Camden's Britannia; and Ann. Scot. ii. 70. It is not the Southernmost town in Ireland; but it was a long way from Carrickfergus, and at the opposite corner, as it were. See note to l. 297.

275. Mon lewe, must remain; lit. must leave (be left).

288. Or euir he fure, ere ever he continued his journey.

295. Connage, i.e. Connaught. This makes out that Bruce crossed the Shannon.

296. Myth, Meath. Irell, Uriel. "Uriel was the district now comprised in the counties of Lowth and Monaghan. It joined Meath on the north-east, and through it lay the road northward."—Innes.

297. "And Munster and Leinster." Munster is mentioned out of order; it should have come first, before l. 295. It agrees with the mention of Limerick above; note to l. 265.

303, 304. "And did their homage to him, with the exception of one or two." Pinkerton oddly refers l. 304 to the following sentence, and explains that they had but "a skirmish or two" on their way home. See, however, the next note.

307. "Except that it were some skirmish (lit. puny encounter) that is not worth speaking about here," Pinkerton's explanation of l. 304 (see last note) would do very well here. Wer = were, was; penzhe is used as a substantive. But, in l. 318, the word wer = war.

317. "The Irishry and Ulster;" i.e. the Irish tribes who had submitted to him and the country particularly called Ulster (Antrim and Down); see note to xiv. 373. The whole phrase probably includes little more than what we now call Ulster; see ll. 319, 320, 325, 326.

327. Surcudry, a shortened form of surcudry, from Fr. sureuirderie. "Surcuidance, sureuirderie, surquidance, surquiderie; présomption."—Roquefort. See Surcudrie in Halliwell. The word also occurs in Gower—"For yet there is surquadrie;" Conf. Amant. bk. i.

331. "The poet passes to the year 1317."—P

336. Hauch, hollow or low-lying flat; see Haugh in Jamieson.

342. "Barbour supposes, that Thomas de Richemont commanded the English; but Scal. Chron. (ap. Leland, t. i. p. 547) says,—'King Edwarde sent the Erle of Arundel as capityne yn-to the marches of Scotlande, where he sorred reproche by James Douglas at Linellie, yn the forest of Jedworth, and ther was Thomas of Richemont slayne.' Barbour says, that Thomas de Richemont fell by the hand of Douglas, and that Douglas took the furred hat which he wore above his helmet.
In *Histoire de Bretagne*, par Lobineau, t. i. p. 665, there is a portrait of Arthur de Richemont, Duke of Britany, with a *furred hat*, such as is described by Barbour."—Ann. Scot. ii. 72.

"He was no 'earl,' but Sir Thomas of Richmond, a knight of Yorkshire."—Innes. Innes refers to Scala Cronica (in French), p. 143.

383. "Was not, in breadth, so much as a pennystone's throw across." A *pennystone* is a flat stone, used as a quoit.

386. *Clevch*, a hollow in a hill-side; a better reading than *louch* (E), which, properly, means a loch or lake.

399. *Half*, side. In the Edinb. MS., Jamieson read it as *hald*; see his note. But *half* is clearly right, and very common.

421. "As a token; for it was furred." See note to l. 342. P. adds—"that he might discover who the owner was." See l. 481.

457. *Entremass*, better spelt *entremes*; and it should rime with *ves* (E). It is the O.Fr. *entremes*, now spelt *entremets*, from a fancied connection with *meat*; but the Fr. *mets*, O.Fr. *mes*, is the Lat. *missum*, a dish as *sent in* or served at table (Brachet). An *entremes* is a delicacy or side-dish (lit. a between-dish). The sense is—"They had a cruel sort of delicacy at their dinner," or, "an indigestible side-dish;" said ironically. Compare—

"But for to judge his moste wofull penance,
God wote, it was a *pitons entremesse*;"

La Belle Dame sans Mercie, st. 20; Chaucer's Works, ed. 1561, fol. ccl.

458. "For that additional load was rather too heavy." The *charge* is here the load or quantity of food devoured by each. Compare the use of *bellyful*, which "is often used ludicrously for more than enough; thus king James told his son that he would have his *bellyful* of parliamentary impeachments;" Todd's Johnson.

501*. This and the next three lines should have been marked with an asterisk at the beginning, to shew that they are not in Pinkerton's edition.

504. *Forrouth*, before; see vii. 139.

508—516. By an oversight, the marginal explanation is here quite wrong. The sense is that Sir John de Soulis, *with* fifty men, beset the way *against* Sir Andrew Hardelay, who had with him 300 men, all well mounted. In the first sidenote on p. 399, for *'against'* read *'by.'* For the second, read—"Sir John, with but 50 men against 300, had the best of it." Sir John de Soulis went afterwards with Edward Bruce to Ireland; xiv. 27.

511. Sir Andrew de Hardelay, or Harcla. "Sir Andrew Harcla, warden of the west marches, is detected in correspondence with the Scots and executed, Feb. 27, 1323. He had been but recently created Earl of Carlisle for his services against the Earl of Lancaster;" Annals of England, p. 185. In the conflict with Sir John de Soulis, he was taken prisoner; see l. 518.

527—531. Lines 528—530 are parenthetical; the others mean—
"That their names be, for evermore, ever continually enduring in praise."

557. "And expected to prevent them from landing." Cf. l. 561.

575. "William Sinclair, brother of Sir Henry Sinclair, of Roslin, was bishop of Dunkeld from about 1308 till about 1324; Keith."—P. See allusions to him in The Wallace, vii. 930, ix. 1225; and see Ann. Scot. ii. 73.

580. Chemeyr (spelt chemer, l. 601), a chimere, a light robe, a sort of scarf, used "for till heill his veid," i.e. to cover his (warlike) attire. Cotgrave has—"Chamarrre, a loose and light gowne (and, lesse properly, a cloake), that may be worn aswash, or skarfë-wise; also, a studded garment." A bishop's chimere was "the upper robe, to which lawn sleeves are generally sewed; which before and after the reformation, till Queen Elizabeth's time, was always of scarlet silk; but Bishop Hooper scrupling first at the robe itself, and then at the colour of it, as too light and gay for the episcopal gravity, it was changed for a chimere of black satin;" Wheatley, On the Common Prayer, ii. § 4.

584. Awayward, i.e. on their return, as they came away.

589. Allout to feile, altogether too many.

592. Weill to ma of 3ow, to make much of you, to esteem you highly; said ironically.

593. Takis on hand, undertake.

594. Till wer the land, to defend the contry.

597. "He would very soon have your gilt spurs cut off from you."

Alluding to a common mode of treating disgraced knights; see l. 598.

617. Se thai, if they see. But, without.

635. Held, kept; still kept (themselves) unslain.

692. "They hoisted sail without delay."

NOTES TO BOOK XVII. (A.D. 1318, 1319.)

(Jamieson, XI. 699—958; Innes, pp. 385—418.)

13. Redis swyr, the source of the Reid. Jamieson quotes from Macpherson's Geog. Illustrations—"Ryd-swyre, Reid-swyre, Reid-squair, Redshire (?)", the most elevated part of the Roman road at the head of the Ryl, and a boundary to the kingdoms; whence it was the scene of frequent border-meetings, and sometimes of petty skirmishes." Swyr is the A.S. swira or swora, the neck; in the same way haves, very common in place-names, is the A.S. heal, a neck; and the French col, so common in Switzerland, is the Lat. collum, a neck. Thus swire, haves, and col all have much the same meaning, and the secondary sense is also much the same, viz. a depression between two adjoining hills, where there is commonly a pass. In such depressions rivers have their source; and in this case, the reference is to the swire which forms
the bed of the source of the Reid, which is a tributary of the Tyne. There is a special reason for mentioning it, as its position brought it into frequent notice; for it was the place where the road from Jedburgh to Newcastle crosses the border, and must have been very often traversed in passing from one kingdom to the other. Jamieson adds—"Redpath gives an account of a pretty severe skirmish which took place here, A. 1575, p. 650. This is celebrated in what is called The Ballat of the Red-squair, published in the second volume of the Evergreen, p. 224. There it is said to have been fought July 7, 1576."

22. The town of Berwick was taken Mar. 28, 1318; see Ann. Scot. ii. 78. The castle was held for five days longer; and taken April 2 see l. 198.

35. Cow-gate. Of the five gates of Berwick, one is called the Cowport, leading to the Magdalen Fields.

44, 45. The reading as it stands is probably quite correct. For the sense, supply 'either of them' after 'took.' "And, if he took (either of them) to help him, one or the other would be rendered angry." The reason was, that the one who was not invited would have thought himself disgraced; see l. 54.

48. Letter has the same sense as letteris in l. 39, because letteris is a mere translation of the Lat. literae. The same confusion has occurred above; see ii. 80, 83.

64. Dunse, Dunse; some 15 miles W. of Berwick.

67. Ane queuyn, a small body. Bruce ingeniously solves the difficulty. He sends Murray and Douglas both, each with a small train.

97. Staill, a fixed position; hold a staill, occupy a fixed position. Cf. A.S. steal, Eng. stall. Perhaps the reading staill should have been adopted in xv. 341; see note to that line.

103. Twa part, i.e. two-thirds.

134. Baner, the standard, raised at the staill; see note to l. 97.

135. Stifit with su quhoyyn, surrounded by so few.

222. At, that. "That he took Berwick to (be under) his care."

236. "Besides burgesses and crossbow-men." Burgess hardly seems right. MS. E has burdowys, an uncertain word, supposed by Jamieson to mean "men who fought with clubs," but on very slight grounds. I suspect that the correct reading is irrecoverably lost. Oblesteris is merely a bad spelling of arblasters or arcubalisters, i.e. crossbow-men. Cf. "And bowe-men and aublast'ris;" Kyng Alisander, ed. Weber, l. 2613. "The arblast is first spoken of in the Life of Louis le Gros, who ascended the throne in 1108; from whence it is probable that this weapon was imported by the first crusaders from Asia. In 1139 it was formally anathematized; in consequence of which, it sunk into disrepute, till revived by Richard Coeur de Lion, who himself fell a victim to his favourite weapon."—Weber.

250. "Engines for (making) cracks (or bangs)." An odd way of describing cannon. Elsewhere Barbour calls them "crakkis of wer" or war-cracks; see xix. 399, and the note.
269—273. The sense is, that he would besiege the town with all available forces, and intrench his men so strongly as to secure them from attacks made by any army that came to relieve the town.

278. The reading such (not such) removes all difficulty, though the editors have been troubled here, just as in i. 9; see note to that line. The sense is—"And (he) thought all truth (i. e. he was quite right); for it would be a great folly to assail openly, in its intrenchments, so strong an army."

285. In the Camb. MS. there is merely an omission of the mark of contraction over the a in lacister, i.e. lacister = lancaster. The change of the second a to i would of course follow, by confusion with Leicester. This corruption is far less strange than that of Lancaster into Long castell, which is the reading in E and H; and even C has longcastell in l. 852. Moreover, Longcastell occurs in The Wallace, ix. 572.

Thomas, Earl of Lancaster, was inclined to sympathise with the Scotch, and ventured to shew his sympathy; see l. 853. In 1321 he openly formed an alliance with them; see l. 864, and the note to l. 866.

286. Sanctil, painted; see note to l. 875.

291. Edward ordered his army to assemble at Newcastle, July 24, 1319; Ann. Scot. ii. 88.

319. Allye is a trisyllable—allye-è. It is the Fr. allié, which Cotgrave translates by "joyned, coupled, knit, near unto in fellowship and friendship." Here it probably means, that they were allied to him by various marriages.

335. "And on Our Lady Mary's eve;" i.e. Sept. 7. The construction is similar to that in "Rachelle, that was Josephes Modre the Patriarke;" Mandeville's Travels, p. 72; "This is launcelotts sheld de lake;" Mort Arth. (Roxb. Club), p. 21; see note to Castell of Loue, ed. Weymouth, p. 24.

419. "That their fall-bridge (moveable bridge) might reach thereto." Perhaps neych (E), which may be rendered by "approach, draw nigh," is a mere miswriting for reych = reach; which is plainly intended.

423, 424. "See them that were within her become of a worse counsel (i. e. in a worse plight) by far, than they were before."

455. With, provided that, as long as, whilst.

470. All anerly, lit. all only, i.e. only, solely. It is often written as one word—allanerly, just as we write alone for all one. Thus "allanerly flowers" means 'flowers and nothing else;' see the discussion of this very simple phrase in N. and Q., 3rd S. ix. 195, 289, 381, 440. Compare—"This Pryuce I praye alone and no mo;" Barclay's Ship of Fools, ed. Jamieson, ii. 205.

515. Wifis, wives. We are even told that the Scotch had concerted a plan for carrying off the wife of King Edward himself, from her residence near York; Ann. Scot. ii. 90.

542. "Husbandmen, and men of all misteries," i.e. trades. A mistery (Fr. métier, O.Fr. mestier) is a trade; it has no connection with mystery, though it is often spelt the same way.
555. Mytoune, Mitton, near Borough Bridge, in the N. Riding of Yorkshire. The battle was fought Sept. 20, 1319; Ann. Scot. ii. 91.

597. Gestis seems to be Fr. gestes, i.e. motions, movements. Of gret gestis probably means no more than 'of large dimensions,' or 'suitable for great performances.'

Ane sow, a sow. Lord Hailes says—'In many particulars it resembled the testudo aricaria of the antients. 'Sus, machina bellica, qua et scropha, Gallis truie;' Du Cange ... In Scotland a long hay-stack is termed a sow; probably from a traditionary remembrance of the warlike engine which went under that name; hence we may have a distinct notion of the figure of this engine;' Ann. Scot. ii. 89. We must remember how low the town-walls were; see l. 380.

598. Oewth (lit. out), i.e. outside. "That had a strong covering outside it." See note to xiv. 352.

633. Note the various readings of the MSS., viz. assailing, C; defending, E. The former is right; we must remember that the reference is to the English host; see l. 635.

667. To-fruscht, should break in pieces; it is the past tense subjunctive. It occurs as a pp. in x. 597.

672. Scho, she. Clearly a great war-engine; but it is odd that there is no previous reference to it. Probably a few lines have been lost here. Barbour, with his fondness for description, would hardly have left this important engine undescribed. On the other hand, the rimes link the sentences together, which make it look like an oversight of Barbour's own.

680. "For doubtless, it is all ours." They were encouraged by finding that the shot went right over them.

686. "Then their hearts began to shudder." They were now discouraged by finding that the shot fell short of them; as that might easily be rectified.

689. Juntly, closely. I have suggested, in the footnote, that perhaps we should read Justly, i.e. justly, exactly; but Juntly is right, and occurs again in the Wallace; see "Junctly, Juntly, compactly" in Jamieson. It is from the French joint, which Cotgrave explains as—"joined, coupled, yoked, grasped, put, couched, or closed together."

690. Bend, bend back or set (the engine), ready to go off. To 'bend' a pistol is to cock it; cf. "with hackbut bent" in Scott's Cad-yow Castle, l. 137. The engineer shot (swappt) the stone nearly perpendicularly into the air, so that it fell upon the 'sow' with crushing weight.

696. Mast summer, greatest beam (C); mast sower, most sure, strongest (E). The former reading is far the best, and preserves the original word. A summer is the principal beam in a wooden structure; see Halliwell. The sense is—"so that with that blow he (the engineer) brake asunder that which was the largest beam, and strongest for resisting a stroke."

732. Eir befor, ere this, in a former place; see l. 379.
852. Loncastell, Lancaster; see note to l. 285.
856. Innes has made the correction here, of north to south, with the remark that “the inclination was the King’s, not the Earl’s.” That is, the he in l. 855 refers to the King, but, in l. 858, He is the Earl.
866. “Lasted, till Andrew Harcla took him afterwards to Pontefract.” In 1321, the Earl of Lancaster openly sided with the Scotch. In 1322, he was defeated at Boroughbridge, Mar. 16; and the next day was taken prisoner, and tried by a military council. He was executed at Pontefract, Mar. 22. It is remarkable that Sir Andrew Harcla, then warden of the west marches, was detected in correspondence with the Scots, and likewise executed in less than a year afterwards. He had but recently been created Earl of Carlisle for his services against the Earl of Lancaster. See Annals of Eng., p. 185; and note to xvi. 511.
875. Sanctis, sainted, canonised; as in l. 286. Lancaster was so popular that he was regarded as a martyr, and canonised by the popular voice. His countrymen believed that miracles were performed at his tomb, as at that of his namesake of Canterbury, and a regular form of service was composed for his worship. This form has been preserved in the Royal MS. 12. C. xii., and is printed in Political Songs, ed. Wright, p. 268.

NOTES TO BOOK XVIII. (A.D. 1318; 1322.)

(Jamieson, XII. 687—896; Innes, pp. 418—438.)

1. The story returns to Edward Bruce, and goes back to the year 1318.
13. The defeat and death of Edward Bruce took place at Fagher, near Dundalk, Oct. 5, 1318; Ann. Scot. ii. 81.
23. Sir John Soulis and Sir John Stewart; see notes to xiv. 27, 28.
33. My brothir, Sir Walter Stewart, who had married king Robert’s daughter.
65. Abid his men, wait for reinforcements.
116. In haill battale, in one complete squadron. Howard, hovering near, waiting aloof.
134. Ourcome, awoke to consciousness, out of his swoon.
168. Haf gert saltit, have caused to be salted. For the construction, cf. “han doon fraught,” have caused to be freighted; Chaucer, Group B, 171; “Hath doon yow kept;” id., Group E, 1098; “Hath doon wrought;” Knightes Tale, 1055. Also “he gert held” in viii. 14.
199. Of thairis, things belonging to them; i.e. they bribed them to let them go.
224. Had it, took it. There is something wrong here, since John Maupas was killed in the battle himself. “John Maupas slew Edward Bruce, and was found, after the battle, stretched dead on the body of his enemy;” Ann. Scot. ii. 81.
229. Barbour is wrong here, and links together events that were rather far apart. He skips over nearly four years; for Edward II. did not invade Scotland, as here described, till August, 1322.

254. He occupied Culross because it was just on the northern shore of the Forth, so that he kept the Firth of Forth between himself and the enemy.

276. Tranent, E. of Edinburgh, on the road to Haddington.

346. I.e. he left Culross, and crossed the Forth, which was called "the Scottish Sea."

355. Byland is near Ryedale, Yorkshire; see note to l. 498.

366. The spelling peth occurs also in The Wallace, v. 5.

409. Arthin; so in C. Tytler, following the reading ouchtre, guesses it to be Thomas de Uchtred, mentioned in the Feodera, iii. 963.

418. Owth, beyond, above. See note to xiv. 352.

443. Erischry, not Irishmen, but speakers of Erse, i.e. Highlanders.

498. Riveus, i.e. Rievaulx, where is the celebrated Rievaulx abbey. It is in Ryedale in the North Riding of Yorkshire, as the very name shews; for Rie is plainly the river Rye, and vaulx is from the Lat. vallis.

507. Johe of Bretane; John de Bretagne, earl of Richemont; Ann. Scot. ii. 104.

524. One of them was Henry de Sully, grand butler of France.—Tytler, i. 145.

537*. In the Camb. MS. only. Perhaps a line has been lost, however, as the rimes are imperfect.

547. To-stonay, greatly astonish. The to- is the common intensive prefix.

555. The wald, the wold; probably the Wolds, lying between York and Beverley.

558. The vale of beauware, lit. the vale of Beauvoir; it appears that Beverley is meant, and the vale is that of the river Hull. They must have advanced from York over the Wolds, reached Beverley, and then retired past Driffield.

NOTES TO BOOK XIX. (A.D. 1320—1327.)

(Jamieson, XIII. 359—XIV. 586; Innes, pp. 438—466.)


11. "Sir William de Soulis seems to have been the grandson of Nicolas de Soulis, one of the competitors at the time of the disputed succession. Nicolas claimed in right of his grandmother, the daughter of Alexander II., and he would have excluded the other competitors, had her legitimacy been ascertained;" Ann. Scot. ii. 97. Barbour is rather more explicit than others about this conspiracy, but he dates it
wrongly; he here places it in 1322, but it was in 1320. See Fordun, cap. cxxxv.

15. The reading male-herbe (E) is better. Fordun says—"Gilbertus de Malerb, Johannes de Logi, milites, et Ricardus Broune, armiger."

23. Ane lady; the Countess of Strathern; Ann. Scot. ii. 96.

46. This parliament was afterwards remembered as the Black Parliament, from the condemnation of the conspirators. It was held at Scone, Aug. 1320.

73. See note to Book ii. 211. The real name of the mediator was Henry de Sully; Ann. Scot. ii. 108. He was afterwards taken prisoner by the Scotch, in 1322; see xviii. 524 (note).

84. "Till men had done all their will with him;" i.e. had completed his execution.

128. In that tyme. It is not at all clear at what time; but, as it is said in 1. 188 that the truce was to last for 13 years, the reference must be to the truce which was to have lasted from 1323 to 1336. But this was three years after the conspiracy of De Soulis, which Barbour has placed two years too late.


165, 166. These lines may have suggested the line in Marmion, vi. 34—"Groom fought like noble, squire like knight."

183. Thretten, thirteen. From Mar. 30, 1323, to June 12, 1336.

205. Walter Stewart, who had married Bruce's daughter, died April 9, 1326.


230. See note to l. 188. Barbour makes the time a little too short. It was about 4 years; for Edward III. had ratified the truce Mar. 8, 1327; and the Scots did not invade England till June.


254. Wardill, Weardale, in the county of Durham.

255. Edward II., of Carnarvon, was deposed Jan. 7, 1327; he was murdered at Berkeley, Sept. 21.

257. Edward III. was crowned Feb. 1, 1327. He was not 15 years old, having been born at Windsor, Nov. 13, 1312.

261. Isabella, daughter of Philip IV. of France.

264. Philippa, daughter of William, count of Holland and Hainault. Edward married her in January, 1328; i.e. after the time of which Barbour is now speaking.

267. This was John, Lord of Beaumont, the Count of Hainault's brother. See Froissart, capp. viii., ix.

271. Edward fortified York, July 15, 1327; Ann. Scot. ii. 117.

278. He was not yet so much as fifteen. See note to l. 257.

279. "This seems to be the vale watered by the river Coc, Cock, or Cock, also Cockar, in Yorkshire. See Camden, iii. 239."—J. The river Cock rises on Whin Moor, to the N. E. of Leeds, and after passing
the battle-field of Towton, falls into the Wharfe near Tadcaster; see Murray's Guide to Yorkshire, p. 515.

316. "On the N. side of the Wear." For an account of this campaign, see Froissart, capp. xvii., xviii.

332. "The English soldiers of this army were cloathed in coats, and hoods, embroderied with flowers and branches, and did use to nourish their beards: wherefore the Scots in derision thereof, made this rime, and fastned it upon the Church doore of Saint Peter in the Canon-gate, [Long] beards hartlesse, Painted hoods wiltlesse, Gay coate[s] gracelesse, Make England thriftlesse;" Hume of Godscroft, Hist. Douglas, p. 42. The same rime is given in the Book of St Alban's and in Fabyan's Chronicle.

374. "This was the ancestor of the ancient and noble families of Mar and Buchan. Crawfur (Peerage, p. 297) says that he could trace them by writs no farther back than to the reign of Alexander II. They took their name from the lands of Erskine in Renfrewshire,"—J.

396. Tymbrys, crests made of light wood. They were also sometimes made of leather or cloth. They were not quite a new thing at this time; but Barbour probably alludes to the fact that, about this time, they came into more general use. See Engl. Cyclop., art. Crest; Godwin's Eng. Archæologist's Handbook, p. 259.

399. Crakkis of wer, cracks of war, i.e. noisy war-machines, or cannon. See Barbour's reference to them in Book xvii. 250, where he says these were unknown in Scotland in 1319. It is generally supposed that cannon were first used at Creçy in 1346; see Chambers, Book of Days, ii. 273; Notes and Queries, 1st S. x. 306, 412, 534. Yet it is said there are allusions to the use of them in India as early as A.D. 1200, and at the siege of Cambray about A.D. 1339. Consult Col. Chesney's Observations on the Past and Present State of Fire-arms, 8vo. 1852. (Notes and Queries, 3rd S. vii. 242.) Froissart (cap. 73) mentions cannons in his account of the siege of Stirling in 1340. See also a note on this subject in Weber's Metrical Romances, iii. 306, which refers us to Bp. Watson's Chemical Essays.

459. Degyse, feigned. Cotgrave has—"Desquisé, disguised, dissembled, feigned, counterfeited." Hart ridiculously prints tragedie, which Jamieson follows, and Pinkerton explains as meaning "a stage-trick!" In MS. E, a blank space is left for the word, as if the scribe could not read what he had before him.

468. War, would be; the subj. mood.


495. Be nychtirdate, by night-time, by night, in the night. The Camb. MS. wrongly has nychtir-daill. Jamieson seems to have fancied that "it might be meant for the name of some place." It is almost
incredible that he should have forgotten the occurrence of the word in Chancer's Prologue, l. 97. However, his Dictionary has the right explanation. Cf. Icel. nattartal, a tale or number of nights.

497. "They replenished their fires and made them larger." Cf. l. 732.

530. Ferrest, i. e. furthest, most remote; so also ferrer, further, in l. 537. The date of this exploit is Aug. 4, 1327.

571. "They made them know that it was a great folly." Froissart says that Douglas even cut two or three cords of Edward's tent.

577. "That lord (first), and another (afterwards), were upon the move." An awkward line.

611. "That, had not experience (in arms) helped (me) the more."

667. Thou mon heir out, thou must get out by this exit.

689. "Except where they are encamped." It is a good story, but the parallel does not hold; for the fox did get out where the fisherman had stood watching.

742. The additional lines in Hart are probably genuine; and his reading of ll. 743, 744, is better than in the text. Cf. Book xii. 395.

746. The reading sower (E) is an error for sowmer, the spelling in Wallace, iv. 53, for a sumpter-horse.

776. Marche, March. On Hart's odd reading—Stratherne—Innes remarks:—"He did not know even by name the once great earldom of the Dunbars."

779. For mycht, E has nycht, making utter nonsense. The line means—"that they (Bruce's men) and they (Murray's men) might be together;" i.e. if the reinforcements could effect a junction with the main army.

790. At a fay, lit. at one faith; i.e. of one fealty, owing obedience to the same sovereign.

810. "And that they had escaped such peril without loss."

NOTES TO BOOK XX. (A.D. 1327—1332.)

(Jamieson, XIV. 587—1210; Innes, pp. 466—488.)

7. About August or September, 1327.

15, 16. "And many a fair good feat was full doughtily achieved."

23. "It was not only to his Scotch followers that Bruce gave Northumbrian lands. Nothing serves better to mark his success and great ascendency than the number of native lords of Northumberland and the Bishoprick who now professed adherence to him, and whose subsequent forfeiture for that cause appears in the English records; see the Patent Rolls, &c."—Innes.

26. "And they paid for the fee of the seal." This is a remarkable proof of his success. See the last note.
29. Mortimer was executed Nov. 29, 1330. The peace with Scotland was concluded March 17, 1328.

30. Queen Isabella was imprisoned at the close of 1330. At this time her influence was supreme.

37. David, son of king Robert, was born Mar. 5, 1324, so that he was only just four years old at this time.

39. "Joan, born in the Tower, in 1321, was in 1329 [1328?] married to David, prince of Scotland (afterwards David II.). She accompanied him in his exile in France, and solicited permission to share his imprisonment in England; but she was at length obliged to separate from him through his own misconduct, and return to her brother's court, where she died, Sept. 7, 1362;" Annals of England, p. 181.

44—49. The omission of these lines in MS. C. and some editions can hardly have been intentional, but merely due to the one chief cause of such omissions, viz. repetition of final words. Here, for instance, the scribe passed from the line ending with scr (l. 44) to the next line with the same ending, viz. l. 49.

50. The marriage took place at Berwick, July 12, 1323; Ann. Scot. ii. 131.

73. Male ess, i. e. disease; Fr. mal aise.

75. Ane fundying, a foundering, benumbment with cold. Jamieson explains enfundeung (E.) as 'perhaps asthma,' by fancifully referring it to an Old Swedish word with which it has no connection; but enfundeung is merely en-foudering, i. e. the same word as before with the prefix en-. In the Prompt. Parv., p. 175, Mr Way has the following note: "Dr Turner, in his Herbal, 1562, makes use of the term [founder] in allusion to ailments of the human body, where he says that pyrethrum 'is excellently good for any parte of the body that is fundied or fowndered.' In his treatise of baths and mineral waters, he says that the baths of Baden, in High Germany, 'heate mucho membres that are foundre or fretished wyth cold, and bringe them to theyr naturall heate agayne;' and that the Pepper bath [no doubt the baths of Pfäffers] has virtues to restore limbs 'fretished, fowndered, and made numme wyth colde.' Again, in Jamieson's Dict., we have—"To Fundy, Funny, v. n. to become stiff with cold. Ramsay." These extracts make it clear that the word here intended is equivalent to foundering, which is used of exhaustion or physical prostration of any kind; and, in particular, of exhaustion produced by extreme cold and exposure. The disease induced was, in King Robert's case, termed 'leprosy.'

79. Cardross. "In the parish of Cardross to the W. of the river Leven [in Dunbartonshire] a small eminence still retains the name of the Castle Hill; on which, according to the tradition of the country, a castle once stood, which was the occasional residence of the king, and in which he breathed his last; but no vestige even of the ruins are (sic) now to be seen;" Kerr's Hist. Rob. Bruce, ii. 481 (quoted by Jamieson).

102. To hous was gevin, was conducted home.

128. Barbour is here several years out. The Act of Settlement to which he refers was passed at the parliament held in Dec. 1318, nearly ten years previously.

160. See the account of king Robert's death in Froissart, ch. xx. There are seven old leonine verses called 'King Robert's Testament'; which are quoted, together with an old Scottish translation, in Tytler, Hist. Scot. i. 367.

185. Observe that Bruce says his heart is to be taken to the Holy Land, but he does not say it is to be left there. It appears that he had (at any rate in May, 1329) destined it to be finally deposited at Melrose. See the curious injunction to this effect, printed at the end of Scott's notes to The Abbot.

248. "All that concerned a good Christian man." He died at Cardross, June 7, 1329.

257. "And often drive their fists together," i.e. clench their hands.

293 [287 in P.]. "The expenses of Bruce's funerals are very minutely recorded in the accounts of the Chamberlain of Scotland. The marble tomb was brought from Paris. A large part of it must have been gilded, if we are to judge from the quantity of leaf gold (foliorum aurorum) entered among the articles purchased."—Innes. Jamieson (pp. 489—493) gives several extracts from these Accounts.

324. "He left the mainland of Spain on the North of him." That is he rounded Cape St. Vincent.

326. Sebell the graunt, Seville the Grand, the great city of Seville, on the Guadalquivir.

338. All soyne, very soon; ingeniously altered by Hart to Alphons (for Alphans). There were two Alphonsos at this time; Alphonso XI., king of Leon and Castile, who is here intended, and Alphonso IV., king of Arragon. See Ann. Scot. ii. 134.

351, 352. "And entrusted to him good soldiers who were well instructed in the mode of warfare in that land."

367. Till-hewen, a bad spelling for to-hewen, i.e. severely cut or wounded. Fast signifies 'very, greatly.'

378. Love god, praise God. Henry the Minstrel has copied this trait in his portrait of Wallace.

"His face he kepit, for it was euir bar,
With his twa handis, the quhilk full worthi war."

Wallace, iii. 91.

"Woundis he had in mony duress place,
Bot fayr and weill kepyt was his face."—Id., ix. 1933.

393. According to Lord Hailies, who refers to Mariana, the Moorish leader was Osmyn, who commanded in Granada. On Balmaryne, see Tyrwhitt's note to Chaucer, Prol. l. 57.

396. Demanz is clearly the right reading; cf. demaine in Hart, and the reading demainze adopted by Jamieson. It means here to control, lit. to handle, treat, manage; such being the sense of the O.Fr. demener, sometimes spelt demainer. See Roquesfort's and Burguy's
NOTES TO BOOK XX.

Glossaries. Similarly, we read that the English ‘demaynde’ Scotland as if it had been “thair awne heretage;” Wallace, iii. 18.

421*-432*. It is somewhat strange that these lines, no doubt genuine, are omitted in both MSS. However, as Jamieson points out, the sense of the passage is preserved in Holland’s poem called The Howlat (Owlet), written about 80 years after The Bruce. The passage in The Howlat (ed. Laing, 1823, st. 38, 39) is as follows:—

“Than in defence of the faith he fure to the fecht,
With knyghtis of Christindome to kepe his command.
And quhen the battallis so brym, bralthy, and bright,
War joyned thraly in thrang, many thousand;
Aman the hethin men the hert hardely he flang,
   Said, ‘wendo on as thou was wunt,
Throw the batell in bront,
Ay formast in the front,
Thy fayis amang.
And I sall fallowe the in faith, or feye to be fellit;
As thi lege man leile, my lyking thow art;’... 
Thus frayis he the fals folk, trowly to tell it,
Ay quhil he couerit [recovered] and come to the kingis hart.”

See l. 486 below, which almost presupposes some special mention of the heart in this place.

440. “They (the chased, the Saracens) rallied;” cf. l. 500.
470. Ang. 25, 1330; see Ann. Scot. ii. 136.
521. “In b.c. 278, the consuls, C. Fabricius and Q. Âemilius Papus, undertook the command of the war. At the beginning of the campaign, a traitor offered to poison Pyrrhus; but the Romans honestly denounced the scoundrel;” Schmitz’s History of Rome.
524. Innes retains the reading Luffit, loved; but it obviously makes nonsense.
571. “Caused him to be boiled.” The reading seith is clearly the right one, not scher (shear, flay), as in MS. E.
577. War levit, had taken leave.
587. His sone. So in the MSS.; though it is a mistake of Barbour’s. Some editions have turned sone into brother, by way of correction. Douglas was never married; his natural son was named William. He was succeeded by his second brother Hugh, the ninth lord Douglas, of whom little is known. The person intended is his third brother, whom Ilume of Godserof calls “Archibald Douglas, Lord of Galloway, Governor of Scotland, third brother to Sir James,” giving a long account of him; Hist. Douglas, pp. 53—62.
604. “And well defended the poor;” lit. and held the poor well under guard. Pure, poor (C.) is the right reading; not power (E.).
609. Murray died July 20, 1332. Barbour says he was poisoned, but does not say by whom. The statement that he was poisoned by a monk is only to be found in the printed editions; see footnote to l. 610. See the note on the ‘Death of Randolph’ in Tytler’s Hist. Scot. i. 369.
ADDITIONAL NOTES.

BOOK I. 122. The immediate reference is perhaps to Dionysius Cato, Distich. iii. 14:

"Multorum disci exemplo, quae facta sequaris,
Quae fugias; uta est nobis aliena magistra."

Compare—

"For Caton seith, thes gode techere,
' Other mouis lif is owre schewere,'"

King Alisaunder, ed. Weber, l. 17.

The remark became, however, a common proverb. Thus in the Vie de Scint Auban, ed. R. Atkinson, l. 734, we have—"ki par autres est garniz, cist beu se chastie," i.e. he who is warned by others reforms himself well. And, in a note on the line, the editor quotes from the Vie de Scint Thomas, 75. 30—

"reis, 'suef se chastie qui d'autrui se chastie,'
cele parole as tu en plusurs lius oie."

BOOK III. 73. I remark, in the note to this line, that Barbour must have seen the romance of Alexander in an earlier form than that exhibited in the Scottish Buik of Alexander. Very likely he alludes to the great French romance by Tors and Bernay, which seems to belong to the beginning of the 13th century. See "Li Romans d'Alixandre, par Lambert li Tors et Alexandre de Bernay, herausgegeben von II. Michelant; Stuttgart, 1846." The story of the Forray of Gadres begins in the chapter headed "Assaut de Tyr." Alexander tells his men to go to Gadres, p. 94; duke Betis appears, p. 97; Gadifier des Lairis appears, p. 134; Alexander comes to the rescue, p. 152; Gadifier's combat with Alexander is described, p. 176. In this version, Tholimar is called Tholomes; Coneus, Calma; and Danklyne, Dans Clins (which shows that the reading in the text should be Dan-klyne, where Dan is the prefix corresponding to Lat. dominus, O.Fr. dans, Span. don). An excellent epitome of "Li Roumans d'Alixandre" will be found in "Alexander, vom Pfaffen Lamprecht; herausgegeben von Dr H. Weismann;" Frankfurt, 1850; vol. ii. p. 291. See note to Book x. 705, where there is another reference to the same romance, p. 217—

"Quar de l' befroi u est, de si haut com il fu,
Est salis en la vile, en son col son eseu," &c.

BOOK III. 99. For the following note I am indebted to Dr Murray.

No writer, so far as I am aware, seems to have seen the point of this passage. Mr J. Hill Burton (Hist. Scot., ed. 1867, ii. 366) goes somewhat out of his way to shew that he does not. After quoting the lines in a note, he adds—"Shaw, in his Gaelic Dictionary, has dorsair
for doorkeeper. One would hardly have expected that the Archdeacon of Aberdeen would have condescended to notice such a Celtic etymology." But the Archdeacon knew what he was about. At p. 98 of Mr Burton's History, will be found a full account of the troubles caused in the minority of Alexander III. by Alan Durward the Justiciar or Steward of Scotland, who, having married an illegitimate daughter of Alexander II., was accused of an intrigue to secure the crown. Then, at p. 213, we have "Nicholas de Soulis, descended of the marriage of Marjory, a natural daughter of Alexander II., to Alan the Durward," as one of the fifteen competitors, and consequently a rival of the elder Bruce in his claim to the crown. Finally, as late as 1320, another "de Soulis, a descendant of that Nicholas de Soulis, the competitor for the crown, whose ancestor Allan the Durward had attempted, as we have seen, to get his wife legitimated as a daughter of William the Lion," formed a dangerous conspiracy against Bruce, now nearing the end of his life (ii. 431). The Makydrossers or 'Durward's sons' were the clansmen of Alan the Durward, who, like the Comyns of Badenoch, the Baliols, and others, were almost more dangerous to Bruce than the arms of England; and it was Barbour's policy, correctly or incorrectly, to attribute this attack on Bruce to the party of one of his rivals, whose pretensions, almost in his own days, had imperilled his hero's sovereignty. It is worthy of notice that the head of another family, who held a similar office under the title of Steward, actually transferred the sovereignty to his house by marriage with Bruce's daughter. See Burton, Hist. Scot. iii. 44.—J. A. II. M.

BOOK III. 455. Skelton also mentions "Mantryble the bryge;" Poems against Garnesche, in Dyce's edition, i. 117, l. 22. Dyce, in his note (ii. 179), refers us to Ellis's Specimens of Met. Rom. ii. 389; Caxton's Lyf of Charles the Grete, 1485, sig. e viii and sig. h viii; Barbour's Bruce, ed. Jamieson, ii. 832 [the present passage]; and Don Quixote, in Shelton's translation, pt. i. bk. iv. cap. xxi. p. 546, ed. 1612. In the original Spanish, the allusion is to "Fierabrás, con la puente de Mantible" (sic); parte i. cap. xlix.

BOOK XIV. 33. Speaking of Larne Lough, Reeves says—"In subsequent records the name assumes the various forms of Ulderflethaven, Wolderfrith, Wolverfleth, and Oldershelf, the last of which names is still borne by the ruined castle," &c.; Eccl. Hist. of Down and Connor, p. 265.

BOOK XIV. 522. Add—In 1320, the prior of St John of Jerusalem in Ireland complained to the king of the great privations he had suffered by the Scots and rebels, but especially by the instrumentality of Michael of Kylkenan, &c.; Reeves, Eccl. Hist. of Down and Connor, p. 271. We may observe that Hart reads Michell, which is, perhaps, to be substituted for the mychall of the text. (For these two citations from Reeves I am indebted to Mr W. H. Patterson, of Belfast.)
NOTES TO "HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER."

5. *Ill techis*, bad qualities; see *Tache* in Halliwell.
9. "And more easily blemished (lit. blacked) by a great deal." Mr Lumby explains *be mekill thing* to mean "in comparison with a greater thing;" *Ratis Raving*, p. 129. But it merely means "by a great deal." Cf. l. 239.
20. *Nocht mak our moy*, not pretend to be over dainty.
42. *Our fer*, over far, too far.
47. "And rather (incline) to take a lower place than a higher, and (then) be put down." Cf. l. 121.
53. *Nocht than*, not but that. "Not but that they should always be decent." Mr Lumby (p. 129) explains it by "nothing should ever be more honest than they," which would require the comparative form *honester*. See l. 67.
86. *Ladry*, common people, the rabble. See Jamieson.
95. *Lest vitl*, hold out against.
101. *Had I wittyn*, had I known. Corresponding to the common Southern English *had I wist*; which see in Halliwell.
114. *In the rew*, in the street.
115. *Ryn at bars*, run at bars, play at the game of 'prison bars' or 'prisoners' base.' See "Base, or Prison-base, or Prison-bars" in Nares's Glossary.
123. *Our cleyn veschyn*, washed over-clean (!).
126. "To mend the complexion that God made."
148. *Vaverand*, lit. wavering, going about idly. Mr Lumby prints *wanerand*, and explains it by 'wandering.' This gives the right sense, but it is not the same word. It is our 'waving;' cf. Icel. *vafra*, to hover about, *vifa*, to swing, to vibrate to and fro. See note to *The Bruce*, vii. 302*.
168. *Beis nocht*, will not be.
222. "What the eye sees not, the heart covets not." The more common form is—"What the eye seeth not the heart doth not rue;" Hazlitt's Eng. Proverbs, p. 453.
233. *War nocht fors*, were not force (used). The odd contraction *dud* (see footnote) occurs again in *Ratis Raving*, l. 3218—"Thow art undone, and euer thow *dud,*" i. e. thou art undone, if ever thou *do it*.
Dr Murray tells me that *dail* for 'do it', rimeing with *guil* (good), is extremely common in Scotland to this day.

257. This sentence is a muddle, owing to the interpolation of ll. 259, 260, which must be regarded as parenthetical. *Quilk and thai had*, which if they had had; so in l. 284.

260. "An over-reckless, unprofitable (or inactive) person is wanton." But this line is really a repetition, out of place, of l. 276.

302. *On neyd*, of necessity; which is also the sense of the reading *One fars*.

NOTES TO "A DIETARY."

Another copy of this poem occurs in The Shepherd's Kalender, ed. 1656, sig. L 6, back. It begins—“For health of body, cover from cold thy head.”

5. *Ado*, to do. *Ado* is really short for *at do*, where *at* is the usual Northern prefix to the infinitive, as in Icelandic, &c. Compare—

"Lordys, he said, ye wait [*know*] quhat is *ado."


See the examples of *at do* in Mätzner, Englische Grammatik, II. ii. 58.

45. The spelling *Wise* (meaning 'visit') is easily explained. It was not usual to retain the final *t* of this word in Lowland Scottish. See *Vesie* in Jamieson's Dictionary.

50. *Be war with*, be ware against, i.e. beware of.

53. Chaucer's line (see footnote) is—"That porter of the gate is of delices." Cf. "Nought was forycete the porter ydelves;" Knightes Tale, l. 1082.

78. *Both*, bought; see the footnote.

80. "To all temperate men (lit. impartial men) this Dietary is a treasure;" Lat. version—"Sed cunctis ditissimum vtentibus est dieta-rium."
| INDEX I. |
| INDEX TO SUBJECTS DISCUSSED, AND WORDS EXPLAINED, IN THE NOTES. |

The numbers refer to the Book and the Line; and are available both for the Text and Notes.

The words discussed are denoted by beginning with a small letter; the subjects, by beginning with a capital.

| a, 13. 132; 19. 790 | Arran, 4. 464 |
| abandonyt, 3. 48 (4. 655); abandont, 4. 391 | Arthin, 18. 409 |
| abid, 18. 65 | Arthur, king, 1. 549 |
| Acre, siege of, 1. 140 | Artois, Robert of, 1. 339 |
| Adrastus, 2. 528 | Arundel, earl of, 16. 342 |
| Airth, 15. 495 | assen3he, 2. 378 |
| Alexander, romance of, 1. 533; 3. 73; and see additional note, p. 612 | Athol, earl of, 2. 235; 5. 151 |
| Alexander III., 1. 37 | Auchterhouse, 14. 29 |
| all anerly, 17. 470 | away, 6. 210 |
| allane, 6. 268 | aw, stand, 3. 62 |
| allout, 16. 589 | awayward, 16. 584 |
| allye, 17. 319 | Awe, Loch, 10. 17, 27, 34 |
| Alphonso XI., 20. 338 | ayndless, 10. 608 |
| Andrews, archbishop of, 1. 354 | Baliaol, 1. 37, 51 |
| anger, 3. 517; angyr, 2. 518 | baner, 17. 134 |
| Angus, 3. 659 | Bann, river, 14. 369, 371 |
| Annandale, 4. 509 | Barclay, David, 2. 237 |
| apane, 9. 64 | barell-feris, 15. 39 |
| apert, 10. 73 | Bathgate, 19. 206 |
| Arblast, when used, 17. 236 | battale, 18. 116; battalis, 11. 304 |
| arblasters, 17. 236 | bear in hand, 1. 62 |
| Ardrossan, 14. 31 | Beaumont, Henry de, 19. 153 |
| Arestee (Aristè), 10. 718 | beauvare, 18. 558. |
| Argyle, Allaster of, 10. 123 | Beg, Lough, 14. 371 |
| Arickstone, 2. 148 | belwyty, 13. 544 |
| armoris, 13. 183 | Bell, Sir Ingraham, 6. 3 |
| | Belmarync, 20. 393 |
INDEX I.—EXPLANATIONS IN THE NOTES.

bend, 17. 690
Benoit de Sainte-Maure, 1. 525
berfroiss (Old French befoir), 10. 708; see additional note to 3. 73 (p. 612)
Berwick, 11. 184; 20. 59; taken, 17. 22
Betech, 15. 538
Betoun (?), 13. 523
Betys, duke, 3. 73
Beverley, 18. 555, 558
biggit, 14. 383
Birmingham, Sir John de, 14. 143
Bissets, 14. 47
Blackwater, Sir John de, 14. 143
Bissets, 14. 47
Blackwater, 14. 337, 345
Blair, Sir Brice, 4. 37
Bohun, Sir Henry, 12. 29
Boroughbridge, 17. 555
Boroundoun, 2. 479
Bosbeck (Roubaix ?), 4. 249
bot and, 5. 595
Bothwell, 8. 15, 95; castle, 13. 412
Bouvines, battle of, 4. 211, 249
Brandir, pass of, 10. 17; rocks of, 10. 86
Brechin, Sir David, 2. 211, 237
Bretagne, John de, 18. 507
Bride’s, St, 5. 336
brim, 14. 339
Brodic castle, 4. 388
Broune, Richard, 19. 15
Bruce, Edward, 2. 236; 14. 1; 18, 1, 13, 224
Bruce, Nigel, 2. 513
Bruce, Robert (the elder), 1. 51, 477
Bruce, Robert, 1. 477; his death, 20. 168, 185; his funeral, 20. 293; his heart, 20. 185, 421*
Bruce (error for Brice), 4. 37
Buchan, 9. 297; 19. 374; countess of, 4. 56
Burgh on Sands, 4. 203
Bunkle, 9. 691
Bunock, Binnock, 10. 153
burdis, 5. 388
burdowys, 17. 236
burgess, 17. 236
Burgh, Richard de, 14. 150
but, 3. 517; 7. 447; 16. 617
Bute, 3. 577
Butel (Buttil), 9. 522
Butler, 14. 143, 150
Byland, 18. 355
byrd, 6. 316
call all, 10. 227 (231)
Callan, 16. 261
Callock, Edmond de, 15. 321
Campanes, 2. 534
Campbell, Sir Neil, 2. 491
Campbell, Sir Colin, 16. 119
Canna, 3. 208
Cannon, 17. 250; 19. 399
cant and keyn, 8. 280
Cantire, 3. 385
Capanes. See Camaneus.
Cardross, 20. 79, 248
Carrick, 4. 599
Carrickfergus, 14. 33
caryage, 15. 19
Castleknock, 16. 261
Cato, Dionysius, quoted, 1. 122
Charlieamagne, 3. 441, 459
charre, 11. 123
ehemeyr, 16. 580
Christiania de Insulis, 5. 133
Clare, Richard, 14. 159
clene and law, 10. 471
clewch, 16. 386
Clifford, 2. 112; 7. 622; 11. 521
Cock, river, 19. 279
colé, 7. 623
Comyn, John, 2. 235; 3. 1; 6. 503
Comyn, John, of Buchan, 9. 110
Comyn, Sir Robert, 2. 37
Conens, 3. 73
command, 11. 1
Connaught, 16. 295
Connor, 14. 394
couer, 9. 190
covatiss, 19. 2
coyne, 13. 219
Cowal, 3. 153
Cowport (Berwick), 17. 35
Culross, 18. 254, 346
Cunnock, 8. 463
Cunningham, 8. 13
crakkis, 19. 399
Crawfurd, Sir Reginald, 4. 36
Cree, river, 9. 517
Crests come into use, 19. 396
Crumachan, Ben, 10. 27
cyre, 12. 22
Dalry, 3. 68, 109
dangeir, 10. 196
Dares, 1. 525
Date of the work, 13. 704
David I., 1. 51
David II., 13. 697; born, 20. 37; married, 20. 39
Danklyne, 3. 73; perhaps read Danklyne, addit. note, p. 612
daw, of, 7. 132
Dayncourt, 11. 573
degyse, 19. 459
demanze, 20. 396; demanyt thaim, 15. 376
departit, 7. 626
Devilling (Dublin), 15. 107
Dickson, Thomas, 5. 276
Dictys, 1. 525
discrivit, 13. 185
do furth, 1. 256
Dochart, Glen, 3. 109

Donavardyne, 3. 666
Douglas, Sir Archibald, 20. 587
Douglas-dale, 5. 271
Douglas, James, 1. 364; 2. 211; cuts the cords of Edward's tent, 19. 571
Douglas, William, 1. 283; 5. 276 'Douglas' larder,' 5. 403
Douglas, meaning of, 15. 538
Down, Thomas of, 14. 376
dragoun, 2. 205
Drogheda, 16. 261
duk-peris, 3. 440
Dunaverty. See Donavardyne.
Dunbar, 13. 611
Dundalk, 14. 135
Dundee, 9. 328
Dunse, 17. 64
Dunstaffnage, 10. 113
Edward I., 1. 283; 2. 151, 243*; 4. 599; 8. 361; 9. 1; death of, 4. 190
Edward II., 8. 364; 17. 291; 19. 255
Edward III., 19. 257, 264
Egremor, 3. 441
ek, 8. 290
Endwillane, 14. 113
enseinzie, 2. 426; 3. 27 (note to 2. 378)
etremes, 16. 457
erd, 6. 128
ere, 16. 258
erischry, 14. 9; 18. 443
Erskine, 19. 374
eschelis, 8. 218
Etive, Loch, 10. 17, 27, 34
Ettrick, 8. 425; 9. 673
eym, 10. 305; eyme, 13. 697
Fagher, 18. 13
faldyn, 11. 547; falding, 13. 632
far, 16. 46
INDEX I.—EXPLANATIONS IN THE NOTES.

fast, 20. 367
fay, 19. 790
fayndit, fandit, 12. 148
feble, 3. 384
feill, 11. 655; fele, 16. 589
feir, 15. 514
feld, hard, 12. 406*
fele, 16. 589; feill, 11. 655
fell, 6. 246
Fergus, 14. 31
Ferrand, earl of Flanders, 4. 211
ferrand (horse’s name), 2. 118
ferrest, 19. 530
Ferumbras, 3. 437, 459
fest and far, 16. 46
Fierabras, 3. 437, 459
fiff sura, 6. 149; (note to 3. 420)
Fingal, 3. 68
Fitzthomas, 14. 146
Fitzwarren, 15. 75
Flagot, 3. 455
fleand, 15. 337*
fluss, 13. 20
for, 2. 503
fordid, 5. 412
forfure, 10. 529
forrouth, 16. 504
Forster, 9. 312
forsuk, 14. 315
Forth, Firth of, 18. 254
Fox and Fisherman, 19. 689
foul, 7. 188
founder, 20. 75
frely, 3. 578
frest, 7. 447
Fraser, 2. 230; 8. 395, 397
fundying, 20. 75
fur, 2. 503; fure, 16. 288
furth, 1. 256
fute, 3. 578
fut-hate, 3. 418; fut-hat, 13. 454

ga, 9. 190
Gaderis, forray of, 3. 73
Galston, 8. 123
gang, 8. 450
Gaudifer, 3. 73
Gaul Mac Morna, 3. 68
Genitive of names, construction of,
17. 335
gert helde, 8. 14
gevin to hous, 20. 102
gill, 7. 622
Gillemín de Fiennes, 10. 456
Glasgow, bishop of, 2. 178; 4. 13
Glentrool, 7. 494
Gloucester, earl of, 11. 163; 13. 511
Gordon, 9. 695
Granada, 20. 393
grevit, grue, 15. 541
grewis, 5. 13
greue, grevit, 15. 541
gyrth, 2. 44; 4. 47

haill, 18. 116; haill and feir, 15. 514
Hainault, count of, 19. 264, 267
half, 16. 399
hals, 5. 575
Hannibal, 3. 208, 235
Harcla (or Hardclay), Sir Andrew,
16. 508, 511; 17. 866
Harpars, Gib, 15. 181
has, 13. 642
Hastings, John, 1. 51; 4. 384
hawch, 16. 336
hawes, 17. 13
hawyng, 7. 135
Haye, Hugh de la, 2. 237
he, 7. 192
hede-soyme, 10. 180
held, 16. 635
held on, 7. 27
Henry IV., 3. 209
her, 12. 505
Hereford, earl of, 13. 412
hevede, 5. 11
421*
Hoods worn by the English, 19. 332
howand, 18. 116
hy, 15. 162

James (disyllabic), 1. 313
Jedworth, Jedwood, 8. 427
Jeromy (Jeremiah), 4. 682
Jerusalem, 4. 200
Inverury, 9. 34
Joan de la Tour, 20. 39
Johnston, St, 2. 247
Isabella, queen, 19. 261; 20. 30
Islay, 3. 659
Judas Iscariot, 4. 18
iuntly, 17. 689
iuperdy, 14. 421

Kildrummy, 2. 513; 3. 337; 4. 181; 9. 289
Kilkenane, 14. 522
Kilross, 14. 252
Kilsaggart, 14. 133
Kilwinning, 8. 95
knaiff child, 13. 693
Knights made, 9. 138; 12. 413
Kyle, 8. 9
Kyllvanane, 14. 522; and addit. note, p. 613

ladis, 8. 450
Lamberton, William of, 1. 354
Lanark, 8. 447
Lancaster, earl of, 17. 285, 866, 875
lap on, 5. 214
Larne, Lough, 14. 33; and see p. 613
Laryss, 3. 73
late, 7. 127

Icchyng, 13. 46
Leinster, 16. 297
leit lichtly, 12. 250
Leixlip, 16. 261
Lennox, 2. 235
lenteryne, 10. 815
lest, 7. 65
let, 1. 254
letter, letteris, 17. 48
levit war, 20. 577
lewe, 16. 275
lif, on, 7. 65
Limerick, 16. 265, 297
Lincelly, Lintelly, 16. 336, 342
Linlithgow castle, 10. 136, 137
Linton lea, 16. 336
Lochmaben, 2. 18
Loch Ryan, 16. 36
Logans, 14. 47
Logie, John de, 19. 15
Longcastell (Lancaster), 17. 285, 852
Longueville, Sir Thomas de, 9. 391
Lorn, brooch of, 3. 93, 146
Lorn, John of, 6. 481, 503; 10. 11
Lorn, lord of, 3. 1
louch, 14. 354
loud and still, 3. 745
Loudon (Lochdon), 4. 16
Loudoun, 8. 123
love god, 20. 378; lovyng, 7. 90; lovyt, 1. 406
loynyt, 15. 276
Lucius Iberius, 1. 549, 560
lufre, 14. 233
Lumbard, 10. 324
Lyne, water of, 9. 673

ma weill, 16. 592
Maccabees, 1. 465
Macandrosser, 3. 99; and addit. note, p. 612
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Index</th>
<th>Explanation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Macgallane, 14. 105</td>
<td>Morocco, strait of, 3. 688</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mac Morna, Goll, 3. 68</td>
<td>Mortimer executed, 20. 29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Macnaughtan, 3. 153</td>
<td>Moubray, Sir Philip, 2. 211; 10. 821; 11. 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Makfialiane, 14. 105</td>
<td>Moubray, Sir Roger, 2. 211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Making knights, 9. 138; 12. 413</td>
<td>Mull of Cantire, 3. 696</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Makmartane, 14. 106</td>
<td>Munster, 16. 297</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>male ess, 20. 73</td>
<td>Murray, earl of, dies, 20. 609. See Randolph.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Malerb, Gilbert dc, 19. 14</td>
<td>mydwart, 3. 682</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Man, isle of, 4. 14</td>
<td>na, 2. 517; na war, 7. 218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mandevill, 9. 138; 12. 413</td>
<td>Naas, 16. 261</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Makartaane, 14. 106</td>
<td>nakyt, 7. 330; nakit, 13. 98</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Male, 19. 47</td>
<td>naylis, 3. 459</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mantill, 5. 317</td>
<td>Neagh, Lough, 14. 337, 339, 371, 376</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mantrybili, 3. 455; and see additional note, p. 613</td>
<td>Neil Bruce, 2. 513</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mar, 19. 374</td>
<td>neir, 16. 258</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>March, 19. 776</td>
<td>Nele (Neil), 2. 491</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marcus, 4. 14</td>
<td>Newcastle, 17. 291</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margaret, maid of Norway, 1. 37</td>
<td>nigramansy, 4. 747</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Margaret, St, 10. 737</td>
<td>Ninian’s, St, 11. 442</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marmion, a line in, 19. 165</td>
<td>Northumbrian lands given to the Scotch, 20. 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Marthokys sone, 3. 67</td>
<td>not, 13. 173</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Martinmas, 9. 127</td>
<td>nychtirtale, 19. 495</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mast, 17. 696</td>
<td>oblesteris, 17. 236</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>maistry, 13. 412</td>
<td>O Dempsey, 14. 329, 339, 369</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maupas, John, 18. 224</td>
<td>Oliphard, 9. 338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>maynteym, 2. 189</td>
<td>Oneyl, Donevald, 14. 102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meath, 16. 296</td>
<td>or, 16. 288; or at, 10. 529</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Meldrum, 9. 202</td>
<td>Oriel College, 13. 611</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>melle, 7. 622</td>
<td>Osmyn the Moor, 20. 393</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melrose, 20. 185</td>
<td>ourcome, 18. 114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>merdale, 9. 249</td>
<td>our-tuk, 12. 439</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Merse, 15. 331</td>
<td>outrageous, 11. 32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Methven, 2. 303</td>
<td>owth, 14. 352; 17. 598; 18. 418</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Minorite convent, 2. 33</td>
<td>Palmsunday, 5. 307; 15. 100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>misteris, 17. 542</td>
<td>parisius, 4. 251</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Parliament, Black, 19. 46
part, twa, 17. 103
Participle, past (doubled), 18. 168
Patrick of March, 13. 611
Peace made, 20. 29
Pembroke, earl of, 2. 200
Pembroke college, 2. 200
pennystane, 16. 383
Perth taken, 9. 450
peth, 18. 366
Philippa, queen, 19. 264
plait and mailè, 11. 107
Platan, 9. 312
price, 7. 90
Prophecies, 4. 209, 241
Proverbs cited, 3. 540; 4. 119; 5. 262; 11. 24
punsoune, 1. 545
punzeis, 12. 373
purvay, 5. 74
Pyrrhus, story of, 20. 521
quhethir, the, 12. 191, 564
quheyne, 17. 67; quhoyn, 17. 135
quhile, 8. 18
quhistlyng, 6. 87
quhoyn, 17. 135; quheyne, 17. 67
quyntis, 13. 183
qwyrbolle, 12. 22
Race of Brittany, 3. 687
rad till byd, 12. 431
raid, 8. 296
raiss, 3. 687
raiss dragoun, 2. 205
Randolph, Sir Thomas, 2. 237; 6. 510. See Murray.
Ramsay, 14. 29
Riuchryne (Rathlin), 3. 680
raucht, 7. 623
raw, 8. 450
rebell, 10. 129
rebouris, at, 13. 486
redis swyr, 17. 13
Reid, river, 17. 13
relyng, 12. 110
renk, 2. 365
Rennell's Current, 3. 687
renownee, 8. 290
revar, 14. 337
rewis, 14. 221
reyk, 17. 419
riall, 12. 557
Richemont, Thomas de, 16. 342
Rievanlx, 18. 498
Robert II., 13. 695, 704
Robert, bishop, 13. 683
romanys, 1. 446
Roubaix, 4. 249
rought, 12. 557
Round Table, 13. 379
routit, 7. 192
rowndand, 12. 360
ryde, 12. 557; ryde aganis, 14. 420
Ryedale, 18. 355, 498
rymmyl, 12. 557
sagat, 7. 368
St Andrews, bishop of, 2. 178
St John, John de, 9. 509
salls, 3. 540
saltit, haf gert, 18. 168
sanctit, 17. 286
sarray, 8. 296
Savages, 14. 47
sawin, 4. 685
seaill, 15. 337*, 341
schiltrum, 12. 429
scho, 17. 672
schonand, 5. 201
schot, 7. 467; 15. 59
INDEX I.—EXPLANATIONS IN THE NOTES.

Scone, 2. 150
Scottish Sea, 9. 309; 18. 346
se, 3. 172
segis, 4. 697
Selkirk, 8. 425; 9. 673
seth, 20. 571
Seton, Christopher, 2. 243*; 4. 29; 5. 156
Settlement, Act of, 20. 128
Seville, 20. 326
Ships drawn on land, 15. 272
Silvester II., 4. 209
Sinclair, bishop William, 16. 575; Sir William, 20. 444
Sir James, the good, 15. 538
Slane, 16. 63
slep, 7. 177
Slevach, 9. 107
slew fire, 13. 36
Snowdoun, 4. 181
Sodor and Man, 4. 14
soft, 4. 697
Somerville, 2. 239
Soulis, Sir John, 14. 27; 16. 508, 511; 18. 23
Soulis, William de, 19. 11
sow, 17. 597
sowmer, 19. 746
soyme, soam, 10. 180
sper, 3. 459
sprenten, 12. 49
Spurs cut off, 16. 597
staill, 15. 341; 17. 97
stand aw, 3. 62
stane (stare?), 15. 49
Stanhope Park, 19. 490
Stewart, Sir John, 14. 28; 18. 23
Stewart, Sir Walter, 18. 33; 19. 205
Stirling, 1. 409; castle, 2. 211
stok, 15. 49
stole, 2. 151
stratet, 6. 463
Strathbogie, 9. 188, 695
Strathern, countess of, 19. 23
Strathern, earl of, 9. 340
strecour, 6. 487
strinth, 9. 59
stufit, 17. 135
styeht, 3. 658
succudry, 16. 327
suet, tynt the, 13. 32
Sully, Henry de, 18. 524; 19. 73
sum, 6. 149
summer, 17. 696
surcharge, 16. 458
suth, 17. 278
swappit, 17. 690
swyr, 17. 13
syb, 13. 511
Tain, 4. 47
takis on hand, 16. 593
tane, 6. 128; 14. 381
Tarbard, 15. 272
taucht, 2. 130
thai, 1. 455, 458
thar, 8. 257; 12. 300
Thebes, 2. 528
Tholimar, 3. 73
thresum, 3. 420
Thrillwall, 6. 392
thurt, 6. 121
till, 6. 656
till-hewen, 20. 367; till-hewyt, 2. 381
to-fruschy, 17. 667
to-ga, 8. 351
top our taill, 7. 455
Torwood, 11. 210
to-stonay, 18. 547
to-sthir, 4. 518; 9. 412
toune, com of, 7. 632
to-vauerand, 7. 302*
toym, 5. 642
Traitors, stories of, 5. 521
Tranent, 18. 276
tretis, 10. 125
tretit, 10. 481
treyteris, 10. 125
treyyn, 10. 361
tropellis, 13. 275
Truce made, 19. 128, 153, 230
tuk, 9. 412
Turnberry, 4. 556; 5. 1, 76
Twenge, 13. 523
twist, 7. 188
Tybetot, 13. 468
tymbrys, 19. 396
Tyndrum, 3. 68, 109
tynt the suet, 13. 32
Tyre, 3. 73; siege of, 10. 705
tyt, 16. 132; tyttar, 2. 517

Uchtred, 18. 409
Ulster, 14. 373; 16. 317
Umphraville, Sir Ingrabam de, 2. 211; 6. 3
Uriel, 16. 296

valk, 7. 179
valknyt, (note to 7. 179)
varrar, 5. 546
vauerand, vaueryt (note to 7. 302*)
Vaux, 7. 622
vayn, vill of, 7. 2
vayndist, 13. 217
vend, 4. 600
Verdon, 14. 143
vill of vayn, 7. 2

Vipont, 13. 472
voidry, 10. 516
vonyn hay, 10. 193
vre, 15. 376
vyre, 5. 595.

wald, 18. 555
Wallace, 1. 283
wane, will of, 2. 471
wan plass, 12. 563
war, 19. 468
War-engines, 17. 597, 672
warn, 4. 392
Waverling Firth, 14. 33
Weardale, 19. 254, 316, 490
Webtown, Sir John, 8. 453
went, 4. 257
wer (were), 16. 307
wer (to defend), 16. 594
werdis, 2. 320
while, 7. 72
will of red, 3. 494; (and note to 2. 471); — of wane, 2. 471
William of Lamberton, 1. 354
Winchburgh, 13. 587
Wishart, Robert, 4. 13
with, 17. 455
Woking’s Firth, 14. 33; and wildit.
    note, p. 613
wonnyn, 10. 799

York fortified, 19. 271
Ysay (Isaiah), 4. 683
Yule-eve, 9. 204
INDEX II.

BOOKS REFERRED TO IN THE NOTES.

(This is merely a list of the more important books and authors referred to in the Notes; with references to the Notes in which they are cited.)

Alexander.—The Bulk of the most noble and valiant and conqueror
Alexander, callit the Forray of Gadderis; Bannatyne Club, 1834.
Referred to; 3. 62, 73; see additional note, p. 612.
Annals of England; Library Edition; J. Parker, 1876. Cited—1. 37,
477; 2. 178, 200, 243*; 4. 73; 5. 1; 9. 509; 11. 163; 20. 39.
Annals of Scotland. See Hailes.
Brut.—The Chronicle called 'The Brut'; 1. 560.
Burton; Hist. of Scotland, I. 37. See additional note on p. 612.
Camden's Britannia; 6. 392.
Camden's Remaines concerning Britaine, ed. 1657; 2. 235.
Cato, Dionysius; 1. 343; see additional note, p. 612.
Chaucer; 1. 122, 343, 356, 533, 545; 2. 365, 381; 3. 418, 688, 753; 5.
Dante; 2. 534.
Dunlop's History of Fiction; 1. 525.
Erceldoune, Thomas of; ed. J. A. H. Murray; 2. 86.
Fordun's Chronicle, ed. Skene; 1. 37, 354, 409, 465, 481; 2. 1, 16, 33,
178, 211, 237, 303, 494; 3. 68, 687; 5. 133; 6. 392; 9. 107, 110,
204, 450, 517; 10. 8, 123, 125, 136, 352; 11. 84; 19. 11, 15.
Froissart; tr. by Johnes; 1. 339; 19. 267, 316, 399, 490; 20. 121, 160.
Guido de Colonna; 1. 393, 525.
Hailes.—The Annals of Scotland, by Sir David Dalrymple (Lord
Hailes), 2 vols. 4to. 1779; 1. 37, 283, 354; 2. 37, 112, 199, 235, 237,
243*; 4. 13, 36, 37, 47, 56; 5. 1, 104, 151; 8. 133; 9. 204, 509; 10.
8, 123, 456; 11. 163, 184; 13. 305, 321, 463, 472, 484, 735; 14. 143,
145, 150, 221; &c.
Havelok the Dane; ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.); 3. 62; 7. 467; 11. 517.
Hume of Godscroft's History of the Houses of Douglas and Angus;
Edinburgh, 1614; 1. 37, 233; 2. 148; 5. 271, 276, 403; 8. 28, 447
453; 15. 321, 533; 19. 332; 20. 287.
BRUCE
INDEX II.—BOOKS REFERRED TO.


Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary; 2. 494; 3. 578; 5. 201; 9. 64; 15. 39; 20. 75.

Langtoft; see Robert of Brunne.

Layamon's Brut, ed. Madden; 1. 560.

Lucan's Pharsalia, quoted by Barbour; 3. 281.

Lydgate; 4. 753; (Storie of Thebes), 2. 528; 6. 179.

Morley's English Writers; 1. 525, 560; 3. 68.


Nares's Glossary; 1. 545.

Piers the Plowman, ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.); 1. 194; 4. 747.


Political Songs, ed. T. Wright (Camden Society); 1. 37, 194; 2. 239; 17. 875.

Promptorium Parvulorum, ed. A. Way (Camden Society); 13. 183; 20. 75.


Romans d'Alixandre, by Lambert li Tors and Alexandre Bernay, ed. II. Michelant; Stuttgart, 1846; 10. 705, 718; and addit. Note to 3. 73, on p. 612.

305; 14. 102. Marmion; 19. 165. Tales of a Grandfather; 1. 37; 3. 93; 4. 56; 5. 271; 8. 447; 10. 11, 137, 352; 11. 547; 13. 695.

Shakespeare (Hamlet), 1. 545; (Henry IV.), 4. 209; (Macbeth), 7. 72; (Richard II.), 7. 72.

Skelton, ed. Dyce; 2. 247; 3. 48; 4. 391, 753; and see p. 613.

Sowtoun of Babylon and Ferumbras his sone, Romance of. Roxburgh Club, 1854; 3. 437, 440, 455.

Specimens of English Literature, from 1298 to 1393; ed. Morris and Skeat; 2. 471; 7. 1—400.

Specimens of English Literature, from 1304 to 1579; ed. Skeat; 6. 179.

Statius, his Thebais; 2. 528; 6. 179.

Stratmann's Old English Dictionary (2nd edition); 2. 365; 3. 578, 658.


Vergil, quoted by Barbour; 3. 561, 706; 5. 87.


Warton's History of English Poetry; 1. 525; 2. 346; 3. 73, 437, 455; 5. 1, 13.

William of Palerne, ed. Skeat (E. E. T. S.); 6. 650.

INDEX III. (RIME-INDEX.)

This Index is by no means exhaustive, but will probably suffice as a guide to the more important rimes. A complete Rime-index would occupy a considerable space, and much of the information would be valueless. We learn nothing from a large number of the rimes beyond the one very important fact that the final -e, so common in Chaucer, is hardly to be found in Barbour at all. Certainly it is never found as expressing an inflection of a noun or verb, and the result is that a large number of the rimes are just the same as in modern English, whilst they are very different from those in Chaucer. A comparison with the latter is easily made, and the difference is at once apparent.

Some of the most striking uses of the final -e in Chaucer are these.

(1) The -e marks: (a) the definitive form of the adjective.1 In Barbour, it makes no difference whether the adjective is definite or indefinite: it always drops the final -e. Ex. "his gret valour," i. 556; "the maist party," ii. 215. Examples are scarce, because Barbour is remarkably sparing of his adjectives. (b) The plural of adjectives. In Barbour, the inflection is dropped. Ex. “Full feill that war douchty of deid;” ii. 232. The final -e which sometimes appears is due to mistakes on the part of the scribe, and to the lateness of the existing MSS. Thus the same word is miswritten feile, ii. 221; feyle, ii. 228; but these final letters have no meaning, and are to be disregarded in the scansion.

(2) In verbs, -e marks: (a) the infinitive mood. But Barbour has—“Ye sall isch furth to the bataill;” ii. 278. In ii. 251, the word arme appears, but the -e is an idle addition. The line runs—“Bad his men arm thaim hastily.” And so throughout. Hence tell (infinitive mood) rimes with fell (past tense), ii. 45; a rime which will not be found in Mr Cromie’s Ryme-Index to Chaucer.

(b) the gerundial infinitive. But Barbour has—“And weill mar for to dreid then thai;” ii. 272.

(c) the past participle of strong verbs. Here, however, Barbour differs by retaining the full form of the inflection; as in cummyrn, i. 44; foundyn, i. 60; chosyn, i. 117; haldyn, i. 118. Note also the pairs of rimes knawin, drawin, iv. 175; sawin, knawin, iv. 685. In some verbs

1 For examples, see Dr Morris’s Introduction to his edition of the Prologue, &c. (Clarendon Press), and my analysis of the metre of the Squire’s Tale in my edition of The Prioresses Tale, &c. (Clarendon Press).
the contracted form occurs, as in tan (taken), don (done); &c. These are monosyllabic, though often written tone, done by the scribe.

(d) the past tense of such weak verbs as take the endings -de and -te. But Barbour has dempt, i. 213, awcht, i. 255; thocht, i. 303, &c.

Without going into more particulars, the above remarks will enable the reader to see the force of the statement that, whereas the final -e is common in Chaucer as indicating various inflections, there is not a single example of it throughout the whole of the rime-endings that occur in Barbour. The instances in which it is written at the end of a line are, in every case, due to the scribe only and to the written form; it was not meant to be sounded.

Throughout Book I., the only examples of a written -e at the end of lines (not counting instances such as bounte, he) are these.

In ll. 55, 56, we have male, collaterale. If the final -e were to be pronounced here, it would not be inflectional, but the words belong rather to a class of which I have a few more words to say below. The same remark applies to female, male ll. 59, 60, and thrillage, parage, ll. 101, 102.

In ll. 65, 66, we have hale, dale. Here the -e merely means that the a is long; the words are constantly written haill, daill.

In ll. 105, we have ride; but it rimes to abyd. The -e is not an inflection, for the infinitive mood, in Barbour, does not admit of one.

So in l. 108, the infinitive tyme is monosyllabic, for it rimes with the word with-in. The latter word never becomes withinne in Northern English.

In ll. 113, 114, we have thrillage, vsage. See the remark on thrillage above.

In ll. 119, 120, we have bene, sene. Both are monosyllables, and are also written beyn, seyn.

In l. 128, we have wyde; but it rimes with tyd.

In l. 143, 144, we have tane, gayne; both are monosyllabic past participles, and are also written tan, gan.

In l. 150, we have gate, which occurs as a monosyllable with very great frequency. It is made to rime with debat.

In ll. 157, 158, we have save, have. These words are also constantly written sauff, haff, &c.

The other examples are of a similar character, and may be easily understood. They are as follows: quhile, ghyle (171), nane, tane (173), sone, wadone (181), toune, possessioun (185), nation, fellone (193), enchesone, destructione (203), tyme, pyne (211), nane, nekborne (217), dome, thrildome (235), sync, commandync (255), thrillage, parage (275), gave, knace (287), page, waselage (289), seylye, feyle (303), wane, lane (323), heritage, thrillage (351), homage, heritage (419), thrillage, waselage (471), enchesoune, resoune (487), tane, gane (521), wrate, state (525),
INDEX III.—RIME-INDEX.

conquerourc, tour (529), prosoun, tresoun (533), ded, rede (545), passe, was (629).

Of these, the very last example is the clearest; we know that was is, at any rate, monosyllabic. It follows that passe should rather have been written pas; and, as a fact, it generally is so written; see iv. 354.

So too, in the middle of lines, we find fayne for sayn, i. 11; weile for veil, i. 149, and the like; where the -e has no phonetic value.

The result is that, throughout Book I., if the final -e is ever to be sounded at the end of a line, it can only be in the French words ending in -age, viz. thrillage, vsage, parage, page, &c.; or in French words ending in -ale, such as female, male, collateral. And I think it possible that some of these words may, at that early period, have sometimes (but quite exceptionally) retained the final -e as a lightly pronounced separate syllable. Still we do not find any indication of this in general when these words occur in the middle of lines; note thrillage in i. 109, vsysage in i. 383, where, however, the accent falls upon a different syllable.

Just as at the end of lines, so also in the middle of them, the inflectional final -e is wholly wanting. But I believe it will be found that there are just three or four instances in which a final -e really appears, but only as an essential part of the word. Such words are, at the most, extremely few. The word sege (sieve) is perhaps of this character. We find—

The segé tak full apertly; x. 315.
That wald he leit the segé be; xvii. 850.

I believe that such words will be found to be mostly of French origin, and the examples of them are so scarce that the reader may as well adopt the general rule, that the final e (of whatever character) is wholly absent from Barbour, and is never to be sounded when inserted by the scribes.

These few remarks will serve to introduce the index here following; further remarks upon the metre will be found in the Preface, including some notes upon lines which are really or apparently imperfect in scansion.

A. LIST OF DOUBLE OR FEMININE RIMES.

(This list is nearly, if not quite, an exhaustive one; the reference is to the former line of the couplet.)
-abill; delitabill, fabill, i. 1.
-alit (-ailit, -aillyt); apparalit, assalit, 9. 132; assailyt, failjeit, 2. 538; assalit, falit, 4. 89; battaillyt, assaylity, 2. 221; failit, fortrawaillyt, 3. 325; forttravalit, assalit, 7. 368; travalit, assalit, 4. 149.
-akys (-akys); takys, stomakys, 3. 541.
-anys (-any); banys, anys, 1. 271; montanys, paynys, 3. 371; montanys, planys, 8. 3; stanys, nanys, 10. 57.
-aris; flearis, chassaris, 3. 51.
-astis; mastis, fast is, 17. 715.
-alis; batis, howgatis, 4. 438; climatis, gatis, 4. 701; prelatis, statis, 20. 161; statis, gatis, 1. 337.
-auit; dissauit, ressauit, 4. 272.
-awin; knawin, drawin, 4. 175; sawin, knawin, 4. 685.
-avis; drawis, sawis, 4. 322; shawis, blawis, 4. 121.
-ayis; alwayis, sayis, 11. 23; Artayis, dayis, 1. 339; sayis, wayis, 2. 39.
-eclis; -edys; redis, dedys, 4. 739; spvedis, bredis, 16. 67; stedis, wedis, 11. 466, 13. 29.
-eclis; scheldis,feldis, 8. 227.
-emnil; -emmyll, -ymmyll, -emhill, -ymhilV; assemmyl, tryramyl, 12. 227; assembill, trymbill, 2. 294.
-eris; -erys; appeiris, maneris, 4. 725; archeris, hobleris, 11. 109, 13. 659; archeris, obleris, 17. 235; archeris, speris, 13. 57; baneris, maneris, 8. 229, 17. 341; baneris, speris, 11. 464, 13. 237; baneris, Coigneris, 15. 23, 35; efferis, mysteris, 12. 413; feris, steris, 12. 41; fleieria, chasseris, 3. 81; freris, mysteris, 17. 541; maneris, efferis, 17. 247; maneris, Coigneris, 14. 393; officeris, efferis, 1. 191; presoneris, maneris, 17. 891; prisoneris, efferis, 18. 505; speris, archeris, 14. 109; speris, efferis, 11. 27; teris, deris, 3. 519; vitte-leris, Coigneris, 14. 407.
-ery; mery, herbery, 18. 503.
-etis; planetis, settis, 4. 635.
-eved (miswritten -exede); hevede, reveved, 5. 11.
-exit; revit, levit, 13. 23.
-ifis; -iffis; -ifis, -ivis, -ivln; giffis, levys, 1. 227; lifis, driflis, 4. 147; wilis, lifis, 17. 515. (See -yeis.)
-ifis; -ivln; giffis, drivin, 4. 735.
-ingis; thingis, r. v. amonestyngis, 4. 532, barganyngis, 1. 305, end-ingis, 9. 634, gabbingis, 4. 767. (See -ynis.)
-onis; -ones, -onys, -ownys; coniuraciones, exorcizaciones, 4. 749; palyeonis, fassownys, 17. 299; salmonys, menounys, 2. 576. (See -on, -ownis.)
-ordyt; concordyt, recordyt, 1. 71.
-ory; story, memory, 1. 13; victory, story, 1. 473, 2. 330.
-othir; othir, brothir, 13. 473, 16. 55.
-ounis; -ounys; paioulownys, toune is, 3. 239. (See -onis, -ownis.)
-ounis; paramouris, rebouris, 13. 485; traytouris, socouris, 3. 599. (See -owris.)
-ovir; covir, discovir, 4. 123.

-oynys (-oynyys) ; hawbyrschownys, penownys, 11. 131; pennownys, palōeownys, 12. 461; townys, palōeownys, 11. 137; townys, possessiownys, 16. 215. (See -onis, -oynys.)

-oynys; flowris, colowris, 16. 69. (See -oynys.)

-uljeit; bruljeit, tuljeit, 4. 151.

-unnin (-wnyn); begunnyn, wonnyn, 2. 189.

-usit (-usit); rusehit, refusit, 4. 145.

-ycbtis; wycbtis, mychtis, 2. 522.

-ydis; abydis, betydis, 8. 253.

-yngis; coueryngis, slyngis, 17. 343. (See -ingis.)

-yntis; dyntis, flyntis, 13. 35; dyntis, styntis, 13. 153.

-yvis (-ifis); knyvis, lyvis, 12. 579, 16. 455; lyvis, knyvis, 11. 500; lyvis, vifis, 12. 245. (See -ifis.)

B. RIMES THAT ARE PERHAPS DOUBLE RIMES.

(a) There is some doubt about -eys; machabeys, seys, 1. 465. See -ayis above, p. 631; and see -ais in List C below.

(b) Probably the trilled r in Robert accounts for the rime—Robert, speryt, 4. 13. Speryt is little more than sper', and the rime can hardly be called a double one.

(c) We find the odd rime gratit, laid (E. layit), 5. 387. It certainly seems to be imperfect, yet intentional.

C. RIMES THAT ARE PROBABLY SINGLE RIMES.

(a) -ais (-ayis); it would seem that -ayis can be shortened to -ais or -as. Exx. betraiss, alwayis, 5. 539; flyais, tais, 2. 145, 8. 405; sayis, Françoiss, 10. 746. See -ayis above in List A.

-is (-iss, -yis, -yiss); it would seem that -yis can be shortened to -is. Exx. iuperdyis, deniss, 10. 788; lyis, viss, 5. 77.

(b) We find the strange rime—macyss (i. e. maces), was, 13. 17. The explanation is that maces was but one syllable, as it will be if we pronounce it as if it were French. This is proved by the occurrence of the equivalent plural form mas in 11. 600. Of course this plural noun is quite a different word from mas (he makes), which latter is of frequent occurrence.

(c) We find the impossible rime—victory, cheuelry, 10. 516; see -ory in List A; p. 631. The explanation is that victory is a false reading for voidry, as explained in the note to the line.
D. INDEX TO SELECTED SINGLE RIMES.

(The following list comprises all that are of any particular interest, and includes all the remarkable variations of spelling. I have particularly noted words which would not rime in modern English, such as sa (so), stra (straw).

- a (ai, ay); alsua, bra (brae), 18. 445; bra, ma (make), 6. 147, 18. 373; bra, wnderta, 3. 100; ma, tha, 18. 349; sa, stra (straw), 3. 319; stra, ta, 6. 505; ta, swa, 18. 449. We also find thai (miswritten for tha, those) riming with twa, 6. 587, swa, 7. 211, ta, 10. 147; in each case the phrase is the same, viz. are of tha. So too—tha, alsua, 2. 235. We also find may for ma, riming with ta, 4. 642; may, sway (for ma, swa), 4. 570. And the rime—vay (way), ga (go), 10. 15.

- ace. See -as below.

- ad (aid, -ay). Had (had) rimes with: abaid, 2. 13; bad (bade), 2. 209; brad (broad), 3. 467; maid (made), 1. 397, 1. 481, 3. 543, 3. 675; rad (rode), 4. 27; stad (bestead), 3. 379; slayd (slid), 3. 701, 10. 558; waid (wade), 19. 759; vaid (vade), 9. 356. It is also written haid, r. w. abaid, 2. 308; maid, 1. 513; raid, 2. 175. Other rimes in -aid are: braid, raid (rode), 8. 167; maid, baid (made, abode), 3. 753; vnumaid, baid (unmade, abode), 4. 608.

- all; trawail, bataill, 1. 23. See also -ell.

- air. See -ar below.

- ais, -aiss. See -as below.

- at; valk (written for wak, awake), tak, 7. 179.

- an; than (then) r. w. ran, 5. 625; wan (won), 3. 447.

- anch, -ance; panch (paunch), dance, 9. 398.

- and; hand, fand (hand, found), 6. 447; fand, strikand (found, striking), 6. 237; stande (miswritten for stand), Yngland, 13. 635. N.B.—Present participles in -and are common at the end of a line.

- ar (-air). Ar (are) r. w. ansuar (answer), 4. 231; banar (banner), 7. 588; war (were), 1. 19, 135, 511, &c.; zar (yare), 2. 316. Also with mair (more), 3. 564; weillfair, 12. 155. It is also written air, r. w. mair (more), 4. 703; and are, r. w. fair, 5. 239.

Ar (ere) r. w. disclar (declare), 1. 75; written are, r. w. mare (more), 4. 568; written air, r. w. war (were), 12. 5; written ayr, r. w. forfayr, 1. 477.

Ar (oar) r. w. schipfar, 3. 691.

War (were) r. w. ar (are), 1. 19 (as above); rar (roar), 7. 326; squar (square), 3. 381; yhar (yare), 2. 346. We also find: ayquhar, sehar (everywhere, shore = did shear), 2. 91; far, thar (fore, there), 3. 345; mar, far (more, fare), 2. 302; thar, ansuar (there, answer), 2. 59.

-ar = -air; mar, schipfar (more, shipfure), 3. 685; war, rair (were,
INDEX III.—RIME-INDEX.

roar), 4. 422; war, bair (were, bore), 9. 174. And note: sair, wair (sore, were), 5. 147.

-ar = -er; debonar, after, 8. 381; grevousar, fer (grievouser, fur), 10. 636.

-ar = -are; bare, war (bare, were), 9. 442.

-air; fair, mair (fere, more), 5. 219; sair, wair (sore, were), 5. 147.

-are; spare, lasare (spar, leisure), 5. 380; where the final -e is not sounded. See also -er below.

-as (-ace, -ase, -ass, -ais, -aiss, -es). The characteristic word is was; this rhymes with cass (case), 1. 563, 2. 23, 3. 591; chass (chase), 3. 53; Douglas, 1. 29, 2. 488; Ferumbrace, 3. 437; grace, 3. 233; mais (makes), 17. 663; maiss, 2. 468; pass, 10. 85; passe (miswritten for pas or pass), 1. 627; percass, 3. 481; place, 3. 495; rase (race), 3. 697; solace, 3. 465; tais (takes), 13. 505. Written also wass, r. w. braiss (braces), 13. 337; chass, 13. 561; rass (raise), 3. 133; tais (takes), 17. 499; traiss (trace), 9. 580. It is also constantly written wecs (see -es below); and we find the rime: Douglas, wes, 11. 454.

-as = -ais = -ayis; Thomas, sais, 10. 352; Thomas, assayis, 14. 119.

-ass = -ais; chass, tais, 6. 435; Douglass, tais, 15. 330*; tais, cass, 12. 1; Thomass, sais, 17. 285.

-ais (-aiss); tais, fais (takes, foes), 15. 167; raisse, mais (rose, makes), 6. 233. And see -ayis in List A above, p. 631; also -es below.

-at (-ate); debat, fut-hat, 13. 453; gat, hat (gait, hot), 8. 65. Also bate, hate (boat, hot), 3. 417; debate, gate (gate), 4. 430; wrate, state, 1. 525; in all of which the final -e is not sounded. This is shewn also by -at = -ate; as in debate, wat, 2. 41; hate, stat (hot, state), 6. 305; state, howgat, 2. 155. We also find -at = -et, as in bonat, scat, 9. 505. See -et.

-ath (-aith); ath, scath (oath, scath), 9. 540; bath, skaith (both, scath), 1. 79; raith, bath (rath, both), 4. 45; wrath, skaith, 1. 201.

-aw; saw, law (saw, low), 10. 123; saw, raw (rowe), 8. 449.

-ays; galays, assays, 10. 35. Perhaps for galayis, assayis; see -ayis in List A above, p. 631.

-e (-ey, -ye); E, fle (eye, flee), 5. 623; he, lawte (high, loyalty), 1. 363; maieste, be, 1. 431.

-e = -ey; sle, hey (sly, high), 17. 607 (where hey is put for he); we, hey (wee, heigh!), 17. 677.

-e = -ye; lyce, fle (high, flee), 9. 85; lyce, te (high, tie), 15. 281. In both these cases lyce should have been written he, which is the usual spelling.

-ey; drece, dey (dree, die), 3. 321; drecy, hey (dree, high), 2. 382. These words should have been written dre, de, he, as usual.

-ed (-ede, -cid); dcd, red (death, rede), 1. 347; dcd, red (dead, rede), 3.
-ede; rede, dede (red, dead); 3. 139. Here the right spelling would have been red, ded.

-ed = -ede; ded, rede (death, rede), 1. 545, 1. 567; ded, rede (dead, red), 2. 360; sted, yede (steed, yede), 3. 111; stede, dreed (steed, dread), 3. 167.

-eid; breid, deid (breadth, deed), 1. 531; deid, leid (dead, lead, v.), 1. 37; deid, leid (death, lead, v.), 1. 269; deid, leid (deed, read), 2. 83; dreid, speid (dread, speed), 4. 506; heid, reid (head, rede), 2. 121; heid, zeed (heed, yede), 5. 573; zeed, zowtheid, 1. 333; zowtheid, deid, 5. 277.

-eid = -ed; dreid, ded (dread, death), 4. 590; dreid, ned (dread, need), 3. 315; zed, sted (yede, steed), 3. 127. Also ned, deid (need, dead), 2. 231.

-eil = -ele; beid, drede (bid, dread), 8. 123; dede, sted (dead, stead), 1. 609.

-eif (-eve); leif, geve (live, gave), 6. 157.

-eill, -ele, -eile. See -ell below.

-eir. See -er below.

-eis (-yis). We find seis, treis, 15. 275; treis, beis, 11. 298; cf. machabeys, seys, 1. 465. Perhaps these are really feminine rhymes; see List B above, p. 632. We find also the rime -eis, -yis; as in parteis, enemys, 10. 75; cf. List C (a), p. 632.

-eit. See -et below.

-ell (-eill, -ele, -eile, -ile).

-ell = -eill; castell, weill, 3. 359; cf. casteill, weill, 4. 101.

-ell = -ele; catell, ile, 4. 275.

-ell = -ale; trawell, tale, 4. 664; trawell, avale, 7. 45.

-ell = -eile; weile, castell, 3. 339. For weile, read well.

-ell = -ile; perell, quhile, 7. 193; Lile, perell, 5. 203. We may here read peril, quhill, and Lisle.

-ele = -eill; eschele, weill, 8. 221; fele, weill, 3. 201; 11. 49; wele, feill, 12. 587. Here the final -e is not sounded, and fele, wele should be feill, weill, as usual. Compare also weill, fardele, 3. 431; where fardele is for fardeill.

-er (-eir, -ere, -ar, -are, -eir). The word manner (manner) rhymes with: affer, 2. 181; apper, 1. 93; cher (cheer), 3. 299, 545; ner (near), 3. 5, 463; wer (were), 1. 3, 3. 535. The last rime links it with: comper (compare), 1. 403, auter (altar), 2. 43. Note also: auter, cher, 2. 33; ber (bear), danger, 4. 49; contrer, pautener, 1. 461; daunger, ner, 2. 45; daunger, fer (féir, i.e. whole), 3. 91; effer, deboner, 1. 381; her (here), daunger, 2. 434; sper, ber (spear, bear), 3. 459; squyer, courser, 19. 359.
-er = -eir (-eyr) ; ansuer, heir (here), 4. 247 ; heir, power, 12. 237 ;
myster, weir (were), 11. 452 ; heyr, planer, 1. 623.

-er = -ere ; spere, ther (spear, there), 5. 635. Hence the final -e in
-ere is not sounded in : bere, manere (bear, manner), 5. 339 ; mes-
syngere, ere, 4. 614 ; stere, manere, 4. 374. The same appears from
the writing of -eir instead of -er or -ere, as in : apeir, maneir, 4. 751 ;
cheir, weir (cheer, were), 9. 728 ; deir, weir (deer, were = doubt), 4.
256 ; heir, maneir, 4. 57 ; heyr, squyeir, 19. 17 ; inqueir, weir, 4. 221 ;
deir, weir, 11. 522 ; nei, laneir, 13. 601 ; neir, maneir, 4. 378 ;
speir, efeir, 5. 607 ; steir, weir (steer, were), 4. 630 ; weir, zeir
(were, year), 10. 820. With laneir cf. the spelling lasare, which see
under -are above, in the section beginning with -ar.

-a = -ar (-are) ; ansner, mar, 1. 437 ; ger, ledaer, 7. 19 ; fer, war (for,
ware, i. e. worse), 3. 301. Also: were, mare (were, more), 5. 337.
See -ar above.

-es (eess, -ais, -as, -ass, -ace). The characteristic word is ves, another
spelling of was. It rimes with cass, 13. 515 ; chass, 12. 87 ; face,
10. 478 ; mess (mass), 10. 816 ; plass (place), 12. 429 ; pess (peace),
10. 127, 10. 744, 13. 557 ; press, 2. 430, 3. 129. Also with words in
-es simply, such as: besynes, 2. 586 ; liklynes, 3. 87 ; sekenes, 9. 47 ;
suthfastnes, 1. 7. Also with words in -ais, such as: gas, 5. 569,
tais, 6. 221 ; where the words are badly spelt, and the right rimes
would be denoted by the spellings vas, gas ; vas, tas. Spelt vess, it
rimes with Thomas, 14. 145. Note also: richess, blithness, 12. 275 ;
seiknes, martymes (sickness, Martinmas), 9. 126. See -as.

-et (eit, -ete, -ete, -yte, -at). We find the simple rimes: falset (false-
hood), let, 1. 597, 5. 621 ; falset, set, 1. 377 ; gret, met (greeted), i.e.
wept (met), 3. 507 ; gret, wet (greet, i. e. weep, weet), 3. 517 ; let, for-
get (forgotten), 1. 15 ; met, het (met, hight), 9. 9 ; met, et (meat, cat),
7. 153, 165 ; reset, met, 10. 139 ; get, het (gate, hot), 4. 153.

-et = -ete ; get, mete, 3. 341 ; get, ete, 2. 580 ; het, wete, 11. 612 ;
mete (meat), get, 2. 572, 3. 471 ; retrete, bet, 15. 49 ; set, ete,
3. 479.

-et = -eit ; feit, met, 13. 31.

-et = -ete ; met, meyte (meat, meat), 3. 571.

-et = -eit ; fete, zeit (feet, yet), 3. 123.

-eite = -ete ; meyte, sete (meat, set), 3. 393. Here, as throughout, the
final -e is idle ; the better spelling would be met, set.

-et = -at. Perhaps only in the case of the word get (a gate), which
rimes with : debat, 5. 385 ; gat, 10. 229 ; therat, 17. 773, 777, 787 ;
therat, 10. 175. All confusion between these endings would be put
aside by simply reading get. Under -at, we have seen the rime ;
bonat, set, 9. 505. This would be remedied by reading bonet, which
is of course a better spelling. The confusion between -at and -et is,
accordingly, due to the scribe, not to the author.
-euch ("euch"); drouch, eucheuch, 4. 372; sleuch, ineuch, 1. 235. So also: ineuch, drouch, 1. 627.

-ew; trew, rew ("trow, ruc"), 2. 326. See -ow.

-seyne; seyne, bedeyne, 12. 569. Miswritten for seyn, bedeyn, or sen, beden; the final -e is idle.

-eyn (-en); queyn, weir ("choir, were"), 20. 293. See -er.

-ile. See -ell.

-in (-yn, -yne). We find: tharin, cowyn, 10. 672; cowyne, in, 17. 423; cowyne, tharin, 4. 111. Also: tharin, vyne, 15. 93; within, tyne, 1. 107; where the final -e is idle, but perhaps the vowel sound may have differed in length. Ordinary rimes in -yne (with silent -e) are: mankyne, syne ("mankind, sin"), 15. 249; syne, Brechyne, 9. 284; tyne, pyne, 1. 211.

Here take notice of a remarkable class of words in which the ending -yn or -yne (with silent -e) represents the modern -ing at the end of a verbal noun, which is always kept quite distinct from the present participle, ending (in Barbour) in -and. Examples are: arming, i. e. armour, written armynye, r. w. syne, 17. 263; commanding, i. e. commandment, written commandyne, r. w. syne, 1. 255; douting, i. e. doubt, fear, written douthe, r. w. vyne ("wine"), 14. 229; fighting, i. e. fight, written fechtyn, r. w. syne, 3. 241; and also written fichtyne, r. w. syne,

1 The term ‘verbal noun’ is by no means suitable for the earlier stages of our language; many who use it are thereby led to suppose that the word is not a true substantive, but a sort of semi-substantive, ‘neither fish nor flesh.’ If it be defined to mean a substantive that happens to be formed from a verb, the student may be better able to remember that it is a real and true substantive. Hunting, when not a present participle, is just as truly a substantive as choice is. If it be said that hunting is derived from a verb—why, so is choice.

But let me add here, to guard against mistake, that the old ‘verbal noun,’ as thus defined, has in course of time changed its character. By the omission of the preposition of in expressions like ‘choosing of houses,’ we have given the substantive a real verbal or gerundial power. There was a time when the expression ‘choosing of houses’ would have sounded as ridiculous as ‘choice houses,’ whereas it is now so familiar a phrase that every one understands it, though few can explain or parse it. The account in Max Müller’s Lectures (6th ed, ii. 15—22) is incorrect; see Morris’s Historical Outlines of English Accidence, ed. 1872, pp. 177—179. Let the student remember that the whole question is one of chronology. What may be called a verbal substantive now was in the 13th century a pure substantive and nothing more. Let those who doubt this examine our Early Texts. The earliest example given by Mätzner of this omission of the preposition of is in a passage from the English version of Maundeville’s Travels. If any one can tell us of an earlier instance, it would be worth making a note of. See my remarks in the Preface to Havelok, p. xliii. The expression ‘romanz-reding’ (i. e. romance-reading) in Havelok, l. 2327, is a mere compound substantive like ‘sword-play’ or ‘bloodshed.’ It may be remembered, by the way, that the last expression is expressed by ‘shedding of blood’ as late as in the Authorised Version of the Bible,
4. 240; happening, i. e. a thing that happens, a result, written hapynge, r. w. tyne, 12. 373; hunting, i. e. the chase, written hontyne, r. w. syne, 4. 512; healing, i. e. the process of recovery, written helynge, r. w. syne, 15. 83; meddilng, i. e. a mixture, written mellyne, r. w. vyne (wine), 5. 405; resting, i. e. repose, written restyne, r. w. Lyne, 9. 682; 'tranointing,' i. e. circumventing, written tranontyne, r. w. tyne, 19. 693; welcomyng, i. e. welcome, written welcummyne, r. w. syne, 19. 793. We find also: -yne == -yn; as: Brechyne, leding, 9. 120. And we also find welcomyng written welcummyng, r. w. king, 19. 807. This suggests that the sound of final -ng did not much differ from that of -n, even in a word like king.

-ir (-ir); mystir, baneir, 11. 346. See -er.

-is (-is, -yss, -ys); Here -is == -iss; the word is rimes with: Iuper-
diss (jeopardies), 19. 631; viss (to certify), 4. 478. Also -is == -ys; the same word is r. w. wyss (wise, i. e. way), 2. 336.

-iss == -ys; febliss, enmyss, 14. 349.

-iss == -ys; lysis, wiss (lies, wise == way), 2. 548.

-it (-it, -yt). We find: discumfite, myt (mite), 12. 187. Of course the -e in discumfite is superfluous; the word occurs very often, and is usually written discumfit. Compare: discumfyt, myt, 3. 197.

-o; to, scho (to, she), 4. 759.

-octh; brocht, mocht (brought, might), 1. 297.

-on (-one, -own, -oone, -oyne). We find -on == -one; nation, sollone (for felon), 1. 193. Words in -one have long o, and silent -e; sone, done (soon, done), 2. 452, 3. 623. Perhaps the vowel comes near to u in sone, wone (son, wont), 3. 67, 4. 245.

-one == -oone; done, fortoun, 4. 648.

-one == -oyne; done, soyne (done, soon), 11. 384; quonoyne, done, 15. 363; soyn, done, 4. 179.

-own == -oyne; fortoune, soynye, 15. 411.

-or; mor, befor, 10. 199. This is curious, because more is generally written 'mar' or 'mair'; see -ar.

-ord (-orde, -urde); worde, Herfurde, 13. 671; where the final -e is idle.

-orn (-orne, -urne); turne, soiorne, 9. 368; better written torn, soiorn.

-os (-oss); purpos, choss (purpose, choice), 3. 263.

-oud. See -ud.

-ouk. See -uk.

-oun. See -on.

-ount; vmbestount, hount, 7. 398. The ou represents a long u.

-ow (-ow); trow, now, 4. 237; cf. trew, rew (trow, rue), 2. 326. The ow or ew represents a long u. See -ownt.

-ud (-ude, -oude); woude, stude (waded, stood), 9. 388; gude, woude,
INDEX III.—RIME-INDEX.  

17. 105. The final -e merely signifies that the vowel is long; the vowel intended is apparently long u.

-uk (-ouk, owk); tuk, quonk (quaked), 2. 364; wonk, touk (woke, took), 2. 552; owk, tuk (week, took), 15. 101. The vowel is long u.

-ur (-urr, -urr, -our); fur, mwr (fared, moor), 13. 551; pure, discure (poor, discover), 4. 606; succour, auentur, 7. 69. The vowel is long u.

-urne; see -orne.

-us (-ouss); Fergus, curageouss, 15. 193.

-ut (-ute, -vet); But, fute (Bute, foot), 3. 577; schute, mwt (shoot, mute = tell off), 13. 59.

-y (-ye); Mary, openly, 11. 632; berye, honorably, 13. 663; succudry, folye, 11. 11. The final -e is wholly idle; it is not even needed to indicate the length of the vowel.

-yd (-id, -yde); pryd, hyd (pride, hide), 4. 119; syde, prid, 12. 495. The y here denotes long i.

-yne; see -in above.

-yr (-yre); syr, martyr, 1. 283; fyre, schyre, 4. 618.

-ys (-is, -icc, -yss). We find the word is riming with pryss (prize), 1. 239; wyss (wise), 1. 265; tendiryns, 3. 533. The word wyss (wise) also rimes with: pryss (praise), 1. 21; price, 1. 369; serwice, 2. 173; serwice, 3. 663. See -is above.

E. INDEX TO REPEATED SYLLABLES.

It is well known that Old French poets considered it permissible to rime words that are really identical in spelling; if used in different senses. An excellent example of this occurs in Guillaume de Machau’s Dit de la Harpe (Bartsch’s Altfranzösische Chrystemathie, 408), which contains a large number of such rimes, as, e. g., harpent, arpent, point (not), point (a point), &c. Chaucer has similar rimes; see my edition of the Prioresses Tale, &c. (Clar. Press), Pref. pp. xix (note), lxv. Such rimes might conveniently be called repeats. The following is a list of such ‘repeats’ as I have observed in Barbour.

Her (to hear), her (here), 1. 445. Lorne (Lorn), lorne (lost), 10. 105. Met (met), meyte (meat), 3. 571. Se (sea), se (see), 3. 627. Thar (there), thar (there, but in the phrase ‘her and thar’), 9. 196. Viss (wise, adj.), viss (wise, sb.), 5. 513. Weir (doubt), weir (were), 16. 495, 499. Wer (war), wer (were), 16. 503*.

To the same class belong also the following: dome, thyrldome, l. 235; Reuurently, denotly, 11. 376; neir, maneir, 12. 105; maner, ner, 15. 347; tyne, tranontyne, 19. 693.
INDEX IV.
GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

EXPLANATION.

The references in this Glossary are alike available (1) for the present edition; (2) for Pinkerton's edition; and (3) for Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary. It is remarkable that Jamieson, after invariably referring to Pinkerton's division of the poem into twenty books, afterwards divided it, in his own edition, into fourteen books; thus introducing a fresh set of references of which he, however, made but little use. The advantage of keeping to Pinkerton's numbering of the lines is obvious.

The authorities for the text are these. C.—The Cambridge MS. (in St John's College library). This is imperfect at the beginning, but used for the text of the present edition from Book IV. l. 57 to the end. It is also occasionally noticed in the footnotes.

E.—The Edinburgh MS.; used for the text of this edition from the beginning to Book IV. l. 56. It is constantly cited in the footnotes; and the reader is requested to remark that every reading in the same to which no letter is appended, is also from the same MS. It seemed unnecessary to repeat the letter "E" in every case.

H.—Hart's printed edition of 1616; frequently cited in the footnotes.

A.—Anderson's printed edition of 1670; occasionally cited in the footnotes.

P.—Pinkerton's edition, 1790. Printed from MS. E., with a few mistakes, due to the difficulty experienced by the editor in reading the MS.

J.—Jamieson's edition, 1820. Also printed, with great care and accuracy, from MS. E. A particular account of the few errors in it will be found in Index VII. below.

I.—Innes's edition, Spalding Club, 1856. The spelling is the editor's own, and follows no MS. or edition. The text is due to a collation of MSS. C. and E.; very often the editor prefers the authority of the former.
ABBREVIATIONS, &c.

A few references are given to languages, cited in the usual manner; as O.F. for Old French, A.S. for Anglo-Saxon, and the like.

Besides the abbreviations s., adj., adv., for substantive, adjective, adverb, &c., the following are used in a special sense:—v., a verb in the infinitive mood; pr. s., present tense, 3rd person singular; pt. pl., present tense, 3rd person plural; pt. s., past tense, 3rd person singular; pt. pl., past tense, 3rd person plural. Other persons are denoted by 1 p. and 2 p. Also imp. is used for the imperative mood, and pp. for the past or passive participle. The numbers refer to the book and line. Thus "1. 367" means Book I. l. 367. Lines not in Pinkerton's edition are marked with an asterisk, as e. g., 7. 301*. Some of these additional lines appear in Jamieson's edition, but most of them are due to MS. C., with which Jamieson was unacquainted.

When a letter (as E. or H.) follows a reference, the word will, in general, be found in the footnotes rather than in the text. Thus, the spelling Abowyne (s. v. Abowin, prep.) is the spelling of MS. E. in Book X. l. 52, footnote.

The etymology of the words is chiefly given in cases of difficulty only. Many of the words in "The Bruce" exist in modern English, with but slight differences of spelling. Thus, it is sufficient to explain Abaid by "abode;" the etymology of abide being well-known.

The subjoined Glossarial Index is, of course, considerably less than a concordance; but a very large number of references are given, and care has been taken to include all words to which any interest is likely to be attached; so that most of the practical advantages of a concordance are obtained within a moderate compass. When a word recurs very often, it has not been considered necessary to insert all the references, but only a considerable number of them. Varieties of spelling are, in general, recorded, and in the case of verbs, every form is duly parsed. I can only hope that the result of what has involved considerable labour will be found to be sufficiently satisfactory.


Abaid, s. delay, 2. 308, 9. 600, 10. 222, 16. 692, 19. 607; Abad, 1. 142. Maik abade, i.e. wait, 6. 60. But abaid, without delay, 13. 387. See below.


Abak, adv. backwards, 16. 198*. A.S. onbacc.

Abandoune, v. refl. to give themselves up, 17. 642; to demean themselves boldly, 17. 393; pt. s. Abandonyt him, devoted himself,
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.


Abandone; at abandone, recklessly, 15. 59; in abandone, in loose order, 19. 335. Cf. F. à l’abandon, in disorder; en abandon, free to all.

Abandounly, adv. in disorder, disarray, 14. 433; boldly, recklessly, 16. 108. See Abundanly.

Abasing, s. cowardice, drawing back, timidity, dismay, 9. 68, 17. 322, 573; Abasying, 16. 566. See Abaysing.


Abandounly, adv. in loose order, in a disorderly manner, staggeringly, 8. 461; Abandounly, recklessly, boldly, 11. 629. See Abandounly.


Abaysyn, s. abasement, dismay, fear, 11. 250, 12. 44; Abaysing, 14. 62, 16. 617. See Abasing.

Abbay, s. abbey, 20. 599.

Abid, v. to wait for, 18. 65. See Abide.

Aboue, prep. over, above, 16. 581.

Aboun, prep. above, on the top of, 18. 454. See Abovin.

Aboundanit, pt. s. abounded, 13. 716, 744.

Aboundans, s. abundance, 10. 110.

Abovin, adv. above, 17. 367, 653; in a victorious condition, 5. 599; in a superior position, 9. 94. At thor abovin, having the upper hand, in the better case, 14. 204, 15. 56. See below.

Abovin, prep. above, 12. 38; Abovyn, 10. 31, 11. 617, 18. 463; Abowyne, 10. 52 (E.). See Aboue, Aboun, Abuf. A.S. ābūfan.

Absens, s. absence, 16. 594.

Abuf, adv. above, 12. 172. See Abovin.

Abys, v. to wait for, 15. 63; to remain, 12. 73; ger. Abyd, to wait for, 19. 325; pr. s. Abysis, awaits, 8. 253; pr. pl. 2 p. Abyd, ye expect, 12. 271. See Abid.

Accord, v. to agree, 1. 70; pt. pl. Accordyt, agreed, 1. 71 (footnote); pres. pt. Accordand, assenting, 20. 208*. F. accorder; from Lat. confer, the heart; not from chorda.

Accyntans, s. acquaintance, 18. 121.

Acquyt, pt. s. freed, 19. 237; 1 p. s. pr. we acquit, account ourselves free, 18. 74.

Ado, for at do, i.e. to do, 10. 349.


Aduersouris, s. pl. adversaries, 17. 736.

Afald, adj. onefold, only, single, 20. 618.

Affeeres, s. pl. demeanours, a reading in H. for Effer, 7. 126. See Effer, and see below.

Affeir, s. pomp, 20. 87; Affer, 2. 182; appearance, goodly array, 11. 242 (E.); appearance, 16. 27 (E.). See Effer.

Affeirys, pr. s. belongs, suits, is meet, behaves, 1. 162, 192, 11. 28 (E.), 11. 77 (E.), 17. 248. O.F. affect, it concerns, becomes, belongs (Cotgrave); evidently from Lat. affert, from Lat. affere.

Affermity, pp. confirmed, 4. 178; Affermaty, 20. 136, 150.

Affrait, pp. frightened, 9. 613. See Affrayit.

Affraitly, adv. in a frightened way, 6. 296. See Affrayitly.
Affrayit, pp. made afraid, dismayed. 2. 291, 6. 221; afraid, 19. 366, 591. See Affrait, Affray.
Affrayitly, adv. timidly, in terror, 6. 434, 17. 577. See Affrately.
Aforgayn, for Ay forgane, 16. 555 (E.).
Affrait, pp. intimidated, afraid, 16. 205. See Affrayit.
Aganis, prep. against, 7. 12, 14. 316; to meet, 14. 420; Aganys, against, 1. 573, 3. 233. A.S. on-gean, with suffix -es.
Air, s. heir, 4. 71, 12. 320, 19. 139, 20. 130.
Air, adv. ere, formerly, before, 12. 5, 13. 254, 16. 1, 18. 211. A.S. ér.
Air, pr. pl. are, 4. 704.
Alabast, s. alabaster, 20. 588.
Alane, alone; all him alone, alone by himself, 2. 146.
Alanerly, for Anerly, 10. 608 (II.). Alanerly is compounded of al (all) and anery, only, q.v.
Alkyn, of every kind, 1. 134, 191, 2. 558, 12. 197; alwyn rycht, right of every kind, 5. 233; all-kyn thynge, things of every kind, 16. 311; Alkynd, 13. 717, 17. 214.
All, adv. entirely, 1. 392.
Allane, alone, 3. 66.
Aller, gen. pl. of all; thar aller, of them all, 1. 137. A.S. cdra, gen. pl.
All-gat, adv. always, by all means, 12. 362. See Gat.
All-out, adv. utterly, altogether, 3. 312, 11. 201, 14. 274, 15. 146, 16. 589.
Allyne, a misprint in former editions for Alkyn, 1. 134 (footnote). See Alkyn.
All-thouc, conj. although, 10. 464.
All-veldand, adj. (lit. all-wielding), almighty, 5. 577, 6. 314.
All-wayis, adv. always, 2. 92.
Allye, s. pl. allies, 17. 319.
Als, as, 3. 684, 685 ; also, 1. 100. Als — as, as — as, 1. 161. A.S. calvesá.
Alser, for als ner, as near, 1. 54.
Alsons, adv. very soon, 5. 374; Alsoyn, as soon, 10. 368; Alsoyne, as soon, 10. 208; very soon, 10. 631, 11. 569. From als, as; and soyn, soon.
Alls-weill, as well, 1. 124.
Alst-tit, adv. as soon as possible, very quickly, 5. 80. Icel. tint, soon, from tít, time. See Tit.
Alsua, adv. also, 1. 399.
Alswith, adv. very soon, 7. 553; very quickly, 8. 153. From als, as; and M.E. swithe, quickly.
Alwaysis, adv. always, 6. 519, 7. 60.
Ammang, prep. amongst, 1. 281. See Emang.
Ammang, adv. amongst other things, i.e. every now and then, 3. 714.
Amenit, pp. mended, 12. 378, 20. 316.
Amcyssyt, pt. pl. calmed, moderated (?), 16. 134 (E.). (Doubtful.)
Ammonyss, v. to admonish, exhort, 8. 348 (E.). See Amonist.
Amonestyns, s. exhortation, 20. 412; Amonystyn, advice, 8. 292; pl. Amonestynis, lessons of advice, 4. 533.
INDEX IV.—Glossary to the Bruce.

Amonist, v. to exhort, advise, encourage, 8. 348. See Ammoniss.
Amorus, adj. amorous, 10. 291.
Amouris, s. love, 8. 498.
Amoviss, pr. s. moves, incites, 12. 299; Amowis, moves, 19. 94 (E.); Amowynt, pp. affected with emotion, 3. 524.
Ananaylt, pp. enamelled, 20. 305.
Anciente, s. ancientness, antiquity, length of time, 6. 252.
Ancistry, s. ancestry, 17. 238.
And, conj. if, 1. 4. 457. Merely a peculiar use of the common copulative conj. and; see Mätzner. Often shortened to an in later English.
Ande, conj. and, 9. 240.
Ane, indef. art. a, 1. 410, &c. Starkest of ane, strongest for one man, 4. 74. Intill ane, in one direction, right forward, 5. 24.
Aneding, for Aynding, 11. 615 (E.).
Anent, prep. adjoining; near, 1. 187; close to, 8. 124, 19. 512. A.S. on-efne, later on-en, afterwards corrupted to anent.
Anerly, adv. only, alone, 2. 58, 6. 132. 12. 249, 453; merely, 10. 608; all alone, 18. 279; in a lonely manner, alone, 7. 59; all anerly, quite alone, solely, 5. 281, 10. 705, 733, 17. 470. Cf. Icel. einsliga, singly.
Angelis, s. pl. angels, 12. 426; Angellis, 8. 234.
Angerit, pt. s. angered, 14. 322.
Angirly, adv. angrily, 8. 486; Angirly, 8. 321 (Footnote), 7. 611; Angrely, 11. 624; Angerly, 8. 144 (H.).
Angry, adj. unfavourable, adverse, 5. 70; afflicted, 3. 530; vexatious, 17. 24.
Angyr, affliction, 1. 235, 2. 519; Anger, 3. 517; s. as adj. distressing, grievous, 20. 490; pl. Angrys, afflictions, 3. 321.
Anis, adv. once, 6. 368. See Anys.
Ankyrs, s. pl. anchors, 3. 691.
Anoy, s. annoyance, harm, 8. 371; p.r. Anoyis, troubles, tribulations, hardships, 1. 304, 3. 380, 551, 4. 659.
Anoy, s. trouble; but an error for Not, q.v., 13. 173 (E.).
Anoyus, adj. annoying, vexations, 5. 249; dreadful, 8. 305; grievous, 20. 238.
Ansuar, s. answer, 2. 60, 19. 152; Answer, 8. 153.
Answering, s. answer, reply, 4. 235.
A-pane, adv. at a pinch, 9. 64, 89. See the note to 9. 64, p. 573.
Aparale, s. preparation, 17. 241; Aparale, apparel, 11. 81 (E.). See Apparail.
Apeir, v. to appear, 8. 156.
Apert, adj. open, bold, 10. 73, 20. 14; in apert, openly, 19. 217 (E.).
Apnyt, for Opnyt, 17. 136 (E.).
Apon, prep. upon, 1. 496, 508, 2. 74, 19. 526; against, 16. 615, 19. 441. Apon fer, on far, afar, 6. 87.
Apparaill, s. apparel, 17. 214; gear, 17. 259; Apparaill, furniture, 11. 118. See Apparal.
Apparalit, pp. apparelled, 9. 132.
Appar, v. to appear, be developed, 1. 93, 1. 232; pres. pt. Apperand, becoming developed, 1. 83; as adj. apparent, right (heir), 4. 71.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Appetyt, s. appetite, 3. 541.


Appurvaught, pp. provided, 9. 424.

Aquynt, pp. acquainted, 7. 138.

Ar, pr. pl. arc, 1. 1, 7. 39, 12. 229. See Be.

Ar, adv. formerly, in former times, before, 1. 19, 76, 12. 168; Are, ere, before, 4. 569. See Air.

Ar, s. an oar, 3. 576, 691; pl. Aris, oars, 3. 583.

Aray, s. array, order, 6. 413, 9. 8.

Arayande, pres. pt. arraying, 12. 19. See Arayit.


Arayinge, v. to arrange, 12. 36.

Arbitar, arbiter, umpire, rubric, p. 3.

Arbytre, arbitrament, decision, 1. 75.

Archaris, s. pl. archers, 9. 151.

Arest, s. arrest, stop, halt, stay, 7. 63, 8. 356, 12. 12, 17. 844, 19. 330; stop, stand, 14. 550 (E.).


Arettit, pp. charged, accused, 19. 20. Low Lat. arretrare, to summon, cite; IceI. rätta, to judge, condemn.


Arivwyng, s. arrival, 5. 122, 14. 86.

Armand, pres. pt. arming, 19. 579.

Armouris, s. pl. arms (defensive), armour, 10. 62 (E.), 10. 376, 11. 76.


Armys, s. pl. arms, 11. 189.


Arravis, s. pl. arrows, 6. 121.

Arrayit, pp. arrayed, 11. 229. See Arayit.

Arsoune, s. saddle-bow, bow of the saddle, 16. 131. Each saddle had two arsons, one in front and one behind. See HalIiwell. F. arçon, saddle-bow (Cotgrave). Oddly explained by 'buttocks' in Jamieson.

Aryotit, a reading in C. for Ryotit, 9. 500 (footnote).


Aspyne, s. long-boat, 17. 719 (E.). See Espyne.

Assailye, v. to assail, 3. 151; pt. s. Assailyeit, assaulted, 3. 75. See Assale, Assailye.

Assailerours, s. pl. assailants, 2. 541; Assailerours, 17. 392.

Assale, s. assault, 9. 350. See Assault.


Assalt, s. assault, 17. 474. See Assault.


Assay, s. assault, attack, 9. 604, 11. 261, 14. 26, 34, 15. 210, 17. 154;
essay, effort, 2. 371; trial, peril, hardship, 3. 246, 652, 4. 192; pl. Assyris, assaults, 14. 120; perils, 3. 270; Assays, assaults, attempts, 10. 36. *Vechis till assay, men on guard against assault, 10. 651.


Assege, s. siege, 17. 270, 20. 8; pl. Assegis, 20. 12.


Assemble, assembly, 1. 146; encounter, attack, combat, 8. 293, 9. 253, 12. 491.


Assemmyll, v. to assemble, 17. 341; to encounter, fight, 12. 267, 13. 64, 18. 101; Assemmyll on, to attack, 13. 7, 16. 90; pt. s. Assemmyllit, went to the attack, 13. 11; Assemblit, 13. 75. See Assembill.


Assenye, s. warcery, 2. 378. See the note, p. 553; and see Ensenye.

Assignit, pp. assigned, 11. 312, 17. 360.

Assiss, s. assize, sitting in judgement, trial, 19. 55.

Availl, v. to avail, be of use, 1. 336 (footnote), 9. 39.

Avald, lowered, 15. 134. F. avaler, to lower.

Avalze; in phr. avalze que valze, avail what may avail, whatever may be the result, 9. 147. Fr. vaille que vaille (Lat. valeat quantum valeat).

Avantage, s. advantage, 11. 288; at our avantage, with the advantage on our side, 6. 66; pl. Avantages, 6. 352.

Avaward, s. vanguard, 12. 179, 16. 57.

Avawarde, an error in C. for Vaward, i.e. vanguard, 8. 343 (footnote). The shorter form is demanded by the metre.

Avay, adv. away, 5. 33; mycht nocht away, could not get away, 18. 367; that vald away, they would get away, 16. 378; him behufit away, it behoved him to go away, 14. 108.


Aucht, 1 p. s. pt. I ought, 1. 432; 1 pl. we ought, 12. 171; pt. s. ought, 1. 68. See below; and see Awecht.

Aucht, pt. pl. possessed, 1. 45. A.S. ógan, to possess, owe; pt. t. ic átte, I possessed, I ought.

Auchtly, num. eighty, 18. 349.

Avenand, adj. well-proportioned, handsome, 17. 218. O.F. avenant, well-portioned, suitable; see remir, in Burguy. See Avenand.

Avent, v. to give air to, to cool, 12. 145. Lat. ventus, wind. See Avent.

Auentur, adventure, 1. 298; peril, 1. 605, 17. 312, 710.

Auenturns, adj. adventurous, dangerous to keep, perilous, 8. 497.

Averty, adj. prudent, 18. 439 (E.); Averty, well-advised, cautious, 8. 162. From Lat. advertere.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Awisyt, pt. s. advised, 2. 298.
Awmener, s. purse, 8. 490. O.F. auvœnsière, F. aumônière, a bag for alms.
Awncestry, ancestry, 1. 44.
Awntyr, s. adventure, hap, 19. 761 (E.).
Awter, s. altar, 2. 33, 44.
Awyn, adj. own, 3. 752; Awyne, 2. 121, 13. 487 (E.). A.S. ògen. See Awn.
Awysily, adv. advisedly, warily, 1. 302. See Avisé.
Awysit, pp. well advised, assured, certified, 1. 620. See Avisit.
Awysss, an error in E. for a wyss, i.e. a way, a wise, 3. 526 (footnote), 10. 542 (E.).
Ax, s. battle-axe, 12. 20, 52; pl. Axs, 3. 20.
Aynd, s. breath, 4. 199, 10. 610; in aynd, in breath, 6. 617. Icel. andi, ònd, breath; cf. Lat. anima.
Aynding, s. breathing, breath, 11. 615. See Aynd.
Ayndless, adj. breathless, 10. 609. See Aynd.
Ay-qhar, adv. lit. everywhere; hence, always, 2, 91, 4. 702, 12. 22, 19. 441.
Ayr, adv. formerly, before, 1. 477. See Air, Ar.
Ayr, s. heir, 1. 432; pl. Ayris, heirs, 5. 520. See Air.
Ayr, s. ear, 4. 630; pl. Ayris, 3. 573, 4. 374; on ayris, on their ears, at their ears, 3. 580. See Ar.
Bacheler, s. a novice in arms, 2. 406; Bachiller, 4. 72, 8. 495.

Backermaire, adv. more backward, a reading in II. for Hendirmar, 7. 599 (footnote).
Baid, s. delay, 3. 754, 4. 609, 6. 403, 7. 587, 10. 404, 18. 52. See Abaid.
Baid, pt. pl. abode for, awaited, 5. 113; waited, 12. 223; abode, 9. 413. A.S. bidan, to wait.
Baill, s. bale, blazing pile, 17. 619. A.S. béel, a blazing pile.
 Bailheys, s. pl. bailiffs, 1. 190.
Bair, adj. bare, 13. 501.
Baised, pt. pl. abased, overthrew (?), 4. 94 (footnote).
Bait, s. boat, 3. 408; Bate, 3. 417.
Bak, s. back, 10. 723; gaf the bak, turned their backs, fled, 16. 210*; 18. 323; bakkis gaf, 9. 269; tu the bak, to flee, 12. 338, 17. 124; cf. 12. 78, 17. 162.
Bald, adj. bold, 8. 116, 10. 112.
Band, s. bond, 1. 267, 4. 41.
Band, pt. pl. bound, secured, 10. 825.
Bandoun, in, phr. abandoned, 1. 244 (footnote). O.F. à bandon.
Baneour, s. a banner-bearer, 7. 588, 12. 220. See above.
Baner, s. banner, 7. 88, 17. 134; Baneir, 11. 347, 15. 419; pl. Baneris, 11. 464, 17. 553.
Baneris, s. pl. banners, probably standard-bearers, 15. 166. (Read baneours?) See above.
Banreutis, s. pl. bannerets, 11. 529.
Banys, s. pl. bones, 1. 386, 20. 575.
Banyst, pp. banished, 4. 522, 13. 498.
Bar, adj. bare, 10. 242, 19. 540.
Bar, *pl.* s. bore, 5. 627, 20. 133, 552; Bair, 5. 606; *pl.* pl. Bar, 11. 115, 12. 396; *down bar,* bore down, 14. 293; *bar them,* demeaned themselves, 14. 17; *bar on hand,* vehemently asserted, 1. 62.

Bar, s. a booth, 2. 233. Cf. the reading *baire* in Hart. A.S. *bár.*

Bar for, *an error in* E. *for Berrois,* 10. 708 (*footnote*).

Barblyt, *pp.* barbed, 8. 57. Cotgrave has *"Barbeté,* bearded; also, full of snags, snips, &c. *Flesche barbeté,* a bearded, or barbed arrow."


Bargane, *v.* to combat, fight, 8. 184, 9. 224.

Barganyng, *s.* fighting, 2. 191, 4. 593, 12. 253; *pl.* Barganyngis, combats, 1. 306.


Barnage, baronage, assembly of barons, nobility, 1. 41, 2. 185, 6. 186, 16. 3, 14. 256. O.F. *barnaige,* an assembly of barons.

Barnagis, *s.* *pl.* wrongly used for *Barnage,* 14. 256 (E.).

Barnè, *s.* barony, i.e. assembly of barons, 2. 50. (A disyllabic word.)

Baroune, baron, 11. 232; *pl.* Barownys, 1. 69, 3. 9, 555.

Barras, *s.* barrier, outwork, 4. 96, 17. 756. From O.F. *barres,* pl. of *barre,* a stake.


Basnet, *s.* helmet, 6. 304, 12. 21; *pl.* Basnetis, 8. 225, 11. 462, 12. 144. See below.

Bassynet, *s.* basnet, helmet, 11. 21 (E.); *pl.* Bassynettis, 8. 225 (E.), 11. 462 (E.), O.F. *bacinet,* a basin-shaped helmet, from *bacin,* a basin.

Bataill, battle, 1. 24, 105, 10. 822. *See* Battalhe.


Bath, *adj.* both, 1. 81, 6. 418, 9. 93, 10. 6.

Battailllyng, *s.* battle-array, 8. 47 (E.).

Battailllyt, *pp.* furnished with battlements, embattled, 2. 221; Battalit, 4. 134.

Battale, *s.* battalion, host, 11. 172; Battell, 18. 351; *in haill battale,* in a compact body, 6. 519; *pl.* Battalis, 11. 121, 12. 26; Battellis, 17. 559, 18. 350.

Battalhe, *s.* battle, 10. 725.

Battalyng, *s.* embattlement, 4. 136.

Battel-sted, *s.* battle-field, 15. 74.


Bawnyt, *pp.* enbamed, 20. 286 (E.); numbered 20. 294 in P. See above.


Be, 1 *p.* *s. pr.* subj. may be, am, 1. 615; *pl.* that we may be, 3. 657; v. 5. 300. *See* Ar, Beis, Beyn.

Be, *prep.* by, 1. 65, 218, 2. 230; past, 3. 577; *be then,* by then, by that time, 7. 236; *be that,* by that time, 10. 668. A.S. *be.*

Becummyne, *pp.* become, 15. 334.


Bedene, 2. 399, 15. 108 (E.). *See* Bedeyn.

Bedeyn, *adv.* forthwith, 5. 144, 8.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

346, 11. 265; Bedeyne, 12. 570, 15. 108. Cf. Dutch bij dien, by that.
Beforn, prep. before, 3. 136.
Beforn, adv. before, 10. 245.
Beforouth, adv. before, 19. 502 (E.).

Begouth, pt. s. began, 2. 393, 5. 9, 8. 308, 14. 198, 20. 76; pt. 16. 551, 17. 686. This is not the true form of the past tense, but an imitation of south, the pt. t. of connen (A.S. connan), to know.
Begunnyn, pp. begun, 2. 189; Begonnyn, 8. 7.
Behaldand, pres. pt. beholding, 8. 91.
Behuft, s. behoof, profit, 15. 517.
Beid, v. to bide, wait for (miswritten for bide), 8. 183.
Beiff, s. cow fit for killing, 18. 283.
Beir, v. to bear, carry, 4. 630; we beir us, we behave, 11. 275.
Beis, s. pl. bees, 11. 368.
Beis, pr. s. as fut. shall be, will be, 10. 576, 11. 299, 19. 300; imp. pl. be ye, 11. 562.
Bekand, pres. pt. baking, 19. 552.
Belawyt, pt. s. remained, continued, 13. 544 (E.).
Belif, adv. quickly, soon, 10. 238, 481; Beliff, 17. 30. A.S. be life, by (or with) life.
Bemys, s. pl. beams, 4. 704.
Bend, v. to set an engine for casting stones, 17. 682, 690; pt. s. Bendit, 17. 672.

Be-neth, adv. beneath, 10. 637; prep. 11. 286, 537.
Beneuth, for Beneuth, i. e. beneath, 10. 86 (E.).
Benisoun, s. blessing; 2. 131.
Benk, s. bench, 7. 238 (E.). See Bynk.
Berdlaw, adj. beardless, 11. 217.
Berfroiss, s. a tower, 10. 708. Originally, a sort of watch-tower. O.F. beffroi, berfrois, from O.H.G. berecrut, a watch-tower. Corrupted in modern English into belfry.
Berne, s. a barn, 4. 38.
Berynes, s. burial, 4. 334. A.S. byrignes, a burial (Bosworth).
Besaly, adv. busily, 9. 149, 10. 499, 17. 332; Besely, 8. 512.
Best, adj. sup. best, 4. 94; see note.
Best, s. beast, 18. 283 (E.).
Bestial, an error in C. for Vessell, 13. 448*.
Besyd, prep. beside, 11. 442.
Besynes, s. busy action, painstaking activity, 2. 587, 10. 514.
Bet, v. to beat, 13. 158, 15. 50.
Bet, pt. pl. mended, increased, 19. 497. A.S. betan, to better, mend, repair; from bôt, advantage.
Bet, a misreading for Let, 1. 254 (footnote).
Betane, pp. pursued, 3. 159. As tane is the pp. of take, so betane is the pp. of betake. The sense is shown in Ælfric's Colloquy (Thorpe's Analecta, p. 21), where ic betece wildeor translates insc-
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

quor feras. Jamieson suggests "surrounded," quite forgetting that jynun, to surround, is a weak verb.

Betnaucht, pt. s. handed over, delivered, 1. 610. See Betche.


Betreyss, v. to betray, 4. 23, 5. 529 (E.); Betraess, 5. 539, 14. 343; pp. Betresyt, 4. 17; Betrasyt, 4. 27. From O.F. trair (F. trahir); with prefix be-.

Betuix, prep. between, 3. 109, 118, 6. 211, 13. 337; Betuyx, 7. 159; Betwix, 1. 81. A.S. betwix.

Betyd, pr. pl. subj. may happen, 11. 224.

Bewte, s. beauty, 11. 479, 19. 397.

Beye, s. beam, 11. 190.

Beyn, pp. been, 1. 527, 5. 276, 12. 544, 15. 198, 16. 658; Beye, 13. 49, 19. 164. See Be.

Bibill, the bible, 1. 466.

Biddin, pp. bidden, 6. 91*, 19. 450.

Biddyng, s. command, 16. 312.


Bikkyr, v. to annoy by skirmishing, 16. 102, 19. 334. Welsh bier, a battle, skirmish. See Bykkyr.

Bikkyrring, s. skirmishing, 9. 343.

Blanyt, pt. pl. blamed, 12. 90.

Blasis, s. pl. blazes, 4. 129.

Blast, s. blast, 4. 142.


Blenkyt, pt. s. blinked, glanced, 8. 217; shone, 11. 190. Formed from the stem blink-, with suffix -nen, used in general to form verbs of a neuter or passive sense; cf. the Goth. suffix -nan.


Blesis, s. pl. blazes, flames, 4. 138; 4. 129 (footnote). See Blasis.


Blithar, adj. blither 16. 486. See above.


Blithlyer, adv. more blithely, 8. 457.

Blomyt, pt. s. bloomed (a bad reading for blenkyt), 11. 190 (E.).

Blude, s. blood, 5. 403, 9. 732.

Bludy, adj. bloody, 10. 682.

Blwmys, s. pl. blooms, flowers, 5. 10.

Blyth, adj. blithe, 1. 389. See Blith.

Bodword, s. a message, 15. 423. Lit. bode-word.

Bodyn, pp. bidden (to battle), challenged to fight, 7. 103. A.S. beódan, to bid, pp. boden.

Boist, s. noise, 4. 122 (footnote). See Bost.

Bollis, s. bushels, lit. bowls, i.e. bowlfuls, 3. 211. Wyntoun uses the same word in telling the same story.

Bolning, pres. pt. swelling, 3. 699 (footnote).

Bonat, s. bonnet, 9. 506.

Born, pp. borne, 11. 590.

Borwel, s. pledge, 1. 627; Borwel, 1. 628. A.S. borh, a pledge.

Bost, s. noise, brag, boast, arrogance, 4. 122; insolence, 9. 231. W. bost, a brag.

Bot, conj. but, 1. 261; unless, 3.
INDEX IV.—Glossary to the Bruce:

518; *adv. only, 1, 289, 15, 347; Bot and = as well as, 5, 595; Bot gif = unless, 10, 462, 16, 304, 17, 772.

Bot, *prep. without, 5, 91; besides, 18, 18.


Bounte, bounty, goodness, excellence, 1, 31; a deed of valour, 3, 132; welfare, 2, 48; bounty, 11, 88; valour, 12, 186, 16, 516, 17, 919, 18, 567.


Bow, 2 p. s. pr. subj. bow, bend; bow it = (either) bow to it, submit to it, (or else) incline it, i.e. give way, 9, 753. The sense is much the same.

Bow-draught, s. a bow-shot, arrow's flight, 7, 19, 8, 169, 9, 579; used as pl. 6, 58. Lit. bow-draught.

Bown, pp. prepared, ready, 5, 322, 19, 434; Bowne, 11, 65, 15, 9. See Bounce.


Bowndis, s. pl. bounds, borders, 10, 505.

Bowning, *a reading in H. for Lukand, 3, 579 (footnote). Bowning means 'making themselves ready'; the reading can hardly be right.

Bownte, s. bounty, goodness, 11, 178; valour, 7, 372. See Bounte.

Bowrdand, *pres. pl. jesting, 8, 383. See Bourding.

Bow-schote, s. a bowshot, 12, 33 (E. and H.). See Bowdraucht.

Boyis, s. pl. gyves, 10, 763. Lat. boia, O.Fr. bue, a fetter. See note to l. 680 of Vie de Seint Auban, ed. R. Atkinson.

Bra, s. brae, hill, steep bank, 3, 109, 4, 372, 6, 147, 18, 365, 446, 454, 463; pl. Braiss, 13, 337; Brayis, 6, 77.

Brad, *adj. broad, 3, 467. See Brad.

Bradar, *adj. comp. broader, 4, 128.

Braid, *adj. broad, 1, 336, 7, 109, 8, 57, 10, 266, 11, 122, 19, 313.

Brak, *pt. pl. broke, kept off, 4, 137; broke, 4, 414 (and see note to 4, 711); pt. pl. 12, 336.

Brand, s. sword, 5, 647, 8, 83, 87. Icel. brandr, a brand; also, a sword-blade.

Brandis, s. fire-brands, 17, 705. See above.


Bra-syd, hill-side, 3, 127. See above.

Brawle, v. to contend, strive, 1, 573; Brawil, to fall into confusion, 12, 131; *pres. pt. Brawland, wavering, 11, 131 (E.).

Brayis, s. pl. braes, banks, 6, 77. See Bra.

Bredis, *pr. pl. spread out, extend themselves, 16, 68. A.S. brédan, to extend, spread. [Not explained by Jamieson.]

Breid, s. breadth, 1, 531, 16, 383; on breid, in breadth, 12, 440, 19, 739. A.S. bredu, breadth.


Brest, pt. s. burst, 2, 352. A.S. brestan, brestan, to burst. See Brist, Brast.

Brethir, s. pl. brethren, 3, 93. See Broder.

Brightly, *adv. brightly, 12, 426. See Brycht.

Bridill, s. bridle, 11, 173. See Brydill.
Brig, s. bridge, 10. 86, 17. 923. See Bryg.
Brighouse, s. a bridge-house, 17. 409. Perhaps a toll-house.
Brist, pt. s. broke, burst, 8. 87, 12. 550, 15. 481. See Brest, Brast.
Bristing, s. bursting, breaking, 13. 155, 16. 153. See above.
Brocht, pl. s. brought, 11. 221; pp. 2. 197, 14. 451. See Brought.
Brodir, brother, 2. 19; Brodyr, 2. 22. See Brethir.
Broilgit, reading in E. for Bruilzeit, 4. 151 (footnote).
Brokyu, pp. broken, 12. 98.
Brought, pp. brought, 20. 194. See Brocht.
Bruilzeit, pl. s. broiled, scorched, 4. 151.
Brandis, s. pl. brands, burnt logs, 17. 705 (E.).
Brwk, v. enjoy, possess, 20. 132. See Bruk.
Brycht, adv. brightly, 8. 46. See Brightly.
Brydill, s. bridle, 2. 425. See Bridill.
Bryg, s. bridge, 15. 134; pl. Bryggis, 12. 397. See Brig.
Bryn, s. brim, edge of a lake, 14. 339.
Brynstone, s. brimstone, 17. 612.
Buk, book, 1. 33, 525.
Bule, s. bull, 18. 275 (E.).
Bundin, pp. bound, 5. 300, 10. 361; Bundyn, 7. 115.
Burchis, s. pl. boroughs, towns, 4. 213.
Burd, s. board, boarded roof, 4. 126; pl. Burdis, movable tables, 5. 388; Burdlis, 2. 96. To lay burdis down is to set aside the tables when the feast is over.
Burdomys, s. pl. club-bearers, fighters with maces (?), 17. 236 (E.). Cf. O.F. bohorder, to tilt. Jamieson suggests the above explanation; but the reading is, I think, corrupt.
Burgeonys, s. pl. shoots, buds, 5. 10.
Burgess, s. burgess, 16. 80, 17. 23, 326.
Burn, s. bourn, stream, 7. 39, 78.
Burne, v. to burn, 15. 438. See Bryn, Byrne.
Buschement, s. an ambush, 4. 414, 6. 415, 8. 442, 10. 204, 18. 299 (E.). Cf. O.F. embuschement, an ambus-cade.
Bushed, pp. set in ambush, 10. 204 (H.). Cf. O.F. embuscher, to set an ambush.
Busk, s. a bush, 7. 71, 13. 519. Low Lat. bosius, buscus.
But, prep. without, 1. 74, 115; 2. 179, 3. 66, 5. 50, 11. 278, 12. 266, 15. 415, 18. 513, &c.; besides, 10. 85. But persaving, without being seen, 17. 92.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

But, **adv.** however, 2. 438. (The reading is perhaps corrupt.)

Bwnte, s. goodness, 10. 294.

By, **prep.** near; **the by,** by thee, near thee, 7. 237; with reference to, 19. 685.

By, **adv.** beside, near, aside, 6. 633, 667; 13. 12.

By, **v.** to buy; **by sair,** pay dearly for, 18. 514; to ransom, 17. 336.

Bydding, s. bidding, order, 11. 279, 16. 112; **pl.** Byddings, commands, 12. 385.

Byg, **v.** to build, 5. 453. See Biggit.

Bykkir, **v.** to skirmish with, annoy, 9. 152; **pt. pl.** Bykkirit, 9. 154, 10. 811, 16. 104, 144. See Bikkr.

Bynk, s. bench, 7. 238. See Benk.

Byrd, **pt. s.** reflex. it behoved, 6. 316. Icel. *byrja* to behove; cf. svá *byrjaði* Christo að lísa, so it behoved Christ to suffer, Luke xxiv. 46.

Byrkis, s. **pl.** birch-trees, 16. 394.

Byrne, **v.** to burn, 17. 431 (E.); Byrne, 17. 525; **pres. pl.** Byrnand, 4. 619, 17. 442, 18. 553, 19. 662. See Bryn, Durne.

Byrnys, s. **pl.** birneys, i.e. breast-plates, 2. 352; Byrneiss, 12. 353. A.S. *byrne,* a corset, cuirass, coat-of-mail.

Byrth, s. birth, 6. 184.

Cald, **adj.** cold, 20. 76; Cauld, 3. 377.

Call, s. **v.** to drive, 10. 227; **pt. s.** Callit, drove, 10. 223; **hence,** Call all! *interj.* (meaning) drive on all, 10. 178, 231. Cf. Scottish ‘to caw a nail,’ i.e. to drive it. The use of the word is curious. I see no connection with Dan. *hage,* to lash; as suggested by Jamieson.

Callyt, **pt. s.** called, 1. 604, 16. 671; **pt. pl.** Callit, 13. 466, 16. 343; **pp.** Callit, 10. 456, 13. 695, 17. 586.

Campioun, s. champion, hero, 15. 60.

Can, **pt. s.** did (auxiliary), 1. 330, 3. 27, 15. 136; **pt. pl.** did, 12. 66, 15. 4. This use is common; cf. Chaucer’s use of *gan.*

 Cant, **adj.** brisk, 8. 280. Cf. modern Scottish *canty,* brisk, lively. The word occurs in Minot’s Poems; see Gloss. to Specimens of English, ed. Morris and Skeat.

Capitale, **adj.** capital, i.e. deadly, 3. 2.

Capitane, s. captain, 6. 431, 8. 452 15. 112; **pt. pl.** Capitaneys, 11. 520.

Capitole, Capitol, 1. 543.

Car, s. grief, sorrow (lit. care), 20. 586.

Carbuncle, an error for Qwyrbolle, q. v., 12. 22 (II.).

Cariage, s. baggage, 11. 238. A common use of the word. It occurs in our Bible. See Caryage.

Cariage-men, s. **pl.** baggage-carriers, 8. 275.

Carionne, s. carcass, 20. 573; O.F. *caroïgne,* F. *charogne,* from Lat. *cura,* flesh.

Caril, s. churl, peasant, 19. 608; Carle, 10. 158. Icel. *karl,* a man; cf. A.S. *ceorl,* a churl.

Carpand, **pres. pl.** talking, 10. 397, 650. Apparently introduced from Lat. *carpere.*

Carpyng, s. speaking, relation, 1. 6; Carping, discourse, 1. 503, 4. 668, 10. 578; narrative, 17. 493. See above.

Cartis, s. **pl.** carts, 11. 114.

Cartit, **pp.** carted, carried, 15. 97.

Caryage, s. baggage, 15. 19. See Caryage.

Caryand, **pres. pl.** carrying, 19. 723; **pp.** Caryit, 16. 287, 15. 97 (E.).

Carying, s. carrying, 19. 726.

Cass, s. case, 1. 52, 20. 304; chance,
good hap, 2. 24; chance, 10. 694; fortune, 3. 638; circumstance, 1, 582, 6. 9, 7. 286. F. cas, Lat. casus.

Cassidoune, an error for Cristendone, 11. 471 (C.); footnote.

Cast, s. throw, overthrow, 14. 321.

Castell, s. castle, 11. 363; Castele, 11. 444.

Cataill, s. property, chattels, especially small moveables, 3. 733; Catele, cattle, 18. 249; Catell, wealth, 5. 275; Cattale, cattle, 6. 399.

Catiff, s. caitiff, wretch, 18. 514.

Cauld, s. cold, 3. 377, 383. See Cald.

Causè, s. causeway, 18. 140, 146 (E.). See Cawse.

Causs, cause, 1. 280, 9. 25; reason, 19. 558; causas has mad, i.e. have fought, 12. 122.

Cawse, s. causey, cause-way, 18. 128, 140; Cawsee, 18. 146. O.F. chaussée (F. chaussée), from Lat. via calciata; O.Fr. cauch, chauc, chalk; Lat. calx. The Eng. causeway is a modern corruption of M. E. causey.

Certanye, certainty, 7. 501, 11. 435.

Certis, adv. certainly, 1. 21.

Cess, v. to cease, 19. 2; pt. s. Cessit, 5. 115.

Chak-wachis, s. pl. check-watches, 10. 613. It probably means the men who came to relieve guard, or who went round to inspect the guards. Cf. "To chak the wach;" Wallace, viii. 817.

Challanss, s. challenge, 8. 82.

Challans, v. to accuse, arraign, 19. 60. O.F. chaloner, to accuse; Lat. calumniare.

Chalmer, s. a chamber, 5. 164, 287; Chalmur, 11. 118; chalmir-page, chamber-page, 5. 580. See Chamur, Chawmer.

Chamur, s. chamber, 2. 59; Chamyr, retiring-room, 2. 97. See above.

Chancell, s. the chancel, 5. 348; Chanser, 5. 356, 366.


Chans, s. chance, 4. 396; Chanss, 20. 58.

Chaplet, s. chaplet, garland, crown, 11. 546.

Chaptoir of mytoun, i. e. chapter of Mitton, 17. 587.

Chapyt, pp. escaped; chapyt was, had escaped, 2. 24.

Char, a misprint in some editions for Thar, 8. 257 (footnote); 12. 300 (footnote). See Thar.

Char, for Charre, q. v., 11. 123 (E.). The reading char is wrong.

Charge, business, 1. 141.

Chargeand, pres. pt. overwhelming, full, profuse, 16. 458. See below.


Charre, s. array of chariots or waggons, 11. 123. The word is disyllabic—char-rè. Cf. modern F. charroi, a baggage-train.

Chas, s. chase, 7. 81; Chass, 7. 81, 9. 529.


Chassand, pres. pt. chasing, 7. 88, 20. 433. See above.

Chassaris, s. pl. chasers, pursuers,
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

3. 52, 6. 439, 20. 439; Chasseris, 3. 82; Chaseris, 7. 91.

Chassion, s. chasing, chase, 7. 83.


Chawmer, s. chamber, 15. 164 (E.). See Chalmir, Chamur.

Chaynge, s. exchange, 19. 379.

Cheik, s. cheek, 6. 627.

Cheir, s. cheer, hospitality, 9. 728; sary cheir, evil cheer, 19. 83. See Cher.

Cheiss, 1 p. s. pr. I choose, 13. 807. See Chess, Cheyss.

Chekys, s. pl. gate-posts, 10. 229.

Chemer, s. a loose gown, 16. 580 (E.), 16. 601; Chemeyr, 16. 580. See note to 16. 580, p. 600.

Chenzeis, s. pl. chains, 17. 623 (E.). See above, and see Cheyne.

Chenyie, s. chain, i.e. trace (of harness), 10. 233 (H.); pl. Chenyies, traces, 10. 180 (H.). See below.

Cher, s. cheer, look, mien, 2. 34, 11. 500; good cher, good cheer, good entertainment, 2. 6; enill cher, great sorrow (outwardly shown), 13. 479. See Cheir.

Cheryte, charity, 1. 418; per cherite, for charity, 7. 537.


Chenelrous, adj. chivalrous, brave, 9. 536; Cheucluss, 11. 167, 19. 102; Chewalrous, 9. 536 (E.).

Chenelry, s. a company of knights, body of cavalry, 4. 187, 6. 458, 7. 504. 14. 505; a feat of arms, brave deed, exploit, 6. 12, 9. 584; bravery, 9. 536. See Chewairy.

Chewalrusly, adj. chivalrously, valorously, 3. 83, 266. See Cheuelrous.

Chewalry, chivalry, 1. 25, 2. 214; a body of knights, cavalry, 2. 210, 224. See Cheuelry.

Cheuisance, s. provision, 3. 402. M. E. cheuisance, what is acquired; from O.F. chevir, to acquire, accomplish.

Chewiss, v. for Cheviss, i.e. to achieve, 7. 127 (E.). O.F. chevir, to achieve, acquire, accomplish.

Cheyff, chief, 1. 154. Hold in cheyff, hold in chief. “Tenere in capite, i.e. Tenere de Rege, omnium terrarum capite, was a tenure which held of the King immediately, as of his crown, were it by Knights service or sokeage.”—Blount’s Nomo-Lexicon.

Cheyne, s. chain, 17. 623. See Chenyie.

Cheyss, v. to choose, 1. 43. See Cheiss, Chess.

Chiffante, s. a chieftain, captain, 6. 317, 15. 387, 17. 562; pl. Chiffantae, 9. 521; Chiffantans, 2. 226.


Childir, s. pl. children, 15. 536, 17. 820.

Childroine, an error in C. for Schiltrum, 12. 429, 433 (footnotes); 15. 354*. See Schiltrum.

Childyne, s. childing, i.e. travail with child, 16. 274.

Choss, s. choice, 3. 264.


Chyftanys, s. pl. chieftains, 2. 226. See Chiffante.


Clam, pt. s. climbed, 6. 241, 9. 316, 10. 49, 602, 644; pl. 10. 63, 605, 633; Clambe, 18. 451 (H.).
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Cite, s. city, 3. 213, 14. 191.
Clame, s. claim, 20. 48.
Clamys, pr. s. claims, 2. 104; pt. s. subj. Clamyt, should claim, 13. 724. See Clemys.
Clap, s. noise, 10. 401.
Clath, s. cloth, 11. 153; pt. Clathis, 5. 388.
Clave, pt. s. close, 3. 138. See Claf.
Cled, pt. s. clad, clothed, 1. 357.
Cleur, adj. clear, 9. 588.
Cleirly, adv. clearly, 6. 100, 7. 352, 10. 591, 12. 184.
Cleket, s. cleft, holdfast, 10. 401; a trigger, catch, 17. 674. F. cliquet, a catch.
Clemys, pr. s. claims, desires, 1. 417. See Clamy.
Clene, adj. good, 11. 427.
Clengit, pt. pl. cleansed, i.e. cleared, 8. 92; emptied, 15. 508, 18. 213.
Clenery, adv. wholly, entirely, 11. 96, 95*; excellently, 6. 406. See Cleyn.
Cler, adj. clear, 11. 188.
Clergy, s. learning, 4. 689.
Clerkis, s. pl. clerks, learned men, 1. 249.
Clothing, s. clothing, clothes, 4. 398, 5. 394.
Cleue, an error in J. for Clene, 10. 124 (footnote), 10. 471 (footnote).
Clewch, s. a hollow, 16. 386.
Cleyn, adj. clear, empty, void, 13. 443; Cleyne, clean, fine, excellent, 11. 141. See Clene.
Cleyne, adj. entirely, 16. 462, 18. 239; cleyne and raw, wholly and to the bottom, 10. 124; see the note.
Climatis, s. pl. climates, 4. 701.
Club, s. a club, 19. 586.
Cummyn, pp. climbed, 10. 606; Clumbene, 10. 650 (E.). See Clym.
Clymbysng, v. climbing, ascent, 10. 505.
Coffeer, s. a coffer; a bad reading in E. for Awnener, 8. 490 (footnote).
Colè, s. a buffet, 7. 623. See the note.
Collaterale, adj. collateral, 1. 56.
Colowris, s. pl. colours, 16. 70.
Com, s. coming, approach, arrival, 16. 39, 10. 457, 18. 296; Come, 14. 400, 19. 7.
Combrowsse, adj. difficult to pass over, 10. 25 (E.).
Combryt, pp. encumbered, 11. 198 (E.); harassed, 15. 31 (E.); spelt Cumbrity, 15. 40 (E.).
Come, s. coming, 19. 7. See Com.
Comford, for Confortit, 11. 494 (E.).
Commandyne, commandment, order, 1. 256.
Communite, s. the commonalty, the commons, 20. 128*.
Commoun, adj. common, 20. 155; s. in phr. into commoun, in common, openly, 11. 484.
Commowyns, s. pl. commons, 2. 497, 501.
Commonly, adv. commonly, 7. 294, 11. 248; alike, 12. 304; openly, 17. 799; generally, 15. 160; together, 9. 623.
Comper, v. to compare, 1. 403.
Comperyng, comparison, 1. 261.
Compositor, arbiter in a dispute, umpire, 1. 88.
Compyling, s. compilation, 13. 699.
Conabill, adj. suitable, convenient,
INDEX IV.—Glossary to the Bruce.

Confortyt, pt. pl. agreed, 1. 71.

Coniunctione, s. conjunction, 4. 695.

Coniuracioyne, s. (1) conjunction, 4. 233; pl. Coniuraciones, 4. 749; (2) a conspiracy, 19. 6.

Conand, s. covenant, 1. 561. Contracted like the word above. See Cunnand.

Concordyt, pt. pl. agreed, 1. 71.

Conquered, pp. conquered, 10. 707; pp. 16. 325.

Conquest, v. to conquer, 16. 315.

Consaf, v. conceive, understand, take in, 4. 269.

Consaise, s. (1) council, 1. 603; Consal, 5. 181; Conseilt, 5. 480, 11. 270; (2) Consall, counsel, 7. 546, 11. 154; Consal, 9. 166, 19. 766.

Consalit, pt. s. advised, 13. 377, 17. 551; pt. 18. 64.

Consauit, pp. conceived, 20. 186. See Consaf.

Consentit, pt. s. consented, 10. 196; pp. agreed, 10. 820.

Conspy, v. to conspire, 1. 574.

Constabbill, s. constable, 6. 201, 8. 507.

Constillacioune, s. constellation, 4. 720.

Contenance, s. outward demeanour, look, show, 1. 392, 482, 3. 676; Contenans, look, 11. 507; Contenans, show, 16. 559; look, 7. 127; Contynans, 11. 219, 243, 249, 483. See Contynans, Countrynes.

Contenyng, s. (lit. containing), behaviour, demeanour, 7. 387, 10. 284, 14. 179; Contenyng, 11. 241.


Continit, pt. s. continued, 8. 68; Continuit, 19. 235.

Contrar, adj. contrary, 1. 241, 18. 265.


Contrer, s. contrarieness, persecution, 1. 461; in the contrer, on the contrary, 17. 57.

Contynynge, s. demeanour, 11. 241. See Contenyng.

Conueene, s. agreement, 3. 102 (footnote).

Conuicted, pp. convinced, 4. 302 (footnote).


Conweyit, for Convoyit, i. e. convoyed, attended, 13. 383 (E.). See Convoy.


Conwyn, s. agreement, 4. 111 (footnote); Conwayne, secret counsel, 5. 301 (E.). O.F. convenire, secret agreement; from Lat. convenire. Perhaps Conwyn; see Covyne.

Corny, s. pl. crops of corn, 18. 188.
See Chaucer, Monkes Tale, Group B, l. 3225.

Coss, s. body, 20. 192. F. corps.

Cost, s. coast, 16. 553; pl. Costis, coasts, 3. 579.

Cosynage, s. kin, kindred, relation-ship, 5. 135.

Cosyne, cousin, near relation, 12. 31, 17. 28; pl. Cosyngis, 8. 336, 11. 324.

Cot-armour, s. coat-armour, 18. 95; pl. Cot-armouris, coat-armours, armorial devices, 8. 231.


Coueryng, s. recovery, 9. 113.

Coueryngis, s. pl. coverings, 17. 343.

Countynans, s. demeanour, 11. 197; mien, 11. 500; be countynans, to all appearance, 11. 496; ill spelt Countenans, favour, 9. 12. See Contenance.

Coupillyt, pp. coupled, united, 4. 41.

Coursers, s. pl. coursers, horses, 11. 518.

Course, s. course, career, 18. 316; Cours, 9. 611.

Couth, pt. s. (1) could, 1. 464, 568, 20. 512; pl. 1. 82, 3. 431, 9. 38; pt. s. (2) as auxiliary, did, 3. 460, 20. 250; pl. 5. 97. See Can.

Covatiss, s. covetousness, 12. 298, 19. 2.

Cover, v. to cover, 4. 123.

Covyne, s. counsel, 13. 122; plan, power to contrive, 9. 77; plught, 13. 219; Coyng, plot, 9. 14. O.F. cornve, contrivance. See Covyn, and Conwyn (better Cowyn?).

Coward, adj. cowardly, 11. 508.

Cowardiss, cowardice, 6. 338.

Cowardly, s. cowardice, 1. 26, 7. 747 (E.). The right reading in the latter place is voidre. See Woidre.

Cowart (E.), adj. cowardly, 11. 244.

Cowartly, adv. in a cowardly manner, 3. 46.

Cowatouss, adj. covetous, 1. 195.

Cowert, s. a covert, hiding-place, 5. 557; into covert, in hiding, 6. 528.


Cowplyt, pp. coupled, associated (with), 1. 236. See Coupillyt.

Cowyne, s. counsel, 4. 610, 17. 423; agreement, 11. 230, 17. 27; plot, design, purpose, 3. 102, 4. 111, 7. 538; accord, 15. 343; skill, 13. 167; Cowyn, counsel, 10. 162, 673; accord, 5. 301. See Coyne.

Cowy, an error in J. for wy, 4. 217 (footnote). Not explained by Jamieson.

Coyne, s. corner, coign, 18. 304 (E.). See Cun3he.

Craft, s. skill, 4. 723.

Craftis, s. pl. handicrafts, 19. 176.

Craftyus, adj. crafty, ingenious, 10. 359 (C.).

Crag, s. crag, rock, 10. 560, 594; pl. Craggis, 10. 606, 13. 431; Craig, 10. 633 (H.).

Crakkis, s. pl. cracks, explosions; gynys for erakkis, engines for explosions, i.e. cannon, 17. 250; erakkis of ver, lit. cracks of war, i.e. cannon, 19. 399.

Crane, s. crane, engine, 17. 608 (E. and H.); Cran, 17. 620 (E.); Cranes, war-engines, 17. 245 (E.). See Cren.

Cranaus, pr. s. craves, asks, demands, 1. 334 (footnote).

Cren, s. a crane, war-engine, 17. 608, 620. See Crane, Trammys.

Cryt, pt. s. cried, 2. 383. See Cry.

Croie, s. cross, 3. 461.

Crooke-knet, for Cleket, or Cruchet, 10. 401 (H.). See Cleket, Cruchet.
Crookes, s. pl. for Crykus, cracks in the rock, 10. 602, 605 (H.).
Croune, s. crown (of thorns), 3. 460.
Crownit, pp. crowned, 20. 130*.
Cruchet, s. a crotchet, i.e. little hook, 10. 41 (E.). F. crochete, a hook. See Cruik.
Cruelly, adv. 14. 198.
Cruk, s. a crook, large hook, 10. 363. F. croc, a hook.
Cry, an error in editions for Ky, i.e. cows, 6. 405 (footnote).
Crykus, s. pl. creeks, crannies, crevices, 10. 602, 605. A.S. crevca, a creek.
Crystyndome (E.), Christendom, 11. 471.
Cuke, s. a cook, 5. 340.
Cultur, s. couler, 4. 113.
Cum, v. to come, 1. 585, 12. 230, 17. 637; Cum the, if ye come, 13. 365; pres. pt. Cumnand, coming, 2. 342, 5. 604, 6. 407, 7. 111; Cumande, 9. 244; Cumnand, 2. 290, 12. 16; pr. s. Cumis, 11. 22; Cumnys, 1. 584; pl. 11. 283. See Cummyn.
Cumbly, adj. comely, 11. 132 (E.).
Cummerit, pt. s. cumbered, hindered, embarrassed, 6. 141, 11. 299; routed, 6. 429; Cummerryt, embarrassed, 11. 298; Cummyrrit, 14. 298, 15. 31.
Cummyn, pp. come, descended, 1. 44; come, 2. 18, 3. 430, 7. 557, 16. 6; Cummyne, 17. 533, 20. 583. SeeCum.
Cummyrrit, pp. encumbered, harassed, 14. 298, 15. 31. See Cumberit.
Cummyrsum, adj. cumbersome, difficult to pass over, 13. 351. See Cumnross.
Cummys, pr. s. comes, 1. 584; pl. come, 11. 283. See Cum.
Cumnross, adj. cumbrous, difficult of access, 10. 25. See Cummyrsum.
Cunnand, s. a covenant, agreement, 3. 759, 4. 177, 10. 201, 11. 1, 15. 261. See Conand, Cumnand.
Cunnannes, s. cunning, skill, 3. 712.
Cuntre, s. country, 9. 302.
Cuntyrnans, s. face, demeanour, 9. 275. See Contenance, Countynans.
Cunjhe, s. a coign, corner, 18. 304, 315. From Lat. cuneus, a wedge, is F. coin, a wedge, corner; also F. coigne, O.F. coigne, coigne, now only used in the sense of a hatchet, but Roquefort gives—"Coignes, coins," i.e. corners.
Curage, courage, 6. 126.
Curageous, adj. courageous, 10. 275*.
Cured, pp. cured, 9. 233 (H.).
Curious, adj. curious, prying, 4. 687; painstaking, skilful, 10. 359; Curyss, skilful, 10. 531 (E.).
Curtalsy, adv. courteously, 1. 354, 2. 154, 13. 531
Curtass, adj. courteous, 8. 382, 9. 574; Curtaiis, 1. 362, 401.
Custumabily, adv. customarily, 15. 236.
Cwn, v. to know, 19. 182. A.S. cwnnan, to know.
Cwnder, s. covenant, 13. 542. See Cunnand.
Cyre, s. leather, 12. 22 (E.). See the note to the line.
Daill, s. dale, 19. 317.
Dang, pt. s. hit, struck, dealt
GLOSSARY pp.

DANGER, s. power to harm, 19. 709; but danger, without difficulty, 10. 196. See Danger.

Dansyng, s. dancing, 10. 438.

Dante, Dantee, s. dainty, great pleasure, joy, 8. 101, 16. 529; great respect, 20. 104; affection, 13. 475; honour, 20. 259; eagerness, 12. 159.

Dantit, pt. s. daunted, held in subjection, 4. 602; subdued, 15. 316.

Daunger, s. power to harm, 2. 435, 3. 43. See Danger.

Daw, of, out of day, i.e. out of life, 7. 132, 18. 156; pt. Dawis; dayn out of dawis, killed, 6. 650.


Dawntyit, pl. s. subdued, 4. 602 (footnote); Dawuntaryt, 15. 316 (E.). See Dantit.

Dawying, s. dawning, early dawn, 7. 318; Dawing, 17. 634.

Dayis, s. pl. days; to drif his dayis, to live on, 10. 699. See Daw.

Daynte, s. pleasure, delight, 3. 499, 505; 16. 673, 17. 10; kindness, 2. 163; in daynte, with much pleasure, 5. 141. See Dante.


Debaid, s. delay, a bad spelling of Abaid, 10. 222 (E.).

Debat, s. debate, strife, fight, combat, 1. 149, 2. 40, 10. 182, 11. 444, 17. 864, 18. 218, 19. 480; Debate, 4. 430, 8. 502. F. début, contest.

Debonarly, adv. courteously, 19. 126. See above.

Deboner, adj. debonair, of fair demeanour, 1. 362; Debonar, courteous, 10. 283, 20. 511; gentle, kind, 8. 381. F. débonnaire.


Dedeyneit him, pt. s. reflex. it designed him, i.e. he designed, 1. 376.

Dedis, s. pl. actions, 1. 375; Dedys, 3. 131. See Deid.

Defalt, s. lack, 14. 368, 19. 802; Defaut, want, scarcity, 2. 569, 3. 471; Defawt, 19. 802 (E.).

Defame, s. diffame, blame, disgrace, 19. 12.

Defaut, s. default, lack, want, 2. 569, 3. 471. See Defalt.

Defawtyt, pp. adjudged to be culpable, convicted of default, 1. 182.

Defandand, pres. pt. defending, 3. 42, 6. 240, 18. 196; pt. s. Defendit, 10. 710, 16. 491; pl. 11. 504, 12. 104, 17. 446; pp. 8. 188.

Defendouris, s. pl. defenders, 17. 394.

Defens, s. defence, 4. 144, 17. 366, 19. 569.

Defensouris, s. pl. defenders, 17. 745.

Defoulit, pt. s. may die, 18. 56; pp. Defoulit, defiled, 13. 31; Defoulit, 2. 359; Defoulit, 13. 184.

Degradit, pp. degraded, 1. 182 (footnote); Degradyt, 1. 175.


Deid, deed, action, 1. 302, 10. 333, 18. 439; mode of action, 16. 323; act, 5. 278; pl. Dedis, 1. 375; Dedys, 3. 131.

Deid, death, 1. 269. See Ded.

Deid, pp. dead, 1. 37. See De.

Deill, v. to deal (blows), 3. 32; to deal, 14. 486; to allot, 11. 50. A.S. délan. See Dele.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Deill, s. part; enirilk deill, wholly, 16, 326, 18. 250; nocht a deill, not a bit, 10. 625.

Deip, adj. deep, 8. 189, 10. 84, 11. 366. See Depe.

Deir, adj. dear, 4. 268, 6. 171.

Deir, s. pl. deer, 7. 497.


Delaying, s. delay, 15. 118.

Dele, v. to deal, 1. 376, 2. 329; pt. s. Delit, 15. 516; pl. Delit, divided, 17. 559. See Deill, Delt.

Delitabill, adj. delightful, pleasing, 1. 1. O.Fr. delitable.

Delinuer, adj. nimble, 3. 737; see 10. 61.

Delinuerit, pp. delivered, 9. 3, 18. 228.


Delt, pt. s. dealt, divided, 1. 535; pl. 18. 499; pp. 15. 169. See Dele.

Delyuer, adj. nimble, 10. 61. See Deliuer.

Delyuyerly, adv. quickly, nimibly, 2. 142, 3. 122, 7. 206, 10. 49. See Delinuerly.

Delyuuir, v. to deliver, 1. 469; pt. pl. Delyuerclyt, 1. 475.


Demuyng, s. judgment, decision, 1. 116, 4. 716.


Depe, s. the deep, the depths of the sea, 3. 711. See Deip.

Der, adj. dear, 2. 144. See Deir.

Der, v. to dare, hazard, 3. 382.

Deray, s. disorder, damage, 15. 453. O.F. desroi, deorro, disorder, harm, damage. See roi in Burguy.

Derençe, v. to decide by fighting, 9. 746. Chaucer has darreyne. O.F. derainier, to prove an accusation; deraine, a plea.

Derençe, s. an attack, conflict, 13. 325; pt. pl. Derençes, conflicts, 13. 324. See above.

Derff, adj. sturdy, bold, 18. 307. Icel. djárfr, bold, daring.

Deris, pr. s. harms, injures, 3. 520. A.S. devian, to harm.

Derrest, adj. dearest, 18. 283. See Der.


Descendand, pres. part. descending, 1. 61.

Descroyit, an error for Discrivit, i.e. described, 13. 185 (E.).

Despiteously, adv. cruelly, 13. 140*.

Destane, s. destiny, 5. 428.

Desynaiss, s. dizziness, swoon, 18. 133.

Det, debt, what is due, 1. 253; debt, 19. 209; pt. pl. Dettis, 1. 262.

Determinabilly, adv. determinately, 4. 677.

Determinatly, adv. certainly, 1. 129.

Deuillis, gen. devil's, 7. 23.
**INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Deuilry, s. diabolical agency</td>
<td>4. 690</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Devissent, s. device, way</td>
<td>at all devises, in every way, 4. 264, 11. 349; at their devises, according to their plan or wish, 10. 363.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Deweauty, adv. devoutly</td>
<td>11. 377</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dewour, s. duty</td>
<td>11. 430, 12. 587. F. devoir. See Dewour.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dewysouris, s. pl. arrangers</td>
<td>stewards, 20. 72.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dewill, the, i.e. the devil, an extraordinary error in E. for ilke dell, 9. 686 (footnote).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dewour, s. duty</td>
<td>11. 328. See Dewour.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dey, v. to die</td>
<td>1. 548, 3. 98; pt. s. Deyt, 1. 430, 2. 42. See De.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Did, pt. s. placed, put, threw</td>
<td>4. 117.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Digne, adj. worthy</td>
<td>20. 228</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dik thame, v. to entrench themselves</td>
<td>17. 271</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dinging, s. striking</td>
<td>but an error for Dinning, 13. 153 (H.).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Disclar, v. to declare, decide</td>
<td>1. 75.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discomfit, s. discomfiture, defeat</td>
<td>! rubric, p. 38.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discomford, s. lack of heart, discouragement</td>
<td>12. 368, 372. See Discomford.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discomfort, pt. s. discouraged</td>
<td>5. 206</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discomfortyt, for Discomfit</td>
<td>7. 605 (E.). See Discomfit.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dis-conford, s. discomfort, discouragement</td>
<td>3. 191. See Discomford.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dis-conforting, s. discouragement</td>
<td>3. 193</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discordit, pt. s. disagreed</td>
<td>17. 842</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discover, pp. discovered</td>
<td>19. 22, 473; shewn (thy plan), 17. 54; 2 p. s. pt. didst shew, 17. 53. See Discour.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discoverengis, s. pl. modes of finding out, manifestations, 1. 242.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discumfing, s. defeat</td>
<td>18. 190</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discumfisour, s. discomfiture</td>
<td>20. 527. See below.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discumfisour, s. defeat</td>
<td>13. 276, 19. 628.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Discure, v. to discover, make known</td>
<td>4. 607. See Discour.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Diseae, s. want of ease, disquiet, misery, 3. 563; Disse, discomfort, 5. 73.

Disheryss, v. to disinherit, 2. 107.

Disparit, pp. in despair, 4. 99; Disparit, 3. 195.


Dispanding, s. means of spending, i.e. money to spend, 8. 509.

Dispiss, v. to despise, 5. 50.

Dispitt, s. despite, injury, 10. 6.

Dispitfully, adv. angrily, 13. 70; with spite, mercilessly, 16. 632.

Dispitously, adv. angrily, spitefully, 2. 137, 11. 608 (E.); Dispitously, cruelly, severely, 1. 200, 3. 457; Dispitiously, cruelly, 19. 563; Dispitiwisly, angrily, 10. 656.

Dispitouss, adj. disdainful, cruel, spiteful, 1. 196.


Dispulżeit, pp. spoiled, stripped, 13. 501.

Disputacioun, disputation, argument, 1. 250.

Dispyt, v. to spite; pt. pl. Dispyttyt, spited, hated, readings in E., 5. 49, 50 (footnotes).

Dispyte, s. spite, 2. 455.


Dissat, s. deceit, 4. 247.

Disseuerit, pp. dissevered, parted, 20. 192.

Distans, s. distance, 7. 620.


Distrowbilling, s. disturbance, trouble, 5. 216.


Diswsyt (E.), pp. out of use, unaccustomed, 19. 183.

Disyly, adv. dizzyly, 2. 422.

Dittit, pp. stopped up, 6. 168. A.S. dyttan, to close up.


Do, v. to thrive, succeed, 2. 128. A.S. dyaean, to thrive, G. tugen; quite distinct from A.S. don, to do.

Dochtrys, s. pl. daughters, 1. 200.

Doggedly, an error in H. for doughtely, 10. 727, 13. 150.


Dois, an error in E. for Deis, 2. 340 (footnote).

Dome, s. doom, 1. 235; pl. Domys, dooms, judgments, 4. 713.

Done to ded, pp. slain, 1. 347. See Ded.

Dongin, pp. thrown, 17. 832 (E.). See Dyng, Doungyn.

Dosnyt, pp. dazed, stunned, 17. 721, 18. 126 (E.). Formed from the root das- (in Swed. dasa, to lie idle) with the suffix -na (Goth. -nan), used to form verbs of passive signification, so that dasona = to become stupefied. The same root appears in Eng. doze, and in dare, to lie idle, used by Chaucer. Cf. Icel. dasask, to grow exhausted.

Doubill, adj. double, 1. 5; Dowbill, 4. 236.
Doughty, _adj._ doughty, valiant, 1. 532, 2. 166, 11. 315.
Doughtely, _adv._ doughtily, 15. 319 (H.). See Doughtely.
Dougne, _adv._ down, 11. 576; _thair down_, down there, down below, 10. 647, 11. 300.
Dour, _adj._ hardy, bold, 10. 159, 170. Fr. _dur_.
Dout, _s._ fear, 3. 311, 12. 64, 17. 630, 19. 668; uncertainty, 14. 207.
Dout, _v._ to doubt, be in doubt, 4. 711; to fear, 8. 257; _pres._ pt. Doutand, fearing, 5. 31; _pt._ s. DOTIT, 9. 538; _pp._ Doutit, feared, 16. 235. F. _douter_.
Dowbill, _adj._ double, 4. 236. See Doubill.
Dowbylt, _pp._ doubled, 1. 307.
Dowchty, _adj._ doughty, 1. 538. See Dourchty.
Dowt, _s._ fear, 7. 357. See Dout.
Dowtit, _pp._ feared, dreaded, _in E._, 5. 507 (footnote). See Dout, _vb_.
Dowtyne, _s._ doubting, doubt, 14. 230.
Doyyn, _pp._ done, 6. 650; Doyne, 3. 281, 20. 464. See Do; and see Dawis.
Doysnyt, _pp._ stupefied, stunned, 18. 126. See Doysnyt.
Drafe, _pt._ s. _drove_, 5. 634. See Drif.
Dragoun; _to raiss dragoun_, to harry the country, 2. 205; see Note.
Draw, _v._ (1) to draw, eviscerate, 2. 455; _pt._ s. Drew, 2. 467; (2) Draw, _v._ to withdraw, 8. 59; _pp._ Drajyn, drawn, 4. 176, 17. 871, 19. 56; Drawyn, 19. 621; _imp._ _pl._ Drawis, draw ye, 4. 322.
Draw-brig, _s._ draw-bridge, 17. 757.

Dred, _v._ to hold out, endure, 1. 327, 4. 650, 7. 181, 18. 53; _pres._ _pt._ Dredand, enduring, 2. 494. A.S. _дрёган_, to endure, suffer.
Dred, _pt._ s. dreaded, 1. 293; _pt._ _pl._ 12. 74; _pp._ Dred, 15. 535; _pres._ _pt._ Dredand, fearing, 3. 671, 4. 417, 5. 188, 6. 300, 8. 69, 10. 480, 17. 514, 19. 598.
Dreding, _s._ dread, 4. 761.
Dreid, _gerund_, to be dreaded, 2. 272. See Dred.
Dreid, _s._ fear, 5. 313, 6. 410, 11. 412; _but_ _dredid_, without doubt, 4. 277; _withouten_ _dredid_, without doubt, 5. 579.
Drey, _adj._ sad, 20. 203.
Dress, _v._ to erect, 17. 608; to arrange, 10. 212; _refl._ to direct himself, make towards, 14. 217; _pt._ s. Dressit him, took his course, 16. 411; _pres._ _pt._ Dressand, setting (up), 17. 372. F. _dresser_, from Lat. _dirigere_, to direct.
Dressyt, _pt._ s. arrayed, 14. 263 (E.). See above.
Dreuch, _pt._ s. drew, 10. 781; _pl._ 4. 372; Drew, dragged, 19. 566; Dreuch, _pt._ s., drew, put, 1. 628.
Drey, _v._ to endure, hold out, 2. 382, 3. 305, 7. 181 (E.). See Dre.
Drif, _v._ to drive, 7. 66, 9. 534, 15. 335; to continue, 10. 609; Driff, 6. 247; to press, 20. 257; to pull, 10. 255; Drif furth, to continue to the end, 5. 428; _pp._ Drivin, 9. 633. See Drafe.
Driff, _an error in C._ for _Dress_, i.e. arrange, 10. 212.
Dronken, _pp._ drunk, 14. 231; Drunkyn, 19. 355.
Drouery, _s._ love, 8. 492, 498 (E.); Drowry, 8. 498; _per drouery_, with love-service, 8. 492. O.F. _druerie_, love, love-service; _drou_, a lover; cf. Irish _druith_, a harlot.
Drownyt, _pt._ _pl._ were drowned, 4. 448; Drownit, 16. 444; _pp._ Drownit, drowned, 13. 336;
Drownyt, 16. 665. A.S. drunonian, to sink.


Dryve, v. to drive on, continue, 1. 310; Dryve his verdís, pursue his destiny, 3. 390; Dryf, to drive, 10. 173; pp. Drywyn, driven, 9. 156 (E.). See Drif.

Duell, v. to dwell, 11. 403; pres. pt. Duelland, 16. 222, 19. 98; pt. s. Duelt, dwelt, remained, 2. 57, 15. 313, 18. 4. 434; Duellyt, dwelt, 1. 345.

Duelling, s. stopping, delay, halt, 3. 619, 4. 563, 10. 126 (E.), 12. 12, 14. 312; household, 4. 481; Duelling, country, 13. 544.

Duk, s. duke, 3. 77.

Duk-peris, s. pl. Douze Pairs, or Twelve Peers of France, 3. 440. See Note.

Dule, s. sorrow, grief, 19. 221, 20. 483, 496, 578, 536. F. ducil, mourning.

Dulfull, adj. doleful, 20. 246. See above.

Dure, s. door, 19. 656; Dur, 2. 61; pl. Durys, 12. 402.

Durst, pt. pl. durst, 12. 90.

Durwarth, gen. sing. of the doorward, of the gatekeeper, 3. 101. See the Note.

Dusche, s. a heavy fall, 17. 698; a crushing blow, 12. 55, 16. 130; pl. Duschis, severe blows, 13. 147. Cf. O.H.G. dzozan, to emit a dull sound (G. tosen); from the same root as A.S. poden, Eng. thud, Lat. tundere.

Duschit, pt. s. fell heavily, 17. 693; pp. 16. 165. See Dusche.

Duschit, a reading in C. for Ruschit, 6. 629 (footnote).

Duschit, pres. pt. falling with a crash, 17. 721 (H.); striking heavily, 13. 71 (H.). See above.

Dutchpeeres, s. pl. twelve peers, 3. 440 (footnote).

Dwngin, pp. struck, 17. 832. See Dyn, Doungyn.

Dycht, pp. arrayed, 11. 128 (E.H.); made ready, 3. 225; geth he dycht, he caused to be set in array, 2. 565. See Dicht.

Dyd, pt. s. did, 1. 463. See Do.

Dykeis, s. pl. trenches, 17. 276, 363, 503. See Dik.

Dyn, s. din, noise, 11. 555 (E.).

Dyner, s. dinner, 14. 188.

Dyng; v. to strike, 10. 618, 15. 480; to drive, 19. 336; to throw, 10. 410; Dyng on, to strike at, attack, 14. 439; pres. pt. Dyngand, striking blows, 16. 209*; pt. s. Dang, dealt blows, 2. 382; 8. 330; pt. Dang, 8. 337; pp. Dougin, through, 17. 832 (E.); Dwngin, struck, 17. 832. Icel. denva, to hammer. See also Dang, Doungyn.

Dynit, pt. pl. dined, 11. 381.

Dynnyt, pt. s. fell with a heavy sound, 16. 131. See Dyn.

Dynt, s. a blow, 2. 139, 3. 114, 12. 53; pl. Dytis, 2. 369, 8. 139, 17. 155.

Dysherys, pr. pl. disinherit, 2. 101.

Dyspitit, pt. pl. spitit, hated, injured, 4. 596.

Dyted, pt. s. set forth (as if Dychtit), 1. 526 (a misreading; see footnote).

E, s. eye, 5. 506*, 624, 7. 191; regard, 12. 306.

Ebbit, pt. s. ebbed; 17. 425; sank by the ebbing of the tide, 17. 421.

Ec, conj. eke, also, and, 1. 309. (It is almost certain that the scribe really meant to write and, but by a mistake of the moment substituted for it the Latin et. Note that the same symbol "&" was used to denote both and et.)

Effer, s. behaviour, 1. 361; de-
meanour, 7. 126, 8. 382; appearance, 11. 242; equipment, 10. 196; make, stature, 20. 515; Effere, business, 10. 303; array, 7. 30; Effer, demeanour, 5. 608; Effeir, appearance, 16. 27. This difficult word is also spelt Affeir, q. v., probably by confusion with the F. affaire, business; and probably when the word means 'business,' it is merely French. Jamieson hesitates about the etymology, but needlessly. It is clearly Icel. after, conduct; from at, and fera, to go.

Effer, pr. s. is fit, 18. 506; it behoves, is customary, 12. 413; it belongs, 11. 28, 77. A bad spelling of Affeir, q. v.

Effrait, pp. afraid, 13. 173.


Effraying, for Fraying, i. e. noise, 10. 653 (C.).

Effrayit, pp. afraid, terrified, frightened, 6. 631, 7. 610, 10. 674.

Effrayingly, adv. timidly, in a frightened manner, 5. 110, 13. 333, 17. 580; Effrayly, 7. 329.

Eft, adv. again, 6. 378.

Eftir, adv. afterwards, 1. 127, 170, 15. 186.

Eftir, prep. after, i. e. to find, 4. 616; after, 5. 511, 9. 405, 10. 589; according to, 1. 213, 15. 516; Eftir, as, according as, 5. 74; Eftyr, 1. 40; = to fetch, 2. 52.

Eftirward, adv. afterwards, 2. 48; Eftirward, 10. 753; Eftirwardis, 1. 588.

Eftremness, s. after-dish, second course, 16. 457 (E.). See the note.

Eftsonis, adv. soon after, again, 5. 68, 17. 396, 19. 290; Eftsonys, 2. 436.

Egging, s. urging, incitement, 4. 539.

Eggis, pr. s. incites to, 8. 123 (rubric).

Egirly, adv. eagerly, quickly, 6. 421, 427, 13. 27; Egirly, 6. 612, 16. 451, 17. 725.


Eirded, pp. buried, 10. 203 (rubric in H; footnote).

Eir-quhil, adv. erewhile, ere this, 19. 142.

Eisfull, adj. full of ease, favourable, pleasant, 5. 70.

Eiss, s. ease, 7. 302, 14. 454, 16. 332; at cies, at leisure, 15. 542.

Ek, v. to comfort, satisfy, 5. 291.

Ek, v. to eke, increase, 8. 290.

Ek, adv. also, 10. 652, 11. 471. A.S. ead

Elde, s. age, 17. 928. See Eild.

Eld-fadir, s. grandfather, 13. 694.

Ellers, s. pl. elders, forefathers, 1. 163, 2. 166; Eldrys, 3. 223.

Elimentis, an error in C. for Climatis, 4. 701 (footnote).

Ellis, adv. else, 6. 381.

Elys, s. pl. eels, 2. 577.


Embandownyt, pp. abandoned, 1. 244 (footnote).

Embrasit, pt. pl. embraced, seized, 8. 295.

Empriss, s. enterprise, daring, 10. 507 (E.), 16. 490. See Empris.


Embandownyt, pp. subjected, made subject, 1. 244. See Abandoun.

Enbuschement, s. an ambush, 6. 209, 8. 45, 10. 163, 18. 299, 19. 472.

Enchapin, for Eschaping, 7. 75 (C.).

Enchausyt, an error in editions for Enchaufyt, 2. 395 (footnote). See above.

Enchawyt, pp. chafed, heated, made furious, 2. 305.

Encheif, ger. to achieve, 1. 305 (footnote); Encheewe, v. 3. 294 (footnote); pt. s. Encheefed, 3. 3, 180 (footnote).

Enchesoun, s. occasion, reason, 1. 280, 4. 110; Enchesone, 1. 203; Enchesoun, reason, 1. 217; occasion, cause, 1. 487. O.F. enchaision, from Lat. acc. occasioinem. See enchaision in Roquefort.

Enclosité, pp. enclosed, 6. 242; shut up, 4. 219; shut in, 19. 710.

Enclynit, pt. s. inclined, 17. 855.

Enecely, adv. especially, 10. 287 (E.); where C. has Ythandly; also in 2. 138, 7. 555 (footnote). See Enkrelly.

End, v. to come to an end, to die, 11. 553.

Endentur, s. endenture, deed, 1. 565; pt. Endenturis, bonds, 1. 513.

Ending, s. end, i.e. death, 2. 197.

Endit, pt. s. made an end of, 17. 933.


Endlang, adv. straight forward, 19. 356; endlang furth, straight onward continually, 16. 548.

Endyt, pt. s. ended, 4. 35. See Endit.

Eenuch, adv. enough, 4. 373, 10. 780, 17. 545, 20. 337.

Enew, pl. adj. enough, 13. 496, 17. 404, 19. 310, 626. A.S. genóh, enough, pl. genóge; Grein, i. 438.

Enforsaly, adv. forcibly, 5. 324, 7. 576; Enforceyly, strongly, 13. 228 (E.); Enforcedly, 2. 314 (footnote).

Enforsit, pt. s. forced, raised loudly, 5. 335.

Enfoes, s. force, 17. 448.

Enfundeyng, s. 20. 75 (E.). See Fundying.


Engynis, s. pl. engines, 17. 245.

Engynour, s. engineer, 17. 434, 17. 468 (E.), 17. 663.

Enkrelly, adv. especially, particularly, carefully, 1. 92; 3. 529; Enkrelly, especially, 1. 301; extremely, 1. 425; Enkrelly, 10. 534 (E.). Cf. Icel. einkaveliga, especially; and the prefix einkar-, meaning specially, very; derived from ein, one. Jamieson derives it from F. en cœur!

Enlumyuyt, pp. illuminated, 20. 229 (E.).

Ennamyllyt, pp. enamelled, 20. 305 (E.).

Ennyrmar, an error in C. for Henndrmar, 7. 599 (footnote).

Enpriss, s. enterprise, 3. 276, 20. 243; price, 10. 507.

Ensample, example, 1. 119; Ensampli, 4. 238; Ensampell, example, story, 20. 563.

Enselyt, pt. s. sealed, 1. 612.

Ensençe, s. war-cry, 3. 27, 13. 267 (E.); Ensençhe, 5. 323; pl. Ensençheis, 13. 159, 19. 788. F. enseigne, a token.

Enspirit, pp. inspired, 4. 678.

Enssençe, s. warery, 2. 426. See Ensençe.

Entenceiounne, s. intention, 10. 527.

Entent, s. intent, desire, 1. 449, 3. 206; purpose, 9. 372, 10. 561, 11. 152.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Ententify, adj. attentive, 20. 615.
O.F. ententif, attentive; from Lat. intendeere.

Entently, adv. attentively, 1. 613, 6. 72. Corrupted from Ententiy.
See above.

Entently, adv. attentively, an error in E. for Ythandly, 3. 273, 288 (footnote).


Entre, s. entrance, 11. 446, 16. 380; pass, entry, 6. 362.

Entremass, s. course of delicacies, 16. 457. See the note.

Entremellys, s. pl. skirmishes, combats, 10. 145 (E.).

Entrry, v. to enter, 1. 623, 630. See Enterit.

Entyr, pp. interred, buried, 19. 224.

Enveremyt, a poor spelling in C. of Enveronyt, i.e. surrounded, 13. 380 (footnote); so also in 17. 638, 19. 536, 20. 445. See below.


Envvy, envy, 1. 47.

Eny, any, 10. 200.

Enymyss, s. pl. enemies, 6. 372, 8. 80.

Er, adv. before, 9. 542, 13. 2. See Eir.

Erar, adv. sooner, rather, 1. 458, 3. 266.

Erd, s. earth, ground, 2. 423, 3. 16, 4. 686, 5. 634, 6. 128, 9. 326, 12. 551, 15. 189, 19. 519; at erd, on the ground, 8. 301, 16. 157; laid at erd, overthrown, 4. 284.

Erding, s. burial, 4. 255, 19. 86; Erdyng, 4. 295. See below.


Ere, s. ear, 6. 627.

Ere, adv. formerly, 13. 84, 16. 486.

Erl, s. earl, 8. 400, 9. 15, 13. 401; Erle, 1. 67; gen. sing. Erlis, earl's, 9. 136; pl. Erlis, 2. 234; Erlis, 11. 162.

Ernsyclfully, adv. earnestly, seriously, 8. 144.

Eryness, s. fear, timidity, 2. 295. A.S. aeryg, timid, inert. The form argunes occurs in The Ayenbite of Inwynt, p. 32.

Eschap, v. to escape, 3. 618;
Eschap, 10. 81; pt. s. Eschapt, 7. 53, 9. 628, 20. 528; 2 p. s. pt. didst escape, 16. 298; pt. pl. 6. 450, 7. 86, 12. 153; pp. 7. 94, 8. 82, &c.; Eschapyt, 3. 634; eschapyt was, 2. 64.

Eschap, s. escape, 2. 65.


Eschelle, s. a squadron, 8. 221;
Escheill, 16. 401 (E.); Eschell, 12. 214 (E.); pl. Eschells, squadrons, ranks, 8. 218. O.F. eschele, a squadron (Burguy).


Escheve, s. a sally, 14. 94 (E.). See Ischow and Ysche.

Eschewys, s. pl. achievements, feats of arms, 20. 14 (E.).
Eseheyff, v. to achieve, 17. 43 (E.).
See Escheve.

Esit thame, pt. pl. refl. took their ease, 17. 797. See Esyt.

Espyne, s. a long-boat, 17. 719.
Icel. espingr, Swed. esping, a ship's boat.

Ess, s. ease, 1. 228; male ess, disease, 20. 73.

Essemblit, pp. assembled, 11. 395.

Est end, east end, 17. 187.


Etlyng, s. endeavour, 1. 587, 3. 260; Etling, aim, 1. 583 (where it seems as if stilling would be better for the rhythm); intention, 11. 22.
Icel. ætla, to intend.

Euerilk, every, 18. 250.

Euil, adj. evil, bad, 11. 485.

Euir, adv. ever, 1. 198, &c.

Euirilkane, every one, 1. 453, 5. 103, 15. 155.

Euirmar, adv. evermore, 1. 155, 7. 174.

Euyr, adv. ever, 2. 41, 526.

Evin, s. eye, 17. 335; vyn, 10. 372. See Ewyn.

Evin, adj. even, 6. 164.

Evin, adv. evenly, just, 19. 512; in a level position, 16. 651; just opposite, 17. 673; straight, 17. 692; Evyn, evenly, 11. 559.

Eviny, adv. evenly, 10. 228; Evynly, on equal terms, 7. 103.

Evynsang-time, s. vespertide, 17. 450.

Ewyn, s. evening, eventide, 1. 106, 19. 719; Ewin, 17. 63. See Evin.

Ewyn, adv. evenly, directly, 1. 61; even, 3. 136. See Evin.

Ewy, adv. ever, 3. 160.

Exorcizaciones, s. pl. exorcisations, exorcisings, 4. 750.

Extremyteis, s. pl. excesses, 6. 336.

Ey, s. eye; had ey, had regard, 6. 523. See E.

Eyn, s. uncle, 10. 305; Eyme, 13. 697. A.S. éám, an uncle. See Emys.

Eyn, s. pl. eyes, 1. 547; Eyt, 3. 526. See E.

Eyss, s. ease, 3. 362.

Eyte, pt. pl. ate, 2. 495; Eyt, 3. 539. See Et.

Eyth, adj. easy, 17. 454. A.S. céd, easy.

Fa, s. foe, 2. 208, 327, 462; 5. 86; Faa, 18. 228. A.S. fáh. See Fais.

Fabill, s. fable, an untrue story, 1. 2.

Fading, for Falding, i. e. falling, 13. 632 (E.).

Fadir, father, 1. 314; Fadyr, 1. 347; gen. sing. Fadyr, father's, 1. 291.

Fagaldis, s. pl. faggots, 17. 615 (E.); Fagattis, 17. 703.

Fail, s. fail, 12. 274. See Fale.

Failje, v. to fail, faint, give way, 2. 393; pr. s. Failżeis, 1. 582; Failžeys, 1. 371; pr. s. subj. Failje, 3. 297; Failje, 1. 231; pt. s. Failžeit, 3. 89; f. fete, lost his footing, 3. 123; pp. Failjeit, 2. 539. See Fale.

Failžeid, for Failžeis, i. e. fails, 4. 295 (footnote). See above.

Fair, s. fare, manner, 11. 256; journey, 4. 627, 15. 273; welfare, 16. 21.


Fais, s. pl. foes, 2. 504, 5. 42; gen. pl. foes', 2. 372. See Fa.

Falding, s. falling, downfall, reverse, 13. 682; 3. 289 (footnote). See below.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 671

Faldyn, pp. fallen, 11. 517. Cf. Dan. falle, to fall. See the note.
Fale, s. failing, 19. 510. See Faill.
Fall-brig, s. fall-bridge, drawbridge, 17. 419.
Fallow, s. fellow, comrade, 6. 608, 18. 40; pl. Fallowis, 7. 137, 13. 550. Icel. félagi.
Fallow, v. to follow, 7. 141; 12. 190, 192; pp. Fallowit, 16. 322. (Follow seems better.)
Falset, s. falsehood, 1. 377, 5. 622, 10. 286 (E.), 15. 122 (E. and H.); Falsat, 15. 122, 244; Falsade, 10. 286.
Falt, s. lack, defect, want, default, 6. 345, 9. 318.
Famen, s. pl. foemen, 6. 648, 16. 189. See Fæ.
Fanding, s. an attempt at finding out, attempt to discover, search, 4. 691. See Faynd.
Fane, adj. glad, 8. 112.
Fantiss, s. cowardice, faintness of heart, 12. 256; Fantyss, deceit, 17. 51. See Fayntice.
Far, v. to fare, go, proceed, 2. 303, 4. 100; Fare, 6. 394; ger. Fare, 16. 269; pr. pl. Far, go, journey, 3. 345; pp. Farn, fared, 4. 513, 13. 620; Farne, 3. 548, 17. 904 (E.); Faryne, 17. 904.
Far, s. fare, business, endeavour, 17. 400; good fare, good cheer, 19. 730; pomp, 20. 100; good fare, 16. 46.
Far, adv. fairly, kindly, 20. 512.
Farand, adj. handsome, well-looking, 2. 514; weill farrand, excellent, 11. 95.
Fardele, s. a bundle, 3. 432. O.F. fardel (not given by Burgyg, but certified by mod. F. farde), a bundle; cf. Ital. fardello, a bundle; Port. fardel, a truss, pack, Port. farda, a soldier's dress, uniform, livery.
Farer, adj. fairer, better (luck), 10. 77; better, 10. 199, 17. 837; superl. Farast, fairest, 11. 518.
Faring, s. management (of a ship), 17. 456 (E.).
Farlyit, pt. pl. wondered, 6. 323. Scot. farly, farly, a wonder; from A.S. fære-lice, sudden, lit. fear-like.
Farsis, pr. pl. stuff, 9. 398. F. fareir, to stuff.
Fassoun, s. fashion, i.e. make, build, 10. 278; pl. Fassownys, fashions, ways, 17. 300.
Fast, adv. diligently, 1. 42.
Fastar, faster, 13. 129.
Fasteryn even, Eve of the fast, i.e. Shrove Tuesday, 10. 372; Fastryn evyn, 10. 440. In Mark ix. 29, the Northumbrian version has fiestern, where the Wessex version has fiestene.
Faucht, pt. s. fought, 10. 687, 12. 352, 15. 373; pt. pl. 6. 637, 15. 489, 17. 144. And see Fawcht.
Faute, s. default, lack, 9. 318 (E.), 20. 384 (E.).
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Fawcht, pt. s. fought, 3. 20; pt. pl. 1. 468, 8. 307. See Faucht.

Fawt, s. fault, defect, lack, 3. 298. See Faute.

Fay, s. foe, enemy, 1. 429; pl. Fays, 1. 223; Fayis, 1. 453, 4. 3, 6. 169. See Fa.

Fay, s. fealty, faith, 13. 545, 14. 104, 15. 303; subjection, 13. 404; at a fay, lit. at one faith, i.e. owing fealty to the same lord, 19. 790. O.F. fei, faith.

Fayn, adv. gladly, eagerly, 8. 20, 9. 90; Fayne, 1. 11.

Fayn, adj. glad, 1. 502; Fayne, 17. 1.


Faynding, s. a tempting of Provid- ence, 3. 289. Jamieson explains it by "perhaps guile;" but cf. "ne fanda þu þines gode:" do not tempt thy God; Deut. vi. 16.

Fayntice, s. fainting, giving way, feeling discouragement, 3. 289. Jamieson translates it by "dis-simulation;" but see Piers Plowman, B. v. 5, where feynitice can only mean a feeling of faintness. And see Fau.tiss.

Fayr, adj. fair, good, 1. 286.

Fayris, pr. s.imps, it fares, it happens, 2. 500. See Far, v.

Fe, s. cattle, 10. 110. 15. 335; a fee, a fief, 13. 725. A.S. feoh, cattle, goods.

Febill, adj. feeble, weak, 16. 355.

Foble, pr. pl. grow feeble, faint, give way, 2. 384.


Feehand, pres. part. fetching, 3. 428.


Fechtaris, fighting men, 11. 106*.

Fechting, s. fighting, 4. 282, 9. 237; Fechtyn, 3. 241.

Fechting-sted, s. place of fighting, battle-ground, 15. 378, 16. 663.

Fee, s. cattle, property in cattle, 10. 215, 272; 13. 716; of fee, by fief, 11. 456. See Fe.

Feild, s. field, 12. 447; wan feild, gained ground, 2. 374.


Feill, v. to feel, be made aware, 11. 655; to experience, 12. 588.

Feir, adj. sound, unharmed, 15. 514; haild and feir, safe and sound, 6. 315, 17. 897, 18. 161. Icel. fierr, safe.

Feir, s. companion, 10. 385, 19. 553. A.S. geféa, a companion on the road.

Feit, s. pl. feet, 10. 380, 12. 553, 13. 31, 16. 185.

Feldis, s. pl. fields, 10. 186.

Fele, adj. many, 1. 294, 454; 2. 242, 3. 468, 7. 12, 10. 345, 11. 49, 16. 589; numerous, 1. 462. See Fell.


Fell, pt. s. belonged, 17. 176; be-fell, happened, 1. 170, 4. 125, 18. 564.

Fell, v. to fall, quell, 5. 651; pt. s. Fellit, fallen, 15. 185; pp. Fellit, fallen, 10. 654, 12. 524; Fellit to fete, felled under foot, 16. 232; pt. s. Fellyt, overthrew, 2. 139, 3. 18, 163.

Fell, adj. cruel, severe, wicked, grievous, 2. 193, 364; 15. 10, 153,
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 673

539*; 19.6, 20. 508. O.F. fel, cruel.
Fellely, adv. severely, 20. 152 (E.); fiercely, cruelly, 5. 350, 12. 84. See Felly.
Fellest, adj. sup. direst, severest, 15. 486.
Felloun, adj. cruel, wicked, 5. 102, 8. 454; Felloune, 4. 234, 15. 70, 16. 457. See Feloune.
Felly, adv. fiercely, 18. 455; cruelly, 13. 214, 15. 489; severely, 10. 479; extremely, 16. 217.
Fellyly, adv. a misreading in 3, 20 (footnote).
Felyn, for Felony, 10. 6 (E.).
Felloune, adj. cruel, fell, 1. 47, 429; 3. 103, 4. 6; Fellone, 1. 194. See Felloun.
Felounly, adv. cruelly, 3. 20; Felonly, 1. 215, 16. 631, 20. 513; Fellounly, 1. 315.
Felouny, s. cruelty, 1. 440; Felony, cruelty, fierceness, 4. 604, 6. 460; harm, injury, 10. 65.
Fend, an error for Faynd, i.e. tempt, 12. 364 (E.).
Fendis, s. pl. fiends, 4. 224.
Fenss, s. fence, defence, 20. 384.
Fencing, s. fainting, giving way, a reading in E. for Stinting, 9. 255.
Fenjeyng; s. feigning, deceit, 1. 74.
Fer, adj. far, 1. 32, 11. 422.
Fer, adv. far, 4. 22, 11. 544; much, 2. 271; be fer, by far, by a great deal, 3. 301, 10. 637; be ful fer, by very much, 12. 86; on fer, afar, 5. 618, 8. 73, 18. 85; fer by, far past, 10. 630.
Fer out, far out, i.e. very much; fer out the mair, very much the more, 6. 666.
Fer, adj. sound (in health), 9. 231; haie and fer, safe and sound, 3. 92. See Feir.

Ferd, pt. s. farred, went on, 4. 287, 16. 464. See Far.
Fere, s. a comrade, companion, 6. 470, 15. 63; pl. Feris, 6. 86*, 12. 41. See Feir.
Fer-furth, adv. far forward, 19. 376.
Ferlifull, adj. wondrous, wonderful, 12. 453, 13. 638.
Ferly, adj. wonderfully, 11. 113, 14. 245; thocht ferly, thought it strange, 2. 20.
Ferly, adv. wonderfully, 14. 322; very, 19. 70.
Ferm, adj. firm, 9. 755.
Fermly, adv. firmly, 20. 178.
Ferrer, adj. further, 19. 530 (E.), 19. 537.
Ferrest, adj. sup. furthest, 19. 530.
Ferryit, pp. farrowed; ferryit was, had farrowed, 17. 701.
Fersly, adv. fiercely, 15. 458.
Ferst, adv. first, 4. 127.
Feryt, was, i.e. had farrowed, 17. 701 (E.). See Ferryit.
Fesnyng, s. fastening, security, 20. 57. See Festnyng.
Fest, s. a feast, 17. 908; feasting, 19. 730.
Festnyng, s. fastening, 20. 57 (E.); fetter, 10. 763 (E. and H.); prison, 15. 309.
Fetonass, error in C. for Phitones, i.e. Pythoness, female diviner, 4. 753 (footnote). See Note.
Fetys, s. pl. fetters, 4. 15.
Fetysit, pp. fettered, 10. 763.
Few mænye, a small company, 18. 13.
Fewale, s. fuel, 11. 120.
Fewell, reading in E. for Fwaill, fuel, 4. 170 (footnote).
Fewte, s. fealty, service, 1. 427, 2. 459, 3. 757, 8. 19, 14. 101, 19. 67, 20. 129*.
Fey, adj. pl. dying, 15. 45. Icel. feigr, fated to die.
Feyd, v. to feed, 6. 489.
Feylle, v. to feel, experience, 1. 304.
Feyll, adj. many, 8. 117. See Felli.
Feynseyng, s. feigning, pretence, 1. 341.
Feys, s. pl. fiefs, 1. 58.
Feys, pr. s. fees, gives a fee to, suborns, 5. 485 (heading).
Feyt, s. pl. feet, 2. 359.
Ficht, v. to fight, 12. 195. See Fecht, Fycht.
Fichtyne, s. fighting, 4. 244.
Fiff, num. five, 17. 198, 19. 38; Fiffa, 5. 381.
Fiff-sum, five in all, 6. 149. Compare Thresum.
Fift, fifth, 6. 650, 17. 594.
Fill, s. fill, 11. 626. Haf their fill, have their fill, 11. 626.
Fire-galdis, s. pl. 17. 217 (H.).
Firth, s. frith (of Forth), 16. 542, 547.
Fischer, s. fisherman, 19. 648.
Flaggatis, s. pl. faggots, 17. 615, 617, 619. Written fagaldis in E.
Flaikes, s. pl. hurdles, 19. 742 (footnote).
Flail, a flail, 5. 318.
Flambisighand, pres. pt. flaunting (?), 11. 192 (H.).
Flang, pt. s. flung, 16. 651; pl. 17. 645; kicked (said of horses), 14. 69. See Fling.
Flatlyngis, adv. flat, 12. 59; Flatlynges, 17. 369; Flatlynys, 12. 59 (E.).
Flaw, pt. s. flew, 3. 115, 10. 626, 17. 684; pl. 13. 41.
Flawmand, pres. pt. blazing, flaming, (or perhaps) flattering, 11. 192, 467 (E.); Flawamand, 11. 467. Cf. O.Fr. flamer, to flame; it seems rather to be this French word than connected with Swed. dial. flomma, to pour down in a stream.
Fle, v. to flee, 8. 61; pres. pt. Pleand, fleeing, 6. 414, 7. 331, 9. 278, 18. 78; fugitives, 15. 337*.
Flearis, s. pl. fliers, fugitives, runaways, 3. 51, 6. 436; Fleieris, 3. 81.
Flechand, pres. part. cajoling, flattering, smingly deceitful, 5. 619. Cf. Du. cleijen, to flatter; G. flehen, to implore.
Flede, pp. fled, 13. 436.
Flesche, s. flesh, 11. 613.
Fletand, pres. part. floating, 3. 630.
Fleting, s. floating; hence, progress over the sea, 3. 588.
Fleying, s. flight, fleeing, 19. 459.
Fleyit, pp. scared, 16. 217. See flejen in Stratmann.
Flicht, s. flight, 15. 501.
Fling, v. to kick, 8. 323. See Flynig, Flang.
Florist, pp. flourished, decked, 16. 69.
Flote, s. a fleet, 3. 601; Flot, 3. 456, 5. 15, 15. 286; on flot, a-float, 14. 359. Icel. flót, a fleet. Cf. A.S. flóta, a ship.
Flour, flower, chief pick, best men, choice band, 7. 562, 14. 81, 15. 473.
Flour, s. flour, 8. 232.
Floussis, s. pl. streams, 13. 20 (E.).  
See Fluss.
Flure, s. floor, 5. 400.
Fluss, s. pool, 13. 20. See the note; and see Floussis.
Flycht, s. flight, 2. 267, 3. 77.  
See Flucht.
Flycht, a reading in editions for Stycht, 3. 658 (footnote).
Flying, v. to kick, 6. 143. See Fling, Fling.
Flying, s. kicking, 8. 324. See above.
Flyntis, s. pl. flints, 13. 36.
Flyt, v. to float, swim, 3. 420.
Folely, adv. foolishly, in C., 5. 350 (footnote).
Folk, s. folk; small folk, common people, 9. 261, 569; pl. Folkis, people, 13. 225 (rubric).
Followis, s. pl. fellows, companions, 5. 581. See Follow.
Foly, s. folly, 1. 221, 344; 3. 35; Folye, 11. 12.
For, prep. against, 14. 115.
For, conj. because, 2. 105, 503.
Forbare, pt. s. forborne, spared, 6. 152.
Forbeid, may He forbid, 12. 255.
Forbeft, pp. 17. 793. Either (1) rebuffed, from O.F. buffer, to puff out, to buffet; so explained by Sibbald, but very unlikely, as it makes the word a hybrid; or (2) "in a state of great trepidation" (Jamieson), from A.S. bhifan, to tremble; or rather (3) forced to retreat; cf. Icel. baugja, to push back, whence perhaps Sc. baucht, E. baffle.
Forby, adv. by; pas forby, pass by, 10. 345, 13. 739. Cf. Dan. forbi, past, by; over, at an end.
Fordid, pt. s. 'did for,' spoilt, destroyed, 5. 412, 9. 323; pp. Fordone, ended, 4. 206. N.B. In the first passage, J. prints sorrid, by mistake; in the second he has fordyld.
Forfalt, pp. forfeited, 13. 499; spelt Forfaut in E. Apparently a corruption of O.F. forfait, culpable. Lat. forisfactus, by confusion with default.
Forfayr, v. to perish, go to ruin, 1. 478; pr. s. subj. Forfure, should perish, come to naught, 10. 529. A.S. forfaran, to perish.
Forly, v. to violate, commit adultery with, 1. 199. A.S. forligan, to commit adultery.
Formast, adj. foremost, first, 6. 337.
Forouch, prep. before, 1. 163, 356, 603. See Forouth, Forow, Forowth, Forow.
Forouth, prep. before, in front of, 10. 602: Forowth. 3. 629. See Forouth, Forow, Forow, Forowth. This word is clearly the Swed. förut, before; Dan. forud, in advance. All the spellings of it in Barbour are more or less corrupt.
Foroutyn, prep. beside, 11. 238. See Forouten.

Forow, adv. beforehand, 1. 120. See Forrow, Forouth, Forrout, Forouch.

Forow, prep. before, 8. 201 (H.). See above.

For-owtyn, prep. without, 1. 96, 116, 289, 622. See Foroutyn.

Foray, s. foray, 2. 231, 16. 612.


Forrayours, s. pl. foragers, 3. 75. O.F. fourragier, a forager, pillager.

Forreouris, s. pl. foragers, 15. 353. See above.


Forrouth, adv. before, previously, 16. 504, 19. 395; forward, 7. 139; in the front, 14. 242, 16. 625; onward, 16. 96. See Forouth.

Forrow, adv. formerly, before, 4. 437. See Forouth, Forrout.

Forrow, prep. before, 5. 18. See Forow, Forouth.

Forsicht, s. foresight, 20. 314; Forsycht, 1. 460.

Forspokyn, pp. agreed upon, 1. 514, 630. 20. 55; promised, 20. 288.

Forss, s. force, 10. 784, 12. 524, 13. 254, 17. 396, 19. 633; Fors, might, 4. 132; ma na forss, make no account, 5. 85; naist forss, most especially, for the most part, 8. 11.

Forusk, pt. s. shrank from, avoided, 14. 315.

Forswuth, adv. verily, 9. 480, 17. 485.

For-swat, pp. covered with sweat, 7. 2.

For-swayt, for For-swat, 7. 2 (E.).

Forsye, adj. full of force, strong, 2. 242; Forsy, 11. 215, 15. 410.

For-thi, adv. and conj. therefore, 1. 464, 3. 33, 5. 539, 6. 573, 7. 554, 9. 486, 16. 569. A.S. forþi, on that account.

Forthimmar, adv. further, 7. 8; further on, 10. 297, 12. 113, 14. 100.

Forthward, adv. further, afterwards, 5. 426; forward, 16. 264.

Forthm, s. fortune, 3. 271.

Fortrassis, s. pl. fortresses, 10. 155.

Fortravalit, pp. overwearied by toil, 3. 326, 7. 176, 368.

Folvamderit, pp. greatly astonished, 6. 10.

Forzet, pp. forgotten, 1. 16.

Fothy, s. father, load, 10. 198 (E.). See Fudyr.

Foul, s. a bird, 7. 188.

Foul, adj. foul, 5. 404; bad, 9. 272.

Fouly, adv. foully, cowardly, 8. 110; disgracefully, 6. 156.

Found, v. to go, 10. 256. A.S. fundian, to tend to, go forward.

Foundyn, pp. found, 1. 60.

Fowlely, adv. cowardly, 9. 275. See above.

Fowly, adv. foully, 7. 615; cowardly, disgracefully, 9. 91, 15. 350.

Fox, s. fox, 19. 648.

Foysoune, s. plenty, abundance, great number, 17. 308, 18. 417, 19. 482; Foysoun, plenty, 15. 93 (E.). O.F. foison, plenty; from Lat. acc. fusionem. See Fusione.

Fra, prep. from, 1. 187, 439; (follows its case), 11. 422; conj. from the time that, 5. 56, 8. 1, 9. 110, 14. 56. Icel. frá, from; Eng. fro.

Frakly, adv. keenly, 7. 166. A.S. frac, free, bold; Icel. fræk, greedy.

Framing, an error for Fraying, noise, 10. 653 (H.).
GLOSSARY

Franchiss, s. freedom, 11. 268.
Franch-men, Frenchmen, 10. 749.
Fray, fear, terror, 15. 255. See Effray.
Fraying, s. clashing, 10. 653. O.Fr. freier, froier, Lat. friicare, to rub.
Frayit, pp. terrified; or rather, beset with terrors, 2. 47 (footnote). See Effray.
Fre, adj. free, 1. 246.
Fredome, freedom, 1. 225.
Frely, adj. noble, 3. 578. A.S. freolc, liberal, noble.
Fer, s. friar, 18. 300.
Freris, gen. pl. Friars'; i.e. the Greyfriars' church, 2. 33. See the note.
Freschly, adv. freshly, 11. 192, 13. 126.
Frest, s. delay, 2. 277, 7. 547. Icel. frest, delay; A.S. fyrst, an interval.
Freyast, adj. superl. freest, 1. 164.
Freynd, s. a friend, 4. 11.
Freyndsome, adj. friendly, 1. 88.
Friendfull, adj. friendly, 1. 88 (footnote).
Froglis, s. pl. frocks, 10. 375. F. froc. G. Douglas also has the spelling frog.
Frontly, adv. face to face, 16. 174. Cf. F. de front, in front; said of attacking an enemy. Both MSS. have this reading; the reading stoulyns in J. is wrong.
Frount, s. front, 17. 569.
Froytis, s. pl. fruits, 10. 191.
Frusch, s. rush, 17. 569 (E.); Frusche, rush, broken order, 14. 212, 542; a breaking, noise of weapons, 12. 545, 16. 160; crash, collision, 16. 626; charge, onset, 15. 478; a sudden breaking of the ranks, 13. 292. F. frosier.
Fruschand, pres. pt. battering, ramming with their heads noisily, 16. 161. F. frosier, to break.
Frusching, s. breaking, 12. 504. See Frusch.
Fruschit, pt. s. broke, 12. 57 (E.).
Fruschit, pp. an error for Ruschit, i.e. driven back, 12. 121 (E.).
Frutis, s. pl. fruits, 10. 191 (E.).
Fryst, adv. first, 1. 255, 542; 8. 9 (E.), 17. 53 (E.).
Fude, s. food, 10. 189.
Fudyr, s. a load, cart-load, 10. 198. Cf. A.S. fode, a mass, load.
Fule, s. a fool, 4. 222; gen. sing. Fulis, 1. 582; Fuly, 11. 21.
Fullely, adv. fully, 4. 264, 9. 579; Fulyly, completely, 2. 423.
Fulfill, v. to fulfil, 10. 64; pt. Fulfillit, filled full, 5. 46, 12. 423, 10. 294, 19. 105; performed, 5. 532; Fulylyt, 1. 400.
Fulyt, pp. fooled, 4. 222 (footnote).
Fundying, s. benumbment with cold, 20. 75; see the note. Jamieson's explanation, 'asthma,' is a bad guess, and wrong. The word is perhaps Celtic. Cf. Gaelic fountain, extreme cold, severity of weather.
Fundyn, pp. found, i.e. provided for, 1. 322; found, 9. 663, 10. 29, 16. 267, 18. 274, 20. 281, 482; Fundin, 6. 190, 7. 244, 10. 523.
Fur, pt. s. fared, 2. 507; fared, acted, did, 2. 503. See Pure.
Furd, s. ford, 6. 78; Furde, 8. 53, 15. 356; gen. Furdis, ford's, 6. 118.
Fure, pt. s. fared, 13. 653; pl. Fure, went on his way, 16. 288. See Fur, Far.
Furrit, pp. furred, 16. 421, 485.
Furth, adv. forth, 4. 121, 5. 247, 9. 362; hereafter, 1. 14; forward, 11.
GLOSSARY

Furthir, imp. s. 3 p. further, advance, 4. 627.

Furthwards, adv. forwards, 4. 488; Furthwarde, 16. 61, 17. 591; Furthward, 16. 73.

Fusionne, s. plenty, abundance, 9. 439, 13. 71, 14. 228, 15. 93, 16. 167, 17. 175; numbers, quantity, 16. 588. See Foysoun.

Fusoun, for Fusionne, 9. 439 (E.).

Fute, foot, 1. 103, 3. 118, 6. 591; on fut, on foot, 9. 377; on fute, 3. 20; pl. Fut, foot, feet (in measuring), 10. 547, 17. 939.

Fute, s. a child, 3. 578. See the Note.

Fut-hate, adv. (lit. foot hot), with all speed, 3. 418; Fut-hat, 13. 454. See the Note to iii. 418.

Fwaill, s. fuel, 4. 64, 170.


Fycht, s. fight, battle, 2. 242. See Ficht.

Fyfe, five, 8. 181.

Fyft, ord. fifth, 2. 17 (footnote); see note to the line.

Fyften, num. ord. fifteenth, 2. 17.

Fynding, s. finding, discovery, 3. 422.

Fyne, adj. fine, good, 11. 417.

Fyre, s. fire, 17. 246, 429; pl. Fyres, 19. 482.

Fyrth, s. firth, 18. 267, 14. 33 (F.).


Ga, v. to go, 1. 330, 2. 10, 11. 642; let him go, 1. 433; Ga we, let us go, 2. 49, 5. 79. See Gayn.

Gabbing, s. lying, falsehood, deceit, 4. 301, 5. 510; pl. Gabbingis, lies, 4. 763.

Gabbit, pp. lied, 4. 290. F. gaber, to mock.

Gadtering, s. gathering, company, 6. 389; Gadering, 6. 462, 7. 397; Gaderyng, host, 9. 217.


Gadryng, s. gathering, assembly, 1. 595. See Gaddering.

Gadwand, s. whip, whip-stock, 10. 292. A.S. gad, a good, whip.

Gaff, pt. s. gave, 2. 164, 10. 779; Gaf, 1. 565, 13. 198; gaf the bak, turned their backs, fled, 18. 323; Gaiff, 2. 131, 5. 643; pl. Gaff, 13. 147; Gaiff, 5. 23, 8. 314.

Gainestand, v. to withstand, 15. 298 (H.); pt. s. Gainestood, resisted, 10. 287 (H.).

Galettes, s. pl. goats, 18. 451 (H.).

Galay, s. galley, 3. 593, 4. 372; pl. Galays, 10. 35; Galais, 4. 463, 629.

Galay, v. to reel, 2. 422. A.S. gulan, to hinder; also, to astonish, terrify; cf. gallow, i.e. frighten, in King Lear, iii. 2. 44.

Gammyn, s. game, i.e. joy, 19. 804; sport, play, amusement, 15. 314; affair, 7. 36; or at the gammyn ga, ere all the sport be over, 9. 466; the gammyn ga, the game may go, affairs may turn out, 11. 319; Gamyn, game, i.e. amusement, 3. 465. A.S. gamen, sport.

Gan, pt. s. (used as auxiliary) did, 1. 184, 2. 10.

Gane, pp. gone, 9. 111. See Gayn.

Ganesay, v. to gainsay, 1. 210 (footnote).

Gane-saying, s. contradiction, 1. 580.

Gang, v. to go, walk; gang no ryd, walk nor ride, 1. 193; to go, 2.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

276, 15. 91; ger. 7. 596; pres. s. Gaugis, goes, 10. 421; pres. pt.
Gangand, going, 7. 581, 10. 465, 18. 18; marching, 11. 343; walk-
ing, 4. 633.
Ganging, s. going, approach, 14. 400 (E. and H.).
Gardiss; gardiez vous de Francis, take heed to yourselves of Francis, 10. 747.
Garnisht, pp. stored, 10. 311 (H.); provided, 17. 713 (H.). See
Warnist.
Garnisoun, s. provision, store, 17. 294 (E.).
Garris, pr. s. makes, 7. 246; pt. s. Gart, caused, 7. 267. See Ger.
Gast, s. ghost; g. he gaf, gave up the ghost, 19. 214.
Gat, s. a way, 6. 577, 7. 42, 8. 65, 9. 628, 11. 443, 12. 85, 13. 646, 19.
691; a gate, 15. 348*; a passage, 13. 202; Gate, a way, 6. 8; na gat,
in no way, 10. 250; pt. Gatis, ways, 1. 338; gen. sing. Gatis, of a way:
A gatis, of one way, i.e. in one and the same way, 4. 702. A.S. geat,
gat, a door, way.
Gayly, adv. daily, 11. 128.
Gayn, pp. gone, 2. 80; Gayne, 1. 144, 3. 473. See Gane, Ga.
Gayne-cummyng, s. against-com-
ing, i.e. attack, 2. 450.
Gayne-gevyng, s. giving again, restoring, 1. 115.
Geddis, s. pl. pikes, jacks, 2. 576.
Icel. gedda, the pike (fish).
Geir, s. gear, equipment, 9. 709,
17. 702, 859. A.S. gear, pre-
paration. See Ger, sb.
Generaly, adv. generally, 11. 208.
Ger, s. gear, property, 18. 160; provisions, 8. 458; armour, 5. 110, 18. 165. See Geir.
Ger, v. to cause, 1. 299, 4. 654, 5. 265, 17. 271; pr. s. subj. may
make, 1. 16; pr. s. Gerris, makes, 6. 332, 9. 91; pr. pl. Gerris, cause,
11. 491; pt. s. Ger, caused, made, 1. 355, 2. 13, 5. 117, 6. 187, 8. 444,
10. 748, 12. 7. 14. 296, 17. 90; gerit helde, caused to be kept, 8.
14; pl. Gert, 2. 506, 4. 30. Ger
mak, to cause to be made, 1. 491.
Icel. gora, to make.
Gess; to gess, to take a guess, 14.
270.
Gestis, s. pl. (perhaps) motions,
movements, 17. 597. See the
note.
Get, v. to get, 9. 165, 11. 175; to
keep, 15. 264.
Geyvn, pp. given, 1. 317, 2. 122,
11. 32; Gevin, 9. 445, 11. 40; Gevin to hous, taken home, 20.
102. See Gif.
Gewe, pt. s. gave, 16. 130 (E.).
See Gif.
Ghyle, s. guile, 1. 172.
Gif, v. to incline, lit. give, 19. 107;
pres. s. Gifis, give, 1. 227; in-
clines, 19. 97; pl. Gifis, give, 4.
721; pp. Giffin, given, disposed. 4.
A.S. gifan.
Giff, conj. if, 1. 12; Gif, 4. 106, 8.
131; bot gif, unless, 8. 64. A.S.
gif, Moeso-Goth. jabai, compounded
of ja, also, and ibai, where ibai
corresponds to Icel. ef, if, from Icel.
ef, doubt. Quite unconnected with
give.
Girns, s. pl. traps, gins, 2. 576
(footnote). See "Gren, a gin or
Gladschip, s. gladness, joy, 8. 253,
12. 209, 17. 11, 19. 750. A.S.
glaeswpe.
Gladsum, adj. glad, blithe, merry,
11. 256, 12. 157, 16. 41, 17. 5;
kindly, 9. 728.
Gladsumly, adv. gladly, 16. 20.
Glaid, adj. glad, merry, 1. 332.
Glaidschip, s. gladness, in E., 5.
298 (footnote). See Gladschip.
Gle, s. glee, 17. 908, 19. 804;
game, sport, 9. 701, 15. 176; zheid
the gle, the game went, 1. 90. See Glew. A.S. gleó.

Glemand, pres. pt. gleaming, 8. 226.

Glen, s. glen, 4. 372 (footnote).

Glew, s. game, affair (lit. gleé), 6. 638; contrivance, 17. 403 (C.). See Gle.

Gliffüyt, pt. s. looked up quickly, took a glimpse, 7. 184. Cf. Scot. gliff, a glance.

Glitterand, pres. pt. glittering, 8. 233.

Glowand, pres. part. glowing, 4. 113.

Gluffphyt, an error in C. for Gliffüyt, 7. 184 (footnote).


Gottyn, pp. got, 2. 3, 10. 452; arrived, 18, 454; begotten, 20, 131; Gottin, obtained, 19. 785; got, 14. 223.

Governale, s. power to govern, 11. 161; government, 16. 358; Governele, 1. 192 (footnote).


Gown, s. gown, 19. 352; pl. Gownys, 8. 468.

Grailth, adj. ready, 4. 759. Icel. greiðtr, ready.

Grathit, pt. pl. a reading in H. for Redyit, i.e. made ready, 9. 171 (footnote). (The sense is the same; see above, and Grathit.)


Granting, s. confession, 19. 45.

Granung, s. groaning, 13. 157.

Granys, s. pl. groans, 13. 35.

Grass, s. grace, 14. 361.


Grathly, adv. speedily, 10. 205. See Graithly.

Gravy, pp. buried, 4. 309.

Gray, adj. gray, 12. 18. (So in H.; C. has gay.)

Gress, s. grass, 2. 361, 8. 445 (E.); pl. Gressys, grasses, herbs, reading in E. for Grewis, 5. 13 (footnote).

Gret, adj. great; in gret thing, in a great measure, 17. 196; pl. adj. as sb. great men, 14. 390; Grete, 10. 73.


Gretar, adj. greater, 20. 463.

Greting, s. weeping, 3. 514, 522, 527; 20. 197, 489.


Grevy, s. grieving, harm, 8. 510.

Greviy, for Grewy, harm, 19. 555 (C.). See below.

Grevit thame, pt. s. it made them shudder, 15. 541; where grevit is written for grevorit or grovrit. Cf. Dan. gru, horror. See Grow.

Greuousar, more grievous, harder, 10. 636.

Grewis, s. pl. groves, 5. 13. See the Note.
Greyne, adj. green, 11. 372.
Grow, v. to quake with terror, 17. 696; pt. s. Growyt, shuddered, was shocked, 20. 517; pt. s. trans. it made them shudder, 15. 541 (E.); see Grevit. Cf. Icel. grífa, to cower; Dan. gru, horror.
Growynge, s. terror, 19. 555. See Grow.
Gruching, s. grudging, reluctance, 16. 19.
Gruchys, pr. s. lit. grudges; finds fault, opposes (you), 2. 123.
Grunches, pr. s. grumbles, 2. 123 (footnote).
Grunching, s. complaint, 16. 9 (C); footnote.
Grund, s. ground, land, 20. 324.
Grundyn, pp. ground, sharpened, 12. 520.
Gryppynt, pt. s. gripped, seized, 1. 115.
Gud, adj. good, 1. 4, 9. 12.
Gude, s. property, 17. 105; pl. Gudis, goods, 17. 517.
Gyff, pr. s. subj. may he give, 1. 34. See Giff.
Gyit, pp. guided, 19. 708. O.F. guier; to guide.
Gyle, s. guile, 6. 4.
Gyn, s. stratagem, device, 15. 222; Gyne, engine, 17. 682, 691; pl. Gynis, engines, 17. 250; Gynnys, nets, 2. 576. Short for F. engin, Lat. ingenium.
Gynomour, s. engineer, 17. 468, 690, 718; 17. 681 (E.). Formed from gyn.
Gyrd, s. stroke, blow, 5. 629. From A.S. gyrd, a rod, stick.
Gyrand, pres. part. striking right and left, 2. 417. See above.
Gyrnand, pres. part. grinning, 4. 322.
Gyrnyng, s. grinning, 13. 157.
Gyrss, s. grass, 8. 445, 11. 372, 12. 582. A.S. gers, gers.
Gyrth, s. sanctuary, 4. 47, 51; sacred protecting power; gære na gyrth, respected not the sanctuary, 2. 44. Icel. gríðr, a truce; also a sanctuary, asylum.
Haberiownys, s. pl. habergeons, 11. 131 (E.). See Chaucer, Prol. 76.
Haboundance, s. abundance, 14. 229 (E.).
Haboundyt, pt. s. abounded, 13. 716 (E.), 744 (E.).
Hachit, s. a hatchet, 10. 174.
Had, pt. s. took, conveyed, 15. 240; had nocht been, had it not been for, 3. 216. See Haf.
Haf, v. to have, 4. 277, 5. 392, 6. 326; pr. s. subj. have, 6. 334; Haff, v. 11. 19, 18. 70; 1 p. pr. pl. Haffis, we have, 3. 316; pr. s. as fæt. Haffys, he shall have, 1. 434; imp. pl. Haffis, have ye, 13. 305; pt. s. Haid, had, 1. 38; pl. Haid, had, 1. 514.
Haill, whole, all of them, 14. 490; all haill, entirely, 10. 793, 11. 3; haill and fer, safe and sound, 15. 514; haill and fer, 9. 231. See Feir. Icel. heill, hale.
Hailsed, pt. s. saluted, 3. 500 (footnote); perhaps a better reading than Haylist. See below.
Hald, vt. to hold, 1. 154, 410; to esteem, 2. 389; to keep, 6. 183; to keep on, 8. 65; _bargave hald_, to engage in fighting, 4. 96; _pres. pt._ Haldand, 14. 409; _pp._ Haladin, holden, kept, 5. 88, 9. 457, 13. 370; _pp._ Haldyn, holden, held, 1. 118; esteemed, 20. 364; Haldynke, kept, 13. 542; _pr. pt._ Haldis, hold, 1. 488; possess, 4. 349, 726; _imp. pt._ Haldis, continue, 7. 123. _Icel._ halda, A.S. _hæltan_.

Haldarís, s. _pl._ holders, i.e. defenders of the castle, 4. 82.

Halding, s. holding, possessions, 19. 66.

Hale, adj. whole, 1. 137, 8. 425; complete, 4. 167. _See Haill._

Hale, adv. wholly, 1. 65, 185; _all hole_, entirely, 1. 497, 11. 4, 15. 202, 18. 238. _See Haill._


Half-deill, s. half part, half, 14. 188, 497.

Halfin daff, _for Halfin dell_, i.e. half part, 14. 497 (E.).

Halist, _for Halsit_, 7. 116 (E.).

Halle, adj. whole, 1. 274. _See Haill._


Halsing, s. salutation, 7. 117. _See below._


Haltand, _pres. pt._ halting, i.e. lame, 18. 275.

Itald, adj. holy, 1. 139, 4. 683, 10. 737, 19. 722. A.S. _hælig_.

Italy, adv. wholly, 1. 16, 2. 453, 3. 57, 6. 182, 10. 378, 14. 79. 18. 308. _See below._

Halyly, adv. wholly, entirely, 1. 316, 540. _See above, and see_ Halyly.

Halyly, _an error in E._ for Halsyt, 4. 636 (footnote), 13. 525. _See Halsit._

Hamlet, _s._ Hamlet, 4. 195; Hamlet, 9. 403; Hamillet, 9. 403 (E.).

Hamly, adj. homely, kindly, 19. 794.

Hamly, _adv._ in a homely manner, kindly, 11. 259 (E.), 18. 516. _See below._

Hamlyly, _adv._ in a homely way, heartily, 17. 4 (E.). _See above._


Hand; _at hand_, in hand, under guidance, i.e. well trained; said of a horse, 1. 120 (cf. Shak. Jul. Ces., iv. 2. 23); near, 6. 604; _at thar hand_, close at their hand, 3. 54, 7. 563; _tak on hand_, undertake, 1. 268, 13. 368; _tuk on hand_, undertook, 14. 10.

Hand-ax, _s._ hand-axe, 5. 606.

Hand-ax-schaft, _shaft of a battle-axe_, 12. 57, 97.

Handlilt, _pp._ handled, 17. 416. _See Handlyt._

Handis, _s._ pl. hands, 9. 481, &c.

Handles, _a misspelling of Ayndless_, 10. 609 (E.).

Handlyt, _pp._ handled, 10. 648, 693; Handlilt, 17. 416.

Hangis, _imp._ _pl._ hung, 4. 322; _pp._ Hangit, hung, 4. 176, 17. 871; Hangyt, 4. 34.

Hansell, _s._ hansel; a first portion of goods delivered to a buyer; here (ironically) first defeat, 5. 120.

Hap, _s._ good fortune, success, 12. 554 (E.); good luck, 5. 538, 15. 392.

Happily, _adv._ luckily, 17. 438.
Har, hair, 1, 334, 397.


Hard, adj. severe, 9, 36.

Hardely, adv. hardily, 11, 411.


Hardiss, s. hards (of flax), 17, 62.

Hardnyt, pt. pl. incited (lit. hardened), 12, 500.

Hardy, adj. hardy, bold, 1, 28, 11, 249, 500; 13, 77. F. hardi.

Hardyment, s. hardihood, courage, boldness, 6, 353, 9, 632, 15, 270, 16, 20; deed of valour, 12, 500. O.F. hardement, courage.

Hardynes, hardship, 1, 448. Cf. hardness.

Harnass, s. armour, 9, 360, 11, 112, 116, 239; Harness. 12, 465; Harnase, 11, 421. O.F. harnas, harnois.

Harnast, pp. harnessed, equipped, 9, 710; Harnasyt, 9, 710 (E.).

Harnys, s. pl. brains, 1, 294, 3, 128, 5, 625, 10, 236; Harniss, 5, 633. Icel. hjarni, the brain.

Harnys, s. pl. brains, but here an error for Arrows, 18, 417 (E.).

Harrow, s. harrow, 19, 175.

Hart, heart, 1, 28.

Hartfully, adv. heartily, gladly, 3, 510.

Hass, pr. pl. have, 11, 273; Has, 12, 79; p. s. pr. Has, 13, 642.
Henry, s. head, 2. 589.
Hede-soyne, s. the rope reaching to the heads of the oxen, the traces, 10. 180. See the note.
Hedis, s. pl. heads (of their horses), 9. 610.
Heid, s. heed, 18. 150.
Heid, s. head, 3. 138; off thine anye heed, as of your own will, 2. 121; pl. Hedis, 9. 610.
Heill, s. heel, 16. 596.
Heir, adv. here, 4. 125, 5. 69, 11. 181; heir and their, everywhere, 6. 27.
Heirschip, s. the harrying destruction, 9. 300. A.S. herian, to ravage with an army.
Heit, s. heat, 11. 611. See Het.
Held doune, pt. pl. continued, 15. 171.
Heldand, pres. part. holding, belonging, 5. 153.
Heling, s. covering, 5. 11, 17. 598.
Helit, pp. healed, 15. 85.
Hell, s. hell, 3. 708.
Helmys, s. pl. helmets, 19. 396.
Helping, s. helping, succour, 3. 118.
Hely, adv. highly, aloud, 2. 315, 3. 734; haughtily, proudly, 8. 143, 18. 509; highly, 1. 577.
Helyng, s. healing; into helyng, in health, 5. 438; Helyne, 15. 84.
Hemp, s. hemp, 10. 352 (H. rubric in footnote).
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Definition</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Herkynand</td>
<td>pres. part. hearkening, listening</td>
<td>107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Herrodis</td>
<td>s. pl. heralds</td>
<td>371</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hert</td>
<td>s. heart</td>
<td>220</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Her-till</td>
<td>(E.), hereto, to this</td>
<td>241</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ilerit</td>
<td>pt. s. encouraged</td>
<td>602</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hertly</td>
<td>adv. heartily</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heryd</td>
<td>pt. s. harried, a reading in II. for Ryotit, 9. 500 (footnote)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heryt</td>
<td>pt. s. harried, 9. 298; pl. 19. 280. A.S. herian, to ravage</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heryng</td>
<td>s. hearing</td>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hes</td>
<td>pr. pl. have, 17. 904. See Has</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Het</td>
<td>adj. hot, 4. 114, 154. See Hat</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Het</td>
<td>s. heat</td>
<td>612</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hevaly</td>
<td>adv. heavily</td>
<td>209</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hevede</td>
<td>s. head, 5. 11. A.S. hevafod</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hevin</td>
<td>s. heaven, 20. 250; Hevyn, 2. 144</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hevy</td>
<td>adj. heavy, dull, 7. 174; hevy will, ill will, 17. 20.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hew</td>
<td>v. to cut down, 16. 476; to hew, 19. 541; pt. s. Hewit, cut, 10. 233</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewid</td>
<td>s. head, 2. 121 (footnote)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewinis</td>
<td>gen. sing. heaven's, 8. 234. See Hevin</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewit</td>
<td>pp. hued, coloured, 8. 230</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewy</td>
<td>adj. heavy, 2. 369. See Hevy</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewyly</td>
<td>adv. heavily</td>
<td>235</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewyn</td>
<td>s. heaven, 2. 341; gen. Hewynnis, 20. 414. See Hevin</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hewynes</td>
<td><em>for</em> Hevynes, 7. 175 (E.).</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hey</td>
<td>adj. high, 1. 102, 276, 378; 17. 608. See He, Heyech</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hey</td>
<td>adv. aloud</td>
<td>383</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heych</td>
<td>adj. high</td>
<td>117</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heycht</td>
<td>s. a height</td>
<td>707</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heychty</td>
<td>adv. proudly</td>
<td>250</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heyit</td>
<td>pp. exalted, 4. 667 (footnote)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heyr</td>
<td>adv. here</td>
<td>623</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Heyt</td>
<td>pp. raised on high, exalted, 4. 667.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hicht</td>
<td>1 p. s. pr. I promise you, I assure you, 7. 156, 8. 208, 9. 480, 10. 514, 721; 18. 482. See Hecht</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hicht</td>
<td>pt. s. hight, was called, 5. 209, 8. 453, 10. 153, 17. 150. See Hecht, Hycht</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hicht</td>
<td>s. a promise</td>
<td>14. 16, 15. 425</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hicht</td>
<td>s. height, 4. 667, 9. 508, 18. 419, 449; high position, 10. 52; summit of power, 5. 183; on hicht, on high, aloft, aloud, 5. 631, 11. 397, 13. 723, 16. 407; into the hicht, openly, 5. 487</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hiddillis</td>
<td>s. a hiding-place</td>
<td>382</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hidwysly</td>
<td>adv. hideously</td>
<td>685</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hidwyss</td>
<td>adj. hideous</td>
<td>724</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hillis</td>
<td>hill's, 10. 83</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hing</td>
<td>v. to hang, 2. 455, 4. 30, 54. Icel. hengja, to hang. See Hyng</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hint</td>
<td>pt. s. seized, 7. 580; pl. 8. 470. A.S. hentan, to seize. See Hynt</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hir</td>
<td>pron. her</td>
<td>407</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>His</td>
<td>Hanniball his used for Hannibal’s, 3. 232; see also 6. 435, 446.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>His</td>
<td>gen. (signifying duration); his liftyme, in his lifetime, 4. 713</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>His</td>
<td>for his men</td>
<td>372</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Hoblender, pres. part. dancing or hovering about, rising and falling in a surge, 4. 447. Probably related to Howand, q. v.

Hoblereis, s. pl. men on horseback, light-armed horsemen, 11. 110, 13. 640; Hobleres, 11. 110 (E.); Hobillers, 11. 110 (H.); Hobilleris, 16. 80 (E.). See Hobelleris in Jamieson; and see Hobynis.

Hobynis, s. pl. horses, 14. 68, 500.

They seem to have been small, nimble horses, for reconnoitring, &c. See hobin in Roquefort’s Glossaire.

Holil, s. hole, 19. 669.

Holl, adj. hollow, deep, 8. 176.

Holl, adj. whole, unbroken, 6. 78.

Holles, s. pl. holes, 11. 153 (H.).

Hone, s. delay, 6. 564 (E.), 14. 182 (E.). See Hoyn.

Honeste, honour, decorum, 1. 548.

Honorabilly, adv. honourably, 1. 357, 13. 664.

Honorit, pt. s. honoured, 16. 672; pt. pl. 20. 359.

Howyn, s. hunting, 4. 513.

Hoost, s. hoost, army, 13. 734.

Hop, s. hope, 4. 104.

Horn, s. horn, 6. 469.


Hostage, s. hostage, pledge, 10. 133 (E.). Better hommage, as in C.

Hostes, s. hostess, 4. 635.

Houed, pt. s. it behoved, 10. 39 (H.).

Hount, v. to hunt, 7. 399.


Howe, for Hufe, 19. 345 (E.).

How-gatis, adv. how, 4. 439; How-gat, 2. 156, 5. 597, 6. 308, 8. 102.

Howis, s. pl. holes, 11. 153. A.S. hol, a hole.

Howis, s. pl. hoes, 17. 344. It is not quite clear what kind of instrument is intended, or what was its use. F. hone, a hoe.

Howss, house, 1. 534; pl. Howsis, 12. 396. See Houss.


Howyn, s. delay, 5. 602, 6. 564, 10. 226, 14. 182. See “houn, delay, cessation,” in Stratmann. See Hone, Ho, Howand.

Hude, s. a hood, 18. 308; pl. Hudis, hoods, 19. 332 (E.).


Humely, adv. humbly, 3. 762; Humuly, 1. 578; Humilly, 18. 404.


Hunder, for Hundred, 14. 67 (E.).

Hundreth, hundred, 14. 534, 17. 739.


Husband, s. a small farmer, 10. 131, 387; gen. sing. Husbandis, 7. 151; pl. Husbandis, husbandmen, 17. 542.

INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 687

Hwdis, s. pl. hoods, 19. 332. See Hude.


Hwnd, hound, 6. 491. See Hund.

Hy, s. haste, hurry, 16. 585; pressing business, 15. 162; in hy, in haste, 1. 147, 353, 439; 5. 58, 7. 6, 17. 31, &c. See below.

Hy, v. reflex. to hasten himself, to make haste, 3. 635. A.S. higan, to make haste.

Hyar, adj. higher, 17. 602. See Hye.

Hycht, 1 p. s. pr. I promise (you), 13. 16; pl. s. promised, 2. 208. See Hicht.

Hycht, pt. pl. were called, were named, 2. 243. See Hicht.

Hycht, s. height, 1. 77, 452, 608; at hycht, aloft, in good estate, 13. 713. See Hicht.

Hyd, v. to hide, 4. 120; pp. Hyd, hidden, 4. 118.

Hyddillis, s. a hiding-place, 5. 306, 436. It is properly not plural, but singular, being the A.S. hydels, latibulum. See hudels in Stratmanu; and see Hiddillis.

Hyde, s. skin, 3. 584; pl. Hydys, hides, 2. 511.

Hydvisly, adv. hideously, horribly, 7. 327. See Hydvisly.

Hydvisly, adv. hideously, horribly, 4. 416, 10. 448, 683.

Hydvis, adj. hideous, dreadful, 5. 2, 13. 43, 19. 760; also 10. 594 (C.), where Hydvis will hardly rime. See Hydwooss.

Hydwooss, adj. hideous, terrible, 10. 594 (E.); Hydwooss, terrific, 10. 22. See Hydvis.

Hye, adj. high, 2. 33, 11. 308; proud, 9. 85; hye and low, high and low, wholly, entirely, 10. 471; comp. Hyer, higher, 1. 608; Hyar, 17. 602. See He.

Hye, adv. loudly, 14. 437.

Hye, v. to heighten, exalt, 10. 264, 17. 939; pl. s. Hyet, exalted, 10. 288.

Hye-gat, s. highway, 8. 164. See Gat.

Hyllis, s. pl. hills, 2. 508, 11. 185. See Hillis.

Hylitis, s. pl. hilts, 10. 682.

Hyme, him, 9. 465; usually Hym. 
Hyme, s. hind; lit. a servant, but here a boy, 11. 217. A.S. hina, a domestic servant.

Hyne (E.), hence, 12. 460. [So in H.; C. om.] A.S. heconan, hence.


Hyr, poss. pron. her, 1. 528.

Hyrecouene, s. an urchin, i.e. hedgehog, 12. 353. O.F. herçon, F. hérisson, a hedge-hog; also applied, in war, to chevaux-de-frise.


Ieopardies, s. pl. skirmishes, 12. 373 (H.).

Iff, conj. if, 3. 96. See Giff.

Ik, pron. I, 1. 617, 2. 46, 3. 110; 5. 506 (E.). See Ic.

Ik, adv. eke, also, 3. 326. See Ek.

Ile, s. isle, island, 3. 577, 681; 4. 539; pl. Ills, 15. 287, 295. O.F. isle.

Ilk, adj. same, very, 1. 512; each, 6. 575, 12. 222, 14. 390; Ilke, each, 10. 698. A.S. ylc, same; wlc, each.

Ilka, adj. each, 2. 74, 16. 367, 17. 725; every, 8. 26. See Ikane.

Ilkadele, adv. in each part, wholly, 20. 166 (E.).

Ikane, for ilk ane, every one, 2.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

404; each one, 15. 64; Ilkan, 2. 324; Ilkone, each one, 11. 383. Sometimes written ilka, q.v.

Ill, adj. evil, wicked, 3. 103. Icel. illr, ill, evil.

Ill, s. evil, sickness, 9. 61.


In, s. lodging, 2. 53. A.S. inn, a chamber. See Innys.

Inbryng, v. to bring in, introduce, 3. 268.

Inew, adj. enough, 1. 558. See Enew.

Inewch, adv. enough, 1. 286, 627; Inew, 17. 545 (E.).

Infair, s. "an entertainment given to friends, upon newly entering a house," as Jamieson well explains it; 16. 310. A.S. iniser, an entrance.

Infermite, s. infirmity, 20. 244.

In-forcely, adv. with great force or strength, 2. 310, 314.

Inforsit, pt. pl. strengthened, 4. 65.


In hy, adv. in haste, 16. 445, 690; and very frequently elsewhere. See Hy.

Iniquite, iniquity, 1. 470.

In-myd, prep. amid, 12. 576.

Innouth, prep. within, 5. 348. Cf. A.S. innos, what is within; but the word may be no more than a variation of inwith, q.v. Cf. also Swed. inuti, within.


Inqueir, v. to enquire about, 4. 221.

Instrumentis, s. pl. instruments, implements, 17. 342.

In-sundir, adv. asunder, 17. 698.

Interludys, s. pl. interludes, episodes, 10. 145.

Intermelle, adv. confusedly, 14. 215.

In-till, prep. in, into, 1. 186, 2. 71, 2. 218, 11. 261, 15. 159, 285; during, 1. 340.

Into, prep. in, 1. 602, 2. 357, 3. 412, 16. 182; into the sea, to sea, 20. 321; into party, partially, 5. 115. Very common.

In-twyn, adv. asunder, 8. 175.

Iuvy, s. envy, 4. 225, 15. 405, 16. 344.

Inward, adv. towards the inner part, 10. 397.

Inveround, pp. environed, 11. 607 (E.).


Iolite, s. jollity, 16. 48 (E.).

Ioly, adj. festive, inclined to festivity, 1. 332, 8. 453; in good spirits, 4. 517; fine, good, 11. 524; handsome, 12. 180. F. joli.

Iournee, s. a day's work, a feat of arms, 13. 323; a combat, battle, 20. 494; a successful day's work, 16. 670; battle-day, 13. 721; Iournye, a combat, 13. 480; pl. Iourneis, day's journeys, 14. 315; battles, 16. 22.

Iowele, s. jewel; 18. 560.

Ire, s. anger, 2. 66, 396.

Irnn, s. iron, 10. 364; Irne, 14. 290; adj. iron, 10. 361 (E.). N.B. In the footnote to 10. 361, for "C.", read "E."

Irne-bandis, s. pl. iron bands, 17. 616.

Irusly, adv. angrily, 8. 144 (E.).

Is, 1 p. pl. pr. we are, 3. 317.

Iscb, v. to issue, to come forth, 2.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 689

248, 258, 278; pt. s. Ischt, 2. 310, 5. 112; Ished, 10. 663 (H.); pt. pl. Ischit, 3. 231. O.F. iesir, Lat. exire.

Ischow, s. issue, outlet, 14. 354 (E.).

Iss, pr. s. is, 16. 534.

Ithandly, 2. 57 (footnote); 14. 320 (H.). See Ithandly.

Iugis, s. pl. judges, 1. 223.

Iugis, imp. pl. judge ye, consider, 6. 269; pt. pl. Iugit, judged, 11. 18; pp. judged, 1. 89; adjudged, 19. 68.

Iuntly, adv. exactly, 17. 689. In Wallace, vii. 1118, a bridge is described as "weill and junctly maid;" and the phrase "rycht juntly," i.e. in close order, occurs in the same, xi. 857 See note.

Iuperdy, s. jeopardy, hazard, danger, a hazardous plan or enterprise, a bold attempt, feat, 6. 534, 7. 364; 10. 340, 413, 524, 539; 11. 51, 14. 421; pt. Iuperdyss, 10. 145, 19. 632; Iupertys, 10. 788 (E.).

Iuperdyss, for Iuperdyss, 10. 788 (E.).

Instit, pt. pl. jousted, 19. 787.

Iustyngh, s. jou sting, 19. 520.

Iwill, s. evil, 4. 735.

Iwiss, adv. verily, certainly, 16. 651. A.S. genis, certain; Du. gewis, certainly.

Karlis, s. pl. churls, peasants, 3. 226. Icel. karl, a peasant.

Keip, heed, 1. 95. See Tane, Kep.

Ken, v. to acknowledge, recognise, perceive, 3. 750, 13. 50; to know, 6. 15, 11. 219; to shew, teach, direct, suggest, 10. 544, 17. 68; pt. s. (or pl.), Kend, knew, 1. 320, 327; pp. Kend, known, 7. 272. Icel. kenna, to know, teach.

Kendlyt, pp. kindled, 17. 429. Cf. Icel. kynda, to kindle; kyndil, a candle.

Kenly, adv. keenly, bravely, 5. 365.

Kenuys, pr. s. instructs, 4. 748. See Ken.

Kep, heed; takand kep, taking heed, 1. 212. See Keip.

Kepar, s. keeper, 10. 552.


Kerss, s. Carse, i.e. low land beside a river, 12. 392. Cf. The Carse o' Gowrie. Sw. hær, a fen.


Keyn, adj. keen, bold, 8. 280.

King, an error in E. for Ying, 3. 216 (footnote).

Kinrik, s. kingdom, 5. 168; pl. Kinrykis, 1. 551.

Kirk, s. church, 13. 512. See Kyrk.

Knañ, s. boy (lit. knave), 8. 508; pl. Knafs, boys, 9. 375*. See Knav. Knaiff child, i.e. a male child, boy, 13. 693. So in Chaucer's Clerkes Tale, Group E, 612.

Knav, s. a boy, 1. 288; pl. Knavis, 15. 339.

Knav, v. to know, 1. 130, 12. 178; 2 p. s. pr. subj. thou mayst know, 9. 752; 1 p. s. pr. I know, 7. 100. A.S. cnáwan. See Knav.

Knav, a reading in E. for Knav, 8. 508 (footnote).

Knavæ, s. boy, 3. 589.


Knawlage, knowledge, 1. 337.

Knavyns, s. knowledge, 6. 556.

Kue, s. knee, 11. 366.
Knelt, *pt.* s. kneeled, 20, 221; *pl.* 18, 537; Knelyt, 12, 477; *pres. pt.* Kneland, 12, 481.

Knit, *pp.* closely joined in the rank of battle, 2, 292. See Knyt.


Knychtlik, *adv.* in a knightly manner, 15, 53.

Knyff, *s.* knife, dagger, 16, 417; Kuyff, 10, 416. See Knyvis.

Knyt, *pt.* s. kuit, fastened, closely linked, 16, 396, 611; closely arrayed, 12, 469. See Kuit.

Knyvis, *s. pl.* knives, daggers, 11, 591; Knyvys, 1, 336. See Knyf.

Kow, *s.* a cow, 18, 275; *pl.* Ky, kine, cows, 6, 405, 10, 381, 15, 338. A.S. *cû, pl. *çy*


Kyn, *s.* kindred, 2, 112; *na kyn,* of no kind, 5, 362, 6, 663, 10, 362.

Kynde, *adj.* akin, 9, 448.

Kynedly, *adj.* preordained by the influence of the stars, 4, 721, 726, 740; naturally, 4, 735.

Kyne, *s.* kind; *na kyne,* of no kind, 8, 363. See Kyn.

Kynrik, *s.* kingdom, 4, 553, 13, 701, 19, 10; Kungrik, royal power, 1, 57; Kynryk, kingdom, 1, 68, 2, 104; royal power, 1, 158. A.S. *cynryce,* a kingdom.


Kyrnaill, *s.* a battlement, 10, 365; Kyrnail, 17, 359; Kyrnell, 10, 402. O.F. *crenelle,* F. *creneau,* a battlement.

Kyt, *s.* a wooden pail, 18, 168, 223. Jamieson says—"a wooden vessel or pail in which dishes are washed." Cf. A.S. *cytel,* a kettle.

Laddis, *s. pl.* loads, 8, 450, 463, 467.

Ladeis, *s. gen.* lady's; *our ladeis erin mary,* our Lady Mary's eye, 17, 333.

Lafe, *s.* the remainder, the rest, 8, 507; Laifi, 5, 370; Laif, 17, 920. A.S. *lif,* the remainder. See Layff, Lave.

Laigh, *adj.* low, 13, 651 (H.).

Lame, *s.* loam, earth, the grave, 19, 256 (H.).

Lamyt, *pp.* lamed, 4, 234.

Land; *land to tak,* to land, disembark, 16, 557; *tak land,* disembarked, 16, 551.


Landis, *s. pl.* lands, 11, 125.

Lang, *adv.* long, 4, 118, 7, 109, 10, 565; a long time, 9, 749.

Langar, *adv.* longer, 4, 43.

Langes, *pr.* s. *impers.* belongs, 1, 162 (footnote).

Langir, *adj.* comp. longer, 1, 598, 622; Langar, 6, 554, 7, 547.

Lansit, *pt.* s. leapt, sprang, dashed quickly, 8, 25; Lansyt, 3, 122. Cf. F. *se lancer,* to rush upon.

Lanss, *s.* leap, dash, 10, 414. See above.

Lap, *pt.* s. leapt, 9, 566, 13, 658; *pl.* 10, 238, 212, 660; *lap on,* sing., took horse, 2, 28, 142; 5, 214; *pl.* 2, 14, 3, 845.

Lardenere, *s.* larder, 5, 410.

Larg, *adj.* liberal, 1, 363; Large, 11, 148. O.F. *large,* liberal.

Largess, *s.* bounty, 10, 288, 20, 224 (E.); liberty; *at his largess,* at large, at full liberty, 7, 378.

Laseir, *s.* leisure, 13, 602; Lasare, 5, 390; Laser, 13, 59; Lasair, 6, 660. See Layser.

Lat, *imp.* s. let, permit, 1, 78, 498;
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

pt. s. caused, directed, 11. 484 (E.); pt. pl. Lete, let, 9. 184. See Let, vb. to let alone.

Lat, s. let, hindrance, 12. 516.

Lat, adj. late, 7. 236. See Layt.

Late, s. gesture, demeanour, 7. 127. Icel. lát, manners.

Lauchand, pres. part. laughing, 2. 34.

Laucht, adj. low, small, 11. 19 (E.).

Lauchtane, for Lawchtane, 19. 672 (E.). See Lawchtane.

Laundender, s. laundress, 16. 292 (E. and H.); 16. 273 (H.). See Landar.

Launee, s. a jump, spring, leap, 10. 414 (E.). See Launs.


Lave, s. the remnant, the rest, 2. 306, 368; 15. 172 (E.); 15. 372. See Lafe, Lai.


Law, adj. as sb. a low place, 3. 707; the low part of the country, 6. 518.

Law, adv. low, in a low voice, 4. 200; low, 8. 474; to the bottom, 10. 124; hye and law, high and low, wholly, altogether, 4. 594, 10. 471; hey na law, none of any sort, 3. 556. See Cleyn, adv.


Lawchtane, adj. made of cloth (?), 19. 672. So explained by Jamieson; cf. Du. taken, cloth; cloth of lake in Chaucer’s Sir Thopas; Icel. lakan, a bed-sheet.

Lawer, adj. comp. lower, 1. 58.

Lawit, pp. lowered, brought low, 13. 658.

Lawit, an error for Lamit, 4. 284 (footnote).

Lawte (for lawete), loyalty, i.e. truth, 1. 125; fidelity, loyalty, 1. 364, 14. 10, 18. 122, 20. 147, 516, 562; true word of honour, 12. 318. See Laute.

Layd, pp. laid; layd at erd, laid upon the earth, overthrown, 3. 16.

Layd-men, s. pl. lit. load-men, i.e. men in charge of a pack-horse, 8. 466. See Ladis.

Layff, s. the remainder, the rest, 7. 24, 10. 460, 11. 179, 12. 140 13. 413. See Lafe, Lai, Lave.

Layit, pp. laid, in E., 5. 388 (footnote).

Layndar, s. laundress, 16. 273 (E.), 16. 292. See Landar.

Layser, s. leisure, 20. 234 (E.). See Laseir.

Layt, adj. late, 14. 164. See Lat.

Leawe, loyalty, fidelity, truth, 1. 400, 576, 5. 530. See Lawte.

Lechis, s. pl. leeches, doctors, 5. 437, 17. 485. A.S. léce, a physician.

Lechlyng, s. healing, 13. 46.

Ledar, s. leader, i.e. governor, 3. 660; a leader, 2. 260; the man who holds the bound in the leash, 7. 20; Ledir, leader, 11. 522; pl. Ledaris, leaders, 11. 160.

Leddir, s. a ladder, 9. 384, 10. 546, 557, 642; pl. Ledderis, ladders, 9. 314, 10. 360, 17. 34.

Lede, v. to carry (hay), 10. 165. Lead is still used provincially in this sense. See Leid.

Leding, s. government, lit. leading, 1. 579, 2. 90; command, 15. 302; company, 9. 19; Ledyng, command, 20. 411.

Lee, v. to give the lie; a bad reading in E. in 7. 623; see footnote and Note to the line.

Leechng, s. attendance by a medical man, 15. 84 (H.). See Lechlyng.

Leesing, s. a lie, untruth, in II., 5.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

510 (footnote). A.S. leásung, a falsehood.

Leifyt, pt. s. remained, became, 4. 264 (footnote).

Leit, pt. s. left, i.e. ceased, 15. 126; pp. left, 19. 584.

Left, pt. pl. left, i.e. lost, 16. 456 (E.).

Left, pt. pl. remained, 6. 31.

Lege, adj. free, full, uncontrolled; lege ponte, full power, 5. 165. See F. lige in Brachets' Etym. Fr. Diet., where lige is derived from G. ledig, free. A liege lord is a free lord; see Mahn's Webster.

Leid, v. to lead, 1. 270, 11. 413; to control, govern, 1. 38; to carry hay, 10. 195. See Leyd, Lede.

Leif, v. to leave, 4. 608; to leave, quit, 6. 193, 17. 519, 18. 146; to leave off, 6. 157, 10. 159. A.S. lēfan.

Leif, to, ger. to leave (= to be left), 6. 335. See above.

Leif, s. leave, 4. 582, 5. 176; Leiff, 16. 8; but leif, without leave, 17. 863.

Leifland, pres. part. living, 2. 548.


Leiss, v. to lose, 12. 124, 17. 516.


Lele, adj. leal, loyal, true, 1. 375, 5. 296. See Leil, Leyle. O.F. loial, leal, loyal.


Lemand, pres. pt. gleaming, 8. 226 (H.). See below.

Leme, s. a flame, 11. 191 (E.).

A.S. léoma, a ray of light, g-lean.

Lemman, s. sweetheart, 15. 351 (E.). A.S. léof man.


Lenteryne, Lent, spring-season, 10. 815; Lentaryne, 10. 815 (E.). A.S. lenten, spring; and ryne, a course.

Lenth, length, 1. 531.

Lenye, adj. lean, thin; but probably with the additional notion of supple, 1. 387. Cf. "Lenwoek, slender, pliable. North;" Halliwell.

Lepe out, i.e. come forward, be drawn from its place of concealment, 18. 502. See Lap.

Lesing, s. lying, falsehood, 4. 480, 19. 122; but lesing, without lying, truly, 13. 231; Lesyng, 3. 521, 7. 77, 16. 23. A.S. leásung, a falsehood.


Less, adj. pl. less; less and mare, less and greater, all of them, 5. 338, 8. 120.

Less, adv. less, 8. 121, 11. 223.

Lesssit, pt. pl. lost, 12. 347. See Lesit.

Lessyt, an error in editions for Leifyt, i.e. remained, 4. 264 (footnote).


Lest, pr. s. imper. it pleases, 7. 314. A.S. lystan, to please.

Lest, sup. adj. least, 6. 537; fewest in numbers, 16. 187.

Lest, s. last (?) a misreading for Frest, 2. 277 (footnote).
Letting, s. delay, hindrance, 2. 29, 3. 397, 613; 4. 489; Lettyng, 11. 278.

Leitir, s. letter, i.e. written account, text, 10. 353; pt. Lettrys, deeds, 20. 44; pl. as sing. Lettres, a letter, 2. 80; Letteris, 17. 39.

Leuand, pres. pt. living, 15. 183 (E.).

Leur, adv. rather, 3. 228.


Leve, s. leave, 11. 649 (E.); pl. Levis, leave-takings, 16. 689. See Leyf.

Leverè, s. delivery, 14. 233 (E.).

Leve-takyng, s. leavetaking, 3. 347.


Lewand, for Lilland, living, 7. 359 (E.).

Lewe, v. to leave, 19. 407; to remain, 16. 275; pt. s. Levyt, left, finished, 3. 568; left off, 15. 126 (E.); permitted, 19. 126 (E.); pt. pl. Levyt, remained, 13. 619 (E.); pp. Lewit, left, 20. 112; Levyt, 3. 593. See Leve.

Lewys, s. pl. leave-takings, 20. 109 (E.); Lewis, leaves, 16. 67. See Leve, sb.

Leyd, pr. s. imp. may He lead, 8. 263. See Leid, Lede.

Leyf, s. leave, 5. 253. See Leve.

Leyff, v. to leave, 19. 421; Levyve, to leave undone, 1. 247.

Leyff, v. to live, 1. 212, 3. 265.

Leyle, adj. leal, true, 2. 516. See Leill.

Leyme, s. gleam, 11. 191. See Leme.


Leyt, pr. s. let, 10. 232. See Leit.


Libbard, s. leopard, 14. 2; Libbard, 15. 524.

Licht, s. light, 6. 216.

Licht, adj. light, 13. 56; idle, 7. 112; active, 10. 61.

Lichtit, pt. s. alighted, 14. 121:
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Logyng, s. lodging, place of encampment, 2. 282.

Logyt thaim, pt. pl. reflex. lodged, 2. 304.

Lompnyt, for Lownyt, 15. 276 (E.). See Lownyt.


Lorn, pp. lost, 7. 44; Lorne, 10. 106. A.S. geloren, lost, pp. of leusan, to lose.

Losengeour, s. a lying fellow, 4. 108. O.F. losange, a lie; losangeor, a liar.

Losit, pt. pl. were lost, perished, 18. 176. See below.

Lossit, pt. pl. lost, 11. 590; Lossyt, 16. 232 (E.); 18. 160 (E.).


Louch, for Clewch, 16. 386 (E.).

Louchside, s. loch-side, side of a lake, 3. 109.

Loud and still, adv. under all circumstances, 3. 745. See Halliwell's Diet.

Loup, s. a leap, 10. 414 (H.). See Lowp.

Loving, s. praise, 6. 326, 16. 534; Lovyng, 4. 549, 6. 283, 12. 124.


Low, s. flame, 4. 124. Icel. logi, a flame.


Lownyt, pp. sheltered, 15. 276. Icel. logn, Swed. logn, calm; see lou in Janieson. (J. reads lompnyt, as in E., and renders it "laid with trees").

Lowp, s. a leap, 6. 638. See above.


Lowyt, pt. s. made obeisance to, 2. 154; Lowtit, bowed down, 5. 253. A.S. klititan, to bow.

Lowyng, s. praise, 3. 543. See Loving.


Luff, s. love, 2. 515, 520; gen. pl. Luffis, of their lady-loves, 3. 349; ace. pl. 3. 351. A.S. lufu.


Luffely, adv. lovingly, 17. 315 (E.).

Lufly, adj. loveable, pleasing, 1. 389.

Lufre, s. delivery, gift, 14. 233. Jamieson has "lovery, lufray, bounty; Dunbar." The word is a mere corruption of O.F. licree, a present of food, or of clothes; E. livery.

Luf-tenand, s. lieutenant, 14. 139, 253.

Luge, s. lodge, tent, hut, 19. 653, 660; a reading in C. for Lugis, 7. 550 (footnote); Luggis, lodges, sort of tents, 19. 392. F. loge.

Luging, s. lodging, 4. 494, 6. 1.


Lukyit, pt. s. looked at, observed, 1. 613. See Luk.

Lump, s. a heap, 15. 229; crowd, 19. 377 (E.); company, 15. 342 (E.).

Lurdane, s. a lazy fellow, rascal, 4. 108. O.F. lourdein, a blockhead, lazy fellow (Roquefort); mod. F. lourdant, a blockhead; from lourd, dull.

Lurkand, pres. part. lurking, 5. 192, 7. 71, 8. 474; Lurkande, 10. 627.

Lusunmly, adv. lovesomely, lovingly, 17. 315.

Lwmp, s. crowd, throng, 19. 377. See Lump.


Lycht, adj. light, 2. 521. See Licht.

Lychly, adv. 6. 638. See Lichly.

Lychyt, pt. pl. lightened, 3. 624; pp. Lychyt, 3. 616. (Used of lightening a ship.)

Lyff, life, 1. 108, 270, 607; off lyce, alive, 1. 293; pl. Lyfis, lives, 10. 106. See Liff.

Lyffand, pres. part. living, 2. 169. See Liffand.

Lyff-dayis, s. pl. life-days, i.e. length of life, 3. 293.

Lyking, s. pleasure, 14. 17. See Liking.

Lyknyt, pp. likened, compared; mycht lyknyt, might have compared, 3. 73. See Liknyt.

Lymmys, s. pl. limbs, 1. 108, 385, 398.

Lyne be lyne, i.e. line by line, from beginning to end, 17. 84.

Lyng, s. a line, direct course;
only in phrase in a lyng, straight forward, 2. 417, 19. 285; and in till a lyng, 6. 500, 12. 49.

Lynt, s. lint, 17. 612.

Lynyng, adj. linen, 13. 422.

Lypnyng, s. trust, 12. 238; Lypynnyng (E.). Probably from the same root as E. believe.

Lyve-tyme, life-time, 1. 308.

Lyvis, s. pl. lives, 11. 500, 12. 245. See Liff.

Lyvys, pr. pl. live, 1. 293; pt. pl. Lywyt, 1. 19. See Liffand.

Ma, v. to make, 1. 33, 5. 9, 7. 121, 11. 340; pres. s. subj. Ma, may make, 2. 6, 4. 561; ma weill of, to make much of, praise, 16. 592. See also Mais.

Ma, pr. s. may, 7. 533; ma fall, it may happen, perhaps, 9. 376.


Macyss, s. pl. maces, 12. 579, 13. 17. O.F. mace, a mace. See Mas.

Mad, pp. made, 12. 122.

Magre, s. ill will, 17. 60. O.F. mal grè; whence also the prep. below.


Maieste, s. majesty, 1. 132, 431.

Mailye, s. mail (armour), 11. 107 (E.). See Male.

Mail-eiss, s. disease, 20. 75. See Male-ess.

Mair, adv. more, 7. 371; mair and mair, more and more, 12. 563.

Mais, pr. s. makes, 6. 234, 12. 252; Maiss, 2. 330, 469; pl. Mais, make, 11. 368; pt. s. Maid, made, 5. 297, 17. 5; 2 p. pt. s. subj. wouldst have made, 1. 428; pp. Maid, made; wes maid, had become, 13. 683; well maid, well shaped, 1. 385. See Ma.

Maist, adj. superl. most, greatest, 1. 131, 459; supreme, 1. 178.

Maistres, mistress, 1. 550.

Maistri, mastery, open violence, 1. 112.

Maistris, s. pl. arts, 19. 182.


Malcoly, s. dudgeon, 16. 128.

Male, s. mail, 11. 107. O.F. maille, from Lat. macula.

Male-ess, s. disease, 20. 73. See Mail-ess. F. mail aise.

Malice, for Mal ese, i.e. disease, 20. 193 (E.).

Man, 2 p. pl. ye must, 7. 137. Icel. manu.

Manance, an error in editions for Manance, 3. 608 (footnote); so also Mannass should rather be Manauass, 17. 664. See Manance.

Manasing, s. menacing, 8. 408.

Manance, s. menacing, threatening, 3. 608; pl. Manauess (a better reading than Manauass), threatens, 17. 664. F. menace; O.F. manache, a threat.

Manausyt, pt. s. menaced, 2. 68; Mannausit, 11. 150.

Mandment, s. commandment, 4. 85, 332. It occurs in P. Plowman.

Mane, s. main, strength, 5. 454, 6. 318.

Maner, s. manner, 1. 4, 11. 501; Maneir, 7. 220.

Maner, s. manor, mansion, 16. 337.

Manerlik, adv. mannerly, correctly, properly, 3. 72.

Mangery (E.), s. feast, 20. 67. It occurs in P. Plowman, C. 13. 46.

Manheid, s. manhood, valour, 3.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

162. 6. 122, 7. 223, 15. 151, 19. 105; Manhede, 19. 589.
Mankynly, s. human nature, 4. 530.
Manland, s. mainland, 3. 339.
Manly, adv. in a manly manner, 2. 486, 14. 275, 282 (E.); Manlily, 8. 313 (E.); Manleye, 3. 149.
Mannasyng, s. threatening, menace, 4. 528, 6. 621.
Mannausit, pt. pl. menacing, 11. 150. See Manausyt.
Mannys, s. Manland, 5. 296, 16. 303, 20. 129*; Manredyn, 16. 303 (E.); 20. 129* (E.). The latter is perhaps the more correct form; cf. the A.S. suffix -ræðen.
Manteym, v. to maintain, 4. 573; Manteym, 10. 779, 11. 318, 11. 281 (E.); Manteyme, 10. 184 (E.). 16. 34; pt. s. Mantemyt, maintained, 10. 289, 20. 605; pl. 13. 280, 15. 52.
Mantill, s. mantle, cloak, 5. 317, 19. 672.
Mar, adj. more, longer, greater (with reference to size rather than number, and frequently used after the preposition but, i.e. without), 1. 142, 2. 12, 12. 314; less and more, all, 5. 338; in less and more, in every way, 4. 568.
Mar, v. to mar, spoil, 17. 930.
Marchandiss, s. merchandise, 9. 440.
Marchand-shippis, s. pl. merchant ships, 19. 193.
Marcheand, pres. part. bordering upon, 1. 99. See below.
Marchis, s. pl. marches, i.e. borders, 15. 403, 431, 531; 16. 334, 17. 221. Icel. mark, A.S. meare, a mark, boundary.
Marrass, s. morass, marsh, 6. 55, 11. 287; pl. Marrass (or Marrasis), morasses, marshes, 8. 35. O.F. marois, mareis, F. marais.
Marschall, s. marshal, i.e. steward, 2. 4, 11. 456, 13. 54, 89.
Martirdome, slaughter, 6. 289, 8. 58; massacre, 18. 326.
Martymes, Martinmas, 9. 127.
Mas, s. pl. maces, 11. 600; Mase, 13. 17 (E.); Masis, 11. 600 (E.). O.F. mace, pl. maces.
Masonis, s. pl. masons, 17. 937.
Mast, adj. superl. most (with reference to size or importance, not often to number), principal, chief, 5. 446, 8. 11, 9. 421; greatest, 11. 470, 17. 95, 316, 470, 818. See Maist, and Forss.
Mast, adv. most, 11. 244, 408.
Masteris, s. pl. masters, 4. 411.
Masterit, pt. s. mastered, overcame, 7. 211.
Mastrice, s. mastery, superiority, superior forces, 4. 521; a feat of skill, 6. 566. (A sing. sb., to be distinguished from the succeeding one.) O.F. maistrie, skill.
Mastry, s. mastery, a difficult feat, 4. 706; force, 7. 354; pl. Mastriss, forces, 18. 260. O.F. maistrie skill.
Mate, adj. dispirited, 17. 794. O.F. mat, feeble, dispirited.
Mater, s. matter, cause, 4. 216, 11. 320; Mater. 3. 301.
Maturite, s. slowness, deliberation, 11. 583.
Mawch, s. kinsman, 15. 274*. Icel. mágr, A.S. mag, a kinsman.
Mawite, s. wickedness, 4. 730; malicious intent, 6. 524; Mavite, 6. 212, 19. 235; Mawyte, evil, guile, 1. 126, 19. 235 (E.). O.F. maunte.
Mawyte, Mauritie, errors in 6. 252 (footnote).
May, adj. pl. more in number, 1. 458, 2. 229. See Ma.
May, pr. s. is able; see Mychtis; 3. 366.
Mayn, s. main, strength, 1. 444, 2. 38. 6. 261, 9. 152, 19. 452; Mayne, 10. 634. See Main.

Mayn, s. moan, lament, 5. 175, 15. 235; Mayne, 20. 277.

Maynteym, v. to maintain, 2. 189, 11. 263; Mayntene, 8. 252, 10. 184; pr. pl. subj. Maynteyme, may maintain, 13. 709; pt. s. Mayntemyt him, maintained himself, 2. 486. See Manteme.

Mayr, adj. more, 1. 39.

Mayr, adv. more, 7. 555. See Mar.

Mayss, pr. s. makes, causes, 1. 226, 510; pl. make, 1. 249. See Mais.

Mayst, adv. most, 1. 46. See Maist.

Meased, pp. moderated, 16. 134 (H.).

Meeke, adj. great, 2. 245*. See Mekill.

Meil, s. meal, 5. 398, 505.


Meite, s. meat, 3. 393. See Met.


Mekly, adv. meekly, 11. 258.

Melland, pres. pt. mixing, mingling, 16. 65. O.F. mester, meller, to mix.

Mellè, s. an affray, fight, battle, contest, combat, 6. 361, 635; 7. 360, 622, 630; 10. 184, 433; 11. 379, 497; 13. 401, 14. 63, 232; 15. 367; 16. 188, 515; 18. 185; originally a mixture, medley, 5. 404; pl. Melleis, conflicts, 17. 120. O.F. meslee, medlee, mellee, from the verb mester, which from Low Lat. miscelure, a frequentative of Lat. miscere, to mix, mingle. Our medley answers to the O.F. form medlee; whilst the O.F. mellee has clearly given rise to the modern 'mill' in the sense of fight.


Mellyne, s. medley, 5. 406. See Melle.


Mencione, mention, 6. 494, 17. 469.


Menge, s. company, 2. 75, 227, 475; 3. 39; Mengne, host, 3. 105. See Menge.


Mennys, gen. pl. men's, 1. 583, 2. 218.

Menovyns, s. pl. minnows, 2. 577.


Menskfully, adv. honourably, 19. 86. See above.

Menskly, for Menskfully, 19. 86 (E.).

Menying, s. remembrance, 4. 326. See Menys.

Menying, s. lamentation, lit. moaning, 13. 483, 15. 238.

Menys on, imp. pl. remember, think upon, 12. 269. See Meyn. A.S. mēnian, to think of, mean.


Menge, s. a company of followers, train, band, host, 2. 509; a few menge, a small band, 5. 15; Menghe, 2. 177, 4. 390, 6. 388, 11. 427, 16. 375. O.F. maisne, meisne, meignue, a band, troop.

Mercy, an error in E. for Mastry, 13. 412 (footnote).

Merdale, s. pack of camp-followers,
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

lit. a dirty crew, 9. 249. See the note.

Meritis, s. pl. merits, deserts, 15. 516.


Merk-shot, s. a mark-shot, i.e. the distance between the marks or butts in practising archery, 12. 33.

Merring, s. marring, injury, 19. 155. See below.

Merrys, pr. s. mars, spoils, wears away, 1. 271. See Mar.

Mery, adv. merry; mak merye, 10. 390.

Mesour, s. moderation, 16. 323. F. mesure.

Mess, s. mass, 11. 376, 384.

Mess, s. (-mas); Seint Johnnis mess, St John’s mas, St John’s day, 10. 816. See above.

Messingeris, s. pl. messengers, 1. 138.

Mesur, s. measure, 1. 570; moderation, 9. 661; our mesur, beyond measure, 17. 810; at all mesure, in every proportion, 10. 251.

Mesurabil, adj. moderate, middle-sized, 10. 280.

Mesurit, pp. measured, 17. 617.

Met, s. meat, food, 3. 316, 4. 64; 7. 153, 9. 333; dinner, 7. 268.

Metyng, s. meeting, 3. 15, 8. 242.

Meyk, adj. meek, 1. 300.

Meyn, v. to remember, be mindful of, 16. 525; Meyne, 15. 351; 1 p. s. pr. Meyn, I think of, remember, 12. 291; Meyne, I make mention of, 10. 736. See Menys. A.S, mænæ, to think of.

Meyne, v. to moan, lament, 15. 237. See Menyt.

Meyt, v. to meet, 3. 413, 15. 359. See Meit.

Meyt, s. meat, 3. 361. See Met.

Misure, pt. s. subj. should go amiss, should fail, 10. 529 (E., H.).

Misykand, adj. displeasing, 17. 830 (H.).

Misteir, s. trade, craft, 17. 938; Mister, 17. 435. See Mister.

Mister, s. trade, 17. 435; Misteir, 17. 938. O.F. mestier, F. métier; Lat. ministerium.

Mister, s. need, 11. 452, 17. 743; 753. Cf. Swed. mista, Dan. miste, to miss, to lose.

Mistraisted, pt. pl. mistrusted, suspected, 10. 327 (H.).

Moble, s. moveable property, in E., 5. 275 (footnote)

Mocht, pt. s. might, could, 1. 298, 7. 120.

Moder, s. mother, 4. 241.


Mole, s. the ‘mull’ of Cantire, 3. 696. Gaelic maol, a promontory.


Mone, ger. to have remembrance, 19. 526. Icel. mnut, to remember.

Mone, adj. many, 1. 523.

Monest, pt. pl. admonished, 12. 379 (E.).

Monesting, s. admonishing, exhortation, 20. 412 (E.); pl. Monestings, 4. 533 (footnote).

Moneth, s. month, 15. 78.

Montane, mountain, 10. 24.

Monteyle, for Montane, 11. 601 (E.).

Mony, adj. many, 1. 336.

Monymentis, s. pl. documents, 20. 44 (E.).

Monys, gen. moon’s, 6. 216. See Moyn.


Mor, adj. greater, 10. 199. See Mar.
Morn, s. morrow, 1. 601; to-morn, to-morrow, 1. 621.

Morsellis, s. pl. morsels, 9. 398.

Moss, s. a moss, moor, bog, 8. 167, 19. 733; pl. Mossis, mosses, 8. 173.

Mot, imp. s. 3 p. may he, 4. 26.

See Mocht.

Mounth, the Grampians, 8. 393 (E.).

Mow, s. a heap of corn, 4. 117.

Mowcht, pt. s. might, could, 16. 371 (E.); pl. 19. 439. See Moucht.

Mowence, s. mutation, change, 1. 134. O.Fr. muance. (Jamieson's explanation is quite wrong.)

Moyn, s. the moon, 4. 617, 6. 100; Moyne, 4. 127.

Mude, s. courage, 19. 622. A.S. mōd.

Murnyn, s. mourning, lament, 2. 469; Murnyng, 3. 350, 13. 648.

Mute, for Mwt, q. v., 13. 60 (E.).

Mwbill, s. moveable goods, chattels, property, 5. 275. F. meubles.

Mwde, s. mood, 20. 203. See Mude.

Mwdy, adj. proud, courageous, 20. 394. See Mody.

Mwr, s. moor, 13. 552; Mwre, 7. 108. A.S. mōr.

Mwryt, pp. walled, blocked (up), 4. 164. F. mur, a wall.

Mwt, 1 p. s. pr. I treat of, tell, 13. 60. Originally a law term; A.S. mōtan, to plead; mōt, an assembly.

Mycht, s. might, 1. 12, 402, 607; 5. 174; at thar mychtis, to the best of their power, 3. 190; all mychtis may, can do all things, 3. 366.

Myclty, adj. mighty, 1. 474.

Myd-caurse, middle of the causey or causeway, 18. 182.

Myddis, s. midst, 15. 167.

Myndis, s. midst, 15. 167.


Mydmorne, s. mid-morn, mid-morrow, 9. 587, 14. 206.

Mydsummer, Midsummer, 10. 821.

Mydwart, s. middle; in mydwart, in the middle, 3. 682.

Mydwatter, Mid watter, errors in editions for Mydwart, 3. 682 (footnote). See above.

Myldly, adv. mildly, 11. 259.

Myle, s. mile, 7. 525.

Myn, poss. pron. my, 1. 163.

Myne, v. to mine; myne down, undermine, 10. 771; ger. to undermine, 17. 600.

Myrakill, a miracle; to myrakill, as a miracle, 17. 825; pl. Myrakils, 17. 875.

Myrk, adj. dark, 5. 21, 9. 373, 10. 558, 620. Icel. myrkur, dark.

Myrknes, s. darkness, 5. 106.

Myrthis, s. pl. (as sing.), mirth, joy, 16. 237.

Myschance, mishap, misfortune, 1. 221; Myschans, 9. 272, 15. 251.

Myscheiff, s. misfortune, 2. 45; mishap, 1. 310, 3. 254, 4. 159, 11. 502; evil case, 12. 400, 13. 627; peril, 11. 605; ill fate, sad end, 10. 105, 19. 71. O.F. meschief.

Mys-dyd, pt. s. did amiss, 2. 43.

Mysfall, v. to mishap, to come to evil, 12. 365.

Mysliking, s. displeasure, vexation, 3. 516. See Liking.

Myssit, pt. s. missed, 12. 50, 19. 504, 597.

Myst, s. mist, 9. 577.

Mysteir, v. to be necessary, 17. 215. Formed from the sb. myster.

See Mister.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 701

Mysteris, s. pl. crafts, arts, trades, 'misteries,' 12. 414, 17. 542. See Mister.

Mystir, adj. lacking, needful, 4. 631. See Mystir.

Mystrowing, s. suspicion, 10. 329.

Mystrowit, pt. s. mistrusted, suspected, 10. 327.

Myt, s. a mite, a wee bit, 3. 198, 12. 188.

Na, adj. no, 1. 15, 59, 371.

Na, conj. nor, 1. 16, 233, 318; 3. 496, 4. 119; than, 3. 229, 6. 538; na they war, but they were, 5. 372.

Na war, had it not been for, but for, 7. 218; were it not for, 6. 342; Na war it, had it not been, 3. 642; Na war, except that, 8. 83.

Nacioun, s. nation, 10. 331.

Nakit, adj. naked, 13. 459; Nakyt, unarmed, 7. 330, 10. 431, 13. 98, 19. 568. (It generally means 'unprovided with defensive armour'.)

Nakyn, of no kind, 2. 168, 4. 116, 9. 143; nakyn wiss, way of no kind, no way, 5. 268; na kyn thing, lit. a thing of no kind, in no degree, 5. 362; Nakin, 10. 703 (E.).

Namly, adv. especially, 4. 763, 5. 393.

Nane, adj. none, 1. 129, 173; no, 12. 205.

Nanys, for the, adv. for the nonce, 10. 58. The old form was for then anes, for the once, where then is the dat. case of the article.

Narrow, adj. narrow, 10. 18.

Narrowit, pt. s. grew narrow, 16. 381.

Nave, s. fist, 16. 129. See Nevis.

Na-viss, adv. in no wise, 6. 594.

Nawyn, s. shipping, 3. 393.

Naylis, s. pl. nails, 3. 459.

Nayme, s. name, 10. 153.

Ne, not (with verbs), 1. 293.

Ne war, conj. had it not been that, but for that, 2. 424. See Na war.

Ned, s. need, extremity of peril, great danger, 2. 231.

Nedill, s. needle, i.e. magnetic needle, compass, 5. 23.

Nedlyngis, adv. necessarily, of necessity, 9. 725. The suffix -lyngis is adverbial, and not uncommon in Middle English.

Nedyt, pt. s. was needful, needed, 3. 692, 19. 213; pl. Nedit, were necessary, 17. 352.

Necfe, s. fist, 16. 129 (H.). See Nevis.

Neid, s. need, necessary business, 1. 254.

Neid, adj. needful, 10. 576.


Neid, v. to need, 13. 46.


Neir, adv. nearly, 5. 44, 12. 105.

Neir, adv. comp. nearer, 16. 258.

Neirhand, adv. near, 6. 381, 16. 538; nearly, close, 9. 129; prep. close to, 9. 685.

Neist, adj. superl. next, nearest, 1. 55: Neyst, 1. 63; Neist, next, following, 10. 821 (E.).

Nekbame, neck-bone, 1. 218. (Read nekkbame, in three syllables.)

Nemmyt, pp. named, appointed, 8. 215, 10. 387. A.S. nemman, to name, call.

Ner, adj. near, 1. 380.

Ner, adv. nearly, 1. 345, 2. 199, 7. 568.

Ner, adv. comp. nearer; ner and ner, nearer and nearer, 3. 606, 6. 88, 91.

Ner, prep. near; ner hand, near at hand, 3. 716, 12. 108 (E.). See Neirhand.

Nethir, adj. lower, 10. 21.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Nethring, s. abasement, 19. 155
(E.). A.S. niðrian, to abase.

Neuir, adv. never, 1. 166.


Nevis, s. pl. fists, 20. 257; Newys, 3. 581; Newffys, 20. 257 (E.). The
sing. appears as Nave, 16. 129; New, 16. 129 (E.); Neefe, 16. 129
(H.). Icel. hæfr, the fist.


New, s. nief, fist, 16. 129 (E.). See Nevis.

Newfys, s. pl. fists, 20. 257 (E.). See Nevis.

Newlingis, adv. newly, soon, in E., 5. 122 (footnote); Newlingis, 14. 86, 19. 375*.
(Cf. Nedlingis.

Newo, for Nevo, 11. 440 (E.).


Newys, s. pl. fists, hands, 3. 581. See Nevis.

Neych, v. to approach, 17. 419
(E.).

Neyd, adv. of necessity, 14. 108. See Neid.

Neyst, adj. superl. next, 14. 21 (E.). See Nest.

Nigramansy, s. necromancy, 4. 747. Lat. nigromantia, now called
'the black art'; an odd corruption of the Greek.

No, conj. nor, 4. 212, 653; 7. 363, 8. 481, 9. 375.

Nobill, adj. noble, 11. 218.

Noblay, s. nobility, noble rank, 8. 211, 15. 271 (E.); Nobillay, 8. 211
(C.); 9. 95, 17. 225. O.F. nobilité, noblete.

Nobleis, gen. pl. nobles', 2. 182.

Nocht, adv. not, 1. 58, &c.; nocht
but, only, merely, 1. 2.

Nocht-for-thi, adv. nevertheless, notwithstanding, 2. 39, 3. 124, 4. 282, 5. 563, 7. 220, &c. (Very
common.) A.S. ná for pf, not on that account.

None, s. noon (but probably an
error for mone = moon), 4. 617
(footnote).

Norist, pp. nourished, exercised, 19. 164. See Nwrist.

North, adj. northern, 19. 121; north half, the north side (of), 19. 316, 20. 325.

Northir, adj. northern, 17. 846.

Not, s. employment, 13. 173. A.S. notu, use.

No-thing, s. nothing, 9. 164.

Nothir, conj. neither, 1. 500.

Nothir, an error in J. for Noy, 6. 666 (footnote).

Nouthir, conj. neither, 9. 41, 11. 412, 18. 534.

Nouthir, adv. not at all, 6. 522.

Novelreis, s. pl. novelties, 19. 394.
(Occurs in Chaucer's Squieres Tale.)

Noy, v. to vex, annoy, harm, 6. 666; pr. s. Noyis, grieves, 20. 506
(E.); pres. pt. Noyand, vexing, 18. 554. O.F. nuire, to injure.

Noy, s. annoyance, trouble, 3. 554, 10. 155*. O.F. nuire, to injure,
Lat. nucere.

Noyis, s. noise, 5. 116, 6. 102, 7. 338, 13. 34, 19. 553, 564; Noyis, 10. 411. See Noy.

Noyne, s. noon, 17. 130, 397, 659.

Noyus, adj. noisome, difficult, 19. 742. See Noy.

Nuk, s. nook, 17. 93 (E.); Nwke, nook, corner, 17. 93.

Nwrist, pp. nourished, 6. 487. See Norist.

Nwrtour, s. nurture, artificial con-
trol or teaching, 4. 732.

Nycete, s. folly, a piece of folly, 7. 379 (E.). See Nysste.

Nycht, s. night, 2. 552; on nychtis,
by nights, by night, 7. 506.
Nyctbur, neighbour, 1. 87; Nychtbour, 16. 478; pl. Nychtbowris, 20. 273 (E.).

Nychtingle, a nightingale, 5. 4.

Nychtystale (E.), s. night-time, 19. 495. Used by Chaucer, Prol. 97. Cf. Icel. náttartal, a tale or number of nights.

Nygramansour, s. necromancer, 4. 242. See Nigramansy.

Nynt, ord. ninth, 19. 527.

Nysste, s. a nicety, i.e. a folly, 7. 370.

Nyt, pt. pl. denied, 1. 52. F. nier, to deny.


Obeyssand, pres. part. as adj. obedient, 4. 603, 8. 10, 10. 132, 258.

Oblesteris, s. pl. (a bad spelling for arblasteris), men armed with ar- blasts or crossbows, 17. 236. See note on p. 601.

Obstakill, s. obstacle, 16. 260 (E.).

Occisione, s. slaughter, 14. 220.

Occupy, v. to possess, 1. 98, 111, 152; 9. 698; pr. pl. 4. 524; pt. s. Occupyit, 9. 675.

Ocht, s. aught, 3. 282.

Of, prep. with, 4. 319, 345; 8. 228, 16. 634; out of, 16. 352, 17. 765; for (after pray), 19. 100; some of, 14. 362, 16. 145; as of, as amongst. 5. 493; of befor, formerly, 19. 260.

Of, adv. off, 19. 332.

Off, prep. of, 1. 27, &c.; with, 11. 47. A.S. of. See Of.

Off lyve, alive, 1. 293.

Of-new, adv. anew, lately, 14. 92. (Used by Chaucer.)


Oftymis, adv. oft-times, 4. 230.

Oist, Oyst, s. a host, body of men, 7. 337, 338 (E.).

On, prep. in, 1. 4; maid on, made up, 5. 54; guhy maid thou on. why didst thou make up, 5. 52; on lif, alive, 18. 154; on raw, in a row, 17. 348; on stray, astray, 13. 195; on wry, awry. 4. 705.

On-anec, ade. anon, immediately, 4. 86, 364.

On-bak, ade. aback, 15. 484. A.S. ómboc, backward.

Onpayit, pp. unpaid, 1. 257.

On-till, prep. until, to, 4. 303.

Ony, adj. any, 1. 60.

Oost, s. host, army, 13. 263. See Ost.


Opynly, ade. openly, 20. 498. See Oppinly.

Opynnyng, s. opening, 3. 532.

Or, conj. ere, 1. 297, 535; 2. 484, &c.; or cuir, before ever 16. 429.


Ordlayn, v. to provide, 1. 358. See Ordanit.
Ordinans, s. ordinance, 11. 30; Ordinans, order, arrangement, 17. 101; Ordynance, arrangement, 1. 79.

Ost, s. host, army, 2. 559, 3. 15.

Othir, adj. different, 1. 392; othir sum, some others, 1. 52.

Otow, prep. out from, 8. 90; beyond, 8. 448; written Otowth, 8. 90 (E.). Cf. Swed. utôt, outwards.

Oucht, adv. at all, 2. 123, 7. 252, 9. 749; outbreak, rather long, 15. 428.

Oucht, for Owth, prep. above, 10. 746 (E.).

Ouerstrowed, pp. overspread, 14. 443 (H.).

Ournair, adv. lit, more upward; hence, more backward, somewhat backwards, 6. 632. See Owrn-mar.

Oulk, s. week, 14. 132 (H.); pl. Ouulkes, weeks, 9. 359 (H.). (Here ul is a misprinting for w, due to a misreading; oulk stands for ourk, q.v.)

Our, prep. over, above, 1. 232, 2. 78, 3. 409, 420, 428, &c. Our thev hand, through their hands, 18. 502.

Our, adv. very, 18. 510; our few, very few, too few, 13. 566; over, across, 9. 405; set our, put off, 11. 31 (rubric).


Our-drawyn, pp. drawn across, 15. 286.

Ourd rift, v. survive, overcome, 4. 661; pp. Ourd riffin, over past, 5. 3; Ourd rivyn, brought to an end, 19. 481.

Our-ga, v. to overcome, become conquerors; our-ga upon, to conquer, 6. 364.

Our-hy, v. to overtake, 3. 737, 6. 598. (Lit. to hasten over.) See Hy.

Ouris, poss. pron. ours, 4. 523, 12. 309.

Our-raid, pt. s. over- rode, rode over, 9. 513, 13. 736.

Our-sail, v. to sail across, 3. 686.

Ourstrak, pt. s. struck at, 5. 630.

Ourta, v. to overtake, 3. 97, 6. 593, 10. 80, 18. 325; to advance, 8. 190; Ourtak, 4. 138; to overspread, 11. 125; pp. Ourtane, overtaken, 3. 612, 12. 89; condemned, 19. 55.

Ourthwort, adv. overthwart, across, 8. 172. (Chaucer has overthwart in the Knightes Tale.)

Our-tuk, pt. s. overtook, reached, 2. 381; pl. spread over, occupied, 12. 439; overtook, 6. 440.


Outane, prep. except, besides, 5. 340, 9. 462, 10. 504, 18. 9, 19. 38; Outaken, 13. 482, 17. 15; Ontakin, 5. 397; Outakyn, 5. 413, 6. 407, 9. 664, 10. 705, 733.

Out-cum-myn, s. coming out, sallying out, 4. 361.


Out-our, prep. across, beyond, 8. 323, 10. 157, 19. 314, 744; above, 9. 489; over, 9. 316, 10. 700.

Outrage, s. great injury, 4. 647; disgrace, 19. 304; absurdity, 19. 408.

Outrageous, adj. excessive, extreme, 6. 126, 8. 270, 11. 32.

Outrageous, adv. extremely, 6. 19.

Outraying, s. great misfortune, 18. 182.

Outtak, prep. except, 5. 104. See Outane.

Outyng, s. outing, expedition, 10. 620.

Ovir, adj. upper, 10. 452.

Owcht, s. aught, anything, 1. 251. See Oucht.

Owk, s. a week, 14. 132; pl. Owkis, 9. 359. Cf. Dan. uge, a week.
Owt, prep. out, 2. 199, 352.

Owtakyn, prep. except, 3. 614; Owtane, 2. 185, 473. See Outane.

Owth, prep. from, 11. 614; above, 10. 746; outside, 17. 598. Cf. A.S. ut, out; also A.S. prefix of-, from, out of = G. ent.

Owth, adv. above, 18. 418; beyond, 14. 352.

Owthir, adj. other, 10. 24. See Outhir.

Owtoth, prep. beyond, 8. 448 (E.). See Owto.

Owtrageouss, adj. extreme, 3. 132. See Outrageous.

Owyr-mar, adv. backwards, in retreat, 2. 440. See Ouirmair.

Oxin, s. pl. oxen, 10. 381; Oxyne, 388.

Oysis, pr. pl. use, are used, 11. 227; use, 12. 414; 1 pr. s. pl. Oysis, I used, 10. 565; pp. Oysis, used, 11. 222. F. user.

Oyss, s. use, benefit, 17. 252, 19. 196. O.F. us, use, Lat. usus.

Page, s. a page, 3. 755; 19. 693; a boy, youth, 1. 289.

Pailjownys, s. pl. pavilions, 3. 239, 19. 542. See Paljéonis, Gaelic and Irish pailléum, a tent, contracted from O.Fr. pavillon, a tent.

Palfray, a horse, 2. 118.

Pallions, s. pl. tents, 3. 239 (footnote). See Paljéonis.

Palmesunday, s. Palm Sunday, 5. 335 (H.), (footnote); 15. 100.

Palmys, s. pl. palms, palm-branches (really branches of willow), 5. 312. See Castle Dangerous, cap. xix.

Paljéonis, s. pl. tents, pavilions, 17. 299; Paljéonis, 11. 117, 17. 480; Paljéonis, 11. 139, 12. 461, 19. 386, 391, 514, 561, 566; Paljéonis, 12. 215. See Pailjownys.

Panch, s. paunch, belly, 9. 398. O.F. panche, pance, Lat. acc. panticeum, from nom. pantex.

Pane, s. pain, trouble, 7. 626, 8. 177, 18. 192; pains, 8. 330. F. peine. See Payn.

Pantener, an error in other editions for Pautener, q.v.

Par, for; par cheryte, for charity, 1. 418, 3. 224. O.F. par, for.

Parage, s. lineage, 1. 102, 276. O.F. parage, paraige, rank, noble lineage, noble birth; from O.F. par, a peer.

Paramouris, adv. in the way of love, as a paramour, 13. 485. F. par amours.

Parc, s. park, 13. 230. See Park.

Paris, s. pl. pairs, 13. 463.

Park, s. park, 11. 422. See Parc.

Parleament, parliament, 1. 602.

Part, s. pl. parts, in pl. twa part = two parts, 5. 47; Parteis, pl. parts, parties, 6. 545, 557, 565. See Party.

Partenicy, s. pl. partners, 2. 517.

Partenit, pt. s. pertained, 20. 313.

Partis, s. pl. sides; drew to partis, took sides, 7. 624; Parteis, parts, sides, 10. 75. See Party.

Party, s. part, 2. 215, 3. 461, 4. 640, 6. 537; mast party, chief part, 15. 65; in party, in part, partly, 3. 292; side, 13. 470; pl. Parteis, parts, sides, 10. 75; parties, 6. 557, 565; drew to partis, took sides, 7. 624. See Part, Partis.

Pasch-ewyn, Paschal eve, 15. 105 (E.).


Paske-day, Easter-day, 15. 248.

Paske-evin, Easter eve, 15. 105.

Pask-owk, s. Passover-week, 15. 101. See Owk.

Pass, v. to pass, to go, 6. 504, 8. 178; Pas, 11. 287; pt. s. passed, crossed, 3. 455; surpassed, 5. 465, 9. 504; pl. passed, went, 16. 294, 18. 369; passed, crossed over, 9.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

408, 10. 95; pp. Passit, passed, crossed, 7. 110, 10. 629, 14. 372, 19. 314, 20. 432; passit ar, have passed, 7. 39; passit was, had passed, 6. 80, 584; Passit, past, gone, 13. 563, 16. 319, 19. 230; gone by, 9. 109; pt. s. Past, went, 10. 114; 2 p. s. pr. Passis, thou goest, 2. 127; pres. pt. Passand, surpassing, 5. 198.

Pass, s. a pace, rate of going, 7. 203*.

Pautener, adj. rascally, ribald, 1. 462, 2. 194. "Pautonnier, a lewd, stubborn, or saucy knave;" Cotgrave. "Paltonier, pantonier, homme sans profession ni demeure fixe; homme de mauvaise vie, méchant, hautain, misérable, gueux, coquin;" Burguy. Jamieson explains it rightly, but misprints it pautener.


Payment, payment, i.e. delivery of blows, 6. 148.

Payn, pain, hardship, 1. 309; trouble, 10. 638; but payn, without trouble, 10. 243; Payne, trouble, 10. 640, 635; pl. Paynys, pains, griefs, 2. 517. See Pane.

Payn, v. refl. to take pains, endeavour, 10. 211; Payne, 12. 526, 17. 145, 395; to toll, struggle, 15. 483.

Payss-wouk, the Paschal week, 15. 101 (E.).

Peartly, adv. openly, 10. 315 (H.). See Appertly.

Pedaill, s. rabble, 13. 229 (H.). See Pitaill.

Peill, s. a peel, a fort, small castle, 10. 137, 152, 193, 207, 223, 232, 707; pl. Pelis, 10. 147. Perhaps Gael. peillie, a hut made of earth and branches, and covered with skins (?)

Peir, v. to make equal, 9. 666. O.F. par, equal.

Pennans, s. penance, punishment, 19. 51.

Pennownys, s. pl. pennons, 8. 227, 11. 132*; 11. 465, 12. 461. O.F. penou, a standard, ensign; from Lat. penne.

Pennystane, s. a flat stone, used as a quoit, 13. 581 (E. and H.); Pennystane cast, the distance to which such a stone can be thrown, 16. 383.

Pensalis, s. pl. small pennons, 11. 193; Pensalls, 11. 465 (H.). O.F. penoncel, dim. of pennon, an ensign.

Peralis, s. pl. perils, 4. 146.

Peralous, adj. perilous, 3. 685.

Percass, adv. perchance, accidentally, 2. 530, 3. 481, 7. 307. O.F. per cas, by chance.

Perde, F. per dieu (an oath); used merely to signify verily, indeed, of a sooth, 5. 545, 6. 357, 9. 84, 19. 689.

Perell, s. peril, 7. 193, 10. 590, 12. 529; pl. Perellis, 9. 96; Perellys, 3. 559.

Perelous, adj. perilous, 5. 420, 10. 21, 13. 51; Perellass, 10. 595, 18. 461.

Perfay, for per fay, by my faith, verily, 1. 39, 2. 212, 5. 279, 6. 614, 10. 81, 11. 38, 19. 557. O.F. per fei, by my faith.

Perfit, adj. perfect, 17. 928.

Performyst, pp. performed, 12. 61. O.F. parfornir, to achieve (Roquefort).

Peris, s. pl. peers, equals, 9. 489.

Perplexitè, s. danger, 11. 619.

Perquer, adv. by heart, thoroughly, 1. 238. O.F. per quer, per cuer, by heart.


Persavyng, s. perception, 4. 358, 12. 367; perceiving, sight, 5. 289; being seen, 10. 571, 641; know-
ledge, 6. 572; Persawynge, perception, 1. 596; being seen, 2. 15.
Persawe, v. to perceive, 1. 82; 1 p. s. pr. I perceive, 2. 326.
Persecucione, s. persecution, 4. 5.
Per, adj. brisk, 10. 531.
Per, for Apert, 10. 73 (C.).
Pesabilly, adv. peaceably, 5. 231.
Pess, path, pass, 18. 366, 421, 441.
Pettaill, s. rabble, 11. 238 (E.). See Pitaill.
Petuisly, an error in E, 3. 562 (footnote).
Petwisly, adv. piteously, sadly, 3. 553.
Pik, s. pitch, 17. 611.
Pikkis, s. pl. picks, i.e. pick-axes, 2. 540. See quotation from Lydgate in the Note to I. 528, p. 554.
Pitaill, s. rabble, 13. 229 (E.); Pitàll, 11. 420 (E.). O.F. pietaille, infantry, men of arms on foot, rabble; from O.F. piet, the foot.
Pëtê, pity, 1. 481, 10. 155*, 451; 17. 528; Pitàê, 1. 480.
Pith, s. strength, might, 3. 599.
Pithones, Pythoness, i.e. witch of Endor, 4. 753. (The reading should be Phitones; see the Note, p. 563.)
Pittyt, pp. full of pits, 11. 388 (E.).
Pitwysly, adv. piteously, 3. 549, 14. 413.
Place; left place, lost ground, 13. 271. See Plass.
Plane, adj. plain, open, 19. 49; plane melle, open fight, 18. 79.
Plane, s. plain, 7. 613; pl. Planys, 8. 5, & c. See Planys.
Planer, adj. full, plenary, 1. 624.
Planetis, s. pl. planets, 4. 695.
Planys, s. pl. plains, 2. 496, 8. 5, 132. See Plane.
Plass, s. place, 8. 76, 19. 485; wan plass, gained ground, advanced, 12. 563; left place, lost ground, retreated, 13. 271.
Play, s. pleasure, 5. 73; pl. Playis, games, tricks, 19. 364.
Playyn, adj. plain, flat, 9. 57; open, 11. 551, 630; 19. 45, 410; Playne, flat, 11. 360; open, 2. 254.
Playyn, s. plain, open country, 6. 518, 8. 138, 19. 493; Playne, open ground, 11. 540, 12. 349.
Playne-land, s. plain country lowlands, 11. 337.
Plenëing, s. complaining, 3. 647.
Plesance, pleasure, power to please, 1. 5, 6. O.Fr. plaisance.
Plesand, pres. part. pleasing, pleasant, 1. 10, 208; 10. 282; Plesande, 5. 8. See Pleyss.
Plewch, s. plough, 19. 175.
Pleyss, v. to please, 1. 198. F. plaisir.
Plungyt, pt. pl. plunged, 2. 355; Plungit, 12. 568.
Pollis, s. pl. pools, 12. 395, 404.
Portray, v. to draw, paint, picture, 10. 743 (E. H.); pp. Portrait, painted, 10. 743; moulded, made, proportioned, 10. 281.
Porturat, pp. portrayed, formed, a reading in E. for Portrait, 10. 281.
Possessownis, s. pl. (as sing.) possession, 16. 216.
Potacioune, s. potion, drink, 20. 535.

Pottis, s. pl. pots, i.e. round deep holes, 11. 364, 371; Pottys, 11. 385. Deep, round holes, not very large, are still called pots in Craven, Yorkshire.

Pottit, pp. filled with 'pots' or pits, pitted, 11. 388. See above.

Pouter, adj. poor, 9. 442. See Poir.

Pouerall, s. rabble, a reading in H. for Merdale, 9. 249 (footnote). See above.

Pouerale, s. rabble of camp-followers, 8. 275, 11. 238, 420; Pouerall, 13. 229; Poueraile, rabble, 8. 368. O.F. pourceille, poor people (Roquefort).

Pouerly, adv. poorly, 7. 536.

Pouer, adj. poor, 4. 343, 16. 292; Pouter, 9. 442. O.F. poure, F. puerre. (The u is here probably a v.)

Pouesté, s. power, 5. 165, 8. 236, 9. 4, 757; dominion, 16. 358. O.F. poeste, poestet, from Lat. acc. potestatem, power. See Lege.

Pouète, s. power, an error in E. for Saufi, safety, 10. 442 (footnote). See above.

Powdir, s. dust, 11. 616. F. poudre, Lat. pulvis.

Powerté, s. poverty, 3. 551.

Powesté, s. power, 1. 110, 2. 100, 126; 4. 4, 5, 650, 7. 519; Powesté, 1. 131. See Pouesté.

Poynt, s. right point of time, right moment, 4. 383, 7. 388, 396, 500; adventure, 8. 517; opportunity, 13. 598; time of peril, 16. 278; feat of arms, 9. 631; pl. Poyntis, points, 11. 565; feats, achievements, 10. 341, 16. 499; at poynt, in the right direction, 3. 702 (cf. the points of a compass): at poynt, at all points, fully, 6, 406, 10. 283; in sic poynt, in such good array, 12. 93; into sic poynt, at such a point (of death), 4. 331.

Poynty, s. puny matter, skirmish, 16. 307 (E.). See Puny.


Prayer, prayer, 12. 478.

Prechyt, pt. s. preached to, 3. 299.

Preif, pr. pl. prove, test, shew, 9. 29. See Preuit.


Presand, s. present; in presand, as a present, 18. 542; intill presand, as a present, 18. 170.

Presens, s. presence, 5. 497.

Presentit, pp. presented, 15. 301.


Presit, pp. prized, valued, esteemed, 6. 270. See Friss.

Presoners, s. pl. prisoners, 4. 314; Presoneris, 9. 456, 17. 891.

Presoun, prison, 1. 279, 4. 15, 5. 155; Presoun, 1. 282; Preson, 6. 259.

Press, v. to throng, 19. 79; Press thame, press themselves together, 6. 83; pt. s. Pressit, pressed upon, 12. 133; advanced, 18. 105; pressed, 20. 427; pt. pl. Pressit, pressed, 9. 715; pressed hard on, 18. 421; drove, 17. 641; advanced, 17. 466, 566; charged, 12. 573; ref. hurried, endeavoured, 17. 408; hastened,
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Press, s. distress, 3. 129.
Presomyt, pt. s. presumed, 1. 572, 11. 143.
Preualy, adv. privily, 15. 113. See Preuely.
Preuatè, s. privacy, retirement, 5. 306, 6. 547; secrecy, 11. 478; secret plot, 10. 161; private needs, 5. 572. See Privaty.
Preuè, adj. still, quiet, 4. 382, 498; private, 5. 62; confidential, 9. 227; Preve, privy, still, quiet, 10. 582, 12. 388; folk preve, privy council, 13. 722; preve consell, 11. 270; preve nedis, privy needs, 5. 566. See Prew, Priuè.
Preuè, s. privy, 5. 556.
Preuely, adv. secretly, 9. 314.
Preuit, pt. s. proved, attempted, 10. 342. See Prefit.
Prewè, adj. privy, secretly attached, 5. 404; (men) nearly related, 20. 568; secret, 17. 64; closely hid, 8. 51. See Preuè.
Price, praise, 1. 25. See Priss.
Prid, pride, 1. 408.
Priss, s. praise, fame, renown, 6. 328, 12. 125, 20. 564; price, value, 8. 79. See Pryss.
Privatè, s. privacy, 2. 8. See Preuè.
Priveè, adj. privy, secret, intimate, 1. 544. See Preuè.
Proffer, s. offer, 20. 538.
Prophesye, s. prophecy, 10. 740.
Propir, adj. own, 15. 209.
Proplexitè, s. perplexity, trouble, 12. 530. [A false form; due to confusion between the contractions for pro and per.] See Perplexitè.
Propyrte, peculiarity, peculiar state (of service), 1. 234.
Proud, adj. proud, 19. 561.
Prowe, v. to prove, display, 3. 57.
Prowes, s. prowess, 9. 503.
Prowyt, pt. s. proved, tested, in E., 5. 363 (footnote).
Pruwe, v. to prove, test, essay, 9. 29 (E.).
Pryd, s pride, 12. 223.
Pryme, s. prime (nine o’clock?), 15. 55.
Prysit, pt. s. prized, 11. 58. See Priss.
Pryss, praise, 1. 21, 3. 175.
Pryss, v. to praise; gerund, to pryss = to be praised, 1. 239. See Priss.
Pulaile, s. poultry, 11. 120 (E.). F. pouaille, poultry.
Pulis, s. pl. pools, 12. 395, 404 (E.). See Pollis.
Pund, s. pl. pounds (of money), 18. 521; a thousand pund, 18. 285.
pundelan, s. warrior, hero, 3. 159. The sense is clear, but the etymology doubtful. I can hardly suppose, with Jamieson, that it is the same word with pantaloon! If a mere guess may be made, it seems to me just possible that the word may have been an epithet of a hero, like Fierabras; *pundelan* would, in O. French, be *pui-de-laine*, i.e. fist of wood; cf. Goetz with the iron hand.

Punsoune, a dagger, 1. 545. See the note.

Punże, s. a small matter, a skirmish, 12. 373 (E.); pl. Puñzeis, skirmishes (lit. puny matters), 12. 373. See Punçhe.

Pupill, s. people, 2. 543.

Pur, adj. poor, the poor, 1. 276.

Puraill, s. rabble, 11. 420 (H.); Purall, 11. 238 (H.). See Puerare.

Purchas, v. to acquire, 10. 321, 335; Purchase, to procure, 7. 496; Purchas, to get, 2. 581, 17. 62; to procure, 6. 29; Purches, to acquire, obtain, 1. 433, 2. 572; to find out, 10. 515; *pt. s.* Purchast, procured, 9. 543. O.F. *purchacier*, to procure, obtain.

Purchass, s. endeavour, 5. 534, 10. 513; attempt. 19. 12; contrivance, 19. 32; Purchess, contrivance, 19. 30.

Purchesand, *pres. part.* acquiring, 2. 188.

Purchesyng, s. acquisition, getting of food, 2. 579.


Purpos, s. intent, result of a design, 3. 263; Purpose, purpose, 5. 542.

Purvay, v. to provide, provide for, 4. 64, 5. 74; to provide for oneself, 11. 10, 75; 12. 220; to send, ordain, 18. 58; *pr. pl.* let them provide for themselves, 11. 64; *pt. s.* Purvait, provided, 17. 249; *regt.* Purvayt, provided for himself, 10. 586, 19. 531; *pt. pl.* provided, 11. 76; Purvait, purveyed, 17. 246; *pp.* Purvait, provided, equipped, 4. 168, 11. 14, 12. 326; Purvayt, 14. 193; Purvait, 2. 269; Purwayt, 2. 259; Purwayt, 9. 424 (E.). O.F. *poursuivre*, Lat. *prouidere* (Roquefort).

Purvians, s. provisions, 4. 397.


Pusoune, s. poison, 20. 536 (E.); Pusoune, 1. 533.

Pusoune, *a reading for* Punsoune *in* E.; 1. 545 (footnote).

Put againe, v. to repulse, drive back, 16. 147, 17. 396; *put agane*, driven back, repulsed, 12. 355.

Pwnỳhe, adj. as sb. a small skirmish, 16. 307. See Punçhe.


Pwsoune, poison, 1. 533. See Pusoune.

Pykis, s. *pl.* pikes, 17. 344.

Pyne, s. pining, pain, suffering, punishment, 1. 212; pain, misery, 2. 494, 5. 73. A.S. *pin*, pining, suffering.


Quantitè, a great number, a quantity, 6. 235, 11. 206, 473; 12. 101; distance, 6. 76.

Quatribill, *adj.* quadruple, 18. 30 (E.).


Quer, s. choir, 20. 293 (E.); *numbered* 20. 287 in P; Queyr, 19. 293.

Questionyng, *a reading in* E., 6. 87, 94 (footnotes). See also the note. *Questionyng* is a misreading; the scribe was thinking of *questing*; see Quhestyng.

Quethirand, *for* Quhedirand, 17. 684 (E.).

Queyn, s. queen, 20. 99; Queyne, 20. 85.

Queyer, s. a choir, 19. 293. See Quer.
Quh-, answers to E. wh-, and A.S. hw-.

Quhu, pron. whosoever, whoever, 1. 391, 445; 2. 388; 6. 171; 16. 599. (Not used as a simple relative in the nom. case) *Gen.* Quhais, whose, 17. 28; abl. or dat. Quham, 4. 111.


Quharfor, wherefore, 1. 308.

Quhar-throuch, whereby, 1. 170; Quhar-throu, 7. 89.

Quhat, pron. what, 1. 93, 141; adv. how, 1. 215; Quhat for, what with, 13. 211, 214.


Quhat-sa-euyr, whatsoever, 2. 41.

Quhat-to, to what, 11. 23.


Quheill, s. a wheel, 13. 637; Quhelis, gen. wheel’s, 13. 647; pl. Quhelis, 17. 609. A.S. hwéol.

Quhen, adv. when, 1. 250, 15. 315.

Quhenar, adj. fewer, 11. 605. See Quheynye.

Quhestlyng, s. baying (of a dog), 6. 87. See Qhhestlyng.

Quibit, adj. white, 8. 232. A.S. hwít.

Quhom, dat. to whom, 4. 21. See Quha.

Quhone, adj. few, 9. 163 (E.). See Quhoyn.

Quhone, s. a few, 8. 368 (E.). See Quhoyn.

Quhonnar, adj. fewer, 11. 605 (E.). See Quhoyn.

Quhow, adv. how, rubric, p. 3. A.S. hwéu, há.

Quhoyn, adj. few, 9. 163, 15. 363, 17. 135. Cf. A.S. hwéu, a little; hwéntic, small; hwénu, hwéne, a little.

Quhyne, adv. whence, 7. 240.

Quhytys, s. pl. an error for quhyntys, or rather quyntyss, i.e. devices, 13. 183 (E.). See Quyntis.

Quit, adj. free, 18. 543.

Quonk, pt. s. quoke, quaked, shook, 2. 365.

Quyntis, s. cognisances, armorial devices, 13. 183; Quyntiss, 11. 194. O.Fr. coïntise. See the note.
Quytly, *adv.* freely, securely, 10. 548; freely, 10. 824; wholly, 9. 651, 18. 484.

Quyrbollè, s. boiled leather, i.e. hardened leather, 12. 22. Fr. *cuir bouilli.* See the note.

Quyt, v. to quit, i.e. requite, repay, 2. 30; to require, 2. 438.

Quyt, *an error in E.* for Quytly, 9. 651 (*footnote*).

Rabutyt, *pp.* defeated, repulsed, 12. 168 (E.). O.F. *rebouter,* to repulse; from O.F. *boter,* to push. See Rebutyt.

Rad, *pp.* rode, 4. 28; *pt.* s. 3. 29. See Raid.


Radnes, s. fear, 9. 104. See above.


Rair, v. to roar, 4. 418, 5. 97; *Rar.* 10. 685.

Raiss, s. race, current, 3. 687; swift course, rush, 5. 638; *Rase.* 3. 697. A.S. *ræs,* a race, a stream.


Raith, *adv.* soon, quickly, 4. 45. See Rath.


Randoun, s. swift course, rush, only in phr. *in a randoun,* i.e. in a furious course, 6. 139, 17. 694, 18. 130; *intill a randone,* 19. 596; *in randoun richt,* with downright force, 5. 632. O.F. *randon,* force, impetuosity; à *randon,* with force and violence, impetuously.

Rangale, s. rabble, camp-followers, 8. 198 (E.), 11. 111, 12. 474; Rangald, 8. 198; Rangall, 13. 341. Cf. Icel. *hrang,* din, tumult, as of a crowd.

Range; *on range,* in a rank, in a row, in "Indian file," 10. 379.


Ranowrne, renown, 8. 520.

Ransoune, s. ransom, 4. 83, 11. 577, 13. 72.

Ransownyt, *pt.* pl. ransomed, 2. 466; *pp.* Ransonyt, 18. 520.

Ranyt, *pt.* s. it rained, 3. 235.

Rapis, *s. pl.* ropes, 10. 360, 557; 15. 280; Rapy, 3. 691, 19. 541.

Rar, v. to roar, 7. 327, 10. 685. See Rair. A.S. *riaria,* to roar.

Rase, s. race, current, 3. 697. See Raiss.


Ratret, s. retreat, 17. 471; Retret, 17. 460.


Raw, s. row, rank, 11. 431; *on raw,* in a row, 5. 590, 8. 450, 12. 36, 17. 348, 19. 393.

Rawnge, *for Range,* i.e. row, 10. 379 (E.).


Rayne, s. rain, 3. 241.


INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 713

Reale, adj. royal, 13. 30 (E.). O.F. Real, Lat. regalis.

Realtè, s. royalty, royal state, 2. 183. See below.

Reawtè, royalty, royal blood, 1. 45; royalty, 1. 164; kingdom, 1. 593; royalty, 20. 87 (E.). O.F. reiaute, reialte, royalty. See Rialtè.

Rebaldaill, the rabble, common fellows, 1. 103. See below.

Rebaldis, s. pl. ribalds, wretches, 16. 137. O.F. ribald.

Rebelland, pres. pt. as adj. rebellious, 9. 649, 10. 129 (E.).

Rebouris, at, i.e. in great dislike, 13. 486 (E.). See the note, p. 536.

Reboyting, s. repulse, 12. 339.

Reboytit, pp. repulsed, 12. 84, 168, 176, 183, 336; 16. 658, 17. 25, 461; 18, 335. See below.

Rebuting, s. defeat, 12. 339 (E. and H.). See below.

Rebutyt, pp. repulsed, 2. 468, 16. 658 (E.); Rebutit, 7. 617, 13. 77, 14. 318. O.F. rebutouter, to repulse; from boter, to push.

Recomfort, v. to encourage, 9. 97.

Reconforting, s. comfort, encouragement, 11. 499, 14. 190.

Reconsalit, pp. reconciled, 9. 740.


Recordyt, pp. recorded, told, 1. 72.

Recour, s. recovery, 2. 543.

Recoveryng, s. recovery, 3. 16.

Recryand, adj. recreant, acknowledging oneself to be a coward, cowardly, 6. 258, 13. 108.

Red, s. rede, counsel, 1. 348, 3. 494. See Rede, s. and Will.

Red, 1 p. s. pr. I advise, 12. 325, 18. 32. See Rede, v.


A.S. kreddan, to rid, deliver; cf. G. retten, to save.


Rede, s. counsel, 1. 546, 568; tune to rede, adopted the advice, 12. 389, 17. 267. A.S. réd, counsel, advice.


Rede, adj. red, 2. 361. A.S. red, red.

Redyit, pt. pl. refl. got themselves ready, 9. 171.

Redys, pr. pl. read, 1. 17, 2. 523.

Refè, v. to reave, take away, 3. 720. See Reft.

Reff, for Reif, 5. 118 (footnote).

Refrenze, v. to refrain, 4. 731.


Reft, pt. s. refl., took away, 16. 418; him refl. deprived him of, 2. 36; hereft, 15. 192; pt. pl. Reft, took away, 3. 715.

Refuss, v. to shrink from, 12. 528; pp. Refusit, shrunk from, 12. 205.

Regnyt, pt. s. reigned, 13. 698.


Rehers, v. to rehearse, tell, 10. 346; Reherss, 8. 518.

Reid, s. counsel, advice, 2. 122. See Rede.

Reid, v. to read, 2. 84; to speak, 10. 276; pr. s. subj. may he advise, 11. 53.

Reif, s. what can be refl., i.e. plunder, 5. 118 A.S. réif, plunder.

Reif, v. to plunder, 16. 551. A.S. réifan, to plunder.

Reiffar, s. robber, 19. 667 (E.).

Reik, v. to reach, 17. 419.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Renomme, s. renown, 4. 774, 9. 489 (E.). O.F. renume, renown, renown.

Reik, s. smoke, 4. 130. A.S. reác, réc, reck, smoke. See Reyk.

Reiosyng, s. rejoicing, 11. 415.


Reirward, s. rearguard, 8. 71, 342; 16. 58.

Rek, 1 p. s. pr. I reck, I care, 7. 24 (H.).


Releyit, pp. provided with relays or extra stores, 4. 456. See Relay in Richardson.

Relit, pt. pl. recled, 12. 513; Relyt, 14. 69 (E.); pres. pt. Reland, reeling, giving way, 8. 328.


Relyng, s. reeling, wavering, 13. 265; lack of steadiness, 12. 110; Relying (for Relyng), recoiling, 12. 110 (E.).


Rengze, s. rein, 2. 415. See Renze.

Renk, s. rank (of fighting men), 2. 365. See Note, p. 553.

Renommé, s. renown, 4. 774, 9. 489 (E.). O.F. renumeé, renown.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 715


Resawyt, pt. s. received, 2. 163, 3. 661. See Resaif.

Rescours, s. rescue, 3. 76, 13. 369, 583; 17. 901 (E.); Rescours, 13. 368, 19. 642. O.F. rescouss, succour; see escorre in Burguy.

Reserwyt, pt. s. reserved, kept secret, 1. 132.

Reset, s. place of refuge, 5. 415, 6. 447, 10. 139. O.Fr. recet, a place of refuge; Burguy. Derived from Lat. reciperere.

Resett, an error in E. for Resettit, 9. 282 (footnote).

Resettit, pp. received, harboured, 9. 282. From reset, q.v.

Resisteris, s. pl. resisters, foes, 18. 214.


Reskewing, s. rescue, 5. 419.

Reskowress, s. rescue, succour, 17. 901. See Rescours.

Respit, s. delay, 8. 344.


Retennew, s. retinue, 15. 429.

Reuersit, pt. s. reversed, turned over, 16. 417; Reversit, 15. 191.

Revar, s. river, 14. 337.


Rewarding, s. remuneration, 9. 321.

Revede, pp. reft, 5. 12. (The more usual form is reft; reved is older.)

Reveling, s. revelation, 10. 738.

Revit, pt. pl. robbed, took away, 13. 23. See Refe.

Rew, v. to have pity, 16. 280; to cause (him) to repent, 2. 327; pt. s. Rewit, rued, 4. 593.

Rewardit, pt. s. rewarded, 10. 254.

Rewalte, s. kingdom, 3. 60. See Reate.

Rewis, s. pl. streets, 14. 221; Rewys, 15. 71. F. rue, a street.

Rewlit, pt. s. ruled, 8. 127.

Rewth, s. pity, compassion, ruth, 3. 534. See Rew.

Rewyn, pp. riven, i.e. had their clothes torn, 2. 510.

Reyk, s. smoke, vapour, 4. 124. See Reik.

Reynxe, s. rein, 11. 175 (E.). See Renye.

Riall, adj. royal, i.e. great, 12. 557. See Reale.

Rialte, s. royal power, state, pomp, 16. 48, 20. 87, 132. See Reaute.

Ribalds, s. pl. ribalds, 1. 103 (footnote).

Riche, v. to enrich, 13. 743.

Richess, s. riches, wealth, 13. 450*, 449.

Richt, s. justice; richt vald, justice would require, 16. 598; at all richt, in every suitable way, 10. 312; all at richt, in good order, 14. 171.

Richt, adv. very, right, 15. 82; downright, 5. 632.

Richtwisnes, s. righteousness, 20. 555; Richtwisnes, 10. 289. A.S. richtwisnes.

Rid (see Ryde), 12. 557 (E.).


Rif, v. to rive, 20. 255, 258.

Rif, an error in C. for Drif, 7. 66 (footnote).

Rik, s. kingdom, 8. 234. A.S. rice, power, a kingdom.

INDEX IV.—Glossary to the Bruce.

Rinke, a misreading; 2. 365 (footnote). See note, p. 553.

Rinnand, pres. pt. running, 2. 120 (footnote). See Ryn.

Riss, v. to rise, 11. 487, 12. 554. See Raiss.

Rocht, pt. s. raught, dealt (a blow), 6. 626. See Raucht.

Roi, s. road, path, 6. 237, 10. 379, 559; Roid, 10. 559 (E.).

Roid, s. rood, cross, 12. 256 (E.).

Roid, adj. severe, 15. 54 (E.). See Ryde, adj.

Roid, for Vyde, 6. 288 (E.).

Romauno, s. romance, 1. 446, 2. 46, 3. 437; pl. 9. 492.

Romble, s. (for Rymmyll), 12. 557 (E.). See Rymmyll.

Rose, s. a rose, 11. 546.

Rost, v. to roast, 7. 153; pt. pl. Rostit, wasted, 7. 165.

Rottyn, pp. rotten, 19. 178.


Roucht, 1 p. s. pr. subj. I should not reck, 7. 24. A.S. rēcan, to reck; pt. t. ic rōhte.

Roucht, pt. s. recked; a bad reading in E. in 7. 623.

Ryunyngis, s. pl. runnings, skirmishes, 18. 68 (E.).

Rouschit, pt. s. rushed, fell quickly, 3. 139. See Ruschit.

Rout, s. a company, troop, host, band, 2. 149, 6. 517, 568, 570; 9. 329, 342, 581; 11. 218, 558; the ordinary people, 9. 504. O.F. rote, route, a band. See Rowl.

Rout, s. a blow, 5. 632. See Rowl.

Routand, an error for Rowmand, 12. 360 (E.).


Rowm, s. room, space, 6. 234; Rowme, 11. 123, 469; 13. 92, 14. 69, 20. 460; wide space, 16. 196. A.S. rūm, space.


Rownyng, s. whispering, 12. 368.


Roydly, adv. fiercely, 11. 599, 13. 69; severely, 12. 513; rudely, roughly, 11. 545, 13. 31, 18. 331. See Ruyd.

Ruce, s. praise, 20 (colophon). Icel. hrós, praise.

Rude-evyn, s. eve of the Rood, i.e. of the Exaltation of the Cross, 17. 634.

Rundly, adv. rudely, 9. 750 (E.).

Ruflyt, an error in E. for Ruschit, 4. 145 (footnote).

Rusche, v. to drive back, defeat, overthrow, 14. 200, 17. 146. 18. 456; Russ, 12. 527; pres. pt. Russchand, rushing, dashing, 15. 38; pt. s. Ruschit, overthrew, 2. 404, 3. 29; rushed, 6. 227, 10. 427, 19. 560; fell quickly, 5. 645, 6. 629; charged, 13. 69; burst, 12. 57; Rushed, drove, 16. 198; pt. pl. Ruschit, fell down, 12. 513; rushed, 10. 71, 91; overthrow, 13. 193; repulsed, 4. 93, 145. (This word is very characteristic of Barbour.) A.S. hrēs, to fall down, rush; Swed. rusa, to rush.

Russ, v. to overthrow, 12. 527. See Rusche.
Ruyd, adj. rude, severe, 2. 356. F. rude, rough, harsh.
Ruydly, adv. rudely, boisterously, 2. 349.
Ruys, s. pl. streets, 15. 71 (E.).
See Rewis.
Rybbaldaille, s. low company, 1. 335.
Rybbaldy, low dissipation, 1. 341.
Rycht, s. right, 1. 78, 159.
Rycht, adv. right, exactly, 1. 8; very, 10. 84.
Rychtwisly, adv. righteously, 1. 366.
Rychtwiss, adj. right, true, proper, 2. 159. A.S. rihtrwis.
Ryde, adj. severe, 12. 557. See the note, p. 584. It is difficult to tell whether this is connected with IceI. reicor, angry, or with royally and rude.
Ryg, s. ridge, 19. 308, 314. A.S. hrycg, the back.
Rygorously, adv. strictly, 4. 88; severely, 6. 136.
Ryme, s. rime (generally misspelt rhyme), verse, 3. 178. A.S. rim.
Ryn, v. to run, 1. 103, 6. 593; pres. s. Rynys, runs, 2. 434; Rynnis, 20. 558; pres. pt. Rynnand, 5. 648, 6. 56, 17. 609; Rynnand, 3. 684. IceI. reguna, to run.
Ryng, v. to reign, 1. 78, 6. 192, 19. 28; ger. 19. 10 (E.); pres. pt. Ryngand, reigning, 6. 191. O.F. regner, to reign.
Ryngis, s. pl. rings, 3. 200.

Ryoll, adj. royal, 13. 30. See Reale.
Ryot, s. riot, depredation, 17. 510.
Ryot, pl. s. in phr. ryot to, made riot in, harried, 5. 181.
Ryotit, pt. s. harried, spoiled, 9. 500; 8. 127 (E.).
Ryss, v. to rise, 1. 573, 3. 310, 718; 10. 678; pp. Rysyn, risen, 8. 216, 14. 177; Ryssyn, 4. 166.
Ryth, adv. right, wholly, 1. 194.

Sa, adv. so, 1. 30, 5. 53, 11. 641, &c.
Sa, 2 p. pl. pr. say ye, 7. 258.
Sad, adj. heavy, 12. 134.
Sad, am, an error in E. for Set, 3. 319 (footnote).
Sadyt, pt. s. saddled, 2. 141.
Saff, pr. s. subj. may save, 20. 210; pt. s. Safit, saved, 4. 137. See Sauf.
Sagat, adv. in such wise, in E., 7. 368 (footnote). From sa, so, and gat, way.
Saik, s. sake, 7. 244.
Sair, adv. sorely, 9. 469; by sair, dearly pay for, 18. 514.
Sais, pr. pl. say, 12. 398; imp. pl. say ye, 12. 199.
Sak, s. sake, 6. 503, 9. 22.
Sakless, adj. innocent, 20. 175. From A.S. saen, strife; hence, crime, or a criminal charge.
Sald, pp. sold, 5. 610, 19. 178.
Sall, 1 p. s. pr. I shall, 1. 156; 2 p. s. pr. Sall, 1. 156; pr. pl. Sall. shall, will, 1. 129; 2 p. pl. pr. thee shall, ye shall, 4. 659.
Salmond, s. a salmon, 19. 664; pl. Salmons, 2. 576.
Salls, s. sauce, 3. 540.
Salt, s. assault, 17. 356 (E.); pl. Salts, 18. 68. See Sawt.
Salusit, pt. pl. saluted, 4. 509.
Salys, s. pl. sails, 15. 282, 289; 16. 692.
Samyn, adj. together, 5. 72, 212, 251, 400; 6. 82, 370, 454, 580; 7. 513, 8. 278, 9. 270, 10. 19, 12. 164, 16. 567, 19. 498, 20. 257; Samyn, 2. 349, 3. 47. Cf. Meso-Goth. sama, together; A.S. samas, together; Meso-Goth. sama, the same. See below.
Samyn, adj. same, 1. 252, 2. 25, 3. 589, 4. 420; Samine, 10. 563 (H.); Samyn, 7. 140, 10. 192, 11. 492. Cf. Meso-Goth. sama, the same.
Sanct, saint, 1. 353, 5. 336, 17. 875 (E.). Lat. sanctus.
Sanctit, pp. saunted, 17. 286, 875.
Sang, s. song, 3. 178.
Sanyt, pt. s. crossed himself, blest himself, 7. 98, 9. 395. O.Fr. seigneur, Lat. signare, to mark with the sign of the cross. See Sayn.
Sar, adv. sorely, 2. 351, 450; 19. 598. See Sayr.
Sarray, adv. close; used as adv. closely, 8. 296. See note to the line, and see above.
Sat, pt. s. became, suited, 1. 394. Cf. sittdande, becoming, suitable; Morte Arthure, ed. Brock, 953, 1501.

Saucht, pp. reconciled, 10. 300. Cf. A.S. saht, peace; sahtlan, to make peace.
Sauf, v. to save, 4. 147, 10. 698; pr. s. imper. may he save, 6. 672, 8. 263; ger. to sauff, to save, i.e. saving (your presence), 3. 173.
Saufly, adv. safely, 10. 484, 14. 34.
Saufte, s. safety, 3. 183, 4. 559. See Savte.
Savitte, s. safety, 4. 536, 9. 523, 10. 441. See Saufet.
Savourit, pp. scented, 16. 70.
Saw, pt. pl. saw, perceived, 7. 131.
Sawerand, pres. pt. giving out a (sweet) savour, 16. 70 (E.). See Savourit.
Sawfly, adv. safely, 3. 359.
Sawfte, s. safety, 4. 536 (footnote). See Saufte.
Sawin, pp. sown, 4. 685. See Note, p. 563.
Sawt, s. assault, 9. 350 (E.), 17. 356. See Salt.
Sawy, pp. saved, 2. 338; pr. s. Sawys, saves, 10. 571 (E.).
Sayn, pr. s. subj. may he bless, 9. 24; pt. s. Saynt hym, blessed himself, 7. 98, 9. 395. O.Fr. seigner, Lat. signare, to make the sign of the cross. See Saynt.
Saynd, s. message, 5. 196. A.S. sand, a sending.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Sayr, adv. sorely, 1. 440. See Sar.

Scaffaldis, s. pl. scaffolds, 17. 343 (E.); Scaffatis, 17. 343, 601.

Scaill, s. a dispersed company, a body of men in loose order. 15. 341, 353. But see the note, p. 596.

Scaill, v. to disperse (neuter), to fly in different directions, 15. 337*, 17. 99. See below.


Scarsly, adv. scarcely, hardly, 20. 38.

Scath, s. harm, 8. 358, 9. 541, 10. 5; Scath, 1, 202; pl. Scathess, damages, 20. 50. See Skaith.


Scathfull, adj. harmful, 5. 249.

Scathless, adj. unharmed, 18. 200, 19. 683.

Schair, pt. s. shore, cut, 15. 82. See Schar.

Schap, v. to shape, intend, 19. 389; to prepare, 17. 606; Schap hym, to get himself ready, 5. 219; Schape thame, to dispose themselves, 13. 301; pr. pl. Schapis thaim, address themselves, endeavour, 2. 324; imp. pl. Schapis, contrive, 12. 211; 1 p. Schap we vs, let us prepare ourselves, 11. 61; pp. Schapen, fitted, 20. 206.

Schar, pt. s. shore, cut, carved (the meat), 2. 92; cut, 8. 172; Schare, 6, 137, 628; pl. Schar, cut, 12. 575, 16. 450; Schare, 8. 55. See Scher.

Schaivaldwr, s. pl. wanderers, 5. 205. The readings sodionrrys (E.), and soldiers (H.), mean 'soldiers.' Innes guesses it to mean 'chevaliers' (!), which is most unlikely. Jamieson notes a form schawaldouris, said to mean 'wanderers in the woods, subsisting by hunting,' with a reference to Wyntown, viii. 29. 217. But the right form seems to be shareldour, a vagrant. See Prompt. Parv. p. 444, note 2.

Schaill, v. to shew, 4. 261; 1 p. s. pr. I shew, 4. 486; pr. s. Schawys, shews, 1. 8; pt. s. Schawit, shewed, 17. 47; Schawyt, 1. 605, 2. 367, 10. 161 (E.).

Schaw, s. thicket, shaw, 5. 589; pl. Schawys, shaws, thick groves, 3. 473. Dan. shaw, a wood, Icel. skvgr.

Schawdest, adj. sup. the shallowest (part), 9. 354. See Schald, shallow, in Jamieson.

Schawing, s. shewing, outward exhibition, external sign. 16. 95.

Schawyt, a poor reading for Blenknyt, in E., 8. 217.

Schaym, s. shame, 7. 632.

Sched, pt. s. cleft, parted, 1. 294.

Scheld, imp. s. 3 p. may he shield, 2. 145.

Scheldis, s. pl. shields, 6. 217, 8. 227, 11. 461.

Schent, pp. disgraced, 4. 280; put to shame, 7. 615. A.S. seeðdan, to destroy.

Scher, v. to shear, i.e. to carve the meat at dinner, 1. 356; to cut, 10. 174, 12. 519; to cut up, 20. 571 (E.); pres. pt. Scherand, shearing, cutting, 16. 455. See Schar.

Schetis, s. pl. sheets, 13. 225 (rubric).


Scheyne, adj. shining, bright, glorious, 11. 461, 12. 443, 18. 172.

Schiltrum (E.), s. a squadron, 12. 429, 433, 444; 13. 175. So spelt
in E. ; C. has childrome. A.S. seófltruma, an armed company, lit. a troop-shield; from A.S. seófl, a shield, and truma, a troop.

See note to xii. 429. p. 583.

Schipfar, s. journeying in a ship, a sea voyage, 3. 692; Schipfair, 3. 686.

Schipping, s. shipping, 16. 16 (E.);
Schippynye, 3. 400.

Schippis, s. pl. ships, 10. 98.

Schippit, pp. shipped, embarked, 14. 20, 16. 37; Schippyt, took ship, 3. 575.

Schir, sir, 11. 632, &c.


Schirreff, s. sheriff, 16. 583.


Schoir, adj. sheer, steep, 10. 22; Schoire, 10. 600. See Schore.

Schonand, pres. part. shining, 5. 201.


Schor, s. menace, clamour, 6. 621 (E.), 11. 562. See Schoyr.

Schore, adj. steep, sheer, 10. 600; Schoir, 10. 22. Cf. Icel. skór, a rim, edge; skára, to jut out.

Schort, adj. short, 7. 268.

Schot, s. shot, stone shot for war-engines, 11. 119; shot, shooting, 13. 48, 52, 75.

Schot, s. pl. shot, 17. 351.


Schot, s. rush, dash, onset, 12. 77. See above.

Schour, s. shower, 13. 43.

Schout, s. shout, cry, 6. 158, 16. 406; Schowt, 6. 114, 12. 77 (E.).


Schoyne, s. pl. shoes, 2. 510.

Schoyr, menace, threatening, noisy clamour, 6. 621. Cf. Old Swed. skarra, to make a grating sound; Icel. skara, to poke the fire; G. schären, to stir, poke, rake; Dan. skurre, to grate. Jamieson explains it by "a threatening," and cites passages where such is clearly the right sense. See Schor.

Schraiff, pt. pl. shrove (themselves), 11. 377 (E.).

Schrevyn, pp. shriven, 19. 211.

Schuk, pl. s. shook, reeled, 2. 380.

Schuldir, s. shoulder, 6. 628; pl. Schulderis, shoulders, 9. 356; Schuldrys, 1. 386.

Schupe, pt. s. intended, lit. shaped, 9. 704, 16. 76; Schup him, prepared, 6. 394; pt. pl. Schup, arranged, 19. 415; endeavoured, attempted, 10. 450, 19. 339 (E.); intended, 9. 150; Schupe, planned, plotted, 5. 539; prepared, 14. 39; purposed, intended, 18. 291; Schupe thame, proposed, intended, 6. 41, 12. 344, 16. 438, 17. 311, 333; Schupe we vs, if we attempted, 11. 292. See Schap.

Schute, v. to shoot, launch, 4. 629; to shoot (arrows), 13. 59, 65; to push, 3. 117; to dash, rush, 7. 390; Schut, to dash, rush, 11. 596; pres. pt. Schutand, shooting, 16. 121. See Schot.

Schynand, pres. part. shining, 4. 166, 6. 100, 8. 46, 11. 188, 14. 177.

Schynyng, s. sheen, brightness, 6. 217.

Schyr, Sir, 1. 73, 157, &c.


Schyrreisky, s. pl. sheriffs, 1. 190.
Scottis, adj. Scotch, 11. 8, &c.
Scowking, s. skulking, cowardice, 8. 140; into scowkyng, in a treacherous manner, traitorously, 7. 130. Cf. Dan. skulke, to slink, Du. schuilen, to lurk, Swed. skyla, to hide.

Scowmar, for Scummar, 14. 375 (E.).
Scowryt, pp. scoured, 3. 542.
Serymyngyng, s. skirmishing, 19. 521. O.F. escrimer, to fence; cf. Eng. skirmmage.
Sculking, for Scowkyng, 7. 130 (E.).
Scummar, s. a rover, 14. 375. Cf. Du. zeeschuimen, a pirate, corsair; zeeschuiten, to rove the seas.
Scurreours, s. pl. scouts, 14. 487 (footnote; rubric in H.). The full form is discourrours, q.v.
Se, s. the sea, 1. 325, 346, 6. 211, &c.; lake, 10. 23, 34; Scottis se, the firth of Forth, 9. 329; by se, by sea, 13. 615; pl. Seis, lakes, 15. 275.
Se, v. to see, 5. 503, 8. 132, 11. 472; imp. 3 p. may he watch over, may he preserve, 3. 172, 5. 653, 9. 234. See note to Chaucer, Pard. Tale, Group C, 1. 715 (Clarendon Press).
Secreis, s. pl. secrets, 4. 577 (footnote).
Seculer, s. secular men, laymen, 4. 12.
See, s. lake, sea, 10. 130. See Se.
Sege, s. a siege, 4. 45, 9. 332, 10. 114 (E.); pl. Segis, 20. 64 (E.). See below.
Sege, s. seat, throne, 4. 228 (footnote); pl. Segis, seats, thrones, 4. 228; mansious (in astrology), 4. 637. F. siege, a seat.

Seid, s. seed, kindred, 1. 63.
Seik, adj. sick, 9. 112.
Seik, v. to seek, 5. 557, 6. 461.
Seiknes, s. sickness, 4. 101, 9. 35.
Seile, s. seal, 1. 611; Seyle, 1. 613.
Seir, adj. various, several, separate, 4. 752, 5. 432, 8. 230, 13. 723; many, 19. 358. Cf. Icel. séir, for oneself; also, separately, one by one.
Seis, s. pl. lakes, 15. 275. See Se.
Seis, pr. pl. see, 9. 89; 2 p. s. pr. seest, 4. 301. See Se, verb.
Sek, ger. to seek, 19. 602.
Sekir, adj. secure, 9. 381; safe, 2. 238, 17. 170; sure, 5. 515, 14. 26; firm, 11. 399; steadfast, 10. 281; Sekyr, firm, 11. 249. Du. zeker, G. sicher, safe.
Sekirly, adv. certainly, of a surety, 4. 216, 662; 18. 31, 51, 60; 20. 278; Sekyrly, 1. 426, 2. 472, 3. 673, 4. 32. See above.
Sekirnes, s. security, 4. 178; Sekirness, confirmation, 20. 150; Sekyrness, security, 3. 665. See Sekir.
Sekkis, s. pl. sacks, 8. 444.
Selwyn, a reading in E. for Self, 8. 484.
Sembland, s. semblance, appearance, show, 8. 238, 9. 250.
Semble, s. assembly, troop, throng, 2. 380.
Semys, pr. s. it seems, 3. 168, 170; pt. s. Semyt, it seemed, 11. 133, 12. 186, 13. 572; thame semyt, it seemed to them, i.e. they seemed to themselves, 12. 147.
Send, pt. s. sent, 1. 145, 2. 176,
13, 677, 11, 8, 15, 137; pl. 7, 164; pp. Send, sent, 4, 52, 18, 380.

Sensyne, ade. afterwards, 1, 451 (footnote).

Sent, s. scent, 6, 500. (The spelling sent is right; from F. sentir.)

Sentens, s. meaning, 4, 260.

Senjory, s. dominion, lordship, sovereignty, 5, 232, 8, 14, 9, 303, 11, 45, 19, 4; Senjhory, 1, 97, 12, 298; Senjeroy, 15, 324; Senzhowy, 1, 151.

Ser, adj. various, separate, 3, 270, 11, 171, 12, 511, 13, 427, 17, 636, 19, 176, 20, 50. See Sek.

Sergeandis, s. pl. servants, in E., 6, 68 (footnote).

Sermonyng, s. explanation, discourse, 4, 278. Used by Chaucer, Kn. Tale, 2233.

Seruit, pt. s. served, served at meat (ironically), 16, 451. See Serwe.

Servandis, s. pl. servants, slaves, 3, 220.


Serwyth, pt. s. served, performed, 10, 342 (E.). A poor reading for Preuit.


Sesing, s. possession, 6, 496. Cf. the phr. to be sesed of a thing.

Sesoune, s. season, 4, 105; Sesoun, 7, 497.


Set, v. to set, place, employ, 1, 11; to set, put, 7, 172; to attribute, 17, 826; set help therteil, give help in the matter, 10, 100; 1 p. s. pr. I account, 3, 319; pt. s. Set, 9, 51; ferried, 11, 382; Set in, pt. pl. turned (their horses' heads) inwards, 9, 610 (see the note); pp. Set, set in one's place, seated, 1, 621; set, put, 10, 228, 16, 427; pres. pt. Setand, setting, 10, 257; pr. s. Settis, puts, 4, 696; imp. pl. Settis, 11, 563.

Seth, v. to seethe, boil, 20, 571.

Setis, s. pl. traps, snares for game, 3, 479. From the verb to set.

Settirday, Saturday, 11, 352.

Sevintene, num. seventeen, 13, 645.

Sex-sum, six in all, 6, 231.

Sexty, sixty, 6, 31; Sextè, 19, 35.

Seying, s. sight, 17, 88.

Seyk, v. to seek, 10, 453.

Seyle, s. good, 1, 303. A.S. sél, a good time.

Seyn, pp. seen, 6, 21, 569; 7, 553, 11, 264; Seyne, 10, 591, 16, 179.

Seynd, v. to send, 3, 748.

Seyss, v. to seize, 3, 530. See Sess.

Shaldest, a reading in E. and H. for Schawdest, 9, 354 (footnote).

Shawis, pr. s. shews, 4, 121. See Schaw.


Sib, adj. akin, related; sib men, kinsmen, 17, 318 (see below). A.S. sib, related, akin.

Sib-man, s. relation, kinsman, 5, 495; pl. Sibmen, relatives, 3, 403, 17, 318. See above.

Sic, dem. pron. such, 1, 77, 7, 633, 8, 180. See Sik.


Sid, s. side, 2, 74.

Sik, such, 3, 62. Sík stands for slik or sikh, more likely for the former; cf. Icel. slikr, such; A.S. swyle, such.

Siss, s. pl. times, 5, 178, 15, 303, 20, 225. Siss stands for sithis, pl. of sith, a time. See below.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Sith, s. pl. times; *feil sith*, 9. 737. A.S. *sith*, a time.

Sittand, *pres. pt. sitting*, 10. 763; *pr. s.* Sittis, sits, 12. 172; *pp.* Sittyn, sat, 7. 269.

Sittell, an error for Rebell, 10. 129 (H.).

Skaith, scath, harm, evil, injury, 1. 82, 9. 211; damage, 5. 418 (H.). See Scath.


Skry, for Cry, 19. 564 (H.).

Skulking, s. lurking about, 8. 140 (E.).


Sla, v. to slay, 2. 207, 3. 98, 6. 441, 14. 442; *pr. pl.* Sla, slay, 1. 489; *pres. pt.* Slaand, slaying, 19. 574; Slayand, 17. 592, 19. 567; *pp.* Slane, 4. 94.


Slak, s. hollow place, depression, 14. 536.

Slane, *pp.* slain, 4. 94. See Sla.

Slang, *pt. s.* threw, 17. 645 (H.); *see also* 16. 651.

Slauchtir, s. slaughter, 19. 567.


Sle, *adj.* sly, crafty, skilful, 5. 513, 16. 335; knowing, 4. 212; experienced, 19. 179.

Slear, *adj.* (lit. slyer), more skilful, 17. 244. See above.

Sleast, *adj.* most skilful, 17. 435, 238. See above.


Slepand, *pres. part.* sleeping, 5. 83, 7. 204, 290, 326.

Slepe; on *slepe*, asleep, 7. 192.


Sleuth, s. slot, track, 7. 21, 44. Icel. *slof*, a track.

Sleuthhund, a sleuth-hound, slot-hound, 6. 484, 669. See above.


Slicht, s. sleight, guile, craft, 5. 105, 488; 5. 434, 18. 198; stratagem, 16. 84. See Slycht.

Slidand, *pres. part.* gliding, 3. 627.

Slike, *adv.* ‘slick,’ quickly, rapidly and smoothly, 6. 78.

Slop, s. a gap, 8. 274; *pl.* Sloppis, breaches, gaps, 8. 179, 182. Cf. Dan. *slap*, relaxed, slack. Burns has *slaps* in Tam o’ Shanter, l. 8.

Sloppes, a reading in H. for Soppis, 8. 326 (footnote).


Sluth-hwnd, sleuth-hound, 6. 36. See Sleuthhund.

Slycht, sleight, 1. 112, 2. 324, 3. 262; deceit, 1. 528. See Slicht.

Slyd, v. to slide, slide down, descend, 3. 707; Sylede, 10. 596; *pp.* Sylldin, slidden, slid, 17. 126. See Slaid, Slayd.

Slyk, s. slime, wet mud, 13. 352.
Cf. Du. slijk, dirt, mud, mire; E. sludge.
Snat, pt. s. smote, 6. 136, 639.
Snaw, s. snow, 9. 128.
Snored, pt. s. snored, a gloss in H. upon Routit, 7. 192 (footnote).
Snuke, for Nwk (noonk), 4. 556 (footnote). And see below.
Snwk, s. a promontory, 1. 188. Jamieson has "snuk," a small promontory, with a reference to Wallace, vii. 1044.
Sobit, or Sovit, an error in C. for Salit, 14. 378 (footnote).
Socht, pt. pl. sought, i.e. went, 6. 625; pp. attacked, 12. 390, 15. 544. See Sought.
Sodanly, adv. suddenly, 1. 324.
Sodiourys, s. pl. soldiers, in E., 5. 205 (footnote).
Soft, adj. kindly, benign, 4. 607.
Soiorne, s. sojourn, dwelling, 9. 369; Soiorn, 7. 385.
Soiornying, s. sojourning, sojourn, 9. 189. See Soiornying.
Soiourne, v. to dwell, stay, remain, 3. 323.
Soiournyng, s. dwelling, delay, delaying, 1. 96, 2. 16; Soiournyng, dwelling, 3. 336. See Sodiournyng, Soiornying.
Solace, s. consolation; hence, amusement, diversion, entertainment, 3. 465; Solass, 13. 718, 20. 95.
Solacius, adj. agreeable, 10. 290.
Somdeill, adv. to some extent, in some measure, 13. 510.
Somownys, pr. s. summons, 1. 592.
Sunday, Sunday, 11. 374.
Sone, adv. soon, 1. 181, 203; 2. 452. See Soyn.
Sone-in-law, s. son-in-law, 17. 219.
Sonkyn, pp. sunken, 3. 417.
Sonmys, sun's, 11. 120, 612.
Sononday, Sunday, 5. 335.
Sop, s. a sup, a slight meal; esp. of spoon-meat, 12. 109.
Sop, s. a round, compact body, a compact troop of men, 3. 47, 7. 567. Cf. Icel. soppr, a ball, scöppr, (1) a sponge, (2) a ball. In Danish, sop means a toadstool.
Soppis, s. pl. heaps, 8. 326. See above.
Sordid, an error in J. for Fordit, 5. 412.
Sorowit, pt. s. sorrowed, 20. 234; pl. 484.
Soucht, pp. sought, 2. 23; pt. s. pursued, 15. 214; pt. pl. sought, examined closely, 3. 479; searched, 10. 760; attacked, 16. 356. See Socht.
Sourcantly, adv. supremely, 10. 299, 16. 502.
Sounce, adv. soon, 1. 566.
South cantre, south country, 16. 77.
Southren, adj. southern, 17. 843.
Sow, s. a 'sow,' an implement of warfare so called, 17. 557, 621. See note on p. 603.
Sower, an error for Summer, i.e. great beam, 17. 696 (E. and II.).
Sowing, s. pricking, stinging, galling (with spear-points), 16. 626. Cf. Scot. sow, to smart, feel stinging pain.
Sowme, s. a sum, number, 17. 67 (E.).
Sowne, s. sound, loud cry, 10. 411, 12. 328.
Sowrchargis, for Surcharge, 16. 458 (E.).
Sowth, adv. southwards, 16. 265.
Soyme, 10. 180 (E.). See Hedesoyme; and see above.
Soyn, adv. soon, 4. 126, 179; 5. 90; Soyne, 5. 38, 15. 306. See Sone.
Space, s. length of time, 11. 9. See Spass.
Spar, v. to fasten, 10. 230; Spare, 5. 389; pt. s. Sparit, fastened, barred, 10. 459; Sparryt, barred, 10. 459 (E.); Sparit, pt. pl. barred, 6. 444, 17. 168. A.S. spurran, to fasten; Dan. spar, a rafter, spar.
Spass, s. space, short time, 15. 285. See Space.
Speciall, adj. specially attached, intimate (with), 5. 501.
Specialtè, s. special liking, partiality, 7. 246.
Sped, pt. pl. prospered, 17. 898.
Spedaly, adv. speedily, 6. 301.
Spedfull, adj. useful, necessary, 3. 574; advantageous, 4. 551, 12. 194. See Spedfull.
Spediast, speediest, 6. 591.
Speid him, v. to hasten, 15. 337; Speid ws, speed ourselves, make haste, 2. 293; imp. s. 3 p. Speid, may (God) prosper you, 18. 389.
Speid, s. speed, haste; bettir speid, with all haste, 4. 507; gude speid, very fast, 6. 409.
Speir, s. spear, 5. 607, 9. 387. See Sper.
Speir, 2 p. s. pr. ask, 4. 494. See Sperit.
Spek, s. speech, 1. 383, 4. 252, 5. 61, 9. 33, 18. 523, 20. 96; conversation, 17. 71; discussion, consultation, 1. 72, 5. 333; Speke, 10. 4, 396; proposal, 7. 157.
Speking, s. speech, 1. 428, 7. 125; discourse, 3. 181.
Spering, s. enquiry, information, 5. 490; asking, 16. 24; Speryng, enquiry, 3. 508. See below.
Sperit, pp. found out, a reading in E. for Spyt, 10. 559 (footnote).
Sperit, s. spirit, 4. 757.
Sper-lynth, s. pl. spear-lengths, 17. 572.
Sper-men, s. pl. spearmen, 15. 220.
Spilling, s. spoiling, 13. 19.
Spokin, pp. spoken, 17. 50; Spokyn, 20. 220.
Spoulzeing, s. spoiling, stripping the slain, 13. 457. See Spulȝeit.
Spraith, s. spoil (but the text may stand), 13. 457 (H.); perhaps the right reading in 5. 118 (see footnote). Jamieson has—"Spreth, Spreth, Spraith, Spraith, prey, booty;" with references to Winton and Douglas. Cf. Gaelic spreidh, cattle.
Spredis, pr. pl. spread, 16. 67.
Sprent, pt. pl. sprang, 12. 49; see the note. Cf. Icel. spretta (for spreinta), to start, spring. See sprenten in Stratmann.
Spryng, v. to spread abroad, 2. 78. A.S. springan, to scatter; cf. E. sprinkle.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Sprungaldis, s. pl. catapults, engines for shooting heavy missiles, 17. 247. O.F. springale, (1) a kind of dance; (2) a catapult; from G. springen, to spring.


Spuris, a misprint in J. for Speris, 13. 315 (footnote).

Spyris, s. pl. spies, 6. 226, 11. 558; Spury, 8. 70.


Spyris, s. pl. spies, 7. 386.

Spyryt, pl. s. enquired, 3. 486. See Sperit.

Squaryis, s. pl. squires, 16. 80.

Squary, s. a company of esquires, 20. 320.


Stabing, s. stabbing, 17. 785 (E.).

Stablist, pt. s. secured (lit. established), 10. 303.


Staffing, s. thrusting, 17. 785. Jamieson gives—"Staff-sword, a sword for thrusting;" with references to Wallace, iii. 178, vi. 737. The Edinb. MS. has stabbing.

Staff-slyngis, s. pl. staff-slings, slings furnished with a stout staff, 17. 344.

Staill, s. a fixed position, 17. 97. See the note, p. 601, and see Stale in Jamieson.

Stakker, v. to stagger, 2. 422 (footnote).

Stale, for Scale, so printed in J., perhaps rightly, 15. 341 (E.).

Stalwart, adj. stalwart, stout, sturdy, valiant, 1. 19, 11. 362; strong, vehement, 1. 468, 3. 732; Stallward, stout, 9. 699; Stallward, strong, 4. 80, 10. 491, 20. 52; severe, 11. 401; great, 18. 310; Stalwarde, hard, 9. 518; Stalvard, strong, 16. 356. A.S. stæleweor's, lit. worth stealing, excellent.

Stalwartly, adv. vehemently, 2. 66; Stallwardly, stoutly, sturdily, strongly, 8. 86, 11. 157, 234, 429; Stallwardly, valiantly, 4. 186.

Stampyng, s. a stamping, noise of feet, 7. 269.


Standaris, for Standartis, 11. 465 (E.).

Standartis, s. pl. standards, 11. 465.

Standyn, pp. stood, 7. 572.

Stane, s. stone, 15. 49. But see the note, p. 594.

Stane-cast, s. stone's throw, 13. 581, 20. 425*.

Stanis, s. pl. stones, 18. 419; Stanys, 10. 57, 17. 331.


Starkest, adj. superl. strongest, 4. 74; Starkast, 17. 697.

Starkly, adv. strongly, 13. 372 (E.).

Stat, s. position, estate, 10. 264; condition, state, 7. 129; State, a good condition, successful position, 1. 297; pt. Statis, estates, 20. 162; conditions of life, 1. 337.

Stature, s. stature, 10. 280.


Sted, s. stead, place, 2. 36, 4. 420,
Ster, s. the rudder, 3. 576 ; Stere, 4. 374. See Steir.
Sterand, pres. pt. steering, reading in E., 5. 25 (footnote).
Sterand, pres. pt. stirring, active, 11. 120. See Stere.
Sterap, s. stirrup, 3. 118, 125, 143 ; pl. Sterapys, 3. 120 ; Sterapis, 12. 51. A.S. sti-ráp.
Stere, v. to stir, 10. 628. See Steir.
Stering, s. stirring, 10. 209, 652.
Stering, s. direction, 11. 182 ; government, 9. 510, 17. 456.
Steris, pr. s. steers, i.e. governs, 11. 27 ; directs, 12. 42.
Steris, s. pl. stars, 4. 675.
Sterkar, adj. comp. stronger, 15. 491. See Stark.
Stern, s. a star, 4. 127 ; pl. Sternis, 4. 711. Cf. Teel. stjarna, Dan. stierne. (Here from the Scandinavian ; not from High German.)
Stert, v. to start, mount up quickly, 3. 709 ; pt. s. jumped, 3. 128 ; pl. started, 7. 271 ; rushed, 8. 471 ; quickly retreated, 6. 632.
Sterling, s. restless motion, 3. 704. See Startle in Jamieson.
Stew, s. mist, 11. 614. Properly 'dust'; Dan. stör, dust, G. staub. The waterfall named the Staub-bach (dustfall) is so called because it is dispersed into light spray.
Steward, s. steward, 11. 449.
Steyr, v. to govern, lit. to steer, 1. 38. See Steir, Ster.
Stikis, s. pl. sticks, 11. 372.
Stint, v. to stop, 10. 716.
Stinting, s. stopping, delay, 9. 255.
Stithly, ade. severely, 10. 326 ; firmly, 12. 381. See above.
Stoking, s. thrusting, 17. 785. F. estoquer, to thrust.

Sted, s. steed, horse, 2. 424, 3. 111, 128 ; pl. Stedys, 2. 13.
Sted, pp. bestead, beset ; hard sted, hardly beset, 2. 47. See Stad.
Steid, s. stead, place, 1. 610. See Sted.
Steid, s. steed, horse, 8. 79. See Sted.
Steill, steel, 13. 14, 17. 714.
Steir, v. to steer, i.e. direct, 20. 401 ; to govern, manage, control, 6. 334, 20. 142. A.S. gestiran.
Steir, s. rudder, 4. 630. A.S. stöör, government.
Steir, on, i.e. a-stir, 7. 344, 10. 577.
Stekand, pres. pt. sticking, stabbing, 13. 70 (E.). See below.
Stekis, pr. pl. fasten, shut up, bar up, 19. 657. Cf. Du. steken, to stick; also, to put, place. See below.
Stemmmand, pres. part. steering in one direction, holding a straight course, 5. 25. Cf. Dan. stemme, to attune ; stemme een for, to dispose one towards.
Stent, for Stentit, 19. 391 (E.). See below.
Steppis, s. pl. steps, 10. 361.
Ster, v. to govern, 1. 43. See Steir.
Stole, s. throne, lit. stool, 2. 151, 180. A.S. stól.
Stomaky, s. pl. stomachs, 3. 542.
Stoppit, pp. stopped, 8. 60, 17. 306.
Stound, s. time, 3. 140, 9. 270, 10. 501; short space of time, 17. 370; Stounde, while, time, 15. 186. A.S. stund, a period.
Stour, s. a conflict, combat, battle, 1. 24, 468; 2. 555, 379; 8. 269; 11. 401, 12. 577, 13. 189, 14. 198. O.F. estour, conflict; from Icel. styrr, stir, commotion.
Stoutar, adj. stouter, bolder, 15. 524.
Stoutest, adj. boldest, 11. 470.
Stoutly, adv. boldly, 11. 158.
Stoutnes, s. stubbornness, 7. 356.
Stowpand, pres. pt. stooping, 8. 297.
Stowtar, adj. comp. stouter, sturdier, 14. 2.
Stra, s. a straw, 3. 320, 6. 505.
Strai, pt. pl. strove, 6. 185.
Strait, adj. narrow, 3. 110. See Strat.
Strait, s. straits, narrow channel, 3. 688. See Strat, Strat.
Strak, s. stroke, 5. 643 (C.); 10. 432, 12. 60, 17. 697; pl. Strakis, 6. 645, 12. 134; Strakys, 2. 364. Strak, for Straucht, adv. straight, 8. 4 (E.); 6. 587 (E.).
Strake, pt. pl. struck, 7. 153. (Such is the reading in Hart; but the reading slow of the MSS. should have been retained. See Slew.)
Strat, adj. narrow, 6. 362, 10. 18; Strate, 6. 58, 7. 529, 8. 32, 10. 550. O.F. estroit, F. étroit, narrow; Lat. strictus.
Strate, s. narrow pass, 4. 458, 9. 570. See Strait.
Strater, adj. comp. narrower, 14. 114.
Stratest, superl. adj. narrowest, 6. 463.
Stratly, adv. closely, straitly, hardly, 7. 216, 11. 609, 17. 737; tightly, 10. 366; strictly, 18. 512.
Stratnes, s. narrowness, 12. 430.
Straucht, adj. straight, 11. 438; Straucht, 2. 312.
Stray; on stray, astray, 13. 195.
Strecour, s. a dog for the chase; lit. a runner, 6. 487. Perhaps related to the A.S. strician, to continue a course, rather than to streecan, to stretch. See Strikand.
Strekyt, pp. stricken, i.e. fought, a reading in E. for Strikyn, 13. 152, footnote.
Streman, pres. pt. streaming, 12. 560.
Stremys, s. pl. streams, i.e. currents, 3. 684.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Strenth, strength, 1. 524; strong place, 4. 458 (footnote).
Strenthly, adv. strongly, forcibly, 4. 511 (footnote).
Strenththi, adj. strong, 4. 653 (footnote).
Strenththis, s. pl. strengths, forces, powers, 2. 523. See Strenth.
Strençêt, pp. constrained, 12. 248. O.F. straindre, Lat. stringere.
Strewit, pp. strewn, 14. 304.
Strikand, pres. part. leading, going, 6. 233. A.S. striccan, to go, continue a course; Bosworth.
Strinth, s. strength, force, 8. 505, 9. 40, 10. 334, 17. 779, 19. 136; a stronghold, 3. 44.
Stro, s. a straw, 3. 320 (footnote). See Stra.
Strowit, pp. strewn, 14. 443, 16. 633; Strowyt, 16. 69 (E.).
Stroy, v. to destroy, 9. 455.
Stryff, s. strive, 7. 628.
Strynthit, pp. strengthened, 17. 331.
Stuff, s. provision, 17. 176; equipment, 5. 258.
Stunay, v. to astondu, stun, dismay, 1. 299. See Stonay.
Sturdy, adj. strong, violent, 3. 698.
Sturdyly, adv. sturdily, 2. 363; Sturdely, boldly, 8. 471.
Sture, adj. sturdly, strong, 10. 158, 12. 92. A.S. stór, icel. stórr, great, vast.
Sturting, an error in editions for Stuting, 7. 515 (footnote).
Stycth, s. fixed position, firm place, 3. 658. See the Note.
Stynt, v. to stop, stem, 2. 372; to stop, stay, arrest, 5. 184, 6. 178, 10. 432, 12. 54, 13. 95, 17. 697; pt. s. Styntyt, stopped, 3. 52; pl. Styntit, stayed, 17. 657.
Stynt, s. stoppage, delay, 2. 140.
Stynting, s. a stop, stoppage, delay, 7. 40, 12. 14, 16. 618; resistance, 7. 545.
Styth, adj. strong, 10. 84, 364. See Stith.
Stythly, adv. strongly, firmly, 3. 120, 4. 14; stoutly, 11. 158 (E.).
Sua, adv. so, 1. 291, &c. See Swa.
Suagat, adv. so, in such wise, 4. 307, 602; 6. 603.
Subtilite, s. crafty work, fine workmanship, 20. 306.
Succourss, s. succour, 19. 641.
Sucdry, s. presumption, pride, 11. 11, 12. 297, 16. 327, 18. 183; Sucquedry, 16. 327 (E.); Surequidity, 11. 11 (H.). O.F. soruirierie, presumption, usually in the form sorvindance; from O.F. sor, Lat. super, and cuider, Lat. cogitare.
Suddandly, adv. suddenly, 6. 11, 7. 184; Suddanly, 7. 505; Suddanely, 15. 119.
Sudiorene, s. sojourn, 20. 356.
Sudioerng, s. staying, resting, 6. 26.
Suerdis, s. pl. swords, 12. 574; gen. sing. Suerdys, sword's, 2. 139.
Suet, s. life-blood (lit. sweat), 13. 32, 16. 232 (E.). See the note to the former passage; and see Swat.
Sufficyand, pres. part. sufficient, sufficiently good, 1. 368.
Sukudry, s. presumption, 11. 11 (E.). See Succudry.
Suld, pt. pl. should, 1. 3, &c. See Sal.
Sum, adj. some, 1. 49, 4. 677; used indefinitely, some people, 2. 295; othir sum = some others, 1. 52.
Sum, suffr, in all, altogether; suff sum, five in all, 6. 119; sex sum, six in all, 6. 231. Cf. Icel. saman, together, as in brir saman, three together. See Thresum.
Sumkyn, of some kind, 10. 519. Cf. Alkyn, Nakyn.
Summer, s. principal beam, 17. 696. See the note.
Summitê, s. summit, top, 3. 706. Pronounced as a trisyllable—summit-ê.
Summond, pp. summoned; gert summond, cause to be summoned, 13. 734; gert be summond, 11. 208.
Supleyng, s. supply, 13. 595 (E.). See Supple.
Supple, v. to supply, i. c. assist, 11. 627 (rubric).
Supple, s. support, reinforcement, 13. 225 (rubric).
Supposs, conj. although, 1. 2, 3. 467, 19. 692.
Suppowale, s. a reinforcement, 16. 139; Suppowall, 16. 111, 139 (E.). Cf. O.F. apon, support; which apparently contains the same root.
Surcharge, s. additional load (of provisions; but ironical), 16. 458.
Sur-noune, s. surname, 17. 152. Cf. E. re-noun, also from Lat. nomen.
Surquedry, s. presumption, 18. 183 (E.). See Succudry.
Sutell, adj. subtle, 19. 32.
Suteltê, s. subtle device, subtlety, wile, 1. 172, 3. 611, 4. 267, 10. 535, 17. 666.
Suth, adj. true, 1. 9, 5. 609. A.S. slo.".
Suth, s. truth, 10. 293.
Suthfastly, adv. truly, 4. 328.
Suthfastnes, truth, 1. 7, 457. A.S. sóepestnes.
Suthly, adv. truly, verily, surely, 6. 32, 7. 258, 16. 483.
Swa, conj. so, 1. 15. See Sua, Sway.
Swagat, adv. so, in such wise, 2. 293, 3. 52, 5. 300, 7. 508, 9. 317, 11. 566, 12. 262, 17. 25, 18. 402. From swa, so, and gat, a way.
Swagatis, adv. so, in such wise, 19. 253. See above.
Swak, s. a blow, 5. 643. Another form of swap. See Swakked, Swappit.
Swar, pl. s. swor. 1. 165, 13. 560.
Svat, s. sweat, 11. 613, 12. 146.
Swavnaund, pres. pt. swooning, 17. 648.
Sway, adv. so, 4. 571. See Swa.
Sweit, adj. sweet, 16. 66; Sweyt, 1. 330; Swet, 9. 482.
Swerdis, s. pl. swords, 11. 600. See Suerd.
Swm, some, 16. 111. See Sum.
Swummer, s. sumpter-horse, 19. 746. O.F. somme; from somme, a load. Low Lat. sagma, Gk. σαμυα.
Swome, v. to swim, 3. 431.
Swonand, pres. pt. swooning, 17. 648 (E.).
Sworn, pp. sworn; thoht he had sworn, though he had sworn to the contrary; a phrase implying—in spite of all his efforts, 3. 135.
Swour, pt. s. swore, 1. 571, 2. 66, pl. 3. 757, 17. 665 (E.). See Swoir, Swar.
Swycht, an error for Wycht in E., 2. 120 (footnote).
Swylk, dem. pron. such, 1. 85, 101, 333. See Swilk.
Swyng, s. a swinging blow, 15. 188; a swing, a hasty turn, 17. 574.
Swyr, s. a ‘neck’ or depression between two hills, 17. 13; see note, p. 600.
Swyth, adv. quickly, 2. 1, 316. See Swith.
Swyth, an error for Schut, i.e. shoot, 13. 565 (E.).
Syb, adj. akin, 13. 511. See Sib.
Sychand, pres. part. sighing, 5. 147.
Sycht, an error in editions for Fycht, 2. 388 (footnote).
Syd, s. side, 2. 346, 348; Syde, 10. 13, 13. 68; on syde, aside, 11. 344.
Sykes, s. pl. trenches, 19. 742 (footnote). See below.
Sykis, s. pl. rills, 11. 300. Icel. s&k a ditch, trench, furrow.
Symonet, a blunder in E. for Symon het, 9. 10 (footnote).
Sympill, adj. simple, inoffensive, 1. 463; trustful, 1. 126; small, weak, 5. 258, 10. 307, 11. 202; silly, forgetful, 1. 615.
Sympylly, adv. in a simple manner, inexpensively, 1. 351; Sympilly, weakly defended, 17. 134.
Syn, adv. afterwards, 1. 601; then, 1. 443. See Syne.
Syndir, adj. sundry, various, 5. 506. See Syndri.
Syndrely, adv. asunder, separately, 12. 138.
Syndri, adj. sundry, separate, 9. 441, 10. 188, 17. 297; Syndry, 5. 7; Syndir, 5. 506.
Syne, adv. afterwards, soon afterwards, 1. 145, 174; 3. 342, 4. 127, 8. 401, 15. 138; next, 6. 229, 17. 332; then, 11. 216, 437; 12. 170; at last, 1. 450, (Short for Sythyn.)
Synny, s. pl. sins, 20. 180.
Syr, sire, lord, 1. 283, 3. 659.
Systir, sister, 1. 51; gen. sing. sister’s, 1. 557.
Syt, v. to sit, 7. 267, 10. 608; pres. pt. Sytand, 6. 203, 7. 238; Syttand, 10. 611.
Syth, s. pl. times, 3. 470; Sythis, times, 3. 58. A.S. s&eh, a time.
Sythyn, adv. afterwards, 2. 85. A.S. s&eh &an, for s&eh &an, after that.
Ta, v. to take, 1. 496, 498; 4. 104.
INDEX IV.—GLOSARY TO THE BRUCE.

5. 328, 8. 414; imp. s. take, 4. 638; gerund, to ta = to be taken, 6. 335; subj. pr. 1 p. that we (may) take, 5. 72. And see Tan, Tais.

Ta; the ta = thet a, the one, 3. 239, 4. 306, 16. 386. (Ta never occurs in this sense unless the word the precedes it.) See Tothir.

Taile (?), v. refl. 18. 238 (E.). This reading is perhaps wrong. Jamieson makes taile = Mid. Eng. taile, to allure, and compares Icel. taala, to entice. This gives—"he determined that he would entice himself to destroy Scotland." But it is hardly possible that this can be right, as it makes very poor sense. It is more probable that him taille = bind himself; and that it is allied to tailze = covenant, agreement, used in the same MS. See Tailye.

Taill, s. tale, 9. 576, 17. 835; with their taill, according to their tale, 15. 539.

Taill, s. payment of a due by an heir on his succession, 12. 320. See Tail, Tails, and Tallage in Blount's Law Diet.

Tailze, s. covenant, agreement, 20. 134 (E.). MS. C. has tale, as if the connection were, not with F. tailler, to cut, to tax, but with E. tale; cf. Icel. tal, a talk, parley, speech, account.

Tailyeit, pp. agreed upon, 19. 188 (E.). MS. C. has talit, q. v.

Tailyie, s. tallage, tax, 12. 320 (H.). See taillé in Cotgrave.

Tais, pr. s. takes, 2. 146, 6. 222, 8. 406, 11. 460, 12. 1; Taiss, 3. 287.

Taisyt, for Tasyt, 5. 623 (E.).

Takand, pres. part. (in phr. takand kep = taking heed), 1. 214; and see 6. 288, 13. 160.

Takill, s. tackle (of ships), gear, 3. 713, 4. 374.

Takinning, s. token, 9. 507 (E.). See below.

Taknyng, s. a token, sign, 4. 558, 10. 471 (E.), 12. 23, 16. 421; evidence, 6. 93, 13. 45. A.S. tacen, a token; tæcian, to betoken; tæcylinder, a sign.

Tak on hand, 1 p. s. pr. I assert, 2. 20, 15. 213; Tak kep, take heed, 17. 61; pr. s. Takys, seizes. 3. 541; pp. Takyn, taken, 4. 652, 15. 253, 17. 171.

Takyn, s. token, sign, signal, 9. 507, 10. 741, 19. 368. A.S. tacen, a token.

Takynnyng, s. token, evidence, 19. 29; a sign, 6. 93 (E.). See Takynng.

Tald, pt. s. told, 1. 563, 5. 40; 1 p. I told, 15. 178; pp. 7. 522.

Tale, s. number, computation, 11. 5; be tale, by number, i.e. as ascertained by counting, 16. 507. A.S. tal, number.

Talent, s. purpose, will, 3. 694.

Talit, pp. reckoned, 19. 188. A.S. talian, to reckon, compute. But see Tailyeit.

Tan, pp. taken, 9. 317; Tane, 1. 113, 324, 521; 8. 375, 18. 135; tane kep = taken heed, 1. 95, 113. See Ta.

Tane, the, the one, 16. 123. See Ta.

Taneys, an error in E. for Tane, 3. 210 (footnote).


Tasit, pt. s. put ready for shooting, placed in readiness, 5. 623. The expression tasit the eyre is, literally, drew back (or bent) the bolt of the cross-bow; which is a contradiction. It means that he bent back, not the bolt, but the bow. O.Fr. teser, toiser, from Lat. tenere.

Taskar, a thresher, 5. 318. The word here is not tasker, one who undertakes a task (see J.), but a misspelling for tarshkar or thersker, i.e. a thresher, from the A.S. perse-
an (cf. Du, *dorschen*), to thresh. "Triturator, a tasker"; Nominale MS. xv. cent.; quoted by Halliwell, s.v. Jamieson himself quotes: "The taskers are those who are employed in threshing out the corn."


Taught, *pt. s.* gave, 2. 130; committed, 10. 43; delivered, 10. 253. Chaucer has take in the sense of to give; so also in Piers Plowman. But here A.S. *tecan*, to give, is confused with A.S. *teoan*, to teach, shew.

Tauld, 1 *p. s. pt.* I told, 1. 76; *pt. s.* 2. 83. *See Tald.*


Te, *v.* to tie, 15. 282. A.S. *tigan*, *tigan*.

Tell, *v.* to count, enumerate, 1. 295. A.S. *tellan*.

Templis, *s. pl.* temples, 3. 222.

Tend, *ord.* tenth, 4. 460, 9. 495.

Tenderly, *adv.* tenderly, 16. 228.


Tentiously, *adv.* attentively, 1. 613 (footnote), 7. 555 (footnote).

Ter, *s. tar*, 17. 611.

Teris, *s. pl.* tears, 3. 348.

Testament, *s. will*, 20. 160.

Tey, *v.* to tie, 15. 282 (E.). *See Te.*


Thai, (1) *pron.* they, 1. 2, &c.; *dat.* and *acc.* Thaim, 1. 33, 42; (2) those, 7. 185, 11. 371, 12. 414; *dict.* of those, 7. 212 (the prep. of governs a dative). *See Tha.*

Thaim-selwyn, themselves, 1. 502.

Thair, *their*, 7. 165. *See below.*

Thairis, (1) *poss. pron.* theirs, 1. 471, 3. 745; of thairis = some of their own property, 18. 199; *thai and thairis*, 13. 201; (2) *gen.* *pl.* of them; *magre thairis*, in spite of them, 10. 118, 4. 153.

Thak, *s.* thatch, roofing of a house, 12. 396.

Thame, *dat.* to them, 7. 528.

Than, *conj.* except that, 1. 501.

Than, *adv.* then; *or than*, or even, 1. 217.


Thar, *adv.* there, 1. 59, &c. A.S. *hār.*

Thar, *pr. s.* *impers.* it needs, it is necessary, 8. 257, 12. 300. Misprinted char in J. in both places; misprinted *char* in P. in the first instance only. Icel. *farfar*, im- pers. verb, it needs. *See Thurt.*

Tharby, *adv.* thereby, near that place, 2. 536.

Tharestir, *adv.* thereafter, 1. 591.

Tharfor, *conj.* on that account, 17. 586.

Thar-fra, *adv.* away, afar, 16. 244; therefrom, from it, 10. 366.

Thar-through, *thereby*, 2. 42, 527.


Tharup, *adv.* up there, 10. 433.

The morrow, on the morrow, 14. 478. Cf. A.S. *hī*, instrumental and ablative case of the def. article.

The quhethir, however, and yet, nevertheless, 1. 332. *See Quhethir.*

Theif, a thief, 6. 470; *voc.* thief! 10. 231; *gen.* Theifis, 6. 470; *pl.* Thevis, thieves, 7. 289.

Them-selwyn, themselves, 13. 234.

Then, *conj.* than, 1. 458.

Thiddir, *adv.* thither, 1. 592; Thiddyr, 1. 413.
Thiddirwart, *adv.* thitherwards, thither, 1. 411; Thiddirward, 10. 404.
Thik, *adj.* thick, 4. 126. (Perhaps *thak-burd* = thatching-board (E.) is better.)
Thikast, *adj.* thickest, 17. 156.
Thine, thence; *frâ* thine, from thence, thence, 5. 190.
Thik, *adj.* thick, 4. 126. (Perhaps *thak-burd* = thatching-board (E.)
Thikast, *adj.* thickest, 17. 156.
Thine, thence; *frâ* thine, from thence, thence, 5. 190.
Thing; *a gret thing*, a great deal, very much, 13. 134.
Thing, *s. pl.* things, property, 3. 620; Thingsis, property, 3. 630.
Think, *pr. s.* impers. it seems; *me think*, it seems to me, 3. 67.

Thir, *pron. dem.* those, 1. 76, 3. 249, 13. 653, 17. 589; these, 4. 248,
7. 303*, 10. 788, 16. 523; these men, 10. 48; *thir meâge*, that host, 15. 142, 19. 47. Icel. *þær*, they.

Thirl, *v.* to enthral, 1. 263 (*footnote*); *pp.* Thirilt, 1. 222 (*footnote*).
Probably a misreading in Hart's edition. Of no authority.

Thiskyn, of this kind, such, 16. 49 (E.).

Thocht, *adv.* thought, 1. 518, 2. 390.

Thocht, *pt. s.* thought, 1. 65; *imper.* it seemed, as in *thaim thohte*, it seemed to them, 1. 79.


Thought, *though*, although, 1. 264. See Thocht.

Thought hym, *pt. s.* it seemed to him, 4. 618. See Thocht.


Thowlesnes, *headless* of conduct, 1. 333. Formed not from A.S. *þrowian*, to serve, but from A.S. *þedw*, manner, behaviour; whence *theoneles*, devoid of good manners, ill-behaved, which may be compared with Scot. *theoneless*, inactive, which see in Jamieson.


Throw, *s.* a throw; i.e. a little while, a short space of time, 4. 140, 5. 159, 7. 34, 572; 9. 407, 11. 303, 17. 40. A.S. *þræw*, *þraw*, a space of time.

Throw, an *error in H.* for *Draw*, 8. 59 (*footnote*).

Throw, *pr. s.* subj. may turn, 13. 654*. A.S. *þrawan*, to throw, to turn round.

Throwing, *s.* throwing, 13. 156.

Threlc, *threland*; *sp.* 1. 265, 2. 506. See below.


Thresscher, *s.* thresher, *in E.* 5. 318 (*footnote*).

Thresum, *adj.* with three at a time, 3. 420. See *Sum*.

INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 735

Thretty, thirty, 4. 405. A.S. 
Thrid, adj. third, 2. 305. A.S. 
Thridlom, s. thraldom, 12. 281.
Thrillage, thraldom, servitude, slavery; 1. 101, 275, 471; Thrillag, 1. 471. See Thrillis.
Thrillit, pt. pl. pierced through, charged through, 16. 430; pp. pierced through, 9. 609. A.S. 
Tilian, to pierce through, to thrill.
Thringlean, to press.
Thristill, s. a throttle, thrust, 5. 4. A.S. 
Throstle, a throttle.
Thristing, s. thrusting, 13. 156. Icel. prósta, to thrust.
Throppill, s. the windpipe, 7. 584. Cf. A.S. 
Prot-bolla, the throat-pipe.
Throt, s. throat, 9. 389.
Throuch, prep. through, by, 1. 177.
Throuch, an error in J. for Throuth, better Throuch (truth), 4. 223 (footnote).
Throu-out, throughout, 11. 392.
Throw, prep. through, 2. 538, 11. 363; by means of, 1. 152.
Throwand, pres. pt. writhing, 15. 230. A.S. 
Pránan, to throw, twist; cf. Lat. 
Torquere, to twist.
Thryldom, thraldom, 1. 269.
Thryll, s. a thrall, slave, 1. 243, 251, 270. See Thrillis.
Thryllage, s. thraldom, 1. 352.
Thryng, v. to press, go closely, 6. 82; pres. pt. Thryngand, thronging, pressing, 6. 133. See Thring.
Thruscl, Thruscl, errors for Thurt, 6. 121 (footnote).
Thurst, pt. pl. might, could, 20. 107 (E.). Probably miswritten for 
Thurf, which is the proper form. Thus 
Thurfte occurs in the Ancen

Riwle, p. 336; Ormulum, 1. 16164; in the sense of needed, behooved. Cf. A.S. 
Porste, pt. t. of ðurfan or 
Þurfan; Goth. 
Þaursta, pt. t. of ðaurban, to need.

Thurt, pt. s. needed, 6. 121. This is the pt. t. of 
Thur, q.v.; it is contracted from 
Thurft (see above). See 
Þurte in Will. of Palerne, 3788; and see 
Þerfan in Stramann.

Thusgat, ad. in this manner, thus, in this way, 1. 275, 2. 167, 3. 267, 4. 304, 6. 157, 9. 228, 15. 525, 17. 878.

Thusgatis, ad. thus, 19. 613. See above.

Thws, ad. thus, 2. 508.

Thyn, ad. thinly, 4. 685.

Thyuk, 1 p. s. pr. I purpose, 1. 33.

Thyland, pres. part. piercing, making holes in, 2. 540. See Thrillit.

Thyrldom, thraldom, 1. 236. See Thyrldom.


Tid, s. time, 1. 407, 2. 25. A.S. 
tid, time.

Till, prep. to, 1. 35, &c.; for, 3. 761, 14. 5, 19. 637; to (as sign of gerund), 11. 254. Icel. til, to.

t6 represents two prefixes that are really distinct, and are distingushed in German as zn and 
zor. To hew in twain = A.S. 
Tô-héwann = G. zerhauen; but we have here the A.S. 
t6 replaced by the Icel. prefix til, which answers rather to G. zn.)

Till-hewy, pt. s. (a false form for to-hewy), hewed in twain, cut in half, 2. 381. (N.B. Even to-heway is a late and corrupted form, as the verb to hew was originally a strong one. See above.)

Timmeris, for Tymbrys, q.v., 19. 396 (E.).
Tit, adv. soon; als tit, very soon, as soon as possible, 4. 280. 757. Icel. titt, soon, neuter of adj. tíér, frequent; cf. Dan. tint, often.

Tit, pt. s. drew, drew quickly, snatched, 5. 603. Cf. A.S. tiht, a movement; tewn, to draw, pull, tug.

Titar, adv. comp. sooner, 4. 269, 5. 529. See Tit, adv.

Tithand, s. tidings, news, 4. 468, 6. 376, 9. 219, 17. 903; pl. Tithandis, tidings, 5. 143, 17. 829. Icel. titindi, Dan. tidende, news.

Tithing, s. tidings, news, 2. 454, 3. 452, 6. 466, 12. 358, 19. 121. See above.

To, adv. too, 16. 458.

To, conj. till, 5. 193.

To-fruchyt, for To-fruschit, 13. 146 (E.)

To-fruschyt, pp. broken to pieces, 2. 350; dashed in pieces, 8. 303, 10. 597; bruised severely, 20. 385; pt. pl. To-fruschit, crushed, 13. 146; pt. s. subj. To-fruschyt, might crush, 17. 667. A hybrid word. The prefix is the A.S. tó-, in twain; the verb is the F. froisser, to dash.

To-ga, pt. s. fled (misprinted to ga), 8. 351; pt. pl. fled, dispersed, departed, 9. 263, 269; 17. 104, 575. An anomalous form; the sense requires the past tense, but the form is that of a present, or rather of the infinitive. Cf. A.S. tó-gan, to depart.

Togidder, adv. together, 15. 69. A.S. tógedere.

To-hewen, pp. hewn in many places, 20. 367 (footnote); Tohewyn, hewn in pieces, 17. 755 (E.). See Till-hewyn.

Toiljit, reading in E. for Tulzieit, 4. 152 (footnote).


Top-castellis, s. pl. top-castles, small castles made in the main-top of a war-ship, 17. 713.

Torn, s. a turn; quyf thaim torn, requite them a turn, repay them, 2. 438.

Toorne, v. to turn, 3. 106.

To-stonay (til-stonay, C., stonay, E.), v. to astound thoroughly, 18. 547. See Till-bewyn.

Tothir, the tothir = thet othir, the other, 1. 7, 165, 11. 569, 16. 399; the second, 9. 412. Tothir only occurs when the word the precedes. Thet = that, A.S. þæt, neuter of def. article. See Ta.

Toun; off town, out of the town, away, 2. 132; of town, from home, 7. 632.

Tonng, s. tongue, 17. 7.


Townys, pr. s. turns, 3. 167.

To-vauernand, pres. pt. wandering in different directions, 7. 302*, 331. See Vauernand.

Tow, v. to tow, 17. 408.

Towart, prep. towards, 1. 83, 5. 376, 11. 477.

Towne, s. tomb, 20. 293, 589.

Townys, s. pl. towns, in E., 5. 403 (footnote). See Tunnys.

Townys, s. pl. towns, 11. 138. See Tou.

Tournys, gen. tun's, 17. 618 (E.). See Tunnys, Tounys.

Towris, s. pl. towers, 9. 451. See Tour.

Towing, s. tooting, noise of a horn, 19. 604 (H.). See Tutling.

Toym, s. leisure, 5. 642. Icel. töm, emptiness, leisure; tömr, empty; Dan. tom, empty; Scot. towm, empty (Burns).

Trace, for Traiss, 6. 553 (E.).

Traine, s. train, i.e. enticement into an ambush, 19. 360. See Tranc.

Traiss, trace, track, 6. 553, 9. 580.
Traist, adj. trusty, worthy of trust, 1. 627.

Traist, v. to trust, 4. 327 (footnote); pt. s. Traistit, 5. 527 (E.); Traisty, 2. 250, 3. 673, 8. 396 (E.); 2 p. s. pt. ye trusted, 1. 125. Icel. tropsy, to rely on.

Traistly, adv. verily, 3. 515.

Trammys, s. pl. (written 'trāmys' in MS. C., and certainly an error for 'trāmys' or 'transys'), cranes, i.e. machines for lifting heavy weights, 17. 245. Observe the readings cranys (may be read as transys), E.; and trainses, H. The t is correct, being the Scandinavian spelling. The English crane = Icel. trani, Swed. trana.

Trane, s. a plot, stratagem, lit. a train, 8. 440, 10. 513, 17. 49. See Traine.

Tranonting, s. a stratagem of war, a wile, especially used of a forced march so as to take an enemy by surprise, 7. 508, 608.

Tranontit, pt. s. surprised by a forced march, 18. 360; see also 7. 306 (footnote). Apparently the F. pres. pt. trainant (i.e. drawing, hence, beguiling) used as a verb. See Tran.

Tranontyne, s. 19. 694. The same as the above.

Trappit, pp. armed (said of horses), furnished with trappings, equipped, 14. 289, 16. 185, 18. 17.

Trass, s. trace, track, 6. 583, 7. 67, 19. 758. See Trace.

Trast, adj. trusty, confident, 9. 381, 10. 270; secure, 14. 466. Icel. trands, trusty.

Trast, s. tryst, 17. 36.

Trast, 1 p. s. pr. I trust, 7. 179; pt. s. Trastit, 5. 530. See Traist.

Trast, imp. pl. trust ye; or perhaps assourcans trast = the trust of assurance, 11. 309. See above.

Trastar, adj. more secure, 17. 273.

Trastly, adv. securely, 7. 300, 15. 120, 19. 486, 573: trustfully, 4. 327; surely, confidently, 5. 81, 15. 126. See Trast, adj.

Trastlyar, adv. with more confidence, 18. 36.

Trator, s. a traitor, 4. 19.

Tratoury, s. treachery, 4. 22.

Tratury, 10. 327.

Travail, s. trouble, 18. 233. See Travail, Trawler.

Travaland, pres. pt. toiling, wandering, 6. 380, 7. 243; Travaland, toiling, 11. 369, 17. 734; fighting, 9. 673; Travalaunde, travelling, 6. 375; Travalland, toiling, 5. 223; wandering, 7. 241; Travallit, toiled, 6. 27; beset, troubled, vexed, 4. 149, 9. 55; pt. pl. harassed. 10. 165; toiled, 9. 165; travelled. 18. 157; went, 10. 238; harassed, 7. 298.


Travail, s. travel, journey, 4. 48; Travaille, labour, effort, 3. 298; hardship, 1. 23; pl. Travaylys, travails, toils, 1. 306. See Travail, Travell.

Travailland, pres. part. travelling, taking trouble, 2. 571. See Travaland.

Travalland, pres. pl. travelling, or toiling, 9. 673 (E.). See Travalland.

Travaile, v. to harass, trouble, 6. 602. See above.

Traweillyt, pt. s. travailed, worked hard, 2. 580, 3. 278. See Travail.

Travell, s. travel, labour, toil, 4. 664, 6. 23. See Trawail.

Travelling, s. travelling, journeying about, 2. 283.


Trayn, _s_. train, plot, 6. 397. See Traine, Traue.

Trayne, _ger_. to draw, entice, 19. 334. F. _trainer_, to drag.

Tre, _s_. wood (lit. tree), 3. 584; _pl_. Treis, trees, 11. 298; branches, pieces of wood, 13. 238.

Tresonabill, _adj_. treasonable, 5. 550.

Trespass, _s_. sin, 12. 485.

Trespassit, _pp_. done amiss, 11. 553.

Tret, _v_. to treat, handle, manage, 1. 35; _ger_. to treat, 19. 129; _pt_. s. Tretit, treated, made terms, arranged, 3. 741, 5. 514, 10. 261, 481, 820, 13. 543, 674, 15. 520; 17. 19, 315; _pt_. _pl_. made a treaty, 4. 172; _pp_. Tretit, treated of, 20. 149; assured by treaty, 4. 177; Tretyt, treated, 1. 222.

Tretting, _s_. treating, i.e. negotiations, 14. 8.

Tretis, _s_. treaty, 11. 35; proposals of treaty, 10. 125; Tretiss, treaty, 19. 145; Tretys, 20. 47.

Treuith, _s_. troth, trust; _gaf treulh_, believed, 4. 223.

Trew, _v_. to trow, trust, believe, 2. 326; _pt_. _s_. Trewit, 17. 228.


Trewis, _s_. _pl_. lit. truces, _as sing._ a truce, 14. 96, 15. 126, 19. 186, 200; _used as a plural_, 19. 200 (see 1. 202). O.F. _truete, truice, trive_, _trice_ (see _trive_ in Burguy); whence _pl_. _trées_ in mod. French.

Trewys, _s_. truce, 15. 102 (E.). See above.

Treyyn, _adj_. wooden, 10. 361. See Tre.

Treyteris, _an error for_ Tretis, 10. 125 (E.).

Tribill, _adj_. treble, 18. 30 (E.).

Tribulit, _pp_. troubled, 4. 58.

Trist, _s_. assigned place of meeting, 7. 230, 8. 212, 17. 74; _set trist_, appointed, 7. 235.

Tropellis, _s_. _pl_. troops, small companies, 13. 275. Cf. F. _troupeau_, a troop; O.F. _tropel_, dimin. of O.F. _trope_, a troop; which see in Burguy.

Troplys, _for_ Tropellis, _q_. _v_., 13. 275 (E.).

Trow, _v_. to believe, 2. 257, 4. 237, 7. 143; 1 _p_. _s_. _pr_. I trow, believe, 2. 111, 11. 429; Trewis, I believe, 12. 294; _pr_. _s_. Trewis, believes, 5. 530; _pt_. _s_. Trowit, believed, 4. 308, 671; trusted, 2. 472; _pt_. _pl_. Trowit, believed, 4. 11, 11. 165, 10. 420; expected, 2. 560; Trowyt, 1. 87; _pp_. Trowit, trusted, 19. 301. A.S. _trowcian_, to trust.

Trowis, _s_. a truce, 15. 102. See Trewis.

Trowtis, _s_. _pl_. trout, 2. 577.


Trunsonne, _s_. truncheon, short staff, 16. 129. O.F. _troncheon_, a short piece; from Lat. _truneus_.

Trumwp, _v_. to sound the charge on the trumpets, 12. 491. See Trumpe.


Trymbill, _v_. to tremble, 2. 295; Trymmyll, _pr_. _pl_. subj. may tremble, 12. 268.

Tryplit, _pp_. trebled, 18. 30.

Tuelf, twelve, 10. 547, 640.

Tuk, _pt_. _s_. took, 1. 528; _pl_. Tuk, 14. 96; Tuk land, landed, 16. 551.

Tulceit, _pl_. _pl_. harassed, 4. 152. Apparently related to F. _toniller_, to mingle together confusedly, to shuffle together (Cotgrave); cf. Scot, _tuilzie_, a broil, a struggle, tussle.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

739

Tumb, s. tomb, 20. 293 (E.).
Numbered 20, 287 in P.

Tume, s. leisure, 17. 735. See Toym.


Tunmys, s. gen. tun’s; tunnys quantity, contents of a tun, 17. 618; pl. tuns, 5. 403.


Turturis (or, better, Turture), s. a turtle-dove, reading in E. for Thristill, 5. 4 (footnote).

Tutlyng, s. tooting, blowing of a horn, 19. 604. Swed. tuta, to blow a horn.

Twa, num. two, 1. 76; Tway, 14. 369.

Twapart, or Twa part, lit. two parts, i.e. two-thirds, 5. 47, 369, 17. 103.

Twasum, for Twa men, 10. 19 (E.).

Twiss, adv. twice, 12. 176. See Twyss.

Twist, s. a bough, a twig, small branch, 7. 188.

Twymyl, v. to tumble, hurl, overthrow, 10. 496, 18. 418. See Tummyll.

Twyn, adj. twain, two, 4. 691.

Twyss, adv. twice, 3. 242. See Twiss.

Tyd, v. to betide, happen, 1. 127, 12. 272, 366; Tyde, 4. 543.

Tyd, s. time, 3. 24, 19. 636; Tyde, 10. 185, 16. 252. A.S. tid, time.

Tyll, prep. to, 1. 10; to, for, 3. 36. (Common as sign of the gerund, and as prep.) Icel. til, Dan. til, Swed. till.

Tym, s. time, 6. 370; mony tym, often, 9. 99.

Tymbrys, s. pl. timbers, i.e. crests of wood, 19. 396. See the note, p. 607.

Tymmyred, pt. pl. barricaded with wood, 4. 164 (footnote).


Tynsale, s. loss, damage, harm, 5. 450, 503; 12. 95, 17. 900, 19. 811; Tynsalt, 11. 488, 12. 141; Tynsell, loss, 3. 647; Tynsele, loss, 19. 499. From Icel. týna, to lose; the suffix is probably the A.S. seól, opportunity, used abstractedly.


Tyre, a badly written word, meant for, and may be read as Cyre, s. leather, 12. 22 (E.).

Tysday, Tuesday, 15. 101.

Tyt, adv. quickly, 2. 4. See Tit.

Tyt, v. to pull, snatch, bad tyt hym downe, bade (men) pull him down from his horse, 16. 132. See Tit.

Tythandis, s. pl. tidings, 1. 346. See Tithandis.

Tyttar, adv. sooner, rather, 2. 518; Tytar, more quickly, 11. 225. See Tyt, Tit.

V. Note the use of this letter for w, both at the beginning of words (as in van = van = won), and in the middle (as in arravis = arravis = arrows). So also w is constantly written both for v and u.
Vading, s. wading, 7. 56.
Vageowris, s. *pl. hired soldiers, mercenaries, 11. 48. So named from their *wages.
Vailzeand, *adj. valiant, 17. 218 (H.).
Valayis, s. *pl. vallies, 11. 185.
Val'd, *pl. s. would, 5. 126. (Common.)
Valėe, s. valley, 7. 4. (A disyllabic word.)

Valk, v. (transitive), to wake, cause to waken, 7. 170. (Note.—I believe the *l in this word to be due to the fact that scribes wrote *kk in such a manner that it looks like *lk. Thus *valk = *vakl, rining with *tak. In the same way. *vaknyt (see below) should rather be *vaknyt. Similarly, in Bernardus, &c., ed. Lumby, E. E. T. S., p. 19, l. 38, the word printed as *spekk, is really *spekk, i.e. speak. This imperfect *kk (written, as I said, like *lk) is also used by some scribes to represent a capital *k at the beginning of a word, in which case no editor would be so hardy as to print *lk. Other examples of *lk written for *kk occur in the word *Avalk = awake, in Dunbar's Thrissill and Rois, stanza 2; and in Lancelot of the Laik, ed. Skeat, l. 1049. In course of time, the scribes certainly regarded the symbol *lk as standing for *uk, so that we even find the extraordinary form *volkx, for *voxx, i.e. waxed, grew, in G. Douglas, *Prom. to xii Æneid, ll. 136, 187; whence came also the still stranger form *walxis (!), id. 151. I wish to record my belief that the words *valk, *vaknyt (in the Bruce) should rather have been printed *vakl, *vaknyt, but I have allowed the familiar forms to stand, in case I should be wrong. At any rate, the *l is surely not to be sounded like the *ll in *call.) See Walk.

Valknyt, *pt. s. awoke, 7. 210, 291; *pt. 6. 298. (This form is intransitive, as shown by the insertion of *u; cf. the suffix -*nan in *Meso-Gothic verbs.) And see note to Walk.

Vall, s. wall, 10. 491; *pl. Vallis, 6. 445.
Valje. See Avalje.

Vangard, s. vanguard, 11. 164. See Vaward.

Vantis, *pr. s. lacks, lit. wants, 5. 422.
Vanys, s. *pl. veins, 7. 173.
Vappyn, s. weapon, 5. 594; *pl. Vapny, 5. 393, 8. 55, 9. 711, 10. 675, 11. 592, 12. 103.

Var, *pt. *pl. were, 5. 433, 12. 390. (Common.)

Vard, s. ward, 9. 339.
Vardane, s. warden, 4. 474, 5. 474, 6. 507, 18. 215; *pl. Vardanis, 9. 432; regents, 16. 33; Vardanys, guardians, 20. 146.
Vardanry, s. wardenship, 8. 362.

Varisoun, s. reward, 10. 526. See Warysoun.


Varnasyng, s. garniture, provision, store, 6. 350. See Varnysit, Varnysing.

INDEX IV.—Glossary to The Bruce. 741

Varynyng, s. (1) warning, 5, 537; (2) refusal, opposition, 16, 260. See Varn, Varynty.

Varynsing, s. provision, 17, 294. See Varneysaing.

Varnysit, pp. provided, furnished, 6, 120. O.Fr. varnir, to provide; F. garnir. See Varnist.

Varnysoun, s. garrison, 10, 325. See Warnisoun.

Varynt, pt. pl. refused, 18, 332. A.S. weyrnan, to refuse.


Varrand, s. place of refuge, place of safety, shelter, 6, 422, 7, 347, 8, 485, 9, 624, 10, 453, 15, 214, 17, 551. The same word as E. warrant, sb. O.F. warrant, a protector; worir, to guard.

Varrar, adj. comp. more aware, more cautious, more on the watch, 5, 546. A.S. weor, aware, wary.

Varray, v. to war against, 8, 24; Varra, 8, 365, 9, 27; pr. s. Varrayis, wars, 12, 363. See werre ye in Chaucer, Kn. Tale, 626, 686.


Vassalage, s. prowess, 16, 4. O.F. vassalage, prowess; vassal, a fighting man.

Vassand, s. weazand, 7, 584.

Vat, 1 p. s. pr. I know, 5, 537; 2 p. s. pr. thou knowest, 5, 241. A.S. ie wá I know.

Vath, s. danger, peril, 5, 418, 7, 305. Icel. vást, danger, peril; Dan. vaade, danger; Swed. vada, an unlucky accident.

Vatit, pt. s. waited for, 5, 36, 640; waited, 5, 523.

Vattir, s. water, river, a stream, 6, 56, 7, 5, 18, 288; 19, 319.

Vauerand, pres. pt. wavering, i.e. wandering about, idle, loitering, straggling, 7, 112; Vaverand, wavering, 12, 185.

Vaueryng, s. swerving, going astray, 6, 584. Lit. 'wavering.'

Vaueryt, pt. s. waivered, wandered about, 7, 41.

Vaward, s. vanguard, 8, 48, 11, 306, 342; 12, 11, 337, 435; Vawarde, 8, 343.

Vax, s. wax (for candles?), 11, 119.

Vax-caye, s. wax-comb, honeycomb, 11, 368.

Vay, s. way, 7, 392; pl. Vayis, 18, 114.

Vayd, v. to wade, 7, 19.

Vaykar, adj. comp. weaker, 8, 340.

Vayn, s. wain, waggon, 10, 164, 166, 181, 203.

Vayn, s. weening, intention, purpose, 7, 2, 225. See note to ii, 471, p. 554. See Veyn.

Vayndist, pt. pl. recoiled, gave way, retreated, 12, 109, 13, 217, 16, 629. O.F. wendir, to turn aside, escape; of Teutonic origin; cf. G. wenden, to turn. See note to xiii, 217, p. 585.

Veddir, s. wether, sheep, 7, 152, 164.

Veil, s. weeds, clothing, i.e. armour, 16, 580. A.S. wéd, clothing.

Veill, adv. well, 11, 643; very, 9, 498.

Veillfair, s. welfare, 8, 377.

Veir, pt. pl. were, 18, 296. See Var.

Veirdis, s. pl. wierds, i.e. destinies, fates, 18, 46.

Velany, s. disgrace (lit. villainy), 9, 545.

Velcom, adj. welcome, 7, 244.

Velcumnyng, s. welcome, 18, 329.

Velcumnyt, pt. s. welcomed, 16, 41.

Velde, v. to wield, 11, 97.

Vem, s. spot, stain, 15, 250. A.S. wám, a stain.

Vench, s. a wench, a girl, 10, 554.
Vend, v. to wend, go, 4. 609, 5. 561, 7. 399.
Vend, 1 p. s. pt. weened, supposed, expected, 7. 361; pt. pl. 6. 24, 9. 606.
Venesoun, s. venison, 2. 574, 3. 472; Venysoun, 7. 496.
Vengeauns, vengeance, 6. 506.
Vengit, pp. avenged, 19. 151.
Venyng, s. weening, supposition, uncertain expectation, 4. 765.
Venysoun, venison, 7. 496. See Venesoun.
Veriour, a warrior, 5. 85.
Verray, adj. true, 2. 87.
Vertwis, s. pl. vertues, 10. 295.
Verty, adj. prudent, 18. 439. Short for Averty, q. v.
Ves, was, 4. 94. See Wes.
Veschall, s. vessels (collectively), 11. 117; Vessell, 11. 117 (H.). F. vaisselle, plate; see Chaucer, C. T. Group B, 3338.
Vest, adj. western, 16. 550.
Veyle, adv. well, 1. 118. See Veill.
Veyn, s. doubt, 6. 162. See Vayn.
Veyr, s. war, 9. 292. See Weir, Wer.
Viage, s. voyage, 5. 207, 14. 117.
Vicht, adj. vigorous, nimble, valiant, 4. 534, 5. 491, 6. 482, 8. 267, 9. 327, 10. 43, 17. 34, 18. 125. See Wicht.
Victor, s. victory, 4. 277, 8. 288, 12. 293, 313; 18. 549; Victour, 8. 255, 380; Victory, 15. 89.
Vif, s. woman, 4. 302; pl. Vifis, wives, 12. 246.
Vikkid, adj. sorry, poor, unskilful, 9. 76; Vikkit, cruel, 5. 12.

Vikkidness, s. poorness of spirit, fear, weakness, 12. 280.
Vilfull, adj. willing, anxious, 9. 625.
Vilfully, adv. willingly, 8. 462, 11. 209.
Vill, adj. wild, at a loss, 7. 2. Icel. viilr, wild, bewildered, astray.
Vilonisly, adv. villanously, wickedly, 5. 164; Vilonysly, 5. 150.
Virk, v. to work, 4. 744; to act, 11. 328; to influence, 4. 700.
Visage, s. face, 12. 576.
Viss, s. wise, way, 4. 363, 5. 429, 6. 492, 7. 262, 9. 29, 11. 180, 17. 874; many viss, in many a way, 5. 78.
Viss, adj. wise, 5. 267, 513; 9. 327, 10. 333.
Viss, adv. wisely, 17. 52.
Viss, s. a vice, defect, 6. 355.
Vissill, v. to exchange, 12. 580; Icel. vixla, to cross; cognate with A.S. veircilian, to exchange, G. wechseln.
Vist, pt. s. knew, 4. 771, 7. 66, 17. 41. See Vit.
Vit, pr. pl. subj. may know, 7. 544; pt. s. Vist, knew, 4. 771, 7. 66, 17. 41. A.S. witan, to know.
Vit, s. wit, wisdom, 4. 742, 6. 350, 9. 668, 10. 334.
Vitalis, s. pl. victuals, 15. 92.
Vittalit, pl. pl. victualled, stored, 4. 63.
Vittandy, adv. knowingly, 11. 594. Lit. 'wittingly.'
Vittelleris, s. pl. foragers, 14. 407; Vittelouris, 14. 429.
Vitely, adv. wisely (lit. Wittily), 5. 264, 18. 158.
Vittering, s. information, notice, especially correct information, sure knowledge, 4. 562, 5. 342, 509, 534; 6. 46, 9. 564, 10. 12. Icel. vitra, to reveal; from vitr, wise.
Vitterly, adv. certainly, 4. 771;
Glossary


Vitting, s. knowledge, 4, 766, 5, 540. A.S. *vitlan,* to know.

Vitty, adj. wise, 4, 694, 9, 345; prudent, 7, 134.

Vittyng, s. knowledge, 14, 417 (C.), footnote; information, 14, 261.

Vmbecast, v. to consider, ponder upon the fact, 5, 552. Icel. *um,* around, about; *kasta,* to cast; cf. E. to cast about.

Vmbeset, p., s. beset round, beset, 9, 321, 706; Umbeset, laid in wait for, 14, 107 (H.); pp. beset round, 6, 535.

Vmbestouut, adv. sometimes, 7, 398. From A.S. *ymbe,* about, and *stund,* a time.

Vmbethinkis 30w, imp. pl. refl. bethink you, 5, 613; pt. s. refl. Vmbethought, bethought him, 5, 551, 6, 110, 7, 383, 16, 84, 17, 40, 771; pl. 19, 405. A.S. *ymþpendan,* to think about.


Vmquhile, adv. sometimes, 5, 411. A.S. *ymþ,* about, and *hwil,* time.

Vnabasitly, adv. boldly, undauntedly, 6, 20, 9, 394.

Vnarmyt, pp. unarmed, 7, 552, 18, 506.

Vnbondyn, pp. unbound, unfastened, 10, 382.

Vncouth, adj. strange, with a strange appearance, 7, 554.

Vndir; at vndir, in subjection, 7, 365.

Vndir-ta, till, ger. to be undertaken, 6, 348; Vndir-ta, 1 p. s. pr. I undertake to say, 11, 221; 1 p. s. pr. Vndirtak, I undertake to say, 15, 139; pp. Vndirtane, 6, 319.

Vndirtane, pp. undertaken, 5, 331. See Vnerta.

Vndirwardane, s. under-warden, 4, 400.

Vnfaer, adj. foul; or perhaps s. ill success, 15, 128.

Vnlityk, adj. unlikely, improbable, 12, 128.

Vnmaid, pp. unmade, not made, 4, 608.

Vnseill, s. misfortune, 10, 218, 17, 376 (H.; see footnote). A.S. *unsél,* misfortune; from *sél,* opportunity, luck.

Vnslane, pp. unkiller, 10, 617.

Vnspokyn of, pp. unmentioned, 15, 268.

Vnvittandly, adv. unwisely, 6, 523; ignorantly, stupidly, 16, 248. See Vittandly.


Vnwisly, adv. unwisely, 11, 38.

Vnworthy, adj. unworthy, 4, 196.

Voce, s. voice, 11, 407, 12, 200.

Vod, s. a wood, 5, 561, 6, 670, 7, 1, 541.

Volageous, adj. giddy, light of conduct, 8, 455, 10, 533. Cf. O.F. *volage,* changeable; from Lat. *volare,* to fly.

Volf, a wolf, 6, 470.

Vonand, pres. part. dwelling, 5, 499; Vonand, 9, 501, 10, 160; pt. s. Vonnyt, dwelt, 10, 150. A.S. *wunian,* to dwell.

Vonyng, pp. won, 11, 348 (rubric); Vonny, won, i.e. mown, ready for carrying, 10, 193.

Vorde, s. word, speech, 15, 145; pl. Vordis, 11, 151.

Vorthis, pr. s. becomes, 7, 174; pt. s. Vorthit, it became; *vorthit him slep,* it became (necessary for him) to sleep, 7, 177; pp. Vorthyn, become, 4, 737. A.S. *wornian,* to become, G. *werden.*

Voude, adj. mad, 17, 106. A.S. *wod,* mad.
Vounder, s. wonder, 4. 323; as adv. wondrously, extremely, 4. 130, 5. 135, 7. 225; Voundir, 9. 724.
Voundis, s. pl. wounds, 11. 537, 15. 54.
Voundis, s. pl. words, 9. 752. See Vorde.
Vox, pt. s. waxed, grew, 8. 391. A.S. wean, to grow; pt. t. ie weeox. See Wox.
Vpcom, s. way up, lit. up-coming, 6. 167.
Vpgang, s. way up, passage upwards, 6. 141, 8. 38.
Vrang, s. wrong; hoss vrang, hast wrong, i.e. art in the wrong, 16. 236.
Vrangwisly, adv. wrongfully, 12. 363.
Vrathar, adj. angrier, more wrathful, 16. 245.
Vrec, s. destiny, fate, luck, especially good luck, 1. 312, 2. 434, 6. 17, 377; 9. 68, 11. 405, 15. 376, 19. 611. O.F. eur, aur, chance, luck, from Lat. augurium, not from Lat. hora; whence F. bonheur, miswritten for boneur, good fortune. The note to 15. 376, p. 596, is wrong: the word vre has the same meaning in that passage as in all the rest, and the line means—‘had not good luck treated them so,’ i.e. assisted them. [The sense of ‘practice’ is not an uncommon meaning of ure in Middle English, but does not occur in Barbour. In that sense, ure is a different word, viz. the O.F. eure (Roquefort), a form of O.F. oevre (Burguy); from Lat. opera.]
Vrechidly, adv. wretchedly, 7. 339.
Vrechidnes, s. cowardice, unskilfulness, 9. 76.
Vrechit, adj. poor, 9. 403.

Vrichtis, s. pl.wrights, workmen, 16. 335.
Vusage, usage, custom, habit, 1. 114.
Vtrelly, adv. utterly, 10. 92, 15. 291.
Vyecht, adj. vigorous, 10. 430. See Vicht.
Vyde, adj. wide, 7. 47.
Vyn, v. to win, acquire, get, 5. 11, 6. 329, 332; to defeat, conquer, 7. 532, 12. 47, 15. 225; to get in (a harvest), 10. 219; Vyn to, to attain to, reach, 15. 221.
Vyude, s. wind, 4. 443; Vyund, 15. 278, 284.
Vyndland, pres. pt. whirling round, turning over and over, 17. 721. Cf. prov. Eng. windle, a wheel for winding yarn, Halliwell; Icel. vina, to wind wool; G. wendelbaum, an axle-tree, Dan. vindelbugt, a spiral twist; all from the root to wind.
Vyndowis, s. pl. windows, 12. 402.
Vyne, s. wine, 4. 407, 11. 119, 14. 229.
Vyne-sellar, s. wine-cellar, 5. 399.
Vynkit, pt. s. slept lightly (lit. winked), 7. 182.
Vyntir, s. winter, 4. 338; vyntritide, the winter-season, 5. 1.
Vyre, s. a crossbow-bolt, 5. 505, 623. "Vyre, the arrow called a quarrell, used only for the crosse-bow;" Cotgrave. From F. vire, to turn.
Wa, s. wa; wa worth, wo worth, wo be to, 1. 515.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 745

loath, 16. 650. This adjectival use of *wa* or *wo* is not uncommon in Middle English. Ex. “Hys clerk was wo to do that dede;” Rob. of Brunne, Hand. Synne, 5771.


Waer, *adj. comp.* more sad, 16. 245 (E.). *See Wa*, *adj.*

Wageouris, *s. pl.* mercenary soldiers, 11. 48 (E.). *See Wageouris.*

Wald, *v.* to wade over, 19. 760.

Walkyt, *pp.* walled, 1. 107, 2. 220.


Walour, *valour, 1. 451, 467.*


Wane, *s.* weening, thought, 7. 2 (E.). *See Yavn.* A.S. *wégn.*

Wane, *s.* wain, waggon, 11. 25. A.S. *wégn.*

Wane, *s.* quantity, 17. 249; Wayne, 16. 454. It occurs in Chevy Chase, 1. 74; and see other examples in Stratmann, *s. v.* wán.

Wantag, *s.* advantage, 8. 151 (rubric).

Wapnys, *s. pl.* weapons, 10. 679, 11. 76; Wapynnis, 11. 592 (E.).

Wapped, *an error in H.* for Warped, i.e. threw, 3. 642 (footnote).


War, *s.* war. *See Wer.*

War, *adj.* aware, 3. 12; wary, 10. 333. A.S. *weor.*

War, *s.* ware, merchandise, 19. 194.
War, worse, 13. 219.
War, pt. pl. were, 4. 353; pt. s. subj. would be, 3. 341; were, be him weill or war him wa, whether it were well or ill for him, 16. 650. See Na war, Ne war.
Warand, v. to protect, 2. 504. O.F. garantir, warrantir, to warrant, protect.
Warand, s. warrant, security, protection, 2. 502; safety, 20. 604; place of safety, 19. 679. See Warand.
Ward, s. guardianship of a minor, 12. 329.
Ward, s. guard, post, 17. 627, pl. Wardis, wards, places to be guarded, 17. 349.
Wardane, s. warden, regent, 14. 512, 17. 758, 18. 215 (E.); pl. Wardanys, regents, 16. 33 (E.).
Wardenry, s. wardenship, office, 8. 362 (E.).
Warisone, s. reward, 20. 544. See Warisoun.
World, world, 1. 240; pl. Warldys, 1. 404. In the latter place I prefer the reading world (H.); to be pronounced nearly as a disyllable, with trilled r.
Warnisoun, s. garrison, 10. 325 (H.).
Warnist, pp. provided, 17. 713; Warnyst, stored, 10. 311 (E.); provisioned, 4. 102 (footnote); Warnysyt, stored, 16. 215 (E.).
Warnysing, s. store, in E., 6. 350 (footnote).
Warnysone, s. provision, store, 17. 294 (E.).
Warrande, s. shelter, place of safety, refuge, 10. 247, 10. 691 (E.); Warrande, 13. 434; to warn, in safety, 13. 710.
Warryng, s. warring, struggle, 4. 650; Warryng, warfare, 5. 140.
Warrer, adj. worse, in E., 5. 546 (footnote).
Waryt, pt. s. cursed, 7. 228 (E.). A.S. veorgian, to curse.
Warysoun, s. reward, 2. 206, 10. 526 (E.); Warisone, 20. 544. The O.Fr. varison or garison is properly security, from varir or garir, to secure; cf. A.S. verian, to fortify, protect. Sir W. Scott uses warri-son to signify "a note of assault (i)"; Lay of the Last Minstrel, iv. 24, which is, I suspect, a mere blunder. Warysoun is the same word as our garrison.
Waslage, prowess, 1. 290. See Wassalage.
Wass, pt. s. was, 3. 133, 7. 82, 8. 164.
Wassalage, s. prowess, valour, hardiness, 6. 22, 12. 233, 13. 137; Wasselage, 1. 472, 3. 57. See Vassalage.
Wat, adj. wet, 19. 692; Wate, 4. 380.
Wat, 1 p. s. pr. I wot, I know, 1. 509, 2. 42, 4. 61, 12. 433, 17. 114; badly spelt Wate, 1. 509, 3. 521; pr. s. he knows, 1. 178, 4. 615, 10. 739, 11. 28; Wate, 1. 586, 3. 255; 2 p. pl. pr. Wate, ye know, 2. 336.
Wattir, s. water, 9. 683; wattir to ma, to make water, 13. 603.
Watyt, pt. pl. watched, laid wait
for, 1. 202. Lit. waited for; observe the context in the two following lines. O.Fr. \textit{waitter, gaiter}, to watch, observe; \textit{agaiter}, to set traps for; from O.H.G. \textit{wahtan}, to guard.

Wauch him, \textit{v.} to watch, be on one's guard, 1. 520.


Waw, s. wave, 3. 709; \textit{pl.} Wawys, 3. 699; Wawis, 3. 714.


Waward, s. vanguard, 8. 48 (E.), 12. 340. \textit{See} Vaward.

Wawerand, \textit{pres. pt.} wavering, 12. 185 (E.).

Waweryng, s. wavering, swerving, \textit{in E.}, 6. 584 (footnote).

Wawetyt, s. \textit{pt.} wavered, 7. 41 (E.).

Wax, s. wax, 15. 94.


Wayis, s. \textit{pl.} ways; or \textit{gen. sing.} way's, 7. 36.

Wayn, s. wain, waggon, 10. 221, 223; 10. 164 (E.). \textit{See} Vayn.


Wayne, s. quantity, 16. 454. \textit{See} Wane.

Wayne, in, in vain, 4. 48.


We, s. a little wee bit, 13. 217; a short while, 7. 182; a small space, 17. 677.

Wecht, s. weight, 17. 693.

Weddir, s. a wether, sheep, 7. 115; 7. 152 (H.).

Weddir, s. weather, 3. 387.


Wedis, s. \textit{pl.} weeds, i.e. garments, 11. 467, 13. 30.

Weid, s. weed, i.e. clothing, 11. 130; \textit{pl.} Wedis, garments, 11. 467, 13. 30.

Weild, \textit{v.} to possess, have full possession of, 12. 321.

Weill, \textit{adv.} well, 1. 21, 4. 61, 11. 50; quite, 1. 455; very, 1. 359, 4. 200, 11. 572, 16. 646; Weile, well, 1. 149. \textit{See} Ma, \textit{verb}.

Weill, \textit{adj.} a great number; \textit{weill est}, a great number of men; a large troop, 3. 15. The reading should rather be \textit{feill}; cf. A.S. \textit{fela}, many.

Weill-fair, welfare, 12. 156; Weil-far, 8. 377 (E.).

Weir, \textit{pt. pl.} were, 6. 184, &c.; \textit{pt. s. subj.} might be, 10. 208.

Weir, s. war, 16. 178, 492, 19. 167.


Welcummyne, s. welcome, 19. 794.

Welcummyt, \textit{pt. s.} welcomed, 11. 256.

Welend, \textit{v.} lit. to wield; \textit{welend the se}, command the sea, get out to sea, 4. 445; \textit{pres. pt.} Velendau, ruling, 5. 445.


Wen, s. stain, spot, 15. 250 (E.). A.S. \textit{wam}, a spot.

Wemen, s. \textit{pl.} women, 3. 734.


Wench, s. a girl, 10. 554 (E.).
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Wencussing, s. defeat, 18. 206 (E.).
Wencusyt, pl. s. vanquished, 1. 534; Wencust, 8. 117; pp. Wencusyt, 2. 332, 3. 196, 7. 373 (E.); Wencust, 18. 112. See Veneuss.

Wend, v. to go, 2. 280, 4. 70, 17. 520; Went (better spelt Wend), 4. 257; pt. pl. Went, went, 4. 183; pp. Went, gone, 1. 589, 18. 495; is went, 3. 420.


Wene, s. supposition; but wene, without supposition, without doubt, 17. 231. A.S. węn, weening. See Vayn, Weyne.

Weng, v. to avenge, 1. 461; ger. 18. 232 (E.); Wenge, 5. 79, 7. 35; pt. s. Wengyt, avanged, 1. 291; pp. Wengit, 8. 20.

Wengeans, s. revenge, 19. 239.


Wer, v. to wear, carry about, 1. 355.


Wer, pt. pl. subj. should be, 1. 3; War, 1. 4. See Be.

Wer, s. war, 8. 495, 13. 405, 17. 243; of wer, in a warlike manner, 19. 787; apon wer, for war, 15. 420, 16. 346.

Wer, s. doubt, 14. 187, 16. 181; but wer, without doubt, 2. 43. See Weir, Weyer.

Wer, adj. comp. worse, 1. 269, 3. 302, 4. 22. See War.


Were, ger. to defend, 20. 379. See Wer, to defend.

Were, v. to wear, 16. 485. See Wer, to wear.

Were, s. war, 4. 239, 16. 28. See Wer, war.

Were, s. spring, 5. 1. This word for ‘spring’ is probably merely the Lat. war; but the Scandinavian languages also have the word; cf. Icel. vár, Swed. var, spring.

Werraly, adv. verily, 15. 442. See below.

Werray, adj. very, true, 19. 29, 20. 249.

Werray, v. to make war on, fight against, 2. 462; ger. 8. 21 (E.); pr. s. Werrayis, makes war, 12. 363 (E.); pt. s. Werrayit, warred against, 3. 375, 9. 650 (E.); pres. pt. Werrayand, carrying on war, 3. 259; warring against, 9. 649 (E.). See Werray.

Werrayour, s. a warrior, reading in E. for Veriour, 5. 85 (footnote).

Werriours, s. pl. warriors, 20. 416.

Werthu, s. virtue, 1. 367, 371.

Wery, adj. weary, 2. 441, 10. 609.

Weryfyd, pp. verified, 2. 87 (footnote).

Wes, pl. s. was, 1. 8; Wess, 14. 145. See Be.

Wesand, s. weasand, 7. 584 (E.). C. has Vassand, q. v.

Wethir, s. a wether, 7. 152 (E.). See Weddir.

Wey, s. a wee bit, 17. 677 (E.). See We.


Weyne, s. supposition, doubt; but weyne, without doubt, 19. 292; withoute weyne, without doubt, 13. 260, 17. 928. See Wene.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE. 749

Weyr, s. doubt, 7. 219. See Weir, Wer.

Wheene, adj. pl. few, 3. 249 (H.), 9. 163 (H.). See Quhoyyn.

Whidderring, for Quheditrand, q. v., 17. 684 (H).

Whissilling, for Quhistlyng or Quhestlyng, 6. 87, 94 (H.).


Wictaill, s. victual, provisions, 10. 819, 19. 639 (E.); pl. Wictalis, 3. 401; Wictaillis, 9. 169 (E.); Wictalis, 3. 749.

Wictaillit, pp. victualled, furnished with provisions, 3. 339.

Wictory, victory, 1. 473, 3. 224. (Note.—In the former place, it is accented on the penultimates.)

Wictour, s. victory, 4. 544 (footnote), 8. 288 (E.), 15. 393 (E.); pl. Wictours, 16. 180 (E.).

Wid, adj. wide, great, 3. 23.

Wiffis, s. pl. women, 15. 536.

Wigorously, adv. vigorously, 3. 142, 4. 88 (E.).

Wikidly, adv. severely, 17. 809.

Wikkitnes, wickedness, 1. 559; Wikytynes, 3. 566.

Wilfull, adj. willing, 11. 266; anxious, 2. 354; Wilful, 2. 345.

Wilfully, adv. with good will, heartily, 2. 386, 3. 404; willingly, 2. 172.

Wilkyt, written for Wikkyt, 9. 75 (E.). See note on Valk, s.v.

Will, s. desire, 15. 79; will, 13. 515; in will, desirous, 12. 229; pl. (but in sing. sense), Willis, 1. 618, 13. 515 (footnote), 19. 158. (The examples in 1. 618 and 19. 158 show that the reading willis is probably the right one in 13. 515.)

Will of red (lit. wild of rede or counsel), at a loss what to do, 1. 348, 3. 494, 13. 477; Will off wane (wild of weening or thought), at a loss, 1. 323, 2. 471, 7. 225. The Icel. viltr (E. wild) properly means at a loss, astray, bewildered; cf. Icel. fara viltt, to go astray. See note to ii. 471, p. 554.

Willand, pres. part. willing; weil willand, well affected, 5. 41; 1 p. s. pr. Will, I desire, 7. 144.

Wirk, v. to work, act, contrive, 12. 312, 17. 58. See Wyrk.

Wisage, s. visage, face, 3. 58.

Wiss, adj. wise, 8. 162. See Wyss.

Wiss, s. wise, way, 2. 519, 8. 195, 14. 447. A.S. wis. See Wyss.


Wit, v. to know, 4. 673, 20. 507. See Wyt.

Wit; out of wit, deprived of reason, 13. 143.

With, prep. against, 1. 520; by means of, 1. 521; by, 2. 419, 18. 128.


Withletting, an error for Withsetting, i.e. setting ambush, 14. 107 (rubric in H.; footnote).


Withstude, pt. s. withstood, resisted, 15. 298.

With that, therewith, by that time, 15. 168.

With-thi, conj. on the condition that, provided that, 1. 493, 2. 526, 270; 3. 290, 6. 354, 506; 9. 647: 4. 12. Cf. A.S. mid Æy, on the condition that, where Æy is the instrumental case of the demonstrative se.
INDEX IV.—GLOSSARY TO THE BRUCE.

Wittaill, s. victuals. 4. 170, 17. 175; Wittle, 10. 312; Wittal, 14. 447; Wittalis, 4. 451. See Wic-taill.

Wittalit, pt. s. victualled, 15. 263.


Witting, s. knowledge, 4. 350, 5. 534 (E.), 16. 350, 368.

Witterly, adv. certainly, 4. 226. See Vitterly.

Wlispyt, pt. s. lisped, 1. 393, 399.

Wmbeセット, pt. s. beset, 9. 706 (E.). The prefix is the A.S. ymbe, around.

Wmbethocht, pp. bethought; wmbethochte ymbe, bethought yourselves, considered, 1. 92; pt. s. Wmbe-thocht him, bethought himself, 3. 352; pres. pt. Wmbethinkand, be-thinking, 5. 551 (E.); imp. pl. Wmbethinkis, for Ymbethinkis, 5. 613 (E.). The prefix is A.S. ymbe, about; the verb is A.S. ymbe-pencan, to bethink oneself; Grein, ii. 771. See Ymbethinkis.

Wmqwhile, adv. at some time, 3. 256; sometimes, 3. 262; Wmquhill, 1. 335. See Ymquhile.

Wnarmyt, pp. unarm'd, 2. 284.

Wndirta, 1 p. s. pr. I undertake, I take upon me to say, I affirm, I assert, 1. 292, 3. 110, 13. 44; pt. s. Wndertuk, agreed, 3. 662; pp. Wndertane, undertaken; him wndertane, undertaken for him, i.e. on his account, 3. 744.

Wndiscumfyt, pp. undiscomforted, undismayed, fearless, 3. 274.

Wndyr, prep. under, 2. 359.

Wnfayr, adj. evil, disastrous, 1. 128.

Wnhappy, adj. unlucky, 3. 291.

Wnslec, for Vaseill, 10. 218 (E.).

Wnsemly, adj. unseemly, 5. 407.

Woce, s. a voice, 11. 407 (E.). See Voece.

Wod, s. wood, 7. 61. See Vod.

Woddy, adj. woody, 4. 492.

Wode-axis, s. pl. axes for cutting down wood, 16. 361.

Wodsye, s. wood-side, 9. 139.

Woidre, s. stratagem, 9. 747. See note to x. 516, p. 579; where the remark 'lit. power to avoid' is wrong. The word is clearly a corruption of the curious O.F. voisidie, veisdie, vaidie, treason, deceitful, perfidy, explained by Burguy, s. v. vice. Roquefort also gives voisadie, voedie, voisie, voisie, with the same senses; also the verb voisier, resier, roidier, to deceive. Burguy takes the root of the word to be Lat. uitium, vice.

Wonand, pres. pt. dwelling, 17. 184, 190. See Wonandel.

Wonder, s. a wonder, 17. 383. See Wondir.


Wondir, adv. wonderfully, extremely, 1. 323, 10. 620; Wondre, 1. 394. See Wounder.

Wondirly, adv. wondrously, 1. 296, 17. 6 ; Wonderly, 3. 562.

Wone, pp. wont, accustomed, 3. 68.


Wonnyn, pp. won, 2. 190, 7. 609, 10. 793, 11. 145, 12. 129, 17. 12, 19. 135; Wonnyn, 17. 833; won-yn ep, gotten up, 10. 435. See Yn.

Wonnung, s. dwelling, 5. 177. See Wonnandel.

Worship, s. valour, 3. 50, 15. 154.


Worthyhede, s. honour, reputation, 6. 333.

Wond, s. wood, 2. 304, 7. 613.


Wouk, pt. s. kept watch, 2. 552. A.S. wæcan, to arise, pt. t. ie wæc; wæcan, to watch, pt. t. ie wæcan. The strong form is used here.

Wouk, s. week, 14. 132 (E.); pl. Wouks, 9. 359 (E.). See Owk.

Wounder, s. as adj. wonderful, 19. 398. See Wondir.


Woundit, pp. wounded, 10. 479, 17. 452, 459, 484.


Wouss (for French vous), you, 10. 747.

Woux, pt. s. waxed, grew, became, 2. 170, 361; 8. 391 (E.). See Wox.


Woxt, for Wox, became, 13. 715 (H.).


Wp, adv. up, 10. 569, 574.


Wrag, s. wrong, 1. 177.

Wrate, pt. s. wrote, 1. 525; Wrat, 10. 746, 752; pl. Wrayt, 1. 148.

Wrath, adj. wrath, angry, 1. 201.

Wrayt, pt. pl. wrote, 1. 148. See Wrate.

Wrechitnes, misery, 1. 224; cowardice, 9. 76 (E.).


Wreth, s. wrath, 1. 167, 18. 534.

Wreth him, pt. s. refl. became enraged, 2. 138; Wreyth him, became wrath, 1. 165; we also find Wreth him, became enraged, 1. 423; Wrethit him, 15. 412; pp. Wrethit, made angry, 17. 45. (The forms wreth, wryeth, only found in MS. E., are plainly incorrect; the right form is wrethit.)

Wreth. See Wreth above.

Wrocht, pt. pl. wrought, worked, toiled, 1. 471; Wroucht, s. acted, did, 18. 158; pp. Wrocht, wrought, done, acted, 1. 94. See Wyrk.

Wry, adj. uneven; on wry, awry, 4. 705.

Wryt, s. writing, 1. 13; book, 1. 343.

Wrythed, for Wrethed, pt. s. refl. was wrath, 1. 425 (footnote). See Wreth, verb.

Ws, dat. to us, 1. 343; (after prep. of), 12. 250.

Wschyng, s. issuing; exit, an error for Yschyng, 6. 363 (footnote).

Wsis, pr. pl. are wont, are used, 11. 227 (E.); 1 p. s. pt. Wsyt, I was accustomed, 10. 563 (E.); pp. Wsit, used, 11. 222 (E.).

Wss, s. use, 17. 252 (E.).

Wtelauys, s. pl. outlaws, 2. 493.

Wthyr, adj. other, 16. 320 (E.).

Wtirly, adv. utterly, 14. 154.
Wtouth, adv. outwards, forwards, 2. 299; on the outside, 4. 152 (E.). Cf. Swed. utåt, outward; the Swed. åt, to, seems to be A.S. ò, Goth. und, unto.

Wtraly, adv. utterly, wholly, 3. 196; very well, 3. 674.

Wycht, adj. wight, vigorous, 1. 22, 370, 518; 2. 173, 489; nimble, swift, 2. 120. See Wicht.

Wycht, an error in 3. 699 (footnote).

Wychtis, s. pl. wights, persons, 2. 522. A.S. wiht, a creature.

Wyffis, s. pl. wives, 1. 199. See Wiffis.

Wygorously, adv. vigorously, a reading in E. for Rigorously, 7. 449 (footnote).

Wykkyt, adj. wicked, 1. 195.

Wykkytly, adv. wickedly, 1. 222.

Wyn, v. to win, 1. 97, 351; 2. 111; to defeat, conquer, 12. 487, 15. 338; to reap, 10. 189; pr. s. Wynnis, wins, 3. 175; pr. pl. subj. Wyn, conquer, 12. 257. A.S. winan.

Wynland, 17. 721 (E.). See Vyndland.

Wynnyt, an error in E. for Wonnnyt, 8. 388 (footnote).

Wyppit, pt. s. wiped, 5. 647.

Wyre, v. to turn, cast, 17. 704. "Vifer, to veer, turne round, wheele or whirlie about;" Cotgrave.

Wyre, a reading for Vyre in II., 5. 595.

Wyrk, v. to work, act, 2. 117; imp. pl. work ye, 2. 337. See Wrocht, Wirk.

Wysage, visage, 1. 383. See Wisage.

Wysk, s. a whisk, a swift stroke, 5. 641. Cf. Swed. viska, to wag.

Wyss, adj. wise, 1. 22, 121; 2. 489, 501. See Wiss.

Wyss, s. wise, way, 1. 574. See Wiss.

Wyssmennys, s. gen. pl. wise men's, 11. 22 (E.).

Wyst, pt. s. knew, 1. 141, 318; 2. 225, 552; 3. 6, 7. 187, 20. 501; pl. 1. 127. See Wist.


Wytt, v. to know, 1. 238; imp. pl. know ye, 2. 2. See Wit.

Wytt, s. wit, wisdom, 1. 344; owt off his wytt, out of his wits, 2. 199.

Wyth, prep. against, 3. 714.

Wytnes, s. witness, 1. 560.

Wytt, an error in E. for Wyth = against, 7. 621 (footnote).

Wyttetyt, pp. informed, a reading in E. for Varnit, 7. 533 (footnote).

Wytttryng, s. notice, 9. 564 (E.). See Wittering.

Wyttyt, pt. s. enquired, or learnt by enquiry, 12. 156 (E.). (Probably an incorrect form; perhaps it should be wytt.)

Yar, an error in J. for Thar, 16. 45.

Yare, adj. ready, 19. 497 (H.). A.S. gearo, ready. See Yhar, yar.

Ydill, adj. idle, 8. 434.

Ydilly, adv. idly, 10. 171.

Yemanry, s. yeomanry, 16. 80.

Yhar, adj. yare, ready, 2. 346. A.S. geornian, to desire. See 3aru.

Yhe, pron. pl. ye, 2. 337.

Yhed, pt. s. went, 2. 425. See yeid.

Yheit, adv. yet, 2. 217. See Yheyt, Zeit.

Yhemen, s. pl. yeomen, 13. 225 (heading). See 3eman.

Yher, s. pl. years, 1. 532. See 3er.
GLOSSARY

Yhet, *adv.* yet, 1. 106; *na yhet,* nor yet, nor even, 1. 106.

Yheyt, *yet,* 1. 246; 2. 241; Yheyte, 3. 448. See *yet.*

Ying, *adj.* young, 3. 216.

Ymyddis, *prep.* in the midst of, 12. 576 (E.); Ymyddys, 5. 325 (E.).


Yukirly, *adv.* particularly, 7. 555; specially, 10. 534, 13. 139; in particular, 15. 66. Yukirly, quite, 7. 183. See Eukrely.

Yone, *adj.* *yon,* 15. 142 (H.); *pt.* yonder men, 14. 280. See *yon.*

Ysche, *v.* to issue, go or come out, sally, sally forth, 4. 95, 5. 189, 8. 457, 15. 12, 118; 18. 492; *pt.* s. Yschit, 6. 404, 450, 18. 319; *pt.* Yschi, issued, sallied, 6. 418, 8. 450, 17. 137; *pp.* Yschit, 5. 338, 6. 432, 10. 218. See Isch.

Ysche, s. outlet, issue, exit, way out, 6. 363, 14. 354, 19. 670; sally, 19. 94. See above.

Yscheill, s. squadron, 12. 214. See Escheill.

Ysaching, s. sallying out, sally, 15. 158, 246. See Ysche.

Ythand, *adj.* assiduous, busy, 3. 285. Icel. *iðinn,* assiduous, busy; *iðja,* to be busy. A better form would be *ythen,* but the form is assimilated to that of present participles. See Ythen.

Ythandly, *adv.* assiduously, 3. 275, 288; 6. 327, 10. 287, 13. 589, 14. 320; Ythanyly, continually, 2. 57. See above.

Ythen, for Ythand, 3. 285 (*footnote*). See Ythand.

Ythanyly, for Ythandly, 6. 327 (E.), 14. 320 (E.).


3aa, *adv.* *yea* (*in assent*), 12. 450; *3ai,* 1. 470. See *jis.*

3air, *adj.* ready, 4. 626. See Yare, *3ar.*


3ar, *adj.* yare, ready, 2. 316, 3. 679, 8. 409, 12. 409, 15. 6, 17. 702. See Yare, 3air.

3ar, *adv.* readily, quickly, 3. 696. See above.

3arne, *v.* to yearn for, desire, 2. 507; *pres.* pt. 3arnand, yearning, 7. 11, 11. 525; *pr.* s. 3arnus, desires, yearns, 9. 20; *pt.* s. 3arnit, desired, 20. 209; *pt.* 3arnit, yearned, desired, 12. 282; 3arnyt, 6. 323; desired (to go), 18. 541; 2 p. pt. 3arnit, ye desired, 12. 282. A.S. *geornian,* to desire.


3arnyng, s. desire, wish, 3. 742, 4. 575, 5. 246, 9. 583, 17. 229, 20. 213, A.S. *geornung,* wish, desire. See above.

3ate, *s.* gate, 4. 431; 3at, 10. 225. A.S. *geat.* See *set.*

3auld, *an error for* 3eld, yield, 10. 824 (E.).

3ed, *pt.* s. went, 19. 660; *pl.* 3ede, 3. 112. See 3eid.

3eemsall, *s.* care, 20. 231. See 3emsall.


3eir, *year,* 6. 183, 10. 821. See *3ere.*

3eit, *adv.* yet, 1. 368, 556; still, moreover, 5. 463, &c.; besides, 15. 531.

3eld, *v.* to yield, 10. 824, 11. 33; *1. p.* s. *pr.* 1 yield, 13. 529. See 3ald.
jeoman, s. yeoman, 10. 165.
jeomanry, s. yeomanry, body of yeomen, 15. 476.
jeomsall, s. keeping, 20. 231 (E.); to jeomsall, under his care, 17. 222; jeomsall, 11. 329 (E.). Icel. geimssta, guardianship. See below.
jeere, year, 6. 188, 10. 200; pl. jeer, years, 1. 339, 345. So in 1. 522, it is probable that jeer is should be jeer.
jeymseill, s. tutoring, supervision, protecting care, 11. 329. See jeomsall.
jeyet, yet, 2. 437. See jeit.
jeha, adv. yea, 6. 613, 7. 181. See jea, jeis.
jeharn, 1 p. s. pr. I yearn, I desire, 1. 158; pp. jeharnyt, desired, 1. 232. See jeanne.
jehe, pron. ye, 8. 489, 12. 255.
jeheid, pt. s. went, 1. 90. See jeid.
jeheir, s. pl. years, 9. 299. See jeere.
jejheeman, a yeoman, 5. 235, 10. 172; pl. jehemen, 13. 229. See jeeman.
jejhemar, s. yeomanry, 4. 386, 19. 171. See jeeman.
 jejhemar, s. keeper, groom, 2. 123. See jeemyt.
jejhemsell, s. keeping, charge, 2. 136. See jeomsall.
jejhet, s. gate, 17. 444. See jeet.
jejheyme, v. to keep, take care of, 13. 250. See jeemyt.
jejhis, adv. yes (wrongly used here, as the question is a simple one, and the right reading is jai, as given), 4. 470; footnote. See jis.
jejhisterday, yesterday, 1. 124.
jejhomen, s. pl. yeomen, 5. 257, 16. 101, 120. See jeheman.

jhone, adj. yonder, 5. 593. See jon.
jhoun, adj. young, 12. 322.
jhule, s. Yule, Christmas, 9. 204 (E.).
jeumanry, s. yeomanry, 17. 944 (E.); jhwanry, 15. 476 (E.).
jeumen, s. pl. yeomen, 16. 120 (E.).

jhus, adv. yes, 9. 84. See jis.

jhystriday, yesterday, 2. 56.

jting, adj. young, 20. 41 (E.).

jis, adv. yes, 4. 484; jhus (jis, E.), 9. 84. Note.—jis is the emphatic form; mere assent is expressed by jae, q. v. See jhus, jhis.

joiil-eyvn, Yule-even, Christmas eve, 9. 204.

jok, v. to yoke, 10. 215.

jolden, pp. yielded, 13. 539; yielded up, 10. 804. See jeld, jald.

jeomen, s. pl. yeomen, 13. 229 (E.), 16. 101 (E.).


jondir, adv. yonder, 19. 629.

jongat, for jon gat, i.e. in such a way, in such wise, 3. 171.

joung, adj. young, 8. 454. See jing.

jouris, poss. pron. yours, 1. 497.

joutheid, s. youth, 5. 277, 17. 933; joutheide, 10. 532.

jow, acc. pl. you, yourselves, 1. 92, 10. 422; dat. 1. 93. The nom. is je, 1. 92.

jowr, your, 2. 129.

jowtheid, youth, 1. 334. See joutheid.

jude, pt. s. went, 7. 36, 12. 560; pl. 15. 72, 17. 580. A.S. ic code, I went. See jeid.

juman, s. a yeoman, 10. 172 (E.), 12. 151 (E.). See jeeman.
INDEX V.—PROPER NAMES IN THE BRUCE.

Many of these proper names are explained and discussed in the Notes, so that it is unnecessary to explain them here at length. In order to find the place in the Notes where a name is discussed, consult Index I., pp. 616—624.

Abyrdeyne, Aberdeen, 2. 512.
Abyrnethy, Schir Lowrens of, 13. 553.
Adam of Gordoune, 15. 333.
Adammis, Adam’s, 15. 250.
Adeill, Athol (earl of), 4. 62; erll
Adrastus, king, 2. 529.
Affiyk, Africa, 1. 539.
Air, Ayr, 5. 190, 14. 20. See Ar, Are.
Alan Catcart, Sir, 9. 575.
Alexander (the great), 1. 529, 10.
706; Alysander, 3. 83; cf. p. 612.
Alexander (III), 1. 37.
Alexander of Argyle, 10. 123.
Almanze, Germany, 11. 93.
Alphous, Alfonso, 20. 338 (H.).
Amecout, 11. 573 (E.). See Den-
cort.
Amer, the Wallang, Sir Aymer de
Valence, 2. 200; is defied by
Robert Bruce, 2. 248; attacks
Bruce at Methven, 2. 308; defeats
Bruce, 2. 393; spares his prisoners,
2. 457; *praises Bruce, 6. 8—24;
seeks Bruce in Cumnock, 6. 457—
508; chases Bruce, 6. 532; re-
turns, 7. 81; praises Bruce, 7. 93—
104; again praises Bruce, 7. 352—
373; retreats, 7. 382, 8. 1; parts
Clifford and Vaux, 7. 625; hears
bad news, 8. 112; flees from the
battle of Bannockburn, 13. 328. See also Vallanch, Wallang.
Amery: the same as Amer, 2. 209,
223, 248, 457; gen. Ameryis, 6.
517.
Anandyrdale, Annandale, 1. 66.
Androu, Andrew, i. e. Sir Andrew
Gray, 10. 644; Sir Andrew Harcla,
16. 511, 518.
Androws, St Andrew’s, 1. 353;
bishop of, 2. 81.
Anguss, Angus, 3. 659, 9. 307,
Anwyk, Alnwick, 20. 10 (E.). See
Awnwyk.
Aquytane, Acquitaine, 11. 101;
Aquitayngne, 11. 44 (E.).
Ar, Ayr, 4. 38; Are, 5. 482. See
Air.
Arane, Arran, 4. 346, 370, 464;
5. 17.
Ardrossan, 8. 96; Sir Fergus of,
14. 31, 15. 193.
Are, Ayr, 5. 482. See Ar, Air.
Arestee, Aristæus, 10. 718, 728;
Ariste, 10. 718 (E.).
Arestotill, Aristotle, 4. 739.
Argyle, 3. 9, 18. 445; Argile, 9. 463, 11. 334; Alexander of, 10. 123.
Arrabe, Arabia, 1. 539.
Artyas, Artois (Earl of), 1. 339.
Arthur, king, 1. 549.
Artyn, Thomas, 18. 409, 424, 434.
Arrick-stane, Arrick-stone, 2. 148.
See the Note.
Atholl, Athol, 2. 235; earl of, 2. 480; Iohn of Athole, 3. 308; Davy of Adell, 13. 490. See Adeill.
Awnwyk, Alnwick, 20. 10.

Babilonys, Babylon's, 1. 530, 10. 707.
Balleoll, Sir Ihon the, 1. 168; Ihone the, 1. 181; the Balleoll, 1. 49.
Balmeyrue, Bamborough, 13. 616.
Balmeryne, king of, 20. 393. See note.
Ban, Bane; the river Bann in Ulster, 14. 371, 382.
Bannokburn, 12. 407, 13. 337, 351.
Bathket, Bathgate, 19. 206.
Bawmurbigth, Bamborough, 13. 616 (E.). See Balmeyrue.
Bayon, Bayonne, 11. 101.
Beauvare, the vale of Beverley, 18. 553.
Bell (Sir Ingraham), 5. 483, 513.
Berclay, Sir David, 2. 238; Sir Moriss de Berclay, 13. 417. Breklay (Sir David), 2. 408.
Besat, Bisset, 14. 47 (E.); Besatis, the Bissets, 14. 520.
Betwng, Sir Marmaduke, 13. 523; see note. However, the right name is no doubt "de Thweng." See the description of Danby Castle in Murray's Guide to Yorkshire, where we find—"The Bruces held it until 1271, when their great Yorkshire estates fell to four heiresses, one of whom married Marmaduke de Thweng." Doubtless, the Marmaduke who, after Bannockburn, surrendered to Bruce, and whom Bruce apparently recognised at once, was of this family, and surrendered to Bruce in particular because they were kinsmen.
Betyss, Betys, 3. 74, 77. See note to 3. 73.
Biland, 18. 363, 368, 478, 497, 501; Byland, 18. 353; Bilandis abbay, 18. 368.
Binny, the same as Bunnok, 10. 153 (H.).
Blak Dowglass, 15. 538.
Blar, Blair (Sir Brice), 4. 37.
Bonkill, Bonkle, 9. 691.
Boroundoun, Wil'zam the, 2. 479.
Borowbrig, Boroughbridge, 17. 535 (E.); Borrowbrig, 17. 831.
Bosbek, for Rosbek (Roubaix), 4. 249 (rubric).
Bothwell, 8. 111, 357; 13. 403, 663; read Buttil (Butel) in 9. 522, 533; see note to 9. 522, p. 576.
Bouchane, Buchan, 8. 400, 9. 15, 110, 186, 296, 280, 300.
Bouchquhane, Buchan, 8. 400 (E.). See Bouchane.
Boune, Bohun, 12. 29 (E.). See Bowme.
Bourch, Burgh-in-Sands, 4. 310; Bowrich-in-the-sand, 4. 203.
Bowme, i.e. Sir Henry de Bohun, 12. 29.
Boyle, Sir Robert, 2. 244*, 4. 342, 505; 8. 413; Sir Gilbert, 14. 406.
Brathweck, Brodick, 4. 388.
INDEX V—PROPER NAMES IN THE BRUCE. 757

Brechine, Brechin (a place), 9, 286; Sir David of, 8, 402, 9, 18, 120, 198, 208, 285, 19, 19, 59, 104.

Breklay, Barclay (Sir David), 2, 408. See Berclay.

Bremayne, i.e. Birmingham, 14, 143; Brwman, 14, 515.

Bretane, Britain, 1, 538, 550, 10, 28.

Bretane, Sir Iolue of, 18, 462, 469, 507; the marchall Bretane, 18, 473.

Bretangie, Brittany, 3, 687; Bretanche, 11, 94; Bretançhe, 20, 323.

Broite, the story of the Brut, 1, 560.

Broune, Sir Richard, 19, 18, 54.

Bruce; variously spellt Bruce, 1, 604, &c.; Bruss, 12, 345; Brwyss, 1, 67, 153; Brwiss, 1, 503; Brwce, 1, 581; Proiss, 10, 791; Bryss, 9, 187; Bryss, 13, 165; gen. Brysis, 13, 311.

Bruce (the elder), 1, 67—167; confused with the younger Bruce, 1, 477 (see note to this line, p. 517).

Bruce, miswritten for Bryce, 4, 37.

Bruce, king Robert, 1, 477—20, 298; his heart carried to Spain by Douglas, 20, 423*.

Bruce, Sir Edward, brother to Robert, 7, 276, &c.; his expedition to Ireland, 14, 1—16, 330; his defeat and death, 18, 1—210.

Bruce, Sir Nigel, brother of king Robert, 4, 61; put to death, 4, 316—332.

Brwman, Birmingham, 14, 515. See Bremayne.

Bryde, saint, 19, 300, 635; gen. Brydis, 5, 336.

Brynrame, Birmingham, 14, 515 (E.).

Bryse, Sir Blair Brice, the right reading in 4, 37.

Bryss, Bruce (Nigel), 4, 61. See Bruce, Nigel.

Buchane, Buchan, 9, 110 (E.). See Bouchane.

Bunnok, William, 10, 153, 194, 211, 234; Bwnnok, 10, 220, 226, 251.

Burch, Burgh, 4, 205. See Dourch.

Burrow-brig, Boroughbridge, 17, 535; Borrowbrig, 381.

But, Bute, 3, 577, 11, 336.

Butler, 14, 145, 513.

Buttill, 9, 533 (C.). See the note.

Byland, 18, 355. See Biland.

Byset, Bisset, 14, 47. See Besat.

Calion, Ewmond de, 15, 321; Cal-yeoun, 15, 528; Callow, 15, 321, 377 (E.); and see 15, 394.

Cambell, Schir Nele, 2, 491, 3, 392, 396, 571; Cambell, schir Colyne, 16, 119, 130.

Cambuskynneth, 13, 493; Camys-kynnel (E.).

Campanus, king, i.e. Capaneus, 2, 534.

Cardross, 20, 79, 151.

Carleill, Carlisle, 7, 384, 394, 500, 506; Carlele, 17, 890.

Carnavirnane, Carnarvon, 4, 73. Carnauran, Eduard of, 19, 255.

Carrik, Carrick, 4, 552, 567; 5, 125, 220, 223, 463, 478, 491, 6, 27, 373, 7, 398, 18, 118; Carryk, 1, 67, 2, 103, 11, 333; erll of Carrik, 14, 1.

Cartage, Cartluge, 3, 211.

Catcart, Sir Alau, 9, 575.

Catone, (Dionysius) Cato, 1, 343; and see note on p. 612.

Cesar, Julius, 1, 537, 3, 277.

Clar, Gilbert of, 13, 466, 508.

Clare, Sir Richard of, 14, 138, 159, 254, 317, 389, 16, 2, 18, 12; and see Richard of Clare.

Clyffurd, Cliford (Lord), 1, 287, 317, 435; 2, 112, 157; 5, 231, 7, 622, 11, 521, 12, 335; spel Clifurd, 7, 561, 623; 12, 318; Clifürde, 8, 511; gen. Clifurdis, 5, 449.
Cobhame, schir Rauf of, 18. 410, 422, 431.

Coignereis, Connor, 14. 394, 408, 460; 15. 24, 35.

Cokdaill, Cock dale, 19. 279; see note.

Colyne, Sir Colin (Campbell), 16. 119, 130.

Comyn, 3. 4. See Cumyn.

Conage, Connaught, 16. 295.

Conens, i.e. Caulus, 3. 85.

Conyngame, Cunningham, 8. 13 (E.).

Cornwale, 20. 323.

Crab, John, 17. 239, 702; gen. Crabbis, 607.


Crauford, Schyr Ranald of, 4. 36.

Cre, Cree (river), 9. 517, 547.

Crechanben, Ben Cruachan, 10. 27.

Cristal of Setoun, 5. 171; Cristole, 5. 156; Crystall, 2. 418; Crystoll, 4. 16; and see Setoun.


Culross, 18. 254.

Cunnok, Cumnock, 6. 463, 511.

Cumyn (Sir John), 1. 483, 575, 2. 27, 32, 79; Comyn, 3. 4; Cwmyn, 1. 562, 6. 503; gen. Cwynnis, 9. 22.

Cumyn, Sir Edmund, 2. 37.

Cuthbert, 4. 585, 604; 5. 31.

Cwynne, Comyn, earl of Buchan, 8. 400, 9. 15.

Cwnyngame, Cunningham, 8. 13, 17.

Dancort, Sir William, 12. 351. See Dencort.

Dares, 1. 525.

Dav, David (king of Israel), 4. 681.

Davidy the brechynye; see Brechine.

Dauklyne, i.e. Danclene, 3. 86; or rather Danclene; see p. 612.

Davy, David (son of Robert Bruce), 20. 37, 68, 84, 117, 127; David II., 13. 687.

De sawagiss, the Savages, or De Savages, 14. 49.

Dencort, Daincourt, 11. 573. See Dencort.

Desnownt, Desmond, earl of, 14. 141; Desmownd, 14. 514.

Devilling, Dublin, 15. 107, 16. 213, 262; Devilling, 16. 295.

Dicsou, Thom, 5. 279; Dicsone, 5. 346.

Donald, Erll of mar, 19. 241, 349.

Donavardyne, Dunaverty, 3. 666, 677.

Douglass, 1. 29, &c.; also spelt Douglass, Dowglas, Dowgass, and even Douglass (13. 4); schir Wiljam off Dowglass, 1. 282; Sir James Douglass is described, 1. 288-406; his death, 20. 410-476; gen. Douglassis, 20. 481; Douglas his, 6. 435; Douglass (as a warre), 16. 407; Dowglass (as a warre), 13. 305; the blak Douglass, 19. 556.


Downe, Down, 14. 376 (E.).

Driburgh, Dryburgh, 18. 339.

Drouchyndra, Drogheda, 16. 261.

Drumfreiss, Dumfries, 9. 23.

Duche, Dutch(land), 11. 94.

Duk-peris, i.e. Douge Pairs, the Twelve Peers of France, 3. 440.

Dumbertane, Dumbarton, 15. 306, 19. 51.

Dumfress, Dumfries, 2. 26.

Dunbar, 13. 609.

Dundawk, Dundalk, 14. 135, 240; 18. 11, 217.

Dunde, Dundee, 10. 800.
Dunkelden, Dunkeld, 16. 574.
Dunse park. See Dunss.
| Dunstaffynch, Dunstaffnage, 10. 113.
Dwn, Down, 14. 376.
| Dwuss park, Dunse park, 17. 64, 76.
Dytis, Dyctes, 1. 526.

Ector, Hector, 1. 395.
Edmund, Edmund, 15. 321, 377 (E. and II.).
Edry-furd, 8. 34. See note.
Edward of Carnarvon (Carnarvon), 4. 73, 19. 255; (Edward II.), 10. 322, 18. 170; gen. Eduardis, 13. 657. See Bannokburn.
Edward (III.), 19. 257.
Eduard, i.e. Sir Edward Bruce; see Bruce. Gen. Eduardis, 18. 98, 206.
Eduard (Edward I.), 1. 73, 408; Eduard, 4. 184; Edward, 1. 179.
Egypt, Egypt, 1. 539.
Egymor, Egrimour, 3. 441.
Eliss, Ellis, 16. 447; Elyss, 16. 441.
Endwillane, 14. 113; perhaps the same as Inderwillane, 16. 62.
Ennirkyp, Innerkip, 8. 98.
| Ennerkethyne, Inverkeithing, 16. 549.
| Ennerrowry, Inverury, 9. 34, 192, 212; Enrowry, 9. 34 (E.). See Innerrowry.
| Erischry, Irishry, Irish people, 14. 9, 16. 682, 18. 9, 59, 194; Erischrye, 18. 219; Eryschrye, 16. 317; Eryschrye, 16. 301.

Erl of murreff, also called Erl thomas; see Murreff.
Erl richonde, 16. 331 (rubric)
Esk-dale, Eskdale, 16. 508.
Esobell, Isabel, 13. 487.
Ethioles, Eteocles, 6. 179, 200, 265.
Evrope, Europe, 1. 540.

Fabricius, 20. 521—553.
Fawkirk, Falkirk, 11. 437.
Felystynys, s. pl. Philistines, 4. 755 (footnote).
Feniss, Gylmyne de, 10. 456; Fyniss, 10. 470.
Ferambraice, Fierabras, 3. 437.
Fergus of Ardrossane, 14. 31, 15. 193.
Ferrand, 4. 256; gen. Ferrandis, 4. 241, 286.
Ferrand, the name of a horse, 2. 118. See the Note.
Fiff, Fife, 16. 552; Fyfe, 2. 206.
Fizwaryne, Fitzwarren, 15. 75; and see 14. 515.
Flagot (the river), 3. 455.
Flandriss, Flanders, 19. 194.
Flemyne, a Fleming, 17. 233; pl. Flemynnis, Flemings, 4. 240.
Flemyng, Neyll, 15. 129, 136, 226.
Florentyn, adj. man of Florence, 14. 516.
Forfar, 9. 324; Forfer, 9. 310.
Forster, Philip the, 9. 312.
Forth, wattir of, the river Forth, 13. 335.
Francess, William, 10. 530; Franss, 10. 601, 643; Francoiss, 10. 750.
France, 4. 240, 19. 260; Francc, 1. 553; Franss, 11. 89, 18. 471;
king of, 18. 542; a knight of, 9. 391.
Franch, French, 4. 245; Franche, 18. 524.
Fraseyr, Frasir (Sir Alexander), 2. 407; Fresale, 2. 239; Freser, 9. 9, 10. 45; Fresir, 8. 395; Freser, Simon, 9. 10.
Fyfe, Fife, 2. 206; Fiff, 16. 552.
Fyngall, Fingal, 3. 69.
Gyniss, Gylmyne de, 10. 470; Feniss, 10. 456.
Fyss-thomas, Sir Maurice Fitz-thomas, 14. 146.

Gadyrris, Gaderis, 3. 75.
Gallistoun, Galston, 17. 151 (E.). See Gawlistoun.
Gallowais, s. pl. men of Galloway, 6. 32; Galloways, 6. 25 (rubric).
Galloway, 5. 467, 6. 298, 9. 498, 10. 792, 16. 36, 503; Galloway, 1. 188; Galloway, 9. 476, 501, 537; Gallowa, 16. 693.
Gascon, Gascony, 11. 93; Gascone, 15. 321.
Gascoun, a Gascon, 10. 324; Gascoun, 15. 321.
Gaudifer, 3. 73, 79. See Note.
Gawlistoun, Galston, 8. 123, 17. 151.
Gawter the little, Sir Walter de Lisle, 5. 203.
Gedword, Jedworth, 8. 427. And see Jedworth.
Geiles the Argentine, 11. 174 (II.).
Gelis, Giles, 13. 299; Gylis, 11. 174.
Gib harper, 18. 95, 165; gen. Harperis, 18. 223. (The sense is Gilbert the harper.)
Gilbert de la Hay, 2. 490, 3. 25, 6. 69, 8. 412.
Gilbert of Clar, Sir, 13. 466, 508.
INDEX V.—PROPER NAMES IN THE BRUCE. 761

Iohne of Logy, 19, 16, 53.
Iohne of Bretane; see Bretane.
Iohne, Schir Amery of saint, 16. 506.
Iohnnis nycht, St John's night, 13. 491.
Johnstoun, Sainct, i.e. Perth, 9. 323 (footnote).
Irchery, Irishry, 16. 301 (E.). See Erischry.
Irell, Uriel, 16. 296.
Irland, Ireland, 3. 683; 14. 7, 9, 11, 114, 139, 256, 298, 390; 16. 3—679; 18. 15; Ireland, 1. 100.
Isabell, wife of Edw. II., 19. 261. See also Eosbell.
Judas, Judas, 4. 18.
Keth, Robert, Sir Robert Keith, 11. 455, 13. 61.
Keyth, Sir William, 20. 592. See Keth.
Kildar, Kildare, earl of, 14. 514; Kyldare, earl of, 14. 142.
Kildromy, Kildrummy, 3. 337, 367. See Kyndrummy and Kyldromy.
Killwynyn, Kilwinning, 8. 95.
Kilross, 14. 252.
Kilsaggart, 14. 133.
Kirk of dowglass, 20. 585.
Kow-yet, Cow-gate, Cowport, 17. 35.
Kyldare, earl of, 14. 142; Kildar, 14. 514.
Kyldromy, Kildrummy, 4. 44, 59, 81 (E.); Kildromy, 3. 357, 367. See Kyndrummy.
Kyle, 8. 9, 17, 24.
Kylkenane, 14. 522 (E.).

Hyrsery, for Erischry, q. v., 14. 9 (E.).

Iames, James of Douglas, 1. 317, &c. (James is generally a disyllable, as in 1. 29, 317; 5. 255; &c.)
Iames Steward, 19. 243.
Iedburgh, 8. 427 (II.), 10. 344 (H.), 10. 504 (II.).
Iedworth, 10. 344, 504; Iedward forest, 16. 363; Gedword, 8. 427; gen. Jedworthis, 8. 427 (E.).
Iereby, 16. 296 (E.).
Jeromy, Jeremiah, 4. 681.
Jerusalem, 4. 209, 308.
Ihonystoun, St John’s Town, i.e. Perth, 2. 247. See Johnstoun.
Ilis, the Isles, 18. 445; Ylis, 11. 335.
Incmertyn, Inchmartin, 2. 230; Inchmertyne, 2. 409.
Innderwillane, 16. 62; perhaps the same as Endwillane, 14. 113; see note to 14. 113.
Ingland, England, 1. 81; Yngland, 1. 73, &c. (The usual spelling is Ingland, which is very common; see 17. 502, 513, 525, &c.)
Ingram the wmfrawill, Sir Ingram de Umfraville, 2. 212; Ingerame, 19. 152; Ingerame Vmphrewell, 19. 73. See Vmphravell.
Innemallane, 14. 113 (E.).
Innerrowry (better Innerrowry), Inverury, 9. 192 (E.).
Innerrowry, 9. 209. See Ennerrowry.
Iole, Joel, 4. 682.
Iohn of the tour (princess), 20. 39, 118.
Kyllvanane, 14. 522.
Kynmernok, Kilmarnock, 8. 95.
Kyndrummy, Kildrummy, 4. 185, 313; 5. 149; Kyndrumy, 4. 59; Kyndromy, 9. 289; Kyndrwmyn, 4. 81. See Kyldromyn.
Kynrike, an error for Lynrike, Limerick, 16. 265 (E.).
Lainenser, Leinster, 16. 297.
Lambyrtoun, Lamberton (William of), 1. 412.
Lanark, 8. 447 (E.).
Lancister (Earl Thomas of Lancaster), 17. 285; spell Longcastell, 17. 285 (E.); Loncastell, 17. 852.
Laurik, Lauryn, 8. 447.
Largyss, Large, 8. 97.
Laryss, perhaps Larissa, 3. 73.
Latyne, Latin, 4. 261.
Lawyne, king Laban, 3. 442, 456.
Ledowss, Sym of the, 10. 358, 425; Ledouss, 405, 492.
Lenester, Lenister, 16. 297 (E.).
Lennax, Lennox, 8. 413. See Leenuax.
Leuenax, Erle of the, i.e. earl of Lennox, 2. 482, 3. 482, 591; Leuyax, 2. 235; Lennax, 8. 413.
Lile, de Lisle, 5. 203.
Lithkew, Linlithgow, 13. 381. See Lythkow.
Lochriane, 16. 36 (E.).
Logane, Logan, 14. 47; Loganys, the Logans, 14. 520; Walter Logane, 20. 474.
Logy, John of, 19. 16, 53.
London, for Loudon, 4. 17 (footnote).
Longcastell, Lancaster, 17. 285 (E.); Loncastell, 17. 852.
Lorne, lord off, 3. 1—185; Lorn, John of, 6. 481—585, 7. 30, 43, 92; 10. 7, 15, 299, 305; lord of Lorne, 9. 462; Lorn (district of), 10. 9.
Louchevin, Lochleven, 15. 308.
Louchmaban, Lochmaben, 2. 18, 72, 147.
Loudon, 4. 17 (see the Note); Lowdoun, Loudoun, 8. 124, 134, 150; Litill Lowdoun, 8. 201.
Lowchryan, Loch Ryan, 16. 36.
Lowdiane, Lothian, 6. 7, 479; 17. 187, 256; 18. 250, 261, 273; Lowdyan, 10. 136; Lowdyane, 17. 73, 941.
Lowrens, Lawrence; see Abynethy.
Lumbard, Sir Piers, 10. 324; Sir Peris, 761.
Lumbardy, Lombardy, 14. 517.
Lundon, London, 1. 599.
Lwnyk, i.e. Limerick, 16. 265.
Lyne (river), 9. 683.
Lyntoun-le, 16. 336, 349, 443; Lyntaile, 16. 336 (E.).
Lythkew, Linlithgow, 10. 137, 148; Lythkew, 13. 503; Littl, 13. 381.
Machabeus, Judas, 14. 313.
Machabeys, Maccabees, 1. 465.
Maij, May, 14. 21.
Makartane, 14. 106 (E.).
Makdowall, 5. 104.
Makfulchiane, 14. 105; Makgullane (E.).
Makgullane, 14. 105 (E.); Makgullane (C.).
Makmartane, 14. 106.
Maknab, Macnab, 4. 19.
Maknakill, 15. 219, 222.
Maknauchtan, Macnaughtan, 3. 153.
Makus, Makis; better Marcus; see 4. 14 (footnote).
INDEX V.—PROPER NAMES IN THE BRUCE. 763

Makyne-drosser, Mac Indrosser, 3. 99.
Makyrnokis, 8. 28, 33. See note.
Maliss, Malise, 9. 433.
Man (isle of), 4. 14.
Mantrybill, Mantryble, 3. 455.
Mar, Donald of, 19. 349; earl of Mar, 19. 241.
Marche, March, 19. 776.
Marcens, bishop of Man, 4. 12.
Marrok, Morocco, 3. 688.
Marschall bretane, 18. 473. See Bretane.
Marthokys, 3. 67. Marthokys sone = Macmurdoch; see the Note.
Mary, the Virgin, 17. 335; Mary- set, St Mary's gate, 17. 755, 769.
Mawndwell, Maun deville, 15. 111, 170, 187, 208; Mawndwele, 15. 243; Mawndwell, 14. 47.
Mawndwilis, the Maun devilles, 14. 519.
Mawpass, John, 18. 224.
Mayle-erll, Gilbert, 19. 16; Male- erll, 53. See Maleherbe.
Meffayn, Methven, 2. 303; Meffen, 2. 312; Meffan, 3. 497.
Melross, Melrose, 18. 291, 293; 20. 600.
Menestens, Menestheus, 2. 535.
Mergart, Margaret, 10. 737.
Mernadak, Marmaduke, 13. 523, 526, 538. See Betwng.
Merss, Merse, 15. 331, 17. 185, 19. 776 (E.).
Methy, Meath, 16. 296 (E.).
Modreyt, Mordred, 1. 557.
Moffat, 9. 337.
Mole, Mull (of Cantire), 3. 696.
Monester, Munster, 16. 297 (E.).
Month, the Mounth, a part of the Grampians, 2. 494, 8. 393, 9. 7, 304. See note to 8. 393.
Mont-peleris, Montpelier, 15. 83.
Mortynuer, Mortimer, 20. 20, 85, 111.
Mowbray, Sir John, 8. 401, 9. 118.
Mowbray, Sir Philip, 2. 211, 413, 420; 8. 21, 74; 9. 17, 198, 281; 10. 806; 13. 263, 540; 14. 266, 403; 18. 24, 41, 133.
Mullyr-snwk, the Mull of Galloway (see Snuck in Glossary), 1. 188.
Mwnser, Munster, 16. 297.
Mynerff, Minerva, 4. 256; Mynerfe, 4. 262.
Myth, Meath, 16. 296.
Mytoun, Mitton, 17. 536, 555, 831.
Nele Cambell, Sir, 2. 491, 3. 392, 396, 571.
Nele the Bruce, Nigel Bruce, 2. 513, 3. 337; Neyle, 4. 185; Neill, 12. 290.
Nethirford, 8. 34 (E.).
Nevell, schir Robert de, 15. 401, 442, 467, 485, 496, 527.
Nevell, schir Ralf the, 15. 503.
New park, 11. 284, 357.
Neyll Flemyn, 15. 129, 136.
Norhame, Norham, 20. 7.
Nyddis-daill, Nithsdale, 10. 792.
Odumys, O Dempsey, 14. 329.
Ogill, Ogle, 19. 359.
Olifert, Olifard, 9. 338.
Olywer, Oliver, 3. 439.
Orknay, Orkney Islands, 1. 187; Orkynnay, 17. 13.
Osborn, 4. 109.
Ouchtirhous, Ramsay of, 14. 29.
Ouchtire, 18. 409 (E.).
Palmesonday, Palmsunday, 5. 307.
Pascalle, Sir, 14. 516.
Paslay, Paisley, 19. 222.
Persy, Sir Henry, 4. 599; 5. 43, 75, 107, 185, 213, 217; gen. Persyis, Percy's, 5. 479.
Philistians, Philistians', 4. 755.
Phitonases, the usual misspelling of Pithonases (Pythoness) in old MSS., 4. 753 (footnote and Note).
Pirrus, Pyrrhus, 20. 525—560.
Platan, 9. 312. See note.
Polynices, 6. 180, 199.
Pomfret, Pontefract, 17. 868, 878.
Pouty, Poitou, 11. 101; Poytow (H.).
Ramsay of Ouchtirhous, 14. 29.
Ranald Crauford, 4. 36.
Raucryne, Ruthlin, 3. 680, 721, 725, 755; 4. 1, 337.
Rauf, schir (of Cobham), 18. 410; Rauff, 422, 431.
Rauf, Ralph, 15. 503 (E.).
Redis swyr, source of the Reid, 17. 13. See the note.
Repounne, Ripon, 17. 533.
Richard Broune, 19. 18, 54. See Broune.
Richard; see also Rychard.
Richmond. See Rychmond.
Riveus, Rievaulx, 18. 498.
Robert, i.e. Robert II., 13. 695, 20. 131.
Robert Boylee; see Boylee.
Robert Bruce; see Bruce.
Robert (Earl of Artois), 1. 340.
Roger of Sanct Iohnhe, 5. 209.
Rome, 1. 542, 555; 3. 207, 212; 20. 522, 539; empire of, 19. 470.
Ross, Ross, 4. 47, 49.
Ross, Walter, 13. 473.
Bound, Round Table, 13. 379. See the note.
Roxburgh, castle of, taken, 10. 344—512.
Ruglyne, Rutherglen (?), 10. 797.
Rychard (of Normandy), 3. 450.
Rychmond, in Yorkshire, 16. 342; Thomas, earl of, 16. 400—535.
Ryfuowis, Rievaulx, 18. 498 (E.).
Saint Iak, Santiago, 20. 403.
Saint Iohnhe, Schir Amery of, 16. 506.
Saint John, Roger de, 5. 209.
St John, vigil of, 11. 382.
Sanmele, Samuel, 4. 682, 757. (In 1. 757 read Samnellis.)
INDEX V.—PROPER NAMES IN THE BRUCE. 765

Sandylandis, 6. 395.
Saracenys, s. pl. Saracens, 1. 140; Sarisenis, 13. 324, 326; Saracenys, 20. 459; Saracenys, 20. 422, 427, 478; Sarazynys, 20. 468; Sarazynis, 20. 318; Sarazynys, 20. 500.
Sarasyne, Saracen, 20. 394.
Sathanas, Satan, 4. 212.
Savill the graunt, Seville, 20. 326 (E.).
Sawagis, the Savages, 14. 521.
Scipio the ying, Scipio the younger, 3. 216.
Seone, 2. 150, 178.
Scotland, 1. 27, &c., &c.
Scottis, Scottish, 6. 459, &c.
Scottis se, the Firth of Forth, 9. 309, 329, 460; 16. 676.
Sebell the graunt, Seville the Grand, 20. 326.
Selceryk, Selkirk, 8. 425.
Setoun, Sir Christopher Seton, 2. 243*; Setoun, 5. 156, 171; Setoum, 2. 418, 4. 16; and see Cristal.
Slevach, highlands, 9. 107, 124, 129. See the note to 9. 107.
Snawdoun, Snowden, 4. 181.
Somereuell, Somerville, 2. 239; Somerwell, 2. 410.
Souly, lord of, 18. 472; see note to 18. 524.
Sowlis, the, i. e. Sir John de Soulis, 14. 27, 16. 509, 18. 23, 38, 110.
Sowlis, the lord of, i. e. Sir William de Soulis, 19. 11—48.
Spaldyng. See Sym.
Spanje, Spain, 3. 688, 20. 324, 395.
Steward, Alexander, 9. 692, 718.
Steward, James, 19. 243.
Stewart, Sir Allan, 14. 405.
Strabog, Strathbogie, 9. 188.
Strathern, Strathhearn, earl of, 9. 340; Malise of, 433; Stratherne, 19. 776 (H.).
Strevillyne, Stirling, 1. 409; Strewil, 1. 484; Strewilling, 11. 534; Strewelyn, 10. 141 (E.); Strewil- ling, 10. 141, 249, 805; 13. 429, 661.
Surry, Syria, 1. 539.
Sym, Simon, 10. 358. See Ledowss.
Sym of Spaldyng, 17. 23; of Spaldyne, 17. 89.
Symon (Fraser), 8. 397.
Syr-waryn, put for Fitzwarine, 14. 515; see 15. 75.
Syw-waryn, an error for Fitzwarine, 15. 75 (E.).
Tarbard, Tarbert, 15. 272; twa Tarbartis, the two Tarberts, 15. 290. See note to 15. 272.
Tay, 2. 589.
Tayne, Tain, 4. 47.
Tedeus, Tydeus, 6. 181. See Theudes.
Tevydale, Teviot dale, 10. 502; Tevidaill, 15. 329; Tevidaill, 17. 185.
Thebes, 2. 528, 6. 183, 198, 200.
Theudes, Tydeus, 6. 198, 208, 210, 267, 284; Tedeus, 6. 181.
The-twengue, for de Tweng, 13. 523 (E.). See Betwng above, and the remarks on it, p. 756.
Tholinar, Ptolemy, 3. 84.
Thom Dicson, 5. 279, 346.
Thomas Arthy, 18. 409, 424, 434.
Thomas of Down, 14. 376.
Thomas (of Ercildoun), 2. 86.
Thomas, earl of Lancaster, 17. 853,
873.
Thomas, earl of Murray; see Randel
and Murreff.
Thomas, Schir (of Richmond), 16.
343.
Thrill-wall, Thirlwall, 6. 392, 402,
416, 431, 451; Thrill-vall, 6. 450;
pl. Thrill-wallis, 5. 460.
Tomasswn, Iolne, 18. 117, 147,
150.
Torwode, Torwood, 13. 551; Tor-
Tranentis, gen. Tranent's, 18. 276.
Treile, for Tyre, 10. 705 (E.).
Troy, 1. 295, 521.
Turnbery, Turnberry, 4. 619, 5.
213; Turnberris, Turnberry's, 4.
556, 600; 5. 187.
Tweed, Tweed, 17. 191.
Typont, for Typtot, 13. 468 (E.).
Typtot, Payne, 13. 468.
Tyre, 10. 705.

Vallanch, Schir Amery, Sir Aymer
de Valence, 5. 472, 6. 457, 476; 11.
176. See Vallang, and Amer.
Valter Steward, 17. 217, 257; 18.
Valys, Wales, 4. 76. See Walis.
Varane, Earl Warren, 18. 278.
Vardale, Weardale, 20. 2. See
Wer, Wardale.
Vaux; see Wauss.
Vaveryng fyrrth, 14. 33.
Verlon; see Wardoune.
Viljame Sander, William Sinclair,
20. 471; and see 20. 444.
Viljame of sowlis, 19. 11; see
Sowls.
Vipont; see Wepownt.
Vissman, Wiseman (William), 10.
46.
Wodoune, 14. 143 (E.); Wedoune, 515 (E.). See Wardoune.
Wokingis fyrth, 14. 33 (E.).
Wollistar, Ulster, 14. 81 (II.).
Wylçame, William (of Lamberton), 1. 412.
Wynchburch, Winchburgh, 13. 587.
Wyndissoyr, Windsor, 19. 259.
Wysman, 10. 46 (E.).

Yber, Lucius Iberius, 1. 554.
Ydymsey, O'Dempsy, 14. 329 (E.).
Ylis, the Isles, 11. 335; Ilis, 18. 445.
Yngerame Bell, 5. 483, 513.
Yngerame de Vmphreweill, 6. 3,

12. 483, 19. 146. See Ingram, and Vmphrewell.
Ynglis, English, 6. 459, &c.; Yngliss, 12. 425, &c. See Inglis.
Yrlande, Ireland, 11. 100. See Irland.
Ysabell, 13. 487 (E.).
Ysay, Isaiah, 4. 682.

Yrke, York, 19. 271.
Yrke, Archbishop of, 17. 546.
Yrkis þettis, the gates of York, 18. 489.
INDEX VI.
GLOSSARY TO "HOW THE GOOD WIFE TAUGHT HER DAUGHTER," AND "A DIETARY."

The numbers refer to the lines of the poem printed at pp. 525—536. When the letter "D." is prefixed, the reference is to the poem printed at pp. 537—540.

Abill, adj. apt, 228.
Acquyntans, acquaintance, 94.
Ado, for at do, i.e. to do, D. 5.
Agit, pp. aged, D. 3.
Aill, ale, D. 3.
Air, adv. before, 235.
Ald, adj. old, D. 63.
Alnus, almus; almus deid, an alms-deed, 138.
And, conj. if, 284.
Anerly, adv. singly; our anerly, too much alone, 171; all anerly (all only), altogether, 71.
Anton, Antony (the name of some famous physician), D. 79.
Apon, prep. just after, D. 6.
At, prep. according to; at hir power, as she can, 146.
Athis, s. pl. oaths, D. 62.
Avans, v. to advance, 42.
Aw, pr. s. ought, 39.

Bakluking, s. looking behind, 208.
Bald, adj. bold, D. 61.
Band, s. bond; goddis band, God's bond, i.e. matrimony, 141.
Banyst, pp. banished, 103.
Bares. See Ryn.

Barnys, s. pl. children, 221, 250.
Be mekill thing, by a great deal, 9.
Beis, fut. s. will be, 168; it shall be, D. 9.
Belif, adv. quickly, D. 34. M. E. beline, lit. by life, with life; hence, soon.
Betakynnis, pres. s. betokens, 149.
Billis of Amowris, letters of love, love-letters, 112.
Blekyt, pp. blackened, tarnished, 9.
See bleck in Jamieson.
Bot, prep. without, 120; conj. unless, D. 68.
Both, pp. bought, D. 78. (Ill spelt; see the footnote.)
Bred, s. bread, D. 3.
But, prep. without, 197.
Bydding, s. command, 135. To kep bydding is to observe a command, to do as one is bid.
Bydis, pres. pl. bind, 231.

Cald, s. cold, chill, D. 1.
Cancryt, pp. ill-conditioned, perverse, 236. See cankert in Jamieson.
Cast, v.; to cast perillus, to forecast dangers, perceive perils, 99.
Chap, v. to escape, 230. Short for
eschap; see Eschap in Gloss. to Bruce.

Chasty, *imp. s. chastise, 247, 259.
Chastyment, chastisement, 279.
Cheld, *s. child, i.e. still young, 247 (MS. B reads child), 251.
Cheritabill, charitable, 138.
Claiss, *s. pl. clothes, 56.
Clerk-play, clerk-plays, miracle plays performed by clerks, 83.
Cleathing, s. clothing, 29.
Contrefet, v. to counterfeit, 22.
Contynyns, *s. countenance, 41.
Correkit, *pp. corrected, 194.
Covat, v. to covet, 33; Covat, 190.
Covatiss, covetousness, 292.
Cowpe, s. cup, D. 6.
Coy, *adj. coy (in a good sense), quiet, 19. O.F. *coi, which is the Lat. *quietus.
Crab, v. to annoy, tease, irritate, 60. Hence the word *crabbed.
Craft, s. trade, means of livelihood, 299.
Creatour, s. creature, 24.
Cummysys, *pres. s. comes, 158.
Cure, s. care; *in cure, under guardianship, 251.
Custum, *custom, 179.

DALIANS, s. sport, play, D. 22.
Dampnit, *pp. condemned, 272.
Danss, v. to dance, 113.
Dant, *imp. s. cherish, pet, 77. A peculiar use of *daunt, to tame, Lat. *domitare. "Dawntynge, or gret esherysnge, or greate cherisshinge;" Prompt. Parv.

De, v. to die, 290.
Debonar, *debonair, gentle, mild, 145.
Ded, s. death, 88.
Deid, s. act, deed, 71, 146; *pl. Dedis, 70.
Delicat, *adj. delicate, dainty, 29.
Dennyng, s. opinion, supposing, 170.
Dew, *adj. due, D. 77. (See the footnote.)
Diffamyng, *pp. defamed, i.e. having an ill name, 155; of ill fame. 237.
Dishonorit, *pp. dishonoured, i.e. dishonourable, 75.
Dispit, s. dislike, contempt, D. 25.
Doctryne, v. to indoctrinate, instruct, 244.
Doith, *used as auxiliary; *doith the *fale = do fail thee, D. 9.
Draw, v. to draw, 46; pr. pl. Drawis, entice, 80.
Dreid, s. dread, 45.
Dremand, *pres. pl. dreaming, 182.
Dronkyn-lew, *adj. drunken, D. 54.
An adaptation of Lydgate's *dronke-lew; Chaucer also has it.
Dud, *for do it, 233 (footnote).
Dur, v. to last, endure, 134. Lat. *durare.
Dyetary, a dietary, D. 80.

Eftir, *prep. after, i.e. according to, 68; *adv. afterward, 212.
Eld, s. old age, 248.
Enclynis, *pr. s. inclines, 249.
Erand, s. errand, 173.
Erar, *adv. sooner, 47.
Eschewe, v. achieve, i.e. succeed, prosper, thrive, D. 43. O.F. *achevir.
Ewe, s. eve, evening, D. 41.

Eyn, s. pl. eyne, eyes; "what eyes see not, the heart desires not," 222. See note, p. 614.

Eythar, adv. more easily, 9. A.S. cāð, easy.

Faid, v. to fade, 65; pr. s. trans. Fadis, causes to fade, 76.

Fair, s. behaviour, conduct, 20.


Fall, pr. s. subj. may happen, 104.

Fallacioune, s. falsehood, D. 28.

Fals, adj. false, 96.

Falt, s. fault, defect, lack, 255.

Farest, adj. fairest, 10.

Fawyng, s. (perhaps an error for favoring), 192. But the reading favoure, i.e. favour, is to be preferred.

Feir, v. to befit, beseeem, 34. A contracted form of affeir or effer. See Afferis in Gloss. to Bruce.

Feir, s. companion, 154; pl. Feris, companions, 160.

Fend, s. fiend, 96.

Fenzeit, pp. feigned, 20.

Ferme, adj. firm, 147.

Ferst luf, first love, 198.

Feyd, imp. s. feed, 78.

Flawm, imp. s. 3 p. let her display, 125. I suppose the line to mean—"let her not display any flourish (i.e. marks of paint) that will fade," Mr Lumby explains it by "besmear, daub over;" but gives no reason, and leaves the rest of the line unexplained. I suppose flawm is the F. flamber, to flame, shine, give a great light; but here used transitively.

Fleschly, adv. carnally, D. 5.

Fluriss, s. a flourish, 125.

Flying, s. chiding, 117. A.S. flitan, to chide.

Forfalt, v. to offend, 286. The substantive forfalt, an offence, occurs in Ratis Having, l. 3295.

Forfet, v. to forfeit, 200.

Forouten, prep. without, 230.

For-thi, on that account, 36.

Fra, from the time that, 91.

Fulis, s. pl. fools, 301.

Fusioune, s. abundance, D. 31.

Geglotrye, s. giddiness, romping; pl. Giglotris, romps, 159. See Giglet, a romping girl, in Halliwell.


Get, pr. pl. provide, 265. (The nom. thai means the teachers; if these provide no instruction, nor inflict any punishment, &c.)

Gif, conj. if, D. 16.

Giglotris, s. pl. romps, 159. See Geglotrye.

Gredynes, greediness, 292.

Greff, v. to grieve, 118.

Grunching, pres. pt. grudging, i.e. murmuring, D. 15.

Hailsome, adj. wholesome, D. 3.

Hald, imp. s. 3 p. let her keep, 128; pp. Haldin, holden, considered, 3. And see Inyus.

Hame-ganging, home-going, 184.

Hamly, adj. homely, 19.

Hant, v. to be together, lit. to haunt, said of two persons, 87; imp. s. 3 p. let her haunt, 171.

Harmesay (an interjectional exclamation), alas! 102. Jamieson gives two quotations, which establish the meaning. It is, however, not to be accounted for (as he suggests) by any connection with the A.S. earm, wretched. The first part of the word is clearly harm. Also spelt harmisay, perhaps for harm is aye; but this is a guess.
Hazardouris, s. pl. gamblers, players at the game of hazard, D. 56.

Hear, adj. higher, 48, 55.

Hede, s. head, D. 1.

Heill, s. health, D. 1.

Hew, s. hue, 133.

Hew, Hugh (the name of some famous physician), D. 79.

Honeste, s. honour, 144.

Hyde, s. skin, 128.

Ill likly, like, of evil, suspicious circumstance, 75. The adj. ill likly, suspicious, occurs in l. 72.

Indifferent, adj. impartial (men), D. 80. See note, p. 615.

Innys, s. pl. lodgings; hald thor Innys, keep at home, stay at home, 116.

Keking, s. peeping, 208. Du. kijken, to peep.

Kennis, pres. s. knows, 246.


Ladry, s. rabble, 86. Jamieson explains it thus, with a reference; and derives it from A.S. leódweor, men (!), which see in Grein. It is obviously a derivative of O.F. (and mod. F.) ladre, a leper, lazare; cf. F. ladrerie, leprosy. Here it means a set of lepers, vile rabble. The derivation is from Lazarus.

Lak, s. blame, 74, 230.

Lak, imp. s. 3 p. let her blame, 140. Cf. Dutch laten, to blame.

Lakar, adj. more deficient, worse, poorer, 56. See 'Lak, bad, defective,' in Jamieson.

Lakis, pr. s. fails, is lacking, D. 16.

Langage, language, talk, speech, 11.

Lauchtir, s. laughter, 15.

Laute, loyalty, faithfulness, 195.

Lawar, adj. lower, 46.

Lawast, adj. lowest, 45.

Lawlynas, lowliness, 49.

Layff, s. the rest, 238. Scot. 'the lave.'

Le, v. to lie, tell lies, 164.

Learis, s. pl. liars, D. 54.

Lechis, s. pl. leeches, i.e. physicians, D. 9.

Lede, s. lead, 132. (Alluding to its dull hue.)

Lefull, adj. anxious, very desirous, 219; fond, much given (to a thing), 25. (The senses here apparent are unusual. There are three words of the same form; (1) leful (better lefful) = permissible, from A.S. leáf. leave; (2) leful (better lefful) = faithful; from A.S. geleáf, belief; and (3) leful (better lefful) = fond, from A.S. leáf, dear. We have here the last, and by far the scarcest, of the three.)

Leid, person; all leid, everybody, 102. A.S. leóda, people.

Leif, imp. s. 3 p. let her trust; nocht leif, let her not trust, 159.

Leif, adj. dear; leif set, to set dear, i.e. to incline to, 211.

Leiff, v. to leave; leiff of, to leave off, let alone, 170.

Leil, adj. loyal, 142.

Lost, pr. s. subj. may please, may list, D. 74.

Lest, v. to last out, hold out; lest with, hold out against, resist, 94. See below.

Lestith, pr. s. lasts, D. 64. [Observe the Southern ending.]

Lettis, pr. pl. let, allow, 267.

Lik drawis to lik, proverb, 156.

Loyf, imp. s. 3 p. love, 140. (In B. the reading is love.)

Luft, pp. loved, 198.
INDEX VI.—GLOSSARY TO 'GOOD WIFE,' ETC.

Lufrunt, s. lust, 90, 201. Corrupted (for *lusfreid*) from A.S. *lusfreaden*, lovingness. See Manrent in Gloss. to Bruce.

Lusty, adj. merry, lively, D. 63.

Lychouris, s. pl. lechers, D. 54.

Lyffing, s. living, means of support, 285.

Ma, more, others like themselves, 240.

Mak, s. the make, fashion, 126.

Makis, pr. pl. make, 4.

Malicins, adj. ill-tempered, spiteful, D. 12.

Malys, s. pl. meals, D. 67.

Maneir, s. manner, 30.

Mastres, mistress, 245.

Maynteme, imp. s. maintain, D. 60.

Mckill; be mckill thing, by a great deal, 9.

Mengill, v. to mingle, 86.

Men3he, s. household, 143; Men3e, 201. See Gloss. to Bruce.

Merk, adj. murky, dark, D. 42.

Mess, s. mass, 204, D. 43.

Mesurabill, adj. moderate, D. 20.

Met, s. meat, D. 2; pl. Metis, D. 21.

Misfair, v. to go astray, behave ill, 282.

Modreth, adj. moderate, D. 75.


Morow, s. morning, D. 41.

Mowthis, s. pl. mouths, D. 25.

Moy, adj. affected in manners; *nocht mak our moy*, not to pretend to be too delicate, 20. See moy in Jamieson; perhaps F. *mon*, Lat. *mollis*.

Myss, s. wrong, 259. (*Do myss* ≡ commit a fault.) *Misse* is often a substantive in Middle English.

Myster, s. need, poverty, D. 46; Mystair, 281; pl. Mysteris, necessities, necessitous circumstances, 288. See Gloss. to Bruce.

Mystis, s. pl. mists, D. 42.

Mystrast, v. to suspect, 93.

Na, conj. than, 34, 48; nor, 118.

Nakit, adj. naked, 90.

Neidliking, s. neediness, poverty, 287.

Neyd, s. necessity, poverty, 281.

No, conj. nor, 89, 117; Na, nor, 118.

Noyne, s. noon, 209.

Nychtbour, neighbour, 241.

Nyse, adj. foolishly dainty, 21.

Obysand, pres. pl. as adj. obedient, 27.

Of, prep. with, D. 14.

On neyd, of necessity, 301.

Or, ere, 104.

Our, over, i. e. too, 21, 22; *our fer*, too far, 42.

Oyss, v. to use, D. 10; *oyss of* to be used to, 17; imp. s. let her use, let her employ, 117.

Pantre, s. painting, 129.

Paramour ; in phr. for *paramour*, for love, i. e. for the sake of illicit love, 65.

Passit, pp. past, 91.

Paynteyn, s. painting; *paynteyn vatteris* = painting-waters, waters for painting, 127.

Peir, s. equal, peer, 4.

Pensiff, adj. too thoughtful, melancholy, D. 59.

Perist, pp. perished, lost, 100.

Plesand, pres. pt. as adj. pleasant, 97, D. 67.

Plicht, s. danger, 297.

Porteress, female porter, D. 53. See note, p. 615.
Potyngary, s. apothecary, D. 77.  
(A poor spelling; Lydgate would have written potecarie.)

Preciously, adv. richly, 35.

Presoyme, v. to presume, suppose, imagine, 64; gud presum, think well, 180.

Pure, adj. poor, 137.

Pwnycioune, s. punishment, 266. Mapwnycioune, inflict punishment.  
See Get.


Pynit, pp. afflicted, tormented, 289.

Pyteabill, adj. pitiful, kind, 137.

Quha, indef. rel. whosoever, 26.

Quilich (!), an odd form, half way between the Southern which and the Northern quhilk, D. 30.

Quililk, pron. of what sort, which, 2, 3. Cf. Lat. qualis, Goth. hvaliiks. Used as a relative, who, 246. See above.

Quhit, adj. white, 131.

Raddour, s. fear, timidity, 11. See Radd in Gloss. to Bruce.

Rage, v. to be wanton, 85.

Raging, s. romping, 215.

Rode, adj. red, 131.

Reherss, v. to repeat, 26.

Reirsuppers, s. pl. rere-suppers, D. 50. Late suppers were so called.

Remew, v. to remove, D. 76.

Reprenit, pp. reproved, 193.

Repruf, s. reproof, 199; Repruft, 212.

Rescript, s. piece of advice, prescription, D. 78.

Rew, s. street, 114. See Gloss. to Bruce.

Rewmys, s. pl. realms, countries, 109.

Richess, riches, D. 80.

Ross, s. rose, 10.

Rowk, v. to crouch, cower down, sit down closely to others, 18. See rouketh in Chaucer, Group A, 1308; and see roken in Strattmann.

Rowme, adj. ample, i. e. open, free, 153. Cf. A.S. rán, ample. But the reading round, i. e. round, plain, open, is better.


Round, adj. round, 41.


Ryn at bares, to run at bars, to play at 'prison-bars,' 115. See the note, p. 614.

Sad, adj. serious, grave, D. 63.

Sampill, example, 241.

Savis, pres. s. saves, 226.

Scant, adv. scarcely, 62.

Schamfulnes, s. shamefastness, bashfulness, modesty, 45.

Schawls, i. e. s. shews, 1.

Scheyue, adj. beautiful, 127. A.S. scinc, beautiful; G. schön.

Scho, pron. she, 1.

Schrewis, s. pl. shrews, ill-tempered women, 6.

Seilden, adv. seldom, 250.

Sempill, adj. simple, 19.

Serwe, pres. s. subj. may deserve, 199.

Set, imp. s. place, put, make it, D. 24.

Sew, v. to follow, D. 74.

Slanderit, slandered, 240.

Slee, adj. sly, subtle, 96.

Sleuth, s. sloth, D. 52.

Slyder, adj. slippery, apt to fall, frail, s. A.S. slidor; slippery, liable to slide.

Smyrking, s. smirking, smiling, 208.
Smytabil, adj. infectious, 227. See smit, to infect, in Jamieson.

Smyttit, pp. infected, besmirched, 239. Cf. Scot. smit, to besmirl, to infect.

Sowp, v. to sup, D. 8.

Speair, v. to spare, i.e. let alone, 92.

Speir, v. to ask for, 26. See Gloss. to Bruce.

Stert, s. a ‘start,’ i.e. a moment, 188. Jamieson quotes “ye manna bide a start, you must be back immediately. In a start, in a moment.” See Styrt in Prompt. Parv.

Stomok, s. stomach, D. 72; pl. Stomokis, D. 70.


Suet, adj. sweet, 19.

Sufficiand, sufficient, 285.

Sufficians, s. a sufficiency, competence, D. 14.

Supply, v. to be of service, lit. to supply, 28.

Suppos, although, 93.

Surfat, s. surfeit, D. 76; pl. Surfattis, D. 49.

Suspekit, pp. suspected, suspicious, 73. See suspect in Chaucer’s Clerkes Tale.

Syb, adj. near akin, 89.

Syn, s. sin, 295.

Syne, adv. afterwards, 108.

Taknyng, s. token, 38.

Takyn, s. a token, 217.

Tane, pp. taken; tane a fall, received a fall, fallen, 302.


Techis, s. pl. faults; ill techis, bad qualities, 5. See Tache in Halliwell.

Tendir, adj. of tender age, very young, 89.

Tent, attention; tak tent, take heed, 274.

Than; nocht than, not but that, 53.

Thewis, s. pl. good manners, 2; ill thewis, bad manners, 5. A.S. teów, manner, rite.

Thoill, imp. s. suffer, allow, permit, 85.

Thoulass, adj. ill-mannered, 260. Perhaps wanting in theris or good manners rather than ‘inactive,’ or ‘unprofitable,’ as explained by Jamieson; whatever may be the modern meaning.

Thrist, s. thirst, D. 68.

Thus-gat, adv. in this way, 66.


Trew, adj. true, 142.

Trowble, adj. troublesome, D. 27.

Tyg, v. to touch lightly, to play at touching, 218. An allusion to the game of tig, wherein a tig means a light touch; see Jamieson.

Tymly, adj. early (lit. timely), D. 43.

Tynis, pr. pl. lose, destroy, 298.

Tynsale, s. loss, 214. See Gloss. to Bruce.


Tyss, v. to entice, 251. Tice for entice is still common.


Vantoune, adj. wanton, 159.

Vanvit, s. want of wit, folly, 150. The prefix van- signifies ‘lack of.’

Variabill, variable, 69.
Vaverand, *pres. pl.* going idly about, 148. See note to the line, p. 614.

Vaveryng, *s.* idling about, 149. See above.

Velth, *s.* wealth, 150; weal, good, D. 73.


Verkday, *workday,* 124; *pl.* Verkdayis, 123.

Vescyn, *pp.* washen, 123.

Vikit, *adj.* wicked, 228.

Vikkidnass, *s.* wickedness, 306.

Vilsumnas, *s.* wilfulness, 149.

Viss, *adj.* wise, 250.

Vit, *s.* wisdom, 248.

Vit, *s.* blame, 269, 294. M. E. *wyte,* blame.

Vulante, *s.* disloyalty, unfaithfulness, 200.

Vorschip, *s.* due regard; *kep vorschip,* pay due regard, 24.

Voyd, *imp. s.* avoid, D. 54.

Vrechit, *adj.* miserable, 287.

Vrechitnes, *s.* misery, 291.

Wantonly, wantonly, 189.

Wantownas, wantonness, 150.

War nocht fors, lit. were not force, i.e. unless force were used, 253.


Wik, *adj.* wicked, 237. A S. *wicca,* a wizard; *wicce,* a witch; Mid. Eng. *wikke,* wicked.

Wise[t], *imp. s.* visit, D. 45. The Southern form is *visite;* the Northern is *cesie,* without the *t;* see note, p. 615.

With, *prep.* against; *be war with,* beware of, D. 50.

Withgang, *v.* lit. to go with; *withgang wantonly,* go with (them) in a wanton way, have commerce with (them), 189. Mr Lumby explains it by “tolerate;” but surely it means very much more than that.

Wittyn, *pp.* known; *had I wittyn,* if I had but known, 101. This exclamation, in the form *had I wist,* is common in Middle English.

Wycis, *s. pl.* vices, 228.

Ydilnas, *s.* idleness, 158.

Ythandly, *adv.* assiduously, 136. See Gloss, to Bruce.

3arnys, *pr. s.* yearns after, longs for, 222. See note.

3ing, *adj.* young, 244.

3outhage, *s.* youth, time of youth, 257.

3outhede, *lit.* youth-hood, i.e. youth, 98, 99.
INDEX VII.

NOTES ON JAMIESON'S DICTIONARY.

In the course of writing the preceding Notes and Glossarial Index to the "Bruce," I have, of course, constantly consulted Jamieson's admirable 'Dictionary of the Scottish Language.' In general, I have found it sufficient to consult the excellent abridgment by John Johnston, as revised and enlarged by Dr. Longmuir, published at Edinburgh in 1867; but in cases of special difficulty I have of course also consulted the unabridged work. The edition I have used is the second, printed in 1840, with the Supplement dated 1825.

Whilst thus engaged I have observed a few errors in the explanations or etymologies of words occurring in the "Bruce," and I proceed to make a note of these below, partly for the reader's convenience, and partly because some account of them may interest those students to whom Jamieson's work is well known. It is superfluous to add my testimony to the value of so standard a work; and it will, I trust, be understood that I venture to write these notes merely for the student's use and information, and out of respect for Dr. Jamieson's memory. They are not written out of any captious spirit, but because honest criticism is a token of reverence.

In the words commented upon, I follow the alphabetical order.

Wherever references seemed to be lacking, they are given in my Glossarial Index, which should be compared with the present list.

ALLYN. There is no such word; it is a misprint for alkyne.

APAYN. J. has—"Apayn, adv. 1. reluctantly, unwillingly; sometimes distinctly a payn." (Barbour quoted, ix. 87—90); after which—"i.e. they will fly, however reluctantly, because all men eagerly desire life. The play upon the word fly gives an obscurity to the passage."

There is no play upon the word fly (fle in MS. C.). It means "flee" throughout.

Again, J. has—"Apayn, pp. provided, furnished." He then quotes Barbour, ix. 60—66, and gives a wild etymology from F. appancr, to give a younger son his portion.
The word in both passages, which occur close together, is one and
the same word; and the latter explanation is out of the question, the
etymology being not to the purpose. The former one is not far wrong,
but requires slight modification. See this discussed in the note to ix.
64, pp. 573, 574.

Arsoun. J. has—"Arsoun, s. buttocks;" with a reference to xvi.
131. I have corrected this in the Glossary, at p. 645. Jamieson was
strangely misled by the sound of the former part of the word.

Assouerit. Omitted in the Dictionary; the word only occurs in
the Cambridge MS., which was then unknown. See Glossary, p. 646.

Beleif. J. quotes from Bk. xiii. 544 to illustrate—"Beleif, Belawe,
a. e. to deliver up;" prefacing the quotation with the remark—"It is
also used as a verb neuter with the preposition of." He explains the
line by—"i. e. gave up the castle of Stirling into the king's hands."
It means nothing approaching to this, which has already been said in
l. 541; but it means—"that he remained amongst the king's household,"
i. e. that he entered into the king's service. The reading become of
the Camb. MS. is much plainer, and shews the sense. The etymology is
not from "A.S. belewan, tradere," but from A.S. belifan, to remain.
The verb to belwe, or bilewe, in the sense of 'remain,' is not uncommon,
and occurs in Chaucer's Squire's Tale, Group F, l. 583. And this
enables us to correct the following entry in the Dictionary.

"Belene, v. s. [sic] to tarry, or perhaps, to recline, to rest.

—— Schir Gawyn, gayest of all,
Belenes with Dame Gaynour in grenes so grene.

Sir Gawen and Sir Gal. i. 6.

A.S. bileden, inhabited; vide Leind. Or allied to Germ le[h]nen,
recumbere."

Nearly the whole of this is wrong, including both etymologies.
The right reading is, of course, belenes, and the article should be
corrected as follows.

"Belwe, v. n. to tarry, to remain, linger. Cf. A.S. belifan, to
remain behind; also G. bleiben."

The necessity for this correction is really proved by the remarks
upon this word in the Supplement, where we are told that, in another
MS., "the reading is by leuys, which obscures the sense." Instead of
"obscuring the sense," it is quite right. By-leuys is a correct reading,
the prefix being written (as usual in MSS.) apart from the verb to
which it belongs.

Betane. J. quotes from Bk. iii. 159, with the remark that "the
sense of this word is very doubtful. It cannot mean beaten, or taken,
for neither of these was the case. Perhaps it may refer to the narrow
place in which Brutus was enclosed. A.S. betynan, to enclose, to
shut up."

I need not say that no ingenuity can grammatically twist betane.
out of the A.S. *betýnan*. I believe the sense to be "pursued," see Glossary, p. 650.

**Boyis.** J. is in some doubt about this word; the solution "fetters," which he offers, is perfectly right. He is also in doubt about the etymology, and suggests, "Teut. boeye, compes, pedica, vincula pedis, pl. boeyen; boeyen, compedire; Kilian." Here again, he has got hold of the right word, but should rather have quoted the French *bouie*, a fetter, Lat. *bota*. Our *buoy*, so called because chained down to one place, is really the same word as Barbour's *boy*.

**Bredis.** See my Glossary, p. 652. I can find nothing like it in Jamieson's Dictionary, though it occurs in his edition of Barbour.

**Browdyn.** Rightly explained to mean "embroidered." But, of the three etymologies suggested, all are wrong. The verb is a strong one, as shewn by the ending -yn of the past participle; and it is, accordingly, from the A.S. *bregdan*, to braid; pp. *brogdan*.

**Char.** It is needless to repeat what Jamieson says about this word, with reference to Bruce, viii. 257. The whole is wrong, etymologies included, for the right reading is *thar*; the reading *char* being a pure invention of Pinkerton's, who misled Jamieson in this passage. It is odd that, when the word recurs at l. 300 of Book xii., it is Pinkerton, not Jamieson, who has the right reading.

**Cleue and Law.** J. quotes Barbour, x. 471. The whole is a misconception. The right reading is *cleue*; see note to Book x. 471, pp. 578, 579.

**Conabill.** J. remarks that "it is certainly formed from Lat. *conor*, *conabilis*, q. what may be attempted with any prospect of success." Where he found this Latin adjective with so remarkable a meaning he does not tell us. See this set right in my Glossary.

**Enchausyt.** In Book ii. 395 (called Book ii. 201 in Jamieson's edition) the word *enchausyt* occurs. In the brief Glossary printed at the end of "Wallace" is the entry—"Enchausyt, pursued." Probably Jamieson found out that this was wrong, as he omits all reference to it in his Dictionary. The right reading is *enchaufyt*, i. e. chafed, made angry.

**Endfundying.** See Bruce, xx. 75. J. spells the word with an inserted *d* after the first *n*, but rightly says that the *d* is not in the MS., which reads *enfundying*. His connection of the word with "Sr. G. and-faadd, cui spiritus preclusus est, ut solet asthmaticis" is very desperate. It is not likely to gain credit, nor can it be built upon for shewing that the *d* is a part of the word. See *Fundying* in my Glossary; also *Mortfundying* in Jamieson.

**Enkerly.** J. explains this by—"1. Inwardly," with reference to Bruce, ii. 138, and by "2. Ard ntly, keenly," with reference to x. 534. He accepts Ruddiman's etymology from the F. *en cœur*, in the heart!
The word is little more than an expletive, and is certainly not French. See my Glossary.

FAYNDING. Referring to Bruce, iii. 289, J. says—"This cannot signify trial, endeavour... Can it mean deflection, flinching, or turning aside, A.S. funðung, decessus, recessus? Or perhaps shifting, guile, Sn. G. funð, Belg: vond, dolus, technæ?" This is but all-round guessing, and by no means satisfactory. Literally, it means 'a tempt-ing of Providence,' from the A.S. funðian, to tempt. And this sense suits the context very well. See quotation in my Glossary.

FAYNSTICE (printed Faintice in the Dictionary). This J. interprets by "dissembling, hypocrisy;" and refers to Bruce, iii. 288. The meaning is very different, viz. faintness, cowardice, failing of spirit, a feeling akin to swooning. This is clear from the passage in Piers Plowman to which I have referred in my Glossary.

FORBEFT. See my Glossary; the better sense is "utterly baffled," or "forced to retreat."

FORDID. See Fordid in my Glossary, and see Sordid below.

FRONTLY. See Frontly in my Glossary, and see Stoutlyngs below.

FUNDYNG. See Fundyng in my Glossary, and see Endfundeyng above.

GYRD (spelt Gird in the Dictionary). Jamieson enters "Gird, v. a." correctly; next he enters "Gird, v. n." with a reference to Bruce, ii. 417, and with the explanation "to move with expedition and force." It means rather "striking about him," or "striking right and left." See the explanations given in Jamieson under the verb active.


LOMNYNT. The unsatisfactory speculations concerning this word may be disregarded. The better reading is lovenyt, as in the Cambridge MS.

LOVERY, LUFRAY. (See Lufray in my Glossary.) These words have no connection with love, as Jamieson imagines. Nor do they quite mean "bounty," which does not suit the former passage quoted from Dunbar. The word lovery is due to a scribal error for leverē, i.e. livery, delivery, allowance; and when the scribe had once made this mistake, he proceeded to alter the word still further into the form lufray. The etymology is from the F. lierer, to deliver.

MOWENCE. The word means 'mutation,' from O. F. muance, mutation, change. Jamieson's explanations of 'motion,' or 'dependance' are wrong, together with the etymology from F. "mouance, motion." He does not tell us where he found this unusual French form, which should rather be motion. Muance is given in Burguy, s. v. muer.

Pantener. So in the Dictionary. Read *pautener*. The explanation, however, is quite right.

Pundelayn. This cannot be *pantaloop*.

Quytyvss. The word is wrong, with all the explanations; read *qyntis*, which see in my Glossary.

Reuk. Read *renk*; see my note on the line, ii. 365; p. 553.

Sariolly. The Edinb. MS. has *sariegy*, v. 5; as J. notes. The reading "meraly" in C. is much better. See *Sarraly* in my Glossary. Perhaps in v. 5 the sense may rather be 'in full chorus,' lit. thickly, closely, serriedly; that is, if the reading in E. is to be explained at all. See the other passages referred to.

Skowurand. There should be no such entry; read *skownrand*, i.e. *scummering*, the frequentative form of *shuming*. The word is rightly printed in the edition, but wrong in the Dictionary.

Slalk. So printed in Wallace, v. 661, and in the Dictionary. But it should have been printed *slakk*, and it means 'to slacken.' See this explained in my Glossary, s. v. *Valk*.

Sordid. A misprint for *fordid*. Jamieson himself prints *fordid* in another passage. See *Sordid*, *Fordid* in my Glossary.

Stoutlynys. A strange misreading; it is not in the Edinb. MS., as asserted. That MS. reads *frontlynys*; and the word *stoutlynys* must be struck out.

Syvewarm, Syvewarin. Must be struck out. Read *fyswarin*, i.e. *Fitzwarren*!

Taile. This awkward word (xviii. 238) is best got rid of. The reading *thought all hale*, found in MS. C, as well as in the editions, is much the best.

Thurch. Must be struck out, there being no such word. The Edinb. MS. may be read *thurtle*, an obvious error for *thurt*, which see in my Glossary.

Torn but. Cannot mean "turn about;" see note to ii. 437, p. 554.

Tyre. Must be struck out. The reading in E. is *cyre*, i.e. leather; F. *cuir*. See note to xii. 22; p. 582.

Vee. Jamieson does not give the right derivation of O.F. *eur*. It is neither from Lat. *hora* nor from Icel. *urd*, but from Lat. *augurium*.

Wandys. Explained by "v. n. to feel the impression of fear." And J. connects it with A.S. *wandian*, to fear. The word is French, as shewn by the ending -*st* of the past tense; it means 'to retreat;' and it is connected with O.H.G. *wendjan*, cognate with E. *wend*.

Wane. One explanation given is "s. manner, fashion," with references to xvi. 454, and xvii. 249. It means nothing of the kind, but is the same as the word *wayn*, which J. correctly explains by
"plenty, or abundance." In the first passage, the sense is—"in so great abundance," i.e. so plentifully. In the second, "in very great abundance." The word occurs in the older version of Chevy Chase, i. 74. See Will below.

Warison. The explanation is not very satisfactory. See the word in my Glossary.

Will. Under this word, J. has "will of wane, at a loss for a habitation." It means something different, viz. at a loss for an opinion, i.e. not knowing what to do. J. himself rightly explains wane to mean "opinion" in Wallace, x. 20. Wane is here the A.S. wén, opinion, lit. a weening; it is not the same as the Wane at the foot of the last page.

Yar. Not in the Dictionary, and rightly omitted. It is a misprint for thar.
ERRATA AND ADDENDA.

P. 51, l. 86. For "Dauklyne" read "Dauklyne;" see note on p. 612.

P. 132. The eight lines following l. 84 should have been marked with asterisks at the beginning. They are not in the Edinburgh MS.

P. 138, footnote to l. 268. For "Cf. l. 378" read "Cf. l. 178."

P. 178, fourth side-note. Transpose the words "north" and "south."

P. 190, l. 351. Insert a hyphen in "to-ga." Compare the other five passages in which the word occurs, the references to which will be found in the Glossary, s. v. To-ga.

P. 216, l. 522. Perhaps the reading buttill of the Cambridge MS. is right after all. See note to the line, p. 576.

P. 238, l. 324. Add a semi-colon or a full stop at the end of the line.

P. 240, footnote to l. 361. For "Irne C." read "Irne E."

P. 271, l. 361. Delete the full stop at the end of the line.

P. 296, l. 360. For "rown and" read "rownand," i.e. whispering. See note to the line, p. 583.

P. 307, l. 46. Add a full stop at the end of the line.

P. 386. The two lines following l. 196 should have been marked with asterisks at the beginning. They occur only in Hart's edition.

P. 398. The four lines following l. 500 should have been marked with asterisks at the beginning. They are not in the Edinburgh MS.

P. 399. The sidenotes are wrong. Read—"The third was in Eskdale, when Sir John de Soulis with 50 men opposed Sir Andrew Harcla and 300 men, and defeated them."

P. 408, footnote to l. 73. Insert "&" after "Barvike."

P. 440. Lines 903*, 904*, 905*, 906* should have been marked with asterisks at the beginning. They occur only in the printed editions.

P. 462. Line 537* should have been marked with an asterisk at the beginning.
P. 463, second sidenote. For “Beauvoir” read “Beverley.”

P. 579, note to l. 516. Strike out the words “lit. power to avoid.” See Woidre in the Glossary.

P. 594, note to xv. 39. Part of this note is wrong. Perhaps barell-feris may mean “barrel-hoops,” but Jamieson’s explanation of barell-ferraris is correct, and not (as it seemed to me) a mistake. He cites a passage from Wyntown, viii. 33. 53, which clearly proves that barell-ferraris were casks for liquids, of which a pair, when full of water, was considered as a good load for a horse. The word also occurs in the alliterative Morte Arthure, ed. Brock, E. E. T. S., l. 2714—“Barelle-ferrers they brochede, and broghte them the wyne.” The explanation “Ferrers, a kind of wine,” in Mr Brock’s Glossary, is accordingly incorrect. In Jamieson’s Dictionary, look for Ferraris, not for Barell.

P. 649, s. v. Barell-feris; see the remarks above.

P. 670, s. v. Evin. Here a letter has “dropped out.” For “vyn” read “Eyn.”

P. 691, s. v. Leckis. The accent over the a in the A.S. leece has been omitted here in the printing, and in a few other places; as, for instance, in léfan, s. v. Leif; and in the suffix -nédan, cited s. v. Mavrent.

For a few Additional Notes to “The Bruce,” see pp. 612, 613.

In a review of Part I. of the present edition of The Bruce which appeared in The Athenæum of Jan. 21, 1871, some excellent suggestions were made which may well be considered here. I take them in due order.

P. 5, l. 112. “Omit he before ne.”—I doubt if this is necessary. The word he is required for the sense, though apparently making the line too long. I suspect rather that the scansion is to be achieved by reading ne as n’, or rather he ne as he n’. A very similar foot to this he n’mycht occurs in Chaucer, in the line beginning I n’ sough; Prologue, l. 764.

P. 8, l. 165. “Wreyth should be wreythyt; see p. 17, l. 425.”—This is doubtless right; the form wreyth is a false one, only found in MS. E. It recurs, however, in ii. 138. See the Glossary.

P. 10, l. 218. “Insert wear after hangyt.”—No; the sense is—“Ah! how cruelly they condemned them! For they hanged by the neck good worthy knights, for little or no reason.” The scansion of the line is incomplete as it stands, no doubt; but the probability is, I suspect, that nekkeban should be a trisyllable; the second e in nekke is radical, the A.S. form being hnecea. The line is then complete.

P. 13, l. 301. “That seems wanting after For.”
P. 19, l. 458. "For erar may read ar mare;" i.e. rather more.—
To this suggestion I do not agree. The word ar, air, ere occurs only
in the sense of 'formerly,' as will appear by consulting the Glossary;
the right word for expressing 'rather' is erar, as in the text, in iii. 266,
and at p. 526, l. 47. As to may, it is the usual spelling in MS. E. for
the word which is better spelt ma in MS. C. This ma or may signifies
greater in point of number, and must obviously be retained in prefer-
ence to mare, which means greater in respect of size. The only diffi-
culty in the line is that the latter syllable in erar has to be pronounced
rapidly in order to suit the scansion, as in iii. 266. The line means:
"they (the foes) were on some occasions rather more than less (than a
thousand against one)."

P. 20, l. 489. "The or our is required after sull."—Neither is
absolutely required; for lord (pronounced lor-d, with trilled r) is almost
disyllabic. If a word is, however, to be inserted, rather read: "And
3e tharoff full lord suld be." For this reading we have the authority
of Wyntown.

P. 27, l. 57. "Ithandly (Hart's reading) is certainly right."—
This remark I do not understand. If it means that the word is better
spelt with i than with y, so far it is correct. But if it means that d is
an essential part of the word, this may be doubted. There is no d in
the original Icel. word ðínn, assiduous. It is an excrescent letter, due
to the turning of the said word into a form resembling the Northumbrian
present participle in -and. But it is quite true that ythandly is the
commonest form in our MSS. of the Bruce; see the Glossary.

P. 33, l. 214. "Hart's reading fulîlde (or rather fulîllit), instead of
full, would certainly improve the line; compare p. 107, l. 46, 'fulîllit
of dispit and pride.' Fulîlled in the sense of filled full occurs also in
Hambole's Pricie of Conscience, p. 15, l. 535."—I have already ob-
served, in the footnote, that ll. 245, 335, are in the like case.

P. 52, l. 120. "His should be omitted, as in Hart's edition."

P. 62, ll. 383, 384. "Lying and waking, as participles, ought to be
lyand and wakand."—But they are clearly not participles, but sub-
stantives, and are therefore correct as they are. The sense is: "and
that he could in no way hazard (lit. dare) the cold lying in the hills,
nor the long watch by night."

P. 115, l. 296. "For manrent read manret, i.e. manrede, homage."—
Yes; but manrent, though a false form, was probably intended; see
quotations in Jamieson. Similarly lufrent occurs for lufrede; see p.
528, l. 90; p. 532, l. 201.
GENERAL INDEX.

** For a general Scheme of the numbering of the lines in the various editions, see p. 541. For an explanation of reference-letters, see the first footnote on p. 1.

Text of "The Bruce;" Books I—XX ... ... 1
How the Good Wife taught her daughter ... ... 523
A Dietary ... ... ... ... ... ... 537
Scheme of editions of "The Bruce" ... ... 541
Notes to "The Bruce" ... ... ... ... 543
Additional notes to "The Bruce" ... ... 612
Notes to "How the Good Wife," &c. ... ... 614
Notes to "A Dietary" ... ... ... ... 615
Index I.—Subjects explained in the notes ... ... 616
Index II.—Books referred to in the notes ... ... 625
Index III.—Rime-Index ... ... ... ... 628
Index IV.—Glossary to "The Bruce" ... ... 640
Index V.—Proper Names in "The Bruce" ... ... 755
Index VI.—Glossary to "How the Good Wife," &c. 768
Index VII.—Notes on Jamieson's Dictionary ... 776
Errata and Addenda ... ... ... ... ... 782
PR
1119
E5
no. 29, 55

Early English Text Society
\textit{Publications}
Extra series

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

CIRCULATE AS MONOGRAPH